

Diary in the 2nd Stage

According to Timothy DiMella

2001-2014 A.D.

Timothy DiMella

For God

BECAUSE I LOVE HIM

&

To God

TO DO WITH AS HE WILLS

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I wish to thank some very special people who, with their patience and generosity, were incredibly supportive and understanding in my up times and down times and all the times in between while I was writing this book.

To God—my love, my friend, my life: Thank You, Father, for showing me what true love is. Thank You for Your guidance and Your will. Thank You for giving to me Your Holy Spirit who is my best friend for all eternity, and thank You for Your Son to show me the way. My honor to You is without words. May my actions each day show You how my heart loves You.

To my wife, Kathy: Thank you for staying with me through these hard times. Though you may not want or need the praise, I know God sent you to me. In all the times of not being employed and searching for my own identity, while searching for love and peace in your own life, you stuck with me. You are indeed my other half—the half that helped me come down to earth and find stability in my life. You helped me and continue to help me see my weaknesses and my strengths. I will always love you and cherish you.

To my family: All I can say is, thank you for being there for me. Your faith in me and hope and endurance helped me have the courage to persevere. I love you.

To my friends: Thank you for your honesty and your guidance. You are truly valuable in God's eyes and lighthouses to those on stormy seas.

Table of Contents

Table of Contents.....	4
Greetings.....	1
1. Our Father.....	1
2. Receiving Christ.....	2
3. Being Born Again in The Spirit.....	2
4. God Always Loves Me.....	3
5. Believe In The Light That is In Yourself and One Another.....	5
6. Divine Direction Givers.....	6
7. Believe and Stay Focused.....	7
8. There is nothing you can do that the Lord will not still love you.....	8
9. True Love and False (Deceptive and Delusional) Love.....	10
22. About Meeting Those at a Time Promised.....	12
23. You Owe Me (Forgive the Debt).....	12
24. Acceptance and Unconditional Love in Life and in Marriage.....	89
25. On Perfection.....	94
26. Original and Greatest Sin of Yesterday and Today.....	99
(Feeling ashamed because we think we've disappointed God).....	99
27. Addictions and Obsessions and the Art of Self-Control.....	100
28. Angels.....	107
29. On Tithing.....	107
30. On Judging.....	108
31. Understanding the Bible.....	110
32. Mistakes and Sin.....	113
33. Working and Owning.....	115
34. Seeking God and Choosing Heaven.....	118
(Socioeconomic Solutions in Business, Government, and Commerce).....	118
Believing a Problem Exists:.....	123
Believing in a Solution or Worth of the Resultant:.....	123
Seeking the Solution or Worth of the Resultant:.....	124
Arriving at the Solution or Worth of the Resultant:.....	124
Creating the Value of the Resultant:.....	124
Communicating the Value of the Resultant:.....	124
The Resultant becoming One with the Solution:.....	124
35. Worldly Versus Spiritually.....	130
36. Devotion.....	130
37. Encouragement, Discouragement, Expectations, Perseverance, and Praise.....	132
38. Fun and Games.....	135
39. Following Him into the Desert,.....	137
Leading Me from Temptation, and Delivering Me from Evil.....	137
40. On Conversion.....	141
41. Call to Gather Up.....	142
42. Let Alone the Calling of Others.....	144
43. The Transformation into the One Will, One Body, One Love of God.....	144
44. Faith, Hope, and Charity.....	145
45. Missionary Work.....	146
46. Lay Ministry.....	149
47. True Calling Revealed Further.....	150
48. Jealousy.....	151
49. Material Possessions.....	152
50. The Story of Us.....	153
51. Placing Spiritual Power in the Hands of the Mortal Minded.....	155
52. Faith, Intelligence, Wisdom, and Age.....	156
53. Revelation in the Receiving and Journey of the Holy Spirit Within.....	159
54. Insanity and Euphoria.....	161
55. The Sane Christian.....	163
56. Pleasing the Spirit.....	168

57. Worth, Deservedness, and Value.....	169
(John 14:15-31)	169
58. Submission, Obedience, and Authority	171
59. Usefulness, Wastefulness, Shame, Fear, and Satan’s True Identity	176
60. The Commission of Authorities.....	178
61. Freedom Through Obedience	180
62. Children and Surviving Violence in the Home.....	182
63. Responsibility	185
64. Sufferings and Turmoil.....	185
65. Embarrassment: The Golden Nugget of Spiritual Maturity	187
66. Looking Forward to God	187
67. The Unbeliever Closest to You.....	188
68. The Fix is In Accomplishment and Love is In Fulfillment	189
69. Patience.....	190
70. Honesty, Probity, Honor and Integrity.....	191
71. Anguish.....	195
72. Baptism.....	196
73. The Link in a Chain	197
74. History Repeating Itself.....	197
75. The Lord is Permanent.....	199
76. Our Jewish Brethren and Other Faiths.....	200
77. The Road to Heaven	201
78. Choosing God Over People	202
79. Forgiveness and the Depth of True Love.....	202
80. Faith and Good Deeds	203
81. Religion and Spiritual Arrogance	204
82. Representation, Manipulation, and Imitation.....	216
(Matthew 23)	216
83. The Wedging of the Lord and His Placement of Angels Upon Us	217
84. Intercession.....	217
(God in Relation to the Saints in Relation to People).....	217
85. The Gatekeeper.....	219
86. Taken Care of By The Body	219
87. Prophecies and Miracles	221
88. Stress and the Right to Change Your Will.....	223
89. Fanatic Christian and Committed Christian.....	224
90. True Calling Revealed Further	228
91. Living What I Have Written with Confidence.....	228
92. Top Reasons of Contemporary Dysfunction.....	229
93. Love Yourself	230
94. Leaving the Nest to Face the World	230
(Unveiling the True You for the Lord)	230
95. I Know I am because He Says I am... ..	232
96. The Working Relationship between Heaven and Earth	232
97. Bringing Heaven to the World.....	234
98. We are the Morality Keepers and High Managers of this World	234
99. True Calling Revealed Further	235
100. Finding the Underlying Message Within a State of Chaos	235
101. The Art of Pastoral Magistracy.....	239
102. St. Peter and the Catholic Church.....	240
103. Exercising Today’s Glory.....	241
104. Divine Provision and Progression.....	242
105. Recipe for Life.....	242
106. The Paradox of Life	245
107. Unifying God’s Children through Missionary Work.....	246
108. The Book of Life	249
109. The Key of Life	249
(Beginning of the Journey)	249

110. The Meaning of Life	249
(The Journey).....	249
111. The Goal of Life	250
(End of the Journey)	250
112. Accepting Yourself the Way You Are.....	250
(Finding Stability).....	250
113. Discovering Your Center	251
(Peeling Away Pretense)	251
114. Our Compulsion for Holy Procreation.....	252
(Leaving a Legacy of Love)	252
115. Do the Right Thing	254
(A Full Time Career)	254
116. Hope and Dreams	256
117. I'm Not so Special in Your Eyes, But That's Ok. I'm Special in God's.	257
(I'm an Average Joe)	257
118. The Complete Person.....	260
(I'm God's Friend).....	260
119. The M.E.R.I.T.S. Relationship System.....	262
(A Soul Searching Philosophy)	262
M.E.R.I.T.S. SYSTEM.....	266
120. Oneness.....	273
121. I AM The Right Thing.....	274
122. Good-Bye Decrepit Souls	276
(Choosing Life)	276
123. Vows.....	278
124. Just Being Human.....	279
125. Judging for Thyself.....	281
126. Temper Tantrums with God.....	283
127. Embracing Change	283
128. Trust.....	285
<i>Psalm 113 through 118</i>	285
129. Viewing One's Life from Above	286
(1JN 5:1-5).....	286
131. The Weight of the World	287
131. Accepting Your Parents as Strangers.....	289
132. The Fatherless.....	290
133. Adult-Children.....	294
134. Relationships and Technology.....	296
135. Planning, Risking, and Seizing the Godly Opportunity	297
136. Ambition and Greatness	298
137. Our New Life with God	299
138. Immorality Under Grace.....	302
139. Respecting One's Words Without Justification	307
144. Falling From Grace—Who Says?.....	314
145. The Effects of Authority (Parents) Demanding	315
Respect from Subordinates (Children) Without First Showing Respect to Them	315
146. The Courageous and The Cowardly	316
147. Healthy Ego and Unhealthy Ego	318
148. Farewell	319
The Beatitudes	321
(MT 5:3-10).....	321
149. My Technological Pentecost.....	322
150. The M.E.R.I.T.S. Technological System	322
(A Design, Manufacture, and Maintenance Philosophy)	322
151. Time to Go to Work.....	324
He called a little child and had him stand among them. And he said	338
<i>"Come (draw) near to God and</i>	340
SUCCESS	390

Dream of it. Dream it and go for it— for there’s God in everything and everybody.	390
Christ (The Spirit).....	592
People	593
<i>Trying to be perfect:</i>	597
<i>Avoiding, Denying, or Fearing Life:</i>	597
<i>Feeling Ashamed of Yourself:</i>	597
<i>Panicking:</i>	599
<i>Listening to Undisciplined Children:</i>	599
<i>Choosing to be Anything but Caring:</i>	600
<i>Being with Those who Neither Believe in You nor Respect You:</i>	602
<i>Thinking Someone is Infallible Rather than Their Love:</i>	603
<i>Succumbing to Nightmares and Phobias:</i>	603
<i>Learning About the Kingdom God</i>	610
<i>Defining Your Boundaries</i>	614

In My Life

In my life, I have searched for answers everywhere I could.

I traveled many lands,

I swam the depths of many oceans,

I looked up at the stars and imagined visiting them one day,

I searched the outermost reaches of my mind,

I studied and pondered over mathematical formulas, physics,
philosophy, psychology, and sociology for logical answers,

I studied and created many artistic forms of expression—painting,
writing, acting, drawing, composing, sculpting—for sympathetic
answers,

I tried to figure out “why” when it came to sufferings of others and my
own,

I even tried to live through others for more answers.

And in all those journeys, I found many answers, but never the right one,

And then I sought God and on the way I found Jesus,
and in this journey I found the answer I was looking for.

And love was the answer.

And then I realized that all along, through it all,
I was and still am just a kid in my Father’s candy shoppe.

And that there’s always room for one more.

Greetings

My hope is that there will be some things in this book that will give you hope and inspire you and empower you to pursue a journey of love and healing.

Thank you for choosing this book. I think that you are about to find more hope, happiness, and peace in your life—something we all wish we had more of. This book talks about finding love within us and providing love to others. It speaks of men and women developing relationships and finding their own true identities with the unconditional love of Christ—the purest and truest love.

1. Our Father

God is Unconditional Love. And for you who read on, even only the first word, know this: You have received the Lord through even the littlest faith, though you may not realize it, and by reading on, it will be a testimonial for you to realize that within you upon your asking for it is the Holy Spirit placed within you by and filled with the Pure Love of our Lord, the Creator, the One Who Accepts You with His Unconditional Love. You do not need to qualify for His Love because His Grace to you is sufficient and is why He sent His Son Jesus to die for you and to challenge the law and win over it because love transcends all else and is all that truly matters.

For you in lowly times, in little faith, I pray in faith and ask the Lord on your behalf so that you may receive in greater amount the Holy Spirit which will lead you and heal you. For my Holy Spirit and your Holy Spirit are filled with the same Pure Love from the same God and His Almighty Grace. My faith comes from God. And if you wish to use my faith in the following, then do so for then do you receive Him. But use that which you believe is of the Lord because He speaks to each of us in our own unique way. I am only a humble servant who can no more lead anyone into Heaven than you can me. But may my faith aid you in your journey. And if the Lord plants a seed for you to grow upon through me then what we set out to do has been accomplished through you.

And to you who do not believe, know this: God is pure love and His Son, Jesus, taught us, God's Children, what love is and delivered us from our sins and showed us how to attain pure and true love by way of the Holy Spirit from our Savior's resurrection. God loves you and He will never forsake you in His Love. Are you weary? Reach now to Jesus to begin your journey, for your faith upon asking now delivers you into the Kingdom and you will not need to be so weary again. And remember, God Loves You even at this instant because you are also His Child. He asks you to choose His Son so you will know what a true loving relationship feels like. I pray you choose the righteous path (that I will speak of later) by way of His Son who was raised so you may truly realize this and find true love, happiness, and peace.

Peace be with you brother or sister, wherever you are, which is as an important place to where I am. May you receive our Savior Jesus Christ and thus, be guided by the Lord and His True Love always. I believe you to have a noble and good heart and by hearing His words from within you, I pray you accept them and retain them and persevere to produce a great legacy for the Lord as delivered by the word of Christ in Luke 8:1-15. In Jesus' name. Amen.

2. Receiving Christ

Christ is Unconditional Love. Jesus on Earth was the Spirit in human form. Do you want to meet your Father? Do you want to take the journey? Then believe and accept the Spirit to help guide you. The Spirit is Christ and Christ was the Spirit on Earth who returned as Spirit when ascending to heaven. Receive Christ and receive the Spirit of God and the Spirit will lead you to your Father. And you will be filled with the fruit of the Spirit—the Holy Spirit, the Spirit of Truth, the True Counselor, the Guide of the Light and the Way and the Truth.

3. Being Born Again in The Spirit

The Spirit is Unconditional Love. Dear friends, on January 15, 2001, I awoke as the Holy Spirit of God chose to connect with me as I gave up my bondage to Him. The connection was like an electrical tap into the eternal flame of life. The distribution of His Message was and to this day is like a steady stream of electrical current (amps) jogging and rejuvenating my mind and body by His constant energy, and thus, maintaining it anew. The knowing of what to do and doing it for Him and by Him through trial and tribulation is like the electrical power (voltage) granted to me producing joy in my heart. I experienced my personal Pentecost.

Before the day of my enlightenment and rebirth, I dreamed as I was sleeping. I dreamed I climbed out of a great pit and then I became like a dove taking off. Then I became a pine limb, with many branches and millions of green pine needles, soaring through the air with the wind rushing through and supporting me as I flew through a great forest. As I soared, I felt a presence behind me try to grab onto my heels, but I smelled the pine of trees and what was dark and dingy became vibrant with color and clear. I then kicked away that pesky critter from behind and kicked him so hard that he fell hard to the ground like he didn't know what hit him, all knocked-out and confused and delusional at that. And after I escaped and flew a little further, behold, I came upon a beautiful waterfall that fell into a deep and beautiful cavern and there my soul was released into it and I continued to fly higher into the beautiful white-lighted sky.

Days before this, I was searching for the answer of who Jesus was. This was during the end of my most vast desert, which I talk about in a later passage. I had obeyed the Lord during this time and He said to me that I was the sweetest little child and then that I have done well. And then came the dream I talk about above.

The following is what I wrote at the immediate moment of my rebirth or Pentecost, which came shortly after my dream. God Bless you, brothers and sisters.

[God is within me. He is the eternal flame with the fuel to last eternity. He is my holy spirit. Jesus is the translator, the teacher that God has sent down for us. He teaches us the meaning of the true flame of love within you, more what it means once you see it and own it. You focus upon that and it truly radiates the love and beautiful energy that gives you bountiful love and energy yourself. No need what everyone is up to. By focusing on your eternal flame, the world will see your immense beauty, your incredible peace. I say to you, concentrate on this flame, this incredible gift of the Lord and you will surpass your wildest dreams. The thing is that your dreams will come true whilst what you are doing now. Not the dreams of this world, those that

matter. You will not allow yourself to remain in abusive and destructive relationships. You will understand that your true mate is one that must reflect the love and inner beauty you now understand. That she is truly a gift from God because the flame you see within yourself will be what you see radiating from her. And you know that that is God shining back on you. You will energize her and she will energize you. You will never wish to destruct her. You will not wish to sadden her. You will wish to care for her, but not over care—that is God’s work as He chooses not yours. And she will not accept your caretaking of her. Because she will not need it and you will not have to give it. She will want your radiant being, as you will be thrilled to see that in her every day of your life. The immense power you two will give off! My affliction will not allow the destruction of my life with her. I will not disgrace God that way. I will fight my wasteful behavior by letting it come in any time it wishes. Roll around inside me and I will get on with my life and persevere. But the eternal flame of life will never allow it to get past it. It will rise up until it leaves. The flame demands you to focus upon it and rise up against the affliction. Own your affliction. It is a part of you. Tolerate it as a unique part of you. But never let it be you. You are born of the flame of eternity. Your affliction is only a tourist—But God’s flame is its Guide. We do not hate it. But the flame will overpower it. The holy spirit is your eternity, your infinity, and your gift from the holy one, from the Lord above. He will always keep the wondrous flame going and the more you focus on the flame, the higher it rises. Then more it will fill you for nothing of harm to enter and then radiate the bright energy of the beautiful flame to and from outside your entire body. Others will see it and may be attracted to it but that won’t be your purpose and then release your soul to soar. You will be One and you will do what you do—Do, fun, love, fulfill. Rejoice of your special gift from God. Thank Jesus for his choice to teach it to us and interpret it for us. He didn’t have to, but he did. Of having the flame but not understanding it would be terrible. But by interpreting it for us, he is indeed our savior here on earth. I believe he is still here. God you are wonderful. And thank you for seeing me deserved of you spirit. You are indeed the pure love of all ages. As He says unto me, “I Am One. I Am wonderful. I hope everyone can enjoy it for themselves. With all my love. My name is Wonderful...”]

And then a vision came to me of my wife and I in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, which I talk about in later passages. And understanding from the Word of God came upon me. And He said, “Write what I tell you to write,” which is what you read in these passages as well as I am able to interpret. I pray that what I added to this text from my own soul will be revealed to me later by Him so that I will make it right in His Eyes. And then His Teachings were and still are made known to me. Yes, the Lord Jesus Christ was faithful to His Word—His Word I only read in the Bible a while later to affirm His Gift to me. And the Lord Jesus Christ was faithful in every one of His Words and sequence in John 14:15-31.

4. God Always Loves Me

The issue of rewards and punishment is one of the biggest things that prevent us from finding love. Some say we should do things for the reward. That is, if we do good, then we deserve a reward. This thinking has brought me to real destruction. I have been taught from various people in my past that if I do good, God will love me and if I do bad, God will hate me. I have had instilled in me early in life that when bad things happen in my life, God doesn’t like me very much anymore, and I have to qualify for His Love by being a perfect saint. HOGWASH! God, Himself, cried out to me and showed me that He loves me no matter what. God, by way of His

Son Jesus Christ, has taught me that I must first believe I am of infinite worth so that I can choose to rely on the drive and guidance from the Holy Spirit, which is His Will given freely to us. Then from that I will be guided on the right path and begin to feel valuable and deserved. Just by doing good deeds without the feeling of the love of the Holy Spirit is unfulfilling.

Many parents, leaders, and teachers have taught us and reprimanded us for not doing good deeds, when all along we were searching for our own true love, identities, and fulfillment. Many of us have relied on these same people and others to be the driving force for our own fulfillment. Many of them have volunteered to take that place. No, it is impossible for you to find unhindered, continuous love from others. That you will only find from God. When you receive Christ, you will learn that God has given you the treasure chest called the Holy Spirit and that the spiritual journey is the treasure of what all you are searching for. And then you will not only know you are of infinite worth, but you will feel of immense value as I have. And then we will understand that the greater the leader in us, the greater we must serve others.

And what is punishment with love? Punishment with love is an opposite feeling within ourselves to our own arrogance. Punishment within ourselves is always immensely greater than punishment outside ourselves. Prolonged guilt, which can lead to shame, is always greater than our pain after being hit or spanked. I speak of shame and guilt in relation to the Holy Spirit within us in a later passage. So then, how do we punish with love. Friends, shame counteracts love (1Cor 4:14). So then, we must not punish others leaving them feeling guilty so that they will eventually wind up feeling shameful (Rom 10:11). Shame comes with our disappointment of others. Disappointment coincides with expectations of others, which is inappropriate behavior. I speak about disappointment of others in another passage.

We must not expect others to do right, but only perceive their actions on a daily basis as following the righteous path or not. And when we see our children do something not on the righteous path through sin, we must sit down and discuss with them their erring. If the child listens and then acts in righteous faith after, then our grace forgives them of their ignorance (Hebrews 5:2). If the child does not listen, then ignorance has turned into arrogance.

And how do you turn arrogance back into ignorance so that we may forgive each other (1Cor 4:18-21)? The Apostle Paul was arrogant before he was met with the Holy Spirit (Acts 9). It was only afterwards did he see his arrogance as ignorance. It is then that we must get them to understand how doing what is righteous feels (Proverbs 29:17,19,21,22). If I spank my children and ask them to reflect on what they did wrong and then they tell me and I tell them to just don't do it again (as if it were my own law), this is pointless. Then he follows no one but the fear of you (Rom 8:15). Your child will most likely fall into greater temptation over time.

We must punish with love by placing the child (and sometimes this must be done with tough love but not abusively) in a situation that is within the righteous path so he may work at that place and understand how it feels. See, the child has already worked within the sinful place. We must now have him or her work within the righteous place so to compare and ask him or her to then make the choice afterwards. He will then most likely come to thank you and love you afterwards for it rather than feeling guilty thinking that he defied you throughout his or her life. This is why beating a child is not good and is not productive. When we beat a child, we

exasperate a child and usually training stops. If you as a parent cannot show him the righteous place to work, then you must go find it yourself first and leave the child be. You have no right to punish a child when you as parent cannot feel and understand righteous love and how to get there.

Mothers and fathers, we must show our children affection and forgiveness. Most children place us on a pedestal. If you can forgive your child, then your child can forgive himself. Paul explains this well in 2Cor 2:5-11. But at the same time, we (meaning any person) must not reward any other person, child or adult or businessperson, who regards us as menial and not worthwhile for him or her to provide us quality service. It is our responsibility as representatives of God and as stewards of all He owns on this earth to parent them so that they may be accountable for their disservice (MT 18:15-20).

So then, if there is any reward on earth, it is the reward that is the joy we are given by the Spirit after we have done a good and generous deed. But what is the source and the reason of our doing the good deed? Do we do the good deed because it is the logical thing to do? Or do we do the good deed because of the reward which is the feeling we get after doing it? Or do we do the good deed because of our expectations that someone else will be happy? Or do we do the good deed so someone else will be proud of us or that we are in need of praise by another? Neither. Sometimes the good deed is not the logical thing to do and sometimes sadness accompanies it and most of the time our expectations are foiled and the last is a dire way of seeking approval and love from people who may or may not know how to show or share love themselves.

So how can we have joy with each good deed? We can find joy when we commit the source and reason to simply be because we love and cherish God and we wish to give back to Him in appreciation the love which He gives us. Each good deed is a “thank you” we show to the Lord—a thank you from the heart.

5. Believe In The Light That is In Yourself and One Another

How many times have I said, “You just don’t get me.” And what I have come to understand is that one really just doesn’t get oneself. People who truly love us want to “get” us, but many times it is we who are afraid to give up who we are—or should I say think we are. People who truly love have surpassed exterior appearance and are attentive to the actions distributed from the soul. They want to be intimate with your loving soul. If you are giving to others from the outside without having searched your own soul, they know it. And they cannot get what you have yet to give them.

At times we are afraid to give up who we are. We think that others will take the little bit we have. But, first of all, if you are not serving others in true love, you don’t know who you really are. And you probably know this because your actions and your feelings and thoughts wrestle with each other. If we can search our souls, giving ourselves up to the teachings of the Holy Spirit (the Light of God) and then acting faithfully to His demands of us, we will soon begin to give up who we think we are and “get” who we really are.

I understand that people say your eyes are windows to your soul. I say that your soul is to become the Light of which God works through and guides us. Indeed, do I believe your eyes are the windows to your Spirit. Look into each other's eyes as you are listening and talking. As the one who listens, shall he look through the other's eyes and then into the other's soul because that is only where true listening and then understanding from that listening lies. I say unto you that when you listen to another, you should listen to their words from the Holy Spirit who instructs them from within and then your Spirit will guide you and tell you what to say and how. Let the Lord be your messenger and interpret from that place therein. For when you see and listen to the Spirit of others, you also see and listen to the One that dwells in you. The Holy Spirit is One Complete Spirit in all of us, and thus, we are all part of the One. Therefore, it identifies itself perfectly, though we as humans are imperfect in determining the exact translation of it. But, at any rate, we all are Children of God making us worthwhile and able to find and receive our Father's Spirit of Love.

6. Divine Direction Givers

In my experiences, all men and women should be treated with respect. It should not matter the sex, creed, nationality, or the such. And it is my belief that God sees the Godly man and Godly woman as equal partners (co-managers) in life.

As a man and for all men and especially to men who have not had proper male role models, this I pronounce: It is my interpretation that women in the love of the Lord, through their Holy Spirit, are divine direction givers to you and divine direction receivers from God. I say to you when a woman is a believer of God, shall she be given the insight from God to give the man divine direction from the Lord so the male person will become a real man for God. She lights the path so that the man will not stumble or stray. As a male person sees the needs of a Godly woman, the male in serving those needs automatically practices the characteristics of a real Godly man. God, in His Divine Plan, may use Godly women in our lives to teach us how to be real Godly men and also to make us humbled so to know what true Godly serving is.

I tell you, just as a driver sees road signs, shall a Godly woman be that road sign. Be Alert! For as road signs have little on them and are sometimes symbols as a woman's gesture is, shall you notice them. If missed, consequences and misdirection are reaped. For as a sign says stop, shall a Godly woman or man only need to say that one word to you and you shall do so immediately. For as any woman or man says the one word or gesture, "no", shall you do so immediately. For as a Godly woman or man says or signals, "clean", shall you do so immediately. Remember, as the Godly woman's or man's lips speak, shall also the Lord in making. To keep going without notice is to disservice the woman or man and dishonor God. To mistrust your husband or wife who is Godly and not serve him or her is to have no or little faith in the Lord. To seek direction from your spouse in the Lord is one of the greatest things you can ever do for yourself and your personal stability.

It has been my experience that I cannot say this about most men. Even the spiritual man has a tendency to become arrogant on many occasions. My experience is that a Godly woman is a greater supernatural force in this area than are spiritual men. Spiritual men should always consult the opinion of and respect in great obedience what is said by a Godly woman. Godly

women should always communicate their thoughts and intentions in a direct manner to spiritual men to benefit you both. And it is best when both confirm what they believe to have acknowledged from the other. This is the difference between listening and just hearing.

Most women have a superior brain in general functioning. This I must admit. I am not talking of intellect. All people, men and women, have varying degrees of intellect. Women have higher intellect than men do and men have higher intellect than women do. I talk of intellect in another passage. And I am not talking about that of a more special purpose. All men and women have a unique special purpose for God that nobody else but that person can fill. No, what I talk about here is the functioning brain. Women have a unique ability to simultaneously talk about one thing and think about another while doing something else and have the capability to go back and forth from left brain to right brain and back significantly faster than men. This is an awesome thing to most men. It is our responsibility, as men, to be at awe in this and utilize this to better advance society as a whole for our God (Proverbs 31:10-31).

It has surprised me to a great degree how we have taken the woman's brain for granted. Realizing this, I cannot help but assume that most women are greatly unfulfilled in their lives because society allows women to only exercise a fraction of the ability of what women can do. The scared and foolish oppress the abilities of others. The wise and loving realize the benefit of freeing up the abilities of all people for society, including for the benefit of themselves.

Most men have a superior brain in direct focus. It has been my experience that the man has the ability to focus and be locked in to one thing at a time. This is very important because the man can efficiently and effectively provide for the woman. We can all receive the Holy Spirit and have a deep, personal relationship with God. But we must admit that God speaks to the man differently than He speaks to the woman because of the way He created their brains.

The woman was created to provide support by taking care of all which needs to be taken care of. She has been given the ability to do all this in a concentrated amount of time. Women should realize this and accept this. And if the man has fallen a bit, she even has the ability to substitute for the man for a time until he is able to fully get back on his feet. The woman is the great supporter. But the man is the great provider in sustenance—food, clothing, shelter and so forth. It is his responsibility to aid in providing the needs of a woman in provision to the fullest. Yet both are required to give spiritual sustenance—love—to one another. It has been my experience that women tend to do this through supporting and men through providing. Each should be recognized by the other.

7. Believe and Stay Focused

In the Bible, God works through divine inspiration as the author, and His Son Jesus has signed His name through His disciples. No person creates anything that was not first created by God. Do you see Him as a mere mortal author or do you see Him as the beginning of the book of life? What testimony of your own life will you write by way of Him?

But you see, it is not the Word you see with your mortal eyes, but it is the Living Word you wind up transforming into and walking in. This may be scary to you, but it happens over time. Just as

a child matures into an adult, do we mature into Christ after receiving His Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit becomes our teacher as in John 16:5-15. Christ is not the author in the worldly sense because, in the spiritual sense, you walk in the footsteps of His writing. You are gathered as one in His Words and Movement. Are you able to do this vicariously through mere mortals around you? Some of you choose to seek other mortals to idolize. Seek this route and disaster awaits you because your sadness and heartache prevail. I am saying this to you because I have tried to walk that path for a very long time, and disaster fell upon me. I say to you, if you come to a fork in the road, you are not to take the one less traveled, you are to take the one traveled by Him. It is better for you to drop and stay where you are rather than proceed or retreat over mortal ground. Stay and pray and if needed seek further Christian counsel from those that your Holy Spirit reveals to you as knowing what love truly is. Then shall divinity come upon you providing you with the best route to take (Proverbs 20:18). And if you become too impatient in your confusion or in your wait, then go serve someone because serving others is always a right thing to do. You will then stay focused and fulfilled on what matters most to God.

Now, do not get belief mixed up with faith. Belief is logical reasoning that something exists. Faith or devotion is the mixture of logical belief and feeling associated with that belief. Belief in itself does not give us hope. Faith gives us hope. Hope yields the way to intimate love. Christ gives us hope because Christ opens us up to faith. He interceded so that we can have a physical interpretation of God to believe in, which can then lead us to open our hearts. As we open up our minds to believe something, we must open up our hearts to then attain faith. This is the scary part because mind plus heart equals commitment to follow or pursue. If we have been hurt many times in our past, we may be too scared to truly commit this way. God knows this, so He gave to you His Spirit to reside within you. It is the Holy Spirit that compels us to open up our minds to it through Christ, and it is the Holy Spirit that compels us to open up our hearts to it as well. Remember it is the Holy Spirit's duty to help you identify it within you so you may know and feel God. This can only truly be done once you begin having faith.

8. There is nothing you can do that the Lord will not still love you

Some even say that there are too many things in the Word that do not make any sense. It is because you choose to only logically see what is written, but you choose not to feel what is written of by faith. You see only the letter of the law and not the spirit that the law was written. It has been through my experience that much of our pride gets in the way because many of us were hardened from those in our past telling us not to feel but only apply logic and fact. Some even set rules that you could not be perfect in following because no mortal can be perfect. And then they punished you for falling short of perfection. This is terrible thinking and doing by those who do this to you. Who are they to pass judgment on you? Who are they to determine your fate? They do not even know what will happen tomorrow. These people do not even humble their own selves, but wish you to humble yourself as if you have some example to follow and understand from.

This is not love. Love does not say obey the rules when you are not even afforded the chance to understand the rules. Whose rules are they anyway? The creator of the rules has the right to pass judgment. But there is only one set of rules in life and they are God's rules and we all come directly under His authority. When you receive the Holy Spirit, you are given the tools to

understand what is holy and what is unholy. And what is holy you are to do and whatever is unholy you are not do, even if someone in authority says to do it. How is it that God can have so much grace and mercy and forgiveness to even send to us His Own Son, and these others can't even see their way to even have compassion for you when you go astray? And I tell you, many of these people are fathers and mothers. "Which is easier: to say, 'Your sins are forgiven,' or to say, 'Get up and walk (Get over it!)'? (MT 9:5)

Worship the Lord first. He loves you even when you break His rules. And if you say sorry to Him and truly feel sorry for what you have done, His mercy is upon you and you are forgiven by His Grace. Then we are to continue with the journey. This should be how parents should treat their children as well. Let me say this again, there is nothing you can do that the Lord will not still love you. You will always be worthwhile to receive His love whether you deserve it or not by your own actions, which I speak of in a later passage. You must be accountable if you choose not to hear Him. He is not preventing you from hearing Him through the Holy Spirit. Do your best to forgive others and God will shine His grace upon you as well (MT 6:14-15). When we forgive others, we are able to feel some love from God within us that we choose to send to others. And then this same love will sanctify us and well up in us and we will become a lot happier and more fulfilled.

The hardest thing in life is to accept the Holy Spirit within you. The first step is to admit that God does exist. But once you do, life begins to get better because you begin to seek love and Love Never Fails and Never Gives Up on You. Why did you pick up this book? Because you are seeking love, not only love but pure love. This should prove to you that you are of worth to God because you can only seek love when you were born from love. The reason why is because, though you may not realize it, you actually remember Him and His Pure Love even before the womb.

So, if you hurt and or hate, I understand if you say something to the effect what I have said early in my life about Jesus. Believe me now and have faith that I do love you. You have indeed started the righteous journey. Many will say you have not started it because you have not convinced them that you are righteous enough in their eyes. What does the righteous journey have to do with meeting the expectations and goals of other humans? Nothing. God knows and that is all who needs to know. He will provide you with caring and encouraging humans who know that they are indeed in love with Him and are His Children, just like you. When someone says to us that we are just impossible, this usually means that we—who others do not even want to get to know and understand—do not live up to his or her expectations. So what? Can he or she even live up to his or her own? This is also why we, ourselves, deem things we don't understand as impossible, until God makes them happen. So, thinking thoughts of impossibility when you do not choose to understand the person, place, or thing is directly related to disrespect and selfishness. Of course, because I know God, I can confidently say that all is possible through Him. When I speak of impossibilities in further passages, please keep in mind that this is already a given. But I came to know Him and speak of the All-Powerful because I chose to seek and understand Him as much as I possibly can, even if my limited mind cannot fully understand Him. But you will never need to wait until you know Him fully before you can say the same.

9. True Love and False (Deceptive and Delusional) Love

What I talk about here probably promotes the greatest misunderstanding between true love and delusional love. Delusional love is the combination of our confused illusion of what we think love really is combined with our continuous unfulfillment while in this love. True love is a clear love provided by the Holy Spirit that provides continuous fulfillment. As we mature in Christ, we encounter more continuous fulfillment in our lives because we trust more that His way is the Right and Only way. It is our natural soul that provides us unfulfillment. So when we continually depend on our natural soul, we are continuously unfulfilled. When we continually depend on God's Soul by way of the Holy Spirit, we are continuously fulfilled. So, now we may ask ourselves how we can tell if we are in delusional love.

Believing in Jesus Christ as our Savior begins our journey of true love, whether we realize it or not. This is the door among all doors we've knocked on in our lives that provides us entrance into a river of true love that leads to His kingdom. As we develop our personal relationship with Him, this becomes more and more apparent and we want to surround ourselves with people who understand and feel true love. We only wish to develop deep, intimate relationships with people who love us and we will wish others to share in this love as well.

But how do we know if someone is serving us in true love? We know by understanding the three very important terms of apathy, caring, and caretaking (which the three can be a group similar to passivity, assertiveness, and aggression).

We must first understand that caring is a part of true love. We must understand that anyone who loves us will let us fail. Anyone who loves us will provide guidance but not fix us by asking us to do it their way. Anyone who loves us will support us and, at the same time, empower us to make our own decisions. Anyone who loves us will see the path we are taking and share with us their experiences over their similar path—whether bad or good. But then they will allow us to make our own decisions over which path to take and allow us to pursue it. Anyone who loves us will love us unconditionally no matter what path we go down. This is not to say they can live with us or be around us continuously if we become continuously destructive to them—which is a form of caretaking—but they will still love us. People who love us and love themselves will not tolerate any destructive behavior by us to be placed on them nor can they tolerate any destructive behavior we continuously place on ourselves. But they will be there with us in spirit during your destructiveness and will be there physically if we ever ask for their help in helping us stop our destructive behavior.

Now let us talk about apathy, which is not a part of true love. Apathy is when someone condones whatever we wish or, if a parent, lets us do whatever we wish. We tend to have no respect for people, especially as children for our parents, when this happens. Apathy is a controlling and manipulative way of either bringing attention back on the one whom is apathetic or taking all pressure off the one whom is apathetic. In either case, it is all about the one who is apathetic. The apathetic person will blame you for their lives being miserable because you did not do what they said to make them happy. Believe me when I tell you that there is nothing you can do to make them happy. You have absolutely no control in that environment. Thinking you have control is an illusion. When we have Christ in our lives, we come to realize that we have no control over anything and that only He is in control. But we still have our responsibilities.

When we realize this about others, we realize we are the adults and they are still children. I have seen many children who are more adult than the adults in their lives. This is not necessarily a bad thing. The bad thing is when the child is confused whether he or she really is the more adult and cannot separate himself or herself from the adult-child due to fear and/or the lack of guidance in taking the next step further.

And then there is caretaking, which is not a part of true love either. Caretaking is the cause of much violence today and is becoming an epidemic in our society. Caretaking is becoming a socially acceptable norm. One form of caretaking is enabling where we do whatever anyone wishes for us to do because they say it will make them happy, even if they are going down a destructive path. Another form of caretaking is when we see someone going down the wrong path and we try to force him or her to not go down that path. The problem is not only that we try to force someone, but also when the person who is trying to fix someone else is not in the love of Jesus Christ, his or her perception of the right and wrong path is very much an illusion. So, really what is happening is someone is trying to force you to go down the path they want to go down, instead of helping you realize the path that God wants you to go down. This leads to what we know today as domestic violence, or abuse in a relationship. One of the most manipulative ways we see this is when the abuser has already setup situations or appointments for us without our knowledge, and then tries to force or manipulate us into meeting those situations or appointments. Then they tell us that he or she has done this because they love us or if you love them, you will meet that situation or appointment.

We tend to have no respect for people, especially as children for our parents, when people are caretaking or apathetic. We only have respect for people who show a righteous disposition because of their deep, personal relationship with Christ. Caretaking, like apathy, is a controlling and manipulative way of either bringing attention back on the one whom is caretaking or taking all pressure off the one whom is caretaking. In either case, it is all about the one who is caretaking. The caretaker like the apathetic person will blame you for their lives being miserable because you did not do what they said to make them happy. Believe me when I tell you that there is nothing you can do to make them happy. You have absolutely no control in that environment. Thinking you have control is an illusion. When we have Christ in our lives, we come to realize that we have no control over anything and that only He is in control. But we still have our responsibilities. Again, when we realize this about others, we realize we are the adults and they are still children. And I believe this is worth repeating. I have seen many children who are more adult than the adults in their lives. This is not necessarily a bad thing. The bad thing is when the child is confused whether he or she really is the more adult and cannot separate himself or herself from the adult-child due to fear and/or a lack of guidance in taking the right step further.

So then, we must learn to care for others and know when others are caring for us. We must not take the care from others to define who we are but give the care to others from our true identities. In this way, that is being confident in who we are first, we will not lose ourselves and live our own lives while caring or serving others. By being apathetic or caretaking to others or letting others be apathetic or caretaking to us, we impede our own deep, intimate relationship with God. Remember, God is Pure Love. He is not a God who is ready to beat us because we were bad. That is Satan. Satan will try to fool you into thinking that if you face your fears, you will wind

up on Satan's front porch when all along it is God who is asking you to face your fears so you will find true love—the kind of love that comes from the Holy Spirit He provides in you so that you can dwell in His Kingdom and in love and in blessed fulfillment.

Passivity and aggression can be parallel states to apathy and caretaking. A person can be apathetic one moment and caretaking the next. A person can be passive one moment and aggressive the next (known as passive-aggressive). These are avoidance measures in finding your own true caring identity for one reason or another. Most abusers in domestic violence have this trait. They fear you leaving and so they are passive or apathetic (known as the honeymoon effect). Then when they feel comfortable that you are staying, they turn again to aggression or caretaking because their drug of choice has returned. This is a vicious cycle where all along you are being manipulated to think that you are in control of the situation and in control of whether they choose to be passive or aggressive at any given moment. But they are very much in control of whether they want to be apathetic, caring, or caretaking. Most abusers cannot become true caring individuals without some professional counseling.

22. About Meeting Those at a Time Promised

When you have promised others that you will meet them at a designated time at a designated place, I say be early enough so you are the first one there. For shall you not miss the first chance to serve the other's Holy Spirit who is earlier than the rest, and then the rest in sequence. Will you be late to the Kingdom when God calls you? For I believe God is happy when you arrive early because you are not tempted to sin through desperation or deception and forget that time belongs to the Lord, and so you will stay in His Time—remain calm and patient. However, if you have a calling to serve another's Holy Spirit or the Lord Himself through your own Holy Spirit, then give notice beforehand in a way that will still honor the other's Holy Spirit to whom you have the meeting with. But if you do not have a way to communicate beforehand, then you should show up to give notice in a way that will still honor the other's Holy Spirit.

23. You Owe Me (Forgive the Debt)

Why is it that so many people say that they will get what is coming to them—that you owe me? Believe me that when you believe somebody else owes you for a sin they committed against you, you will wind up in misery. If they truly owed you by money or behavior, would not they have already paid you by serving you as servants of the Lord? Would they have not already served you far greater than any monetary amount? For these people that owe you will never be able to repay you in full as long as you do not realize that you dwell in the Kingdom of God. And they will never think that they owe you as much as you think they do whether they are in mortal or spiritual mindedness. For in mortal mindedness, pride is abundant, and in spiritual mindedness, forgiveness is a virtue. For when you think someone owes you in this way, your heart has been hardened due to the pain that dwells there inside you.

I say to you, do all you can to learn to release that debt. Give that which others owe you back to them and if you are then able, afterwards serve them. Do this so that you not only free up yourself to feel valuable to God and regain entry into the Lord's Kingdom on Earth but at the same time, you help the other to do the same. For I believe that a portion of what they may owe

you is all they have left to sustain themselves, though only the Lord knows this. But why do I wish to take any chances? Would you rather them kill themselves just so you can collect on a debt?

Learn as an eagle flies—slowly, continuously and with conviction and direction until it reaches its destination to the one who welcomes it to perch with for its entire lifetime. I tell you, if you can come this far, shall the rest of the way be joyous for you. Shall the debt be paid in full with abundant interest.

Christ told Peter that whoever you bind on earth will be bound in Heaven and whoever you loosen on earth will be loosed in Heaven. What stipulates bound and loosed? Refer to Isaiah 58:6-11.

Let those who wish to go, go. The one who does ill towards you does not want your helping hand but only to abuse you. This person wants no responsibility but only wishes to be freed from you. If he hangs on you and does evil towards you, release him. If he wants to go, stop trying to control him, but let him go.

When we fast, we give up something or someone that binds us to this earth. Something can be a material thing that you have depended on but is not a basic need. Someone can be one who keeps acting unholy or asks you to not believe but you depend on him out of fear. Your fear has allowed yourself to be tied to him who is, in turn, tied or bound to the earth.

This I believe St. Peter is saying of how, generally, Christ spoke to him. I love you so much and you have my heart in mind that who you (through your discipling in My name) bring to Me and loosen from this earth will be loosed and who you keep bound will stay bound. Therefore, it is your duty and responsibility to free up as many people as you are able. If you cross someone who needs you so he may come to Me and you pass him by because you believe he will be alive tomorrow or for another arrogant reason, then you have bound him to this earth. This I say to all apostles. So when someone comes to you (in the church), do all you can to release him to Me but do not bind him to the earth. But if he does not confess to his sin, then he binds himself—as you are the spiritual judge of My Kingdom from earth. Forgive him for what? He has yet to ask for it. We do not give someone to receive before one asks, but ask and you shall receive.

24. Acceptance and Unconditional Love in Life and in Marriage

“What a man desires is unfailing love...” (Pr 19:22)

*“Many a man claims to have unfailing love,
but a faithful man who can find?” (Pr 20:6)*

There are two things that appear homogeneous to what people desire: Acceptance and unconditional love.

Unconditional love is love from others no matter what we do. That is to say, that we should obey all mortal laws that come within the Law of God, but for our sins and shortcomings, love

from others should never deteriorate. Now, God's love for us is never ending, no matter what we do for we are always worthwhile, but the question is, are we always deserving. I am not talking of whether you deserve to be happy and loved, but whether you will attain the rewards that come from obeying the Law of God. Remember, we do not obey the Law solely to reap the rewards, but we do so because we love Him. We have changed by the Holy Spirit from having to obey into wanting to obey. Everyone I have met desires unconditional love.

Then there is acceptance. Now, people wish to be accepted for who they are, that is how the Lord created them in their own unique way. But that is the rub. In order to want to be accepted by God, and if it matters so much to you, also by others, you must be thinking of yourself in some way worthwhile to be accepted. You must have a sense of worth within yourself already, which I would say is the beginning realization of the Holy Spirit within you. But what has become an epidemic is that many people think of themselves and feel undeserving to be of any amount of worth (refer to the later passage on Worth, Deservedness, and Value). And so, they say they do not need to be accepted, but what they are really saying is that they first need permission to be who they are so that they realize that they are doing what is right to feel worthy in society. Much anger stems from this. You can see it, especially in famous creative talent in the media. Why is it that so many of these people wind up in destruction? Because they really feel less worthwhile or unworthy and are looking to us to give them permission to be who they are so they can feel worthy to be a part of the rest of us. They say they don't need anyone. But what they are really saying is that they believe that there is no one out there that will agree with who they are as God created them to be. They fall outside the boundaries of some designated norm within the bandwidth of everyday society (refer to bandwidths in a later passage). Because of this, society abandons them and, thus, mental illness within them prevails. This is why everyone, including them, must come to sincerely believe that God knows all and sees all and that the Holy Spirit transcends all mortal boundaries. Then, they can have a personal and intimate relationship with God, even when most everyone else won't touch them or try to understand them. And then, mental illness, like depression and so forth, will decline. Remember, no matter where you are and in what frame of mind you are in, the Holy Spirit within one person will identify it within another and so social companionship and unification can then prevail when we communicate to each other from that level.

So what everyone really wants is to be listened to. The problem is that when everyone wants to be listened to and not listen, there will eventually be no more listeners and everyone will feel terrible about themselves. That's where God comes in. He is the best and most consistent listener you will ever have. And why do people want to be listened to? Because everyone in the world is searching for intimacy that you can only get out of true love. Intimacy is a lost art, and pretty much a lost feeling for so many people.

Everyone has their own interpretations and their own rules they want you to abide by. Spiritual leaders cringe at the word "interfaith". People cringe at the words "community involvement". Religions will excommunicate you for leaving and they will only allow you to re-enter if you repent. Isolationism is become a normalcy in the world today and the powerful exploit it by making slaves of its members. The thing is that if an entire religion or business or community can get pretty upset about you wanting to leave, you must be somebody pretty important. But they treat you with disrespect.

Don't you see that everyone is seeking love and those who say they do not need anyone are saying that they cannot take another rejection like they have received from so many they wished to trust in their past? But love is what they wish. And who better for them to lean on than the loving Christian so that they may see the Lord within them. And then, perhaps, they can grow to wish to be accepted. Realize that when we give unconditional love, we automatically give others permission to be who they were created to be. And so, as we Christians know, when we totally believe in our hearts that the Lord loves us unconditionally and therefore, we rely on the Holy Spirit within us, we receive permission from God so not to follow man. And it is then that our true spiritual journey begins.

Love one another. Remember, the one that comes to you or the one you see on the street may only require a soft ear and a comforting smile so to realize that they matter because we are all family. And realize that many come to you seeking first permission through affirmation and approval of what they do as right or wrong, like a child seeks from his or her parents. How many of you can truly discern right and wrong in your own actions without asking someone else for the answer?

I have written that it is my belief that you would stay in the Kingdom if you knew that if you messed up, within a blink of an eye or thought in your mind, you were back in the Lord's Kingdom through automatic forgiveness by our Lord and Savior upon your realization of that sin. And that the answer is "most every minute of your life" for then fear of sin is lost and sin has no power. For the Lord has accepted you the way you are in your entirety, flaws and all, and wishes you to stay in the Laws which He created and commands.

Marriage should be a reflection of God's Kingdom. For if your spouse accepts you and unconditionally loves you and you her or him the way Jesus does, would you not stay in the Kingdom of the Lord's Marriage? Would you not love your spouse with the greatest affection because of how he or she loves you? For sin has no power—it becomes trivial as a fly on the wall and you wish to be in the Kingdom forever.

Why does one get married? Does one get married for only the plausible reasons, which are to have children, to have sex, to share expenses, to obey laws, to follow acceptable and normal cultural practices? Or should one get married because one is excited to be able to serve and encourage another continuously, to share strengths and weaknesses and is excited to accept the strengths of another to add to his own self, to be able to feel compassion and be reminded of it continuously, truly commit to another person and triumph in the moments of personal tragedy? I relish the later much more than the former.

At one time, it was my belief that if I were not perfect to my spouse, my family, and others, or to my God, I would be outcast or left behind. I so relied on my spouse to accompany me and keep me from being lonely. I felt so alone because I had not yet found my savior Jesus. And so I had to be perfect in her eyes to what I thought perfect was. And after ten years of striving to be perfect, I could not—I failed miserably over the years. And then I blamed my spouse for not reassuring my perfection, or should I say what was actually my imperfection. If I would have only accepted my imperfections then, would I have saved so much grief later.

Many people assume imperfections are sins. But mortal imperfections can be just that, mistakes that are made but not necessarily sinful. Has it occurred to you that if it were not for un sinful mistakes, there would be no reason to celebrate God's creation of us? For it is the mistakes that enable us to realize our imperfections compared to His righteousness. Un sinful mistakes are like forgetting to turn off the television at night to conserve power. These are of no consequence for to make a mistake over mortal ambitions is the same as seeking mortal idols. It is wasteful. But if you idolize television greater than spending time with your spouse or giving time to God, then it is a sin because you have decided that the Holy Spirit within is not important enough. But do not grieve, especially for the Holy Spirit (Eph 4:30). Realize it, repent, and move on.

I tell you, when you are in His Time, do not mind yourself with mortal mistakes because they will always happen, and minding them is if you are saying I'd rather grieve over mortal ambition rather than celebrate God. Do not even bother with such wastefulness, let it be like the wind as it comes and goes and it never stills your breathing, not for one second. Let your task be to focus on the Holy Spirit, and when you lose that focus, have something close to you that reminds you of Him, like your spouse, the Word, or a mortal symbol—not to idolize the symbol but to steer your mind back in the right focus.

Now, back to my pride. My spouse did not want perfection from me, but a man of serving, loving, acceptance, and unconditional love. A man that my spouse could trust to always be there through hardship and through good and everything in between. I was my spouse's soul mate, and only in my humbleness through embarrassment and accountability did I come to realize this. Also, before this realization, I was in denial that my spouse had any imperfections—that is my spouse had to suit me in the mortal sense to all perfection of my liking. This type of pride will promote heaps of suffering for it is in the faith of the Lord that will suit each other perfectly in everlasting life, not in the faith of any mortal and not of your own selfish needs—for then you idolize man over the Holy Spirit. It was my intent for my spouse to be perfect in my eyes thus to validate my controlling behavior due to my own insecurities and aid in my denial to feel and thus covering any existence of my own flaws. But I tell you this, to all that read this, you will never fully transform into the Body of Christ unless you feel and unless you accept your weaknesses as well as your strengths. For it is the righteous man who understands his own strengths and weaknesses so he can be humbled and seek those people that God has chosen to have the gifts in the areas he is weaker in. For the weaknesses are made stronger by the strengths of others. And so shall your faith become stronger when you listen to those that have more faith where you have less faith.

Especially in today's world, it is ironic that one actual type of strength in a person is being able to identify his or her weaknesses, yet one very common type of delusionally perceived weakness is refusing to accept or even acknowledge weaknesses in himself or herself and in others. The latter is very common in today's society where perfection is awarded and anything less is seen as weak. This is a trick of the enemy because it is mortal perfection that is sought which takes up all your energies away from spiritual perfection, which can only be attained by giving up your mortal selves. Yes, many things would run much smoother if people realized that the goal is not to achieve the pace that they require of themselves and others, but to achieve the pace and direction created uniquely for them by God for His purpose. Many times delegation is seen as

weakness, when again it should be rewarded if it will result in further serving because the strength of the one who delegates is in the understanding that he or she is out of pace or approaching being out of pace with the Creator in his or her unique way. Money is one of the greatest material and mortal obsessions that will deter him from acknowledging weaknesses in others or finding the strength to manage in such a way as to decrease his profits in order to profit from his people in the way God intended.

The Lord does not intend for us to seek Him alone, but through His gift of the Holy Spirit, through Jesus, who is in every one of us who have asked to receive Him. If you are having a hard time sensing your Holy Spirit this day, sense it in others and then it will remind you of your own and you will become that much more thankful you have it, for it is wonderful to have found what you thought you had lost: He was always there, He never left you and He never will. But rejoice my brothers and sisters with all your excitement for you found again Jesus, though you really never lost Him, and you found your salvation. Celebrate so you will always remember the feeling and never forget it. Understand that a common denominator must exist to attain God that much quicker. In the spiritual state, it is our Holy Spirit. In the mortal state, it may be an addiction or any problem. This is why coming together as a group and finding and discussing that common denominator makes you feel better because you are allowing the Lord to now heal you.

And so when another becomes perfect for the sole purpose of the other, he or she sends the delusional message that there are no sins in the other. But when one accepts sin in him and the other sees it and accepts it as well, shall the sin begin to have no power. For the sins begin to be like flies on the wall—disturbances but not impediments because the person begins to feel God's Grace and wishes to stay longer within God's Law. This is the crux of the reason behind our Savior's crucifixion. He died on the cross to say admit your sin and give it to me so that you can be clean once again.

I say this—acceptance and unconditional love are the apex of serving. Once achieved, you free up yourself and the other to recognize the abundance of free space for the practicing and achieving the love God wills upon you. For that space which was once used to cover your sins, as a heavy blanket of despair covering your sins, will become as sumptuous air for you to roam in now and then eventually become the Holy Air of Heaven as you learn the love and gifts within it and within your Holy Spirit. For this I do not know how either but will result by the Will of God—as you roam through the earth's cleansed air (that which has been cleansed by God and experienced through your Holy Spirit) will your past repented sins be as pebbles below your feet. You know they are there but they will not impede you from walking in God's Law, in the abundant air, because the guilt and shame has been lifted. And you will learn from what you sense from within. And as you begin to walk in the spiritual realm and practice relying on the Holy Spirit, do I see air overflowing and the pebbles only a dream and do you sense nothing but the overwhelming joy, the Holy Air through your nostrils and the seeing of only space abundant. And will you be in virtuous patience. For you are free to roam wherever you choose, freely and upon trust of the Lord will the teachings from the Almighty come upon you as you roam in His Time. For this is where you are—in His Time. And at that point, when He sends His teachings, shall you stop and learn joyfully what is meant for you to learn until you are sent forward once again still in the transparent clean air to love, to live, to sleep, to walk in abundant joy until a

new teaching comes upon you by and from His Will and Glory. Shall you then relish in His Glory. Shall you relish in it now while upon this earth? And if so great now, how much greater will it be in Heaven?

And in marriage. Have you been in marriage to a fantasy, a mirage you imagine better than the real person you married? For is it not so that being accompanied by a mirage comes from not only a lost soul in you but alludes to a soul that was never there beside you either? Are you not alone while you provide this imaginary perfect image? Is it not the image you focus upon rather than the one below it.? Thus, upon realizing this, I ask, would you rather spend your life trying to love something that isn't there, that eludes the Holy Spirit like the mist that dissipates in the morning sun and that sunlight be your mortal love, or accept and unconditionally love that which is real before you and made of God in His Image and loved by Jesus, as well? For to love unconditionally and fully accept the person who God created in whole and of which is of the Body, that is with his or her righteousness and flaws and everything in between, is the apex of honoring Him. I am not speaking of unconditionally accepting his or her actions, but the person behind those actions. His or her actions may be outside God's Law.

Peace be with you. And remember, understand that now you truly love and accept your neighbor as you love and accept yourself by and in the gift of the Holy Spirit. For it is said, God shall love you perfectly with all His perfection for all of eternity. I Love You, Lord.

25. On Perfection

*Remember that if everything works perfectly
then that means you are required to work perfectly.
Is that what you want?
The more you free others, the more you free yourself.*

I have noticed many people needing to be perfect and not for God, but for others. You say, "I need not be perfect for you. Who do you think you are?" But I say, it is not I who you began to be perfect for. Was it not someone you loved in your past but whom did not accept you, nor accept the person God created? And did I not just say someone you Loved? Yes, you did love, you knew how to love way before the pain and so shall you love again. For only love is left once the pain is gone. Listen, I beg of you! Be it now for some of you that the pain is the friend and love the stranger, but with Jesus, shall the pain become the stranger and love become your friend for Jesus is Love.

We must first understand the meaning of perfect. In Matthew 5:48, Jesus says, "Be perfect, therefore, as your heavenly Father is perfect." Did you know that the Hebrew translation for the word "perfect" is "compassionate"? Jesus is saying for us to strive toward perfect love in our hearts. We are not to become perfect people. God knew what He was doing when He made us imperfect. To strive to be perfect like God in everything we do is exactly opposite of why God created us. But to strive to be compassionate like God is a good thing—though, He knows that we will fall short as well. But striving to be greatly compassionate to one another throughout our lives will deliver to us the greatest rewards or treasures within. And to become greatly compassionate, we must first believe and experience the love God has for us. So then our

journey must be first to develop a personal and intimate relationship with God, even before we can truly become compassionate to our neighbor. And that is ok. That is what God wants for all of us. He doesn't want you to *have* to be compassionate to your neighbor but *want* to be compassionate to your neighbor. As we become compassionate greater and greater by our intimate relationship with the Holy Spirit, our morality will automatically become visible greater and greater. But forced morality results in false compassion.

“Having to” do something (especially if we know it is not right) comes from an outside force which a lot of the time in our own delusional natural minds stipulates condemnation, which leads us to always believing we are not worthwhile on our own and promotes heaps of fear within ourselves. “Wanting to” do something out of love comes from an inside force (the Holy Spirit) which produces fulfillment within and our true loving identities. This is the difference between enslavement and empowerment.

Why did 3rd Army follow General Patton in WWII and become the most successful regiment to ever go into battle? This was because Patton: 1) was highly experienced and told his troops how it was and what it was going to be like (He didn't advertise a scheme to manipulate them and, thus, he served and respected them.); 2) trained his troops in a very high standard that exceeded even their own expectations of what they could do individually and as a team (He provided self-respect, fulfillment, and dignity to all his troops and humbled them to depend on one another.); 3) was consistent in his actions and authority (When you worked for Patton, you knew exactly what you were going to get whether you liked it or not. He wasn't out to please anyone but be obedient to God in heaven.); 4) was always looking at the big picture which was the annihilation of evil (He knew that unless you persevered at fighting evil and not dig foxholes everywhere you went, evil would overcome you.); 5) made it very clear to his men that he had a God in heaven who was supreme commander over him (He always had to be accountable for his own actions because he worked for God.); and 6) was very confident that where he was and who he was at every given moment was the plan and responsibility of God Almighty (Thus, he did not fear death because he knew that death was only a part of everlasting life within the schedule of God's influence.). Through all this and more, General Patton empowered (not enslaved) his troops to produce. And that was why they were so successful.

So now ask yourself. Did General Patton need to be perfect in his actions to have been created perfectly? Even though General Patton was definitely human and most definitely acted human, he *was* created perfectly. And this is just like you and me. We never have to be perfect to please anyone because we have already been created perfectly by God for a specific purpose. Our only job is to find out what that purpose is by seeking an intimate relationship with the Almighty, succumbing to His wishes, and then doing it. Never mind yourself whether you are perfect along the way. Remember, you are not supposed to be perfect along the way because God, in His infinite wisdom and in the vast pattern of things, created us human for His own purpose. It is not for us to question why we are human, but just accept that we are and be human. God does not need us perfect. He needs us human. By striving to always be perfect, we will most probably miss our true purpose and Godly useful opportunities on this earth, and thus, succumb to misery.

Now, this is the rub of it all. If we understand that God needs us human and we allow ourselves to be human, then we will be ok with everyone around us being human. What we will ask of our

brethren, though, is to lead productive lives in being useful for God in some way—but never in our way. We know that when one is leading a useful life to God expressed in one’s own unique way, one feels good about oneself. Because we are sanctified, it is not important if we are perfect or even concentrate on being perfect (morally or otherwise) during this useful production. What is important is that we are continually persevering toward a Godly goal thus, in the meantime, living a useful life in accordance to God’s purpose specifically, uniquely, and personally translated to each one of us by the Holy Spirit. We must trust that our Godly morality will automatically and undoubtedly shine through and beyond our human nature in some form or fashion, especially in the critical times. Then we will see the Holy Spirit at work and trust it is there rather than fearing that it isn’t by trying to sustain perfection. That “what if it isn’t there” fear will begin to go away. Yes, we must allow ourselves to be human in order to be able to trust in God. That is just how we were created and that is therefore how we must be.

Who was it for you who required you to be perfect for them? Who in your past was using you to hide their own pain and humiliation by wanting you to be a perfect show to others? Who was the alcoholic, the addict, the abuser, the guilt-ridden person, the enabler and protector of the mentally-ill in your family presenting you as a shield for them instead of asking God to help them? Now you may see that it’s not God who needs you perfect but people who are probably ashamed of themselves who need you as a shield. You must resign yourself as a human shield and go work for God. God takes precedence over all other and requires His children to face their own fears with Him.

Those who do not accept you as you are do not, in whole, accept the Lord in their hearts. For I say, acceptance of others and yourself is proportional to your acceptance of the Lord. But the Lord shall pour upon you multitudes so that your mortal acceptance will grow slowly. When beginning in faith, seeing is believing and the more you see the more you will believe until you are sure that He is there. He Is There, Brothers and Sisters! He Is There!

Is it not an insult to the Lord Himself to not accept His Child? So then my children, be insulted when someone does not accept you! For He is in you. But then forgive them because they do not realize what they could have within them. Who do they see, your mortal self or the Lord who lays within? Who do you see when you see yourself in the mirror? I see the Lord when I see you. I love you, my brothers and sisters. Love Jesus for then you shall love yourself and in the way He loves you. Try not to fear. If you have to, close your eyes and extend your hand, and He will take it gently, slowly, and lovingly.

And I say, who do they think they are when others blame you or do not accept you? To think that someone can mold another is delusional thinking that he or she can create in others better than what God has already created in you. Who does not trust that the Almighty knew what He was doing when He created His Child? For if you place yourself within the living, the place where the Law of the Land is God, will you not help and encourage others to see and abide by His Law also. But, no, those who do not unconditionally love others do not even abide by His Law. They wish and help and encourage others to abide by their own! They may as well idolize and pray to themselves. And in doing so, they will not hear the Holy Spirit. They will hear the voices of their past—hollow and with empty promises.

How is it that they substitute their law for His Law? For you should not substitute but replace your law with His Law. Are you scared that you yourself will not be perfect and fail under His Law? Yes, it is true He wishes for you to strive to achieve perfect compassion but do you not understand that this is why the Lord sent His only Son, Jesus, for you. He sent Him to die for your sins so you can also forgive yourself as you work through the pain and continue your journey towards Him. He has given to you His armor to make you invincible to achieve your final goal. Believe it is there, I know it is. Ask for it and you shall receive it for He has given to you the gift of His Holy Spirit and with it automatic forgiveness upon your realization of the sin you have done and the sin you think you have done but what only others have done to you. I believe He forgave you even before your realization of the sin, but only until you realize the sin, then shall you realize His Grace in forgiving you of your sin.

Now, the Lord sent His Son, Jesus, because He knew you could not be perfect as humans under His Law, but you are perfect as a worthwhile being to receive His Love because you are His Child created by Him. He Loves You So Much! How much more can I instill this in you? I say this to you much because I can only plant the seed of knowledge and hope, but He will make your seed a garden of beautiful color and cultivate your garden forever. When you see a beautiful flower, let that flower remind you of the beautiful garden inside you. And as the Lord cultivates the earth, how much more will He cultivate you for you are so much more important than the earth, for you are His Child, of His Body, you are His Magnificent Creation. Unbelievers will gather upon you when you are most vulnerable to tell you otherwise, especially when you are the most vulnerable as a child, but God is angry at them, for when they attack you, they attack Him. And I tell you, He will crush them with their wickedness. Do all you can to leave them, physically and spiritually for God has taken care of them.

When someone is after you and you are scared of them and you run from them, and then a wolf comes from out of nowhere and tramples them to the ground and you look back, do you not at first say, "Go Wolf, Kill ." But then as the wolf shreds them slowly and you see the enormous pain they are in, do you not then, partly because you know they cannot hurt you anymore but mostly because they are crying out, say, "Please stop, Wolf. That is enough." God is your wolf. And the Holy Spirit within you is the same God. For God saw your pain and trampled the source of it. Then through your Holy Spirit enabled you to turn and face the source of that pain and become angry at it as He was and then forgive it as He does whether it has learned its lesson or not. Whether it has or not, it is in God's hands to do with as He pleases. But you are now empowered by Him to leave it and not go back.

Have you faced your enemy? And do you believe that they are in the pain of the wolf's claws? If they dissolve their pride, hopefully they will ask mercy of the wolf. Will they respect the wolf then? And will you see the wolf when you face them. And will not the same wolf who trampled them from the outside in, be the one to lick your wounds from the inside out. The wolf is your protector, your teacher, and your life's love. If you have a hard time seeing the Lord through people, see the Lord through another of God's creatures. For He created them by His own Hands just like He created you. This will help you begin to notice God in others. Learn from the meek. Choose whom you truly know loves you. As the wolf licks your wounds, do you surround yourself with people who keep them open or give you new wounds? As the wolf protects you, do you surround yourself with people who let you be harmed? As the wolf loves

you unconditionally, do you surround yourself with people who place conditions on you to deserve their love?

My child, you are worthwhile to receive all the love He wants to give you. And He wants to give you all of it. Just Ask For It! He already sent His Son to teach you how to have it. Away with those who say you are wrong in believing! Away with those who say you do not love as they do! Be humble and seek knowledge but never let anyone tell you that the way you love is wrong for it is the way God placed it within you for His cause. Ask the wolf to put them at bay! And for those that love you with the Love of Jesus or who are hurt and require mercy, ask the wolf to go out as well—in order for it to lick their wounds. For God is a Merciful God because He is a Loving God.

Remember, He held you long before any mortal on this earth did. This is why you were born with total faith, love, and joy in your heart. In this world, few things really matter. But, I believe among those few are:

- * To realize love and the loving from God and His only begotten Son Jesus and from us to them.
- * To understand and accept the Holy Spirit that dwells within you.
- * To exemplify Jesus through unconditional love and acceptance of yourself and others by and through our Holy Spirit.
- * To forgive yourself and others for God has already forgiven you upon your realization of your sin.
- * To accept that the Lord has always been with you.

Shall you forgive yourself enough to receive the Gift of the Holy Spirit which He has willingly given us because He unconditionally loves us. For He does not give the Gift of the Holy Spirit to a select few but to all on this earth (who inevitably took on various degrees of sin as they lived) so that it may cleanse your dirt and so you may come home to Him to where you were born. Some have said that the Holy Spirit is yet in you and that only when you ask for it will it then be with you. Who knows the mind of God before He communicates His Will to you? Either way, the Holy Spirit will be with you upon your realization through admittance and acceptance, thus by asking. Shall you then be able to receive its fortunes. But I choose to think that all I see have the Holy Spirit, whether they realize it or not. In this way, I remain humble and am not tempted to judge in my mortal state. I believe we are full of love when we are born. And we, as once children, are able to proclaim that love.

So then, see the Holy Spirit in all whom you meet, even if you only see them briefly. For then you shall speak to them with the Lord in mind and your words will be encouraging by honoring them. And when they speak harshly or dishonor your Spirit will you be able to forgive them for you have known yourself lost and in pain before you realized Jesus in Heaven and the love of Jesus in you. By understanding this, you will further help them find their Spirit you envision in

them, and you will better be able to direct them toward it. For to work without a cause or a goal is fruitless but when you envision the outcome will your journey be straighter. But I believe you must be patient and ask the Lord to guide you because your pace to salvation is not the same as any others, but it is imperative.

It is also important that you realize the Lord has always been with you because Love never fails and never gives up though you may not realize nor see Him because you have yet to forgive yourself and receive your Holy Spirit. And so, if He has been with you no matter what and throughout your sins and still loves you and accepts you by His Unfailing Grace, does it matter whether others do? For do you realize and idolize others better than you do the Lord? Do you not realize that others will fail you at times because of your expectations, but Love never fails and the Lord is Pure Love? Shall you abide by His Law in true faith and not by the law of others that is filled with sin, for then you shall be filled with their sins in addition to your own, as well. Can others forgive you perfectly and automatically as God does? Can you see that faith in Him—what you see with your Spirit—is far greater than what you see with your eyes of others? Do not believe everything you see with your mortal eyes for the devil is tricky, but what you see with your spiritual eyes (Holy Spirit) trust, for that is the pathway to the Lord, who's love and loving is perfect.

26. Original and Greatest Sin of Yesterday and Today (Feeling ashamed because we think we've disappointed God)

Who of you say original sin is sex? For I say sex is not original sin. For the Lord created sex as to be enjoyed in love by two who are married in His name. Many a mortal equate nakedness with sex. Has this world been cursed by our own ignorance since that time to continue to hate our bodies of which form God created uniquely for each of us? Look around today. Is there obsession in mortals perfecting their bodies by mortal means instead of celebrating the perfection of our bodies simply because the Perfect Creator created them? Have we been taught for eons that sex is bad and is not righteous simply because ignorant mortals equated naked awareness with sex? I believe original sin is not sex, for sex is as natural as eating or sleeping, but to each shall be done and obeyed within the Law of God.

Original sin is the shame of the perfection of which God created us. It is the focus upon ourselves rather than on the pure and unconditional love of the Lord for us. For did not Adam and Eve become ashamed of themselves? Did they not first love and honor God and love the other unconditionally with total acceptance? The first and greatest sin was that they focused on themselves and lost trust and faith for the One God that they were created innocently by. So much so that they were ashamed of themselves once exposed when God came to them and asked them what they did because they felt they had disappointed God so much that there was no way to repent for it. They then thought themselves not worthwhile to receive God's perfect love ever again (Genesis 2:25). Is not this the goal of satan? For satan knows he cannot take away the love God has for us but he can make great headway in making us believe us not to be worthwhile of God's love and stay in shame. Even today, many of us are still, in our delusional minds, bearing the guilt and shame of our first parents not realizing that Jesus died to release even that from us.

We, as humans, sin and are sometimes undeserving of such perfect love in our sin, but we are always worth the Lord's time to be redeemed in His eyes. He continues to love us unconditionally while we sin and forgives us with the unrelenting hope that we shall realize our sins and come back to Him. When satan is successful in creating any belief within you that you are not worthwhile to receive God's Love, satan knows he has a greater chance that you will go to him because, I believe, that unkept, unrepented sin will lead a human to desperately follow whoever wishes to lead. And I have spoken of desperation being the furthest away from God's Guiding Hands. For satan has no power over the Perfect Lord but can make unruly strides in those who are fallible. Remember, satan cannot work on us through our Holy Spirit and the portion that abides by God's Law and is thus connected to Him, but satan can tempt us and work through our sins which are disconnected from God by our own mortal means. For if our sins are unrepented, satan will inevitably succeed by leading us to our mortal deaths and, because we have not repented or accepted our Maker's love, the enemy may prevent us from spiritual life in the Kingdom of God. For it is God, not satan, who has the final word of who will and who will not live in the Kingdom. So, you see, satan has no real power where there is faith in and acceptance of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, even in death.

So then, we must pray to the Lord so He can take your sin and cleanse it by His incredible Mercy and Unfailing Grace so to keep it from the grasp of the devil. Believe and have faith brothers and sisters, as the Lord wills in me, and trust that the Lord will do this for us in a blink of an eye, and it will be done just as quickly for He loves us in a way that allows us to be of the Body of Christ. And of that I am in such awe of my Father to allow us to be—not that I am not worthwhile to be loved by Him, but that I have been and am to this day undeserving of Him at many a time and He still wishes me to be with Him. That is unconditional love. I Love You my Lord.

27. Addictions and Obsessions and the Art of Self-Control

I prayed yesterday and this is what the Wondrous God revealed to me today:

In recent past it was made known to me that those suffering with addictions have most difficulty when in the state of hunger, anger, loneliness, tiredness, and boredom. At the time, I had understood this to mean that when hungry, when angry, when lonely, when tired, and when bored that addiction is greatly prone to come as a thief in the night and try to consume. Thus, you tried to control even the natural and Godsent states and thus, in my mind's eye, tried to control that of which came from God. This I have found cannot be done. For who can control that which has come from God, including controlling others and us? More, who wishes to control that which comes from God? For there is God's hunger, anger, loneliness, and tiredness that can be aiding in God's productive work for us on earth and then there are those similar states that are destructive to us.

And then the revelation came not from me, but from the Living God and He said to me that you who are in addiction, obsessions and in mental ailment realize this: To numb the pain which occurs inside you and to avoid the dirt which in faith I, The Lord, shall heal, you do not react to that which I give you but choose that which I do not give you in order to numb that which separates Me from My Child. For you choose the sinful hunger, that is to be hungry

purposefully to warm your soul with worldly food so as to be productive and filled but not fulfilled and forget and numb your pain. And does not the pain return? For you choose to be angry and lash out at yourself through guilt, shame, and physical pain and on others through your words, gestures, and physical immoralities so as to forget and numb the pain. And does not the pain return? For you choose to be lonely and isolate yourself from My other Children who I wish for you to be with, serve, and be also with in My Word so I may gather My Flock, but you isolate and thus fantasize and do immoral things to yourselves in order to forget, disconnect from the now, and numb the pain. And does not the pain return? And you choose to be tired. As in the other cases, you make it happen. And thus you do not sleep and when you do sleep you do not rest. And then your mind cannot think of and analyze your pain. And thus you forget and numb the pain. And does not the pain return?

For in that what I give you, that which comes from Me, do as I say. When you are hungry—eat. When you are angry—speak to your brethren. When you are lonely—share with your brethren. And when you are tired—relax, even if you cannot sleep. Produce and hunger to serve Me, be with Me, and collect My Flock, and I will fulfill you and give you My food to comfort you; shall you be angered over the acts of the unrighteous, the unruly, and wicked and act justly on it according to My Laws upon those who disobey My Laws, and shall I ease your pain and suffering through mercy; shall you be lonely, for to serve Me in a world of much unruly and arrogance and disbelief, shall many turn away from you, but I shall keep you company Myself and I will choose others to keep you company as well, for you are My Mortal Child; and shall you be tired, for to serve Me takes much energy and is why I will give all the abundant energy you require, and your tiredness will be one of great comfort, and then shall you sleep and rest deeply in the safe haven of My Kingdom where no turbulence can ever reach you for you will sleep in My Arms and only My Love will caress you. For I Am The Lord, the All Powerful and The All Loving.

In the mortal understanding, the Lord gave to us three divisions of our mind. The “L” or left or logical division (that of which most males dwell in and so do many women), the “R” or right or feeling (that of which most women are very in touch with but not so many men) and the “F” or frontal lobe or basic functions (such as tiredness, anger, sex, hunger, thirst, fear, etc. which both male and female dwell in equally). When one portion is not in proper function as God intended all to be, another compensates for it, for the total mind will always try to balance itself. But the only way the three can work in harmony is to give up and accept the Holy Spirit to maintain them.

The Holy Spirit becomes your lifelong regulator—a supernatural engine that will not quit. You will never reach harmony until you give your mind up to God to run—that is, lose your mind. Lose your mind not as the insane do, for they are still in their own mind and have super-overcompensated leading to destruction, but give it up to the Lord. For then you shall think, feel, and function in the way and pace you were created by Him to do so. And then you will do the work of the Lord in the special way God created you to do. And you will know your calling for your mind will now listen to the Lord. For we are all of the Body. And you will be on your way to becoming one with Him through your now spiritual mind, as you are leaving your mortal mind behind. And when all parts begin to function together in harmony then you will understand the Love of God.

You, yourself, cannot rule your mind for you will be in turmoil all your life and each division will fight for the right to compensate for the other. But when you give them up to God, neither division rules over the other and God creates pure balance. And does not the mind make the body move? And thus when God speaks to your mind which makes your body move, will your body move as God intended—that is through love. You will not hit, instead you will comfort. You will not discourage, instead you will encourage. You will not overindulge in eating, instead you will eat when hungry and move on. You will not seek sexual immorality, instead you will provide sexual intimacy to your spouse. But in order to give up entirely, you must trust and have faith. And in order to do this you must risk that what trauma was inflicted upon you in the past will not kill you if it happens again and you must realize that the Lord is the Ultimate Loving Lord and will never forsake you. And this, my brothers and sisters, means you must go through the pain of lowering your guard and allowing the Lord to come to you. But you are not alone, you will never be alone.

In today's society, there are so many mind inhibitors and anti-basic function (anger, sex, eating, fear, etc.) drugs on the market. Many of the manufacturers say that they are not addictive. Their research may show that now, but from my experience I do not see how any of these drugs will not become addictive. Let me explain the way I understand it:

I believe avoidance is the main culprit in mental illness. We know fear is the main culprit in our own abilities to function normally. As I have said before, the mind always seeks balance so that it can find God. If I grew up in fear of some kind, I may not wish to ever think about it again. Therefore, my right brain overcompensates and I play on my emotions and moods to get me through and so I am sending signals to my frontal lobe to take up the slack on my basic functions. If I grow up feeling bad and I do not wish to feel. Therefore, my left brain overcompensates and I play on my thinking and logic and intelligence gets me through and so I am sending signals to my frontal lobe to again take up the slack on my basic functions. The more I avoid the left or right brain, the more slack does my frontal lobe have to take up. And so if I overcompensate thinking, I go into obsession, anxiety which I do not know how to deal with because I've cut off my much of my right brain. And if I cut off my right brain altogether, madness will occur because you have now forced passages from your right brain and the dam has broken. This may be why some people say he or she has snapped. And if you have a lot of anger in you while this happens, you will sense that anger plus euphoria should go together, which is very delusional. And now I say, ok I don't want to think that way, so now I've cut off my left brain. Then comes even greater overcompensation of the frontal lobe and I fall into greater depression, addiction, anger, etc. How much hurt do you think the leader behind September 11th had in his childhood?

Mind inhibitors are just that—drugs that inhibit the normal routes of the mind that enable you to stay in your own avoidance modes. Manufacturers, who keep pushing these drugs on people in mass quantities, are people who appear to either not love you or are careless in their methods to help you. Their advertising may say differently, but many care about making money off of your suffering and they rather you continue to avoid so they can continue to avoid. How many manufacturers take the initiative to partner with professional behavioral specialists and the Christian community so that you will be able to ease off their drugs over time? And furthermore,

how many of those stabilize their prices of the drugs even though they know you as a potential customer will not need them as long?

So, then remember the mind always balances itself. So, if I do not want to think about past incidents that are bad or feel past incidents that are bad, I will definitely have mental illness in my frontal lobe. Then I say I'll just take a mind inhibiting (altering) drug. Mind altering drugs are just that—instead of having the right brain and left brain to face your fear, you have a drug that replaces the right and left brain. So, now your frontal lobe is tricked into thinking that the drug is your left and right brain feeding it. And if your mind always seeks balance between the three divisions, then your frontal lobe will not give up on that drug if you keep avoiding your fear. And then you keep running from God rather than doing what you were created to do and that is pursue Him.

I'm not saying that some do not need such a drug for a time because of the severity of their situations, but I believe if you also seek professional help and ask God to guide you into that desert, you will not need the drug as much and you will begin to feel more fulfilled in your life. And the way God will guide you is by asking you to believe in the life and resurrection of His Son so that you will also know the definition of grace and feel it so you can forgive yourself along the way and find more and more love.

You cannot do it by yourself and God never expects you to. You are His Child. What loving parent would bear a child and send the child into a desert alone without any provision and say I want to see if you can survive? That is a wicked parent. And what loving parent would bear a child and then overprotect the child so the child does not have to follow God into any desert because the parent is really the one who cannot bear the desert? That is a selfish parent. Either way, the parent is acting out for their own selves, whether they realize it or not. And that really is the crux. I have seldom met a parent that intentionally does these things to his or her child because the parent just loves to see the child suffer miserably. We have a name for that—it is called an insane psychotic. And some people may call life a desert—randomly walking around miserably and muddling through until the end with no purpose and no one there to teach them. And then some others call life mostly wonderful because they have a teacher but also because they are human too and will think negatively here and there like we all do from time to time. So what is the difference? The difference is whether you have a relationship with the God of All-Love with you or you don't. And the only way to have a relationship with the God of All-Love with you is through Jesus Christ, His Son. God has sent teachers for us since the beginning of human existing, beginning with Himself as the greatest teacher, but we keep refusing to listen. So, then He sent His Only Son so you cannot refuse. It is clear—choose life or choose death because if you choose anything else other than life, you will continue to destroy yourself.

As children, we usually grow up not being taught how to deal with pain because our parents usually were not very educated on the matter either. And so more and more avoidance is produced every generation because there becomes an increasing amount of stressors from the outside every generation. It is a vicious cycle because one cannot exist without the other. And so greater and greater mental illness is present every generation. I'm telling you, we must be educated in how to deal with pain from a very young age or we are going to wind up leaving a legacy of psychosis for later generations. But many people do not want to deal with all this and

you know why? Avoidance. Even from an early age, most men are taught to avoid their feelings which is their right brain. I believe that by having a personal relationship with God and having faith in His Son, you can deal with this and so much more because you are fulfilled within and you know He is always there around you and within you.

And now I speak of spanking. What does spanking do? Spanking disassociates two events—spanking and the harmful event. It is my belief that when our children are out of reality, we must provide them a practical way of them choosing their own discomfort to help them understand reality. For instance, a two year old who continuously ignores his parents and keeps running out into the street must be made aware of the consequence through some other apparatus that will not kill him. In other words, it may be necessary to reconstruct the scary event by allowing the child to go through it without the obvious death or damaging repercussions. Today, we have the simulation technology to help our children understand. We can provide a way of their fantasy to meet up with our reality or their irresponsible emotions to meet up with responsible reasoning. Now, there is a vivid association between event and consequence and not just event with another event. The consequence and the event must happen simultaneously to get the point across. Spanking and the inappropriate event do not happen simultaneously. Spanking produces an understanding in a child that they can do the inappropriate event as long as they can stay away from those who will spank them. And we never want our children to fear us so much that they will avoid us. God does not give us diseases because we are bad. God allows us to choose good or bad acts and allows us to reap the consequences by the degree of His own judgment.

Make believe what a loving and nurturing parent would be to you and that is God plus so much more. Don't believe people who tell you God will pound you because you are mostly wicked. These people are wicked and avoiding their own fears. That is the voice of their own wicked past that they do not wish to face. And so they use God as an avoidance mechanism and hide behind Him. In other words, they take a daily dose of God to ease their pain and not because they just want to love Him back for what He has given them. And the pain keeps on returning in greater amounts because they choose not to follow God into the desert. They place God in front of them as if they could control God. Now some ask God to shield them for a time and He says yes. That is why He says come follow Him. Controlling Him and asking Him are two very different things. And now we now that control is an avoidance mechanism as well. That is why you must admit your defeat and choose Christ as your Savior because then you will know grace and you will follow. And then you will cry like a baby from all that hurt and your pain will begin to subside. And God will place you in His arms and comfort you.

I say to you, not I but the Lord, that as My Child (as the Apostle Paul conveys in 2Cor 12), My Grace is sufficient enough. You must not run and numb and forget your pain. You must go through it, for as I say I will be there with you with endless grace and forgiveness along the way for you will flaw (sin) but I will pick you up each and every time with all My Love to journey us forward. For I tell you, as I have said, believeth in Me and your journey will not be easy but your reward will be great and you shall inherit the riches within My Kingdom. You shall be healed and thus enter through the gate and be within the walls of the Great Sanctuary on Earth. Even in that place inside you which I have provided you as My Holy Spirit to which it is now yours as well, I send My Angels to retrieve you. For My Holy Spirit within you is perfect and My Kingdom here where I dwell is so as well. Thus, My Angels are sent only from those places

I dwell. Believeth in Me, for My Grace is upon you even now as we speak. You are My Child and I shall do whatever it takes to collect you and bring you back home to Me. Do not feel guilt. Do not feel shame. Feel worthwhile to receive My Love on your journey back home. For all those are wasteful and My Grace, Mercy, and Forgiveness sanctifies you from these destructive thoughts and feelings. When you feel these or think these, for you will because you are My Mortal Children, give them up to Me with trust and faith and these destructive thoughts and feelings will disappear because they will be in My Hands now. And move on. They shall for I have spoken My Word and My Word is a pact of unwaivering truth between Me to you from now until the end of time.

Today, 12-step programs are abundant and have helped a great many to a certain extent. I myself have primarily used the act of sex, among other more healthy coping mechanisms, to avoid my pain of abandonment and loneliness. For many years, I asked God and imagined Him battling the hurtful voices of my past. Sometimes even to get to sleep, I would imagine myself in a bubble with Him guarding the perimeter. Because He was God, He would not let anything through. He would say, "This is My Child. It is time for Him to sleep. Begone with all this commotion. Sleep, My Child, sleep. I will not leave you." He has been my one true inspiration throughout my life. In my experience, the 12-step program is a process of the spiritual gift of healing given to us by God. However, many people take the 12 steps as a mortal to-do list instead of a spiritual list. As a spiritual list, one must acknowledge an all-knowing, all-powerful God and admit and accept the fact that we are powerless in mortality and acknowledge our sins, receive and experience God's love through the Holy Spirit from the resurrection of our Savior Jesus Christ, and give all mortal workings up to Him. Afterwards, the 12-steps happen in randomness unique to how the Lord speaks to each one of us. But we do heal because once you begin giving up everything to God, that means you give up the healing process from your hands to His. And you will then continually feel more whole and complete within. Remember, the more control you think you have over anything, the less control you actually do have over anything. The more control we give up to Him, the more complete we feel inside as we open the flood gates to His outpouring love.

This is extremely important: The receiving of the Holy Spirit is essential and, if you notice, is left out of the 12-step process as a specific objective. It is only through the Holy Spirit and understanding why and what came from Jesus dying on the cross that you will understand and feel the immense grace and thus love from our One True God. I have yet to know any other faith that can provide you this. That is why in order for you to understand why God does what He does and feel absolute love, we must go through Jesus Christ. Is there anyone else that can teach you and show you at every moment of your life the true path to everlasting love and therefore, everlasting life? You can seek another way all your life and I guarantee you will still feel like you are missing something. And if it is by the Will of God that you are the few who wind up feeling fulfilled without Christ, praise God. But what you may not understand is that grace has come upon you. And then because you do not understand, how will you truly appreciate what you have?

For it is when your energy level goes down, you choose to refocus on (reconnect to) and compare yourself to the world being out of a state of control, and you reconnect again to your neurosis. Your neurosis live in the world, not in God. They fool with your mind and make you

feel alone and also angry (usually due to some injustice placed upon you by the world) at the world for not giving you what God gives you. This is because you idolized the world for such a long time that these neurosis developed within yourself because you continually internalized who you were compared to what the world told you and expected of you. And when these neurosis reappear when your energy level drops (when you are hungry, tired, bored (unproductive)) within distracting you from your connection with love (with God), you are tempted (desperate) to return to the world of idolatry—either that of religion (moral law delivered through conditional worldly mothering or fathering) or sacrilegious (moral lawlessness delivered usually through substance or object or imposing direct contact). They both beckon to you, but both lead to death and destruction and are dead unto themselves. The truth is that your neurosis reappears and prompts you to believe there is something wrong with you and that you'll be left all alone again or the world will somehow nurture you (when it never did before). You believe it (idolize it) and disconnect yourself from the love of God. You don't feel love or loved, nurtured and safe. You revert from being connected to the love of God, back to self, and then back into the world pulled by some ego magnet.

But you are always connected to God, you just can't see it. Your neurosis is an illusion delivered from the world, deceiving you to come back. This is the time when your esteem (love) level drops because your mind is reverting back to old self, and we search for and re-search again the delusional comfort of what the world has to offer honestly believing that this time love will be there. Doing what the world wants you to do is so much easier, but you don't only lose yourself, you lose the true God in the process through delusional perception. Don't fall into it. Instead, pray and meditate and reflect to reconnect with God's love. Remember who you are in Christ and come to respect yourself again. Turn and face the Spirit and come back to love, to God and those who truly love you, and you will find your esteem return to you.

Now, here is the art of self-control. You can return to where you were in God just as fast as you reverted and disconnected yourself. You can go along the path forwards and backwards. Forwards is progression and backwards is regression. This is for me the Path of the Human Spirit: Belief (Choosing), Hope (Sacrificing), Faith (Trusting and Committing), Discipleship (Learning), Wisdom (Understanding), Humility (Respecting), Esteem (Loving), Acceptance (Forgiving), Allegiance (Devoting), Intimacy (Securing), Autonomy (Freeing), and Peace (Being). If you were at the Stage of Intimacy, you feeling out of control distracts your mind and makes you revert, unravels your's and others' devotion to, acceptance of, esteem for, respect for, comprehension (understanding) of, learning from, trusting of, sacrificing for, and belief of. If you reverted all the way back to the Stage of Belief (which I think you cannot lose entirely because of your Baptism, thus retaining at least a morsel of that of a mustard seed unless one starves themselves or deprives themselves of sleep to the point of death or insanity), start again there. But, understand that at each Stage you come to, you redo the stages before it only this time focused on the primary stage you are in. So to get to Faith, you first must choose to Believe in Christ, then you must choose to believe in Hope to then find hope. Then you must choose to believe in Faith or Trust, sacrifice in hoping to trust, and then you will find trust. And it unravels the same way. So, it is lengthy going up as well as coming down. You don't just lose it all at once. It all takes time and energy.

Realize that you must make a sacrifice of love to God through someone else or a personal something again because you will have to go through the next Stage of Sacrifice. But you are not lost, you are still in the City, you are still righteous. Don't let anyone tell you anything different. They do not understand that the path is a process (a journey on a river of many harbors) and that you may choose to be drawn back to the world but the only way back to the world is back along the path. Most people only see things as yes and no, black and white, right and wrong, good and evil, in with God or in with the devil. They do not understand the Path (River) and how it works (flows) because they are in the world and blind to it.

The quicker you see this happening, the quicker you can tell your mind to STOP!!! Bring your energy level back up by eating, sleeping, etc. and then start being productive by first refocusing on which stage you stopped at. Then perform the actions necessary to move forward along the path up to where you were. As you move forward, you will become less lonely and less angry because you are moving away from the world, not towards it. Know that the Seventh Stage is Esteem (Self-Esteem). The Path within the City starts at its Gate separating the world from the City at Stage One, to the Self (Stage Seven), and upward to the Kingdom of God on Earth (Stage Twelve), and then onward to Heaven (Sea of Jordan) after we physically die. This can be found in Ezekial 47, 48 and Revelation 22. The Second Coming is that of the Holy Spirit after the death of Christ and your dying and rebirth by choosing to believe in the death and resurrection of Christ to which he is the Gatekeeper.

28. Angels

I believe this: In the receiving of the Holy Spirit of the merciful God, that is as part of the Body of Christ He has freely given to you, shall then you notice the transport of angels from the Holy Place to inside all of you and around back into the Holy Place, continuously. For do you not know that the Lord sends you angels from His Kingdom in Heaven and His Kingdom within to not only cleanse you from the inside out but to convey messages and His signals to you? Imagine when you laugh uncontrollably without reason that the angels inside are playing and having fun tickling you. Or that when you feel and sense apprehension, what some may in this day call "the willies", angels are tugging at us saying "let's go somewhere else, this is not good for you". Angels are from the Lord as a gift for us to discern everyday events. They may pave the way for you on the outside so that you may know Him on the inside. Trust the angels, have faith, and you will be trusting the Lord as well for we are linked by the Holy Spirit within us, a gift from the Body of our Lord.

29. On Tithing

It is my belief that tithing was meant for you as a holy station of the Lord to not rely on money. For money will lead you away from the Lord the more you have of it in excess. I say I believe the Lord understands for us to require the basics on earth, but "basics" is a relative word. For the one who lives on the basic of food, shelter, clothing in meekness and still be greatly content within the beauty of the Lord and righteous in his or her thoughts and behaviors, shall inherit the Kingdom forth with. It is also our duty as Children of God to give up our money of excess so that those around us who do not fully understand the Grace of our Lord shall find it through our example of giving. But I tell you, to give to others tithing only to the poor is wrong. For the rich

are many who do not believe and are in dire straights in understanding. Do not just give to the poor defined by money but more importantly, give to the poor defined in spirit. When giving in material goods, give to achieve the basics and move to another. When giving in spirit, give as long as you are able and as long as they wish to receive the Word.

It is true that money will not make you happy, but a lack of money is not so much fun either. Though we should not rely on money for our happiness, it is necessary to understand how to be responsible with money the way God intends us to. As an educated man in and a lay-teacher of God's way in understanding money, there is a way God asks us to handle His money that He gives us. So then, I am not saying that one should always be poor, but it is in one's favor if he or she can find happiness while poor so he or she will not have to rely on money for happiness when he or she has some. Learn to be happy and content while poor and you will have little problems providing for others when you are rich.

30. On Judging

Judge no one (MT 7). For judging results in both no one listening and the loss of the example of Jesus on the present earth. Rely upon the Lord within and His Angels sent by God, for even the mortal "you" will become lost whether you judge yourself or judge others. I say only this, shine by example of our Lord's Son Jesus and have faith that that will be enough. For the one who realizes that he or she is filled with the Lord will have no need in filling himself with anything else. For when you judge, you require the mortal reassurance or mortal "filling" of your insecure soul, and by doing so, you will never become fulfilled. You'll just cripple yourself. Respect each other's requests without being judgmental. If someone says they don't like "this or that" then do not do "this or that" around them. Do not question it. Say yes to serving your brother or sister. Do not attack them for doing something you dislike as to say they are wrong for doing it. Approach them and say you do not appreciate what they do. They will know you are right or wrong in your request from inside themselves and from the resulting goodness of your disposition. Be an example not an executioner. And if you must teach, do it not from your own opinion but in love through the Holy Spirit, and thus by the understanding of the Words of Christ.

Judging enables your mortal thinking and the enemy to get in between you and the relationship that God chose for you with another. Understand that there are times that I sense evil, and then I pray and leave that one to the Will of God, but apprehension comes with judging and apprehension may make you leave but so are many times that those you are supposed to have a relationship with will make you uncomfortable, especially if you still abide by mortal thinking, which all of us do from time to time. I do not say run and dive into a relationship, especially if you have apprehension, but be cautious and pray for your acceptance and unconditional love by you for the other. For God's lessons are seldom easy. But the one who is filled with the Holy Spirit is secured by God and has greatest faith in Him who is within him. The one who judges himself, judges the angels, that is judges the Lord's creation and thus judges God, and thus starts to blaspheme.

The one who judges others has no basis to do so, for he cannot understand the reasons of the Lord, and thus begins to blaspheme, as well. For it is true, by the Word of Jesus and I am only

paraphrasing to help keep in my own mind, but is of MT 12:30, that those who judge and do so without realizing the Holy Spirit are forgiven but those who judge the Holy Spirit while in the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven (MT 12:31-32). We are mortals, and thus only perfection who judges the Perfect One will not be forgiven, but we could not as mortals because we cannot attain continual perfection in our state. And in those times you are in pure love in the Kingdom on Earth, love is love's essence for each one of us. For us who are sane to think of evil at the same time as love is not possible, but there are those that believe evil is love and love to do evil. These people are insane; I am speaking to you who are sane. Do not be afraid, for you will not judge Him as to never be forgiven as a mortal. God's incredible Grace will be placed on you and the Lord knows your heart. But who has tried to judge God to take His Place in Heaven? The enemy who refuses to repent.

Can you not see, for when you judge and thus try to control your own destiny, you are outside of His Time for your faith has fled? It is my experience that when you are filled with the Holy Spirit that when you see the Holy Spirit in another, humbleness comes upon you. And thus do you see the Working of God from within the other and then shall you have mercy on the mortal end. For realize this: When an unbeliever or low in faith is surrounded by True Christians on the outside and the Holy Spirit on the inside, he or she must choose one way or the other and the Christian will not wish to be chosen over the Lord. The Christian will not wish to be depended upon by the seeker for the salvation that the seeker seeks towards Him; and thus, with certainty, the Christian will not judge the other's mortal end either because in doing so would entice the seeker into doing just that—begin to depend on the Christian.

But realize there are two kinds of judging. The first judging is what I have spoken of above. This is the judging from the mortal state and relates to selfishness. This you should never do, as I have said. And then there is judging from the spiritual state which refers to serving mercifully so others may come to realize the righteous and loving path, though the mortal may see it as judging. This is the type of judging that the Apostle Paul speaks of in 1Corinthians 2:15 and again in 1Corinthians 4:3. Those in the spiritual state do not judge by your past actions, as in why you do so they can fix your every way and make you feel small, but in what they see when you are doing it and hear expressed to them through their Holy Spirit within (John 5:30). They may be compassionate and serve you by listening to why you do what you do, if you wish to speak, but only for your benefit of helping you correct your future actions so you will not hurt yourself anymore.

How can one in the spiritual state lead you to God if he does not compare your actions to the Law of God and help you back on the right path? Does not God help us back on the right path as well? And why judge myself if I have given myself up to Him so that He may fully correct me? My head is not full of logic trying to control my every action or decision. He calls me to act and it is a knowing that I should. How many times should I second-guess Him and then myself when He calls only to eventually act from my own logic and my own mortal will? And when I am not sure if it is Him or myself, I sit and pray and do not act because I know He will remind me and convict me at a later time. And sometimes at those later times I then become disappointed and say to myself that I missed the opportunity early. But why? I may have missed an opportunity, but He understands that I am His mortal child, and so He places new opportunities in front of me that I will see until the time comes that I am reminded and convicted. And then sometimes, all it

was was a nudge to say ok be ready for what will be coming so I may realize it when it comes. But in any case, when the Lord says jump, it is not our duty to ask how high. It is our duty to jump with the understanding that He has taken care of the height for us.

But know that if I am not on the righteous path, I wish for one of you to come to me to say so. Does not the Father tell you or send someone to you to tell you? But many who are Christian do not in fear of being rebuked or rejected. But as the Apostle Paul has said, “I care very little if I am judged by you or by any human court.” So, if you are truly in the spiritual mind, then say something to your brother or sister.

31. Understanding the Bible

I have come to know that the more I receive the Lord, the more He provides me as He is willing, the more I understand and act out the Word. For I say, to see the Word as only a guide and then to just go through the motions of acting it out in order to get you where you are going is crippling. Do you not know that the Word comes from the Lord, so then the Word is automatically acted out in you as you receive the Holy Spirit? Some of you said this and that in the Word is not true and that you will do this and not that. I say the more you receive the Holy Spirit the Lord has placed within you, will you find yourself craving and then doing this and that and doing it with Love and in wanting toward our Mighty God and those He has created. And we will wind up doing not because you choose to but because you pray for Him to choose for you through faith.

In the Bible, Jesus instructs as the Holy Spirit, as the inseparable entity of God, the Son of God and the Holy Spirit. He is saying that as we give up our natural state to God, the Holy Spirit will provide us the desires in greater abundance of what Jesus Christ desires us to become as written in the Holy Word. Reason alone will not resolve what comes by way of the Holy Spirit in abundant faith. Reason does not transform us into Christ. Reason only provides us the ability to trust. Trust of the distribution of the Will of God to us from the Holy Spirit within us by our abandoning of all that is natural transforms us into Him. Reason provides us belief. Belief leads to hope. Hope leads to abandonment of our natural self. Abandonment of our natural self leads to transformation into love. Without hope and faith, reason will never assure our abandonment of our natural self. And without the ample amount of appropriate reasoning, there can become no hope. This is why it is our duty as Christians to disciple to people from the love of the Holy Spirit so they may hear His Word, retain it through reason, and have hope to persevere and produce a crop. In the words of Jesus, “The seed on good soil stands for those with a noble and good heart, who hear the word, retain it, and by persevering produce a crop” (Luke 8:15). “And now these three remain: faith, hope and love. But the greatest of these is love” (1Cor 13:13).

So you see, the Bible is not just an instruction manual to get to God (far be it), it is how you will do once you receive Him, not because He says from outside of you, but because He is within you, and thus propels you to do so. And, thus He will heal your soul and body from the inside-out. For the Lord’s disciples give you the Word from God by knowing the Holy Spirit through the resurrection of Jesus as they instructed what God has delivered to them instantly. And thus, they can only tell you what they do as the Hand of God guides them. They are in love with Jesus and so they write while they are in love.

Many of you, I know, especially the men of this world. For you are hardened to the Word of our Lord. There is a need of many of you to understand and feel the love and sensitivity of Jesus and His Apostles. Realize and may you understand by His teachings to you that Jesus' Words are all made by the great love He has for us. Some of you find them rather harsh, but if you knew the end result of understanding and feeling His Word as He does, I believe you would, as I have done, fall to my knees and thank Him for His Grace and Love that shows me the way.

It was also in the Old Testament, that the more stubborn and arrogant a person was or continued to be, the greater the wrath and greater the tough love by Him was placed upon him so to show him the way. And even then, many people would still not listen and then destruction came. But to those who believed and gained the smallest faith, the Kingdom came to light and blessed were they by the Lord. And even then in Olden Times when many people still did not listen, the Lord sent His only Son to wipe away our sins and begin anew. For then He gave to us Himself to then see Him with our spiritual eyes and in one Body we became. For He nestled within us—not beside us or around us, as He is as well, but within us, His mortal Children. For even in our abandonment of Him, did He not abandon us even to the extent of placing Himself within us. Oh, the Grace You have Almighty. For in Your eyes I am worthwhile even in my lowest times, even when I think all hope is lost, You reach for me. Hallelujah! And of this and much more did Jesus teach the Apostles and it is my belief that the writings of the Apostles in the Bible are love letters to those they wrote to and to us, the future generations, because these men were in Love with Jesus when they wrote and thus with us. For we who received the Lord also received the Holy Spirit within us and so did these men receive the vision of it within us as well and so they loved us as well.

It is the Living, Loving Word that I know which I crave and delight in and transform into when I am in the Love of Jesus and am blessed to receive at this stage in my journey. I am a loving and sensitive man, and for many a year in my child-like thinking, I feared of being an outcast, especially among other men, but also women. But now I am a man after the Lord and I went through, led by God, much of my own pain I picked up and chose to keep, but then did I become accountable for my own feelings, thoughts, and actions and the desires of worldly joy and worldly hurt. And then I saw my Redeemer and accepted Him and He transformed me into His Love to the current stage He has willed me to be in. And did I then understand His enormous love and sensitivity and compassion. And then I knew that my persona of a loving and sensitive man was not by error but by blinded faith within the Lord as an example of Jesus the Man. He struck into me His Will and compassion for an ongoing explanation and feeling of His Love in each of us and for each other. And it is this understanding and deeper feeling in faith to Love that I will continue to grow in and understand by His Will, but has been called upon me now to reveal to you so for you to transform out of your old mortal soul and into His Spirit.

For I tell you, as you receive the Lord will you do as the Word says even though you have not read the Word. You who have heard of Jesus but not read the Word are still bound by the same fate as those who have. Use the Bible as an affirmation tool, as well. Have trust and faith that the Lord will guide you and use the Bible to affirm your path. For after the resurrection and receiving of the Holy Spirit, the Apostles did not have Jesus the Man to rely on by mortal mind but Jesus the Man by spiritual mind. The Apostle Paul so did he have only Jesus the Man in

spirit to rely on. But just as the Twelve knew Jesus even in mortal mind, do we have Jesus in mortal mind as the written words on a page. But then you will come to see how the words will come alive. And through our Holy Spirits, we can have Jesus in spiritual mind. And so, we are not unlike the Apostles in receiving the same Spirit and same Word. They speak from the Living God for they are in Love and therefore, all they write is true, for deception is sinful.

And thus, this is what I say: When you read the New Testament, you are consulting the Lord and His Son Jesus and when you read the Old Testament you do the same for it is the heart of God and so is the Spirit of Jesus, the Spirit of God. And thus, when you read the Bible, you relive what the Apostles did, that is consult Jesus. For the Bible is alive. But I say this too: he who receives the Lord, consults Jesus as well through the Holy Spirit, as the disciples did, for it is the same Holy Spirit. And thus for the maturing receiver of Christ our Lord, use both the Bible and the Holy Spirit to consult and affirm, but rely more on the Holy Spirit in your maturing so you will transform into the Spirit of our Lord and be guided by Him in His Time, for you may be stranded in a place where a Bible is not accessible, but your Holy Spirit is always accessible. Understand now that wherever you go, it goes; but you will understand later that when in the Love of Him, wherever the Spirit wills you to go, your mortal soul and body follow as they turn into a spiritual soul and body to be the tools of His Workings, for He is the ultimate craftsman.

Another I have known is this: Husbands, I say to you, if your wives willingly receive the Lord, then what is written for your wife to do is what she already craves as is you for what is written for you. Honor her by relieving that craving. For now you know what your wife wants of you and others even before she speaks. This is the same for mothers and all who you are to have relationships with. But each must be receiving the Lord from their Holy Spirit and be progressing toward that perfect place in and by their own actions, not just reading the Word and motioning them. Remember to affirm by the Bible because their actions speak louder than words. And as the Apostles say, be cautious of the newly converted for their actions have not been continuous and in length and have not been affirmed from Jesus nor those around him in any relationship. For if the newly converted has friends in the Lord, consult them on his current actions as well. Accept him but protect your Christian brethren for the enemy is tricky. If the newly converted is truly receiving the Lord, he will find little or no bother in your caution, and will rely on trust and faith in the Lord for an eternal stay.

But it is by assumption at this time that I believe the Old Testament is on how those without the Holy Spirit act in opposition to the Lord and the Lord's selective chosen to proceed and instruct His Plan by the Holy Spirit to see with mortal eyes the spiritual and thus have trust in the Lord. But we have become a stubborn and arrogant race. The Lord in the Old Testament was harsh to the unbelievers because they would not bottom out their own mortality without a startle, and even then many chose not to believe. But those who believed, the Lord was in favor and dearly loved and was gracious. He also loved the unbeliever and knew the consequences of their actions and this is why He so passionately tried to get their attention and see the outcome of their lost ways, but still many did not choose to listen to the wake up call.

Now the New Testament is the living through the Holy Spirit by way of Jesus the Son of God who came to teach us, show us, and deliver us to the Almighty Lord. The Lord loved us so much to have sent His Only Son to teach us what was about to come, for the Lord allowed us to be able

to have His Holy Spirit. Why did He choose for us to have it? I could say many reasons—to be closer to His Children, to give them a way home, to allow a transformation into the Christ Jesus so as to see His Kingdom on Earth, to reward all who believe and have faith in Him with Him. Many reasons may exist and only one may, but the only one reason I am sure of is that He wished it so out of love for us, and that is the best reason I know. For the Lord is a gracious and incredibly loving Lord. But I know this, that the Word is to rely on Him in and out, for He has made it so to be wrapped within Him and walk the path of our Christ Jesus. For it is our desire as Christians to walk and understand His path through divine understanding directly through our Holy Spirit, and it is this Holy Spirit that will guide us and cleanse us if we receive it in full trust and in full faith.

Oh guide me, Lord. I am your tool as You wield me as You see fit for I know, however You do so, it will be with love and it will be that same love that will fill me as You execute Your purpose.

Be shown that the New Testament accounts of what is, as you do so, and to understand with the spiritual eyes, for it is known that mortal seeing is still not believing, for the mind forgets and the heart gets hardened by our own actions.

32. Mistakes and Sin

In the worldly sense, it is apparent in many places on earth that people accuse others of making mistakes for not being perfect. Do you not realize that mistakes are nothing to the Lord? Mistakes are a natural order of worldly living. To do what is right in one person's mortal eyes is to do wrong in another. Where then is the mistake? Thus, do not worry over such trivial matters. And when one accuses you of such worldly things, take it as an amusing anecdote and remind your Christian brother that it is a natural part of the process of worldly life. What brother or sister would do something to us on purpose? That is the question we must ask ourselves. If the idolater echoes in multitudes your errors, even after you have confronted him twice about it, be away from him, for he sees not the Lord within you but to him a worthless person. He will get his because you know to be worthwhile to the Lord, and so how arrogant of him to say you are not worthwhile enough to even him. Do not have anything to do with him, but forgive him his trespasses against you. But if you, a Christian, do not confront him, then it be your wrong doing to the Lord, for he may be hurting and thus unaware of his wrong doing, and you may be a tool of the Lord to present him to the Lord as a gift. But if you are the tool, you will know it at some time.

Serve all others for you may not realize, because of being in your mortal soul, the moment the Lord has set you in a position to do His Work. Serve by relaying the Law to the other in a manner to best serve him, for then you not only bring to him the greatest of all gifts, but you humble yourself to the Lord as well. And it is this humbling, this child-like expression to the Lord, that shows full trust and faith, that will bring you into His Kingdom by way of the fulfillment from the Holy Spirit. And in your confronting, ask for forgiveness from others, though you may need none, but do not dwell on worldly mistakes for there is much work to be done in the Kingdom of God.

Now as for sin, this matters to the Lord. If sin is important to the Lord, and significantly takes away from not only your work in the Kingdom, but also the connection with God and Jesus as well, how insignificant is a mistake? For even though you make a mistake, are you still not connected to the Lord, He to you and you to Him? Shall you still enter the Kingdom? One who has made a million mistakes may still be first in deserving the Kingdom, but one who has made a million sins and has unrepented even one, may not. Thus, willfully receive the Lord's Grace and ask that He make known to you your sins and for Him to take them away in His Own Time. And if you need repentance now, but cannot remember every sin, ask the Lord to grant you Grace over the ones you cannot remember, for He knows them, and then move on. But if the forgotten sin is remembered afterwards, repent so you will remind yourself that He has forgiven you and you can forgive yourself, but move on, do not dwell, for there is much work to be done in His Kingdom on Earth.

Now, if the Holy Spirit is the spiritual lifeline to the Lord, sin is the scissors. For the Lord will never leave you, but by sin you separate yourself from the Lord. If a loving father saw his child be drawn away by a rushing stream, would he not jump in and hold on to him all the while? But what is known to the wise father is that the stream is only a few feet deep and many times the child never realizes this and panics. But the father says, stop panicking, it is hard to hold you like this. And the child who listens to the loving father becomes calmer and trusts his father. And so then, the father lifts him and stands in the water and carries him to dry land. And then the father hugs the child and then compassionately through conversation afterwards listens for the child's accountability of the event in question. If there requires accountability, but the child has not admitted to it, then the father places a loving reminder in him to become accountable. If the child becomes accountable then they can continue with their adventures. If the child refuses to admit accountability where there is in deed a case requiring it, then a tougher loving reminder is needed, delaying the fun adventure further.

This is your sin, my brothers and sisters. What many believe are unforgivable sins, the Father says stop dwelling on it because you will panic and then all my attention will be on you to stop panicking when all I had to do if you listened to me was to pick you up and take you to dry land and then remind you My Love and the Law so you then can continue practice it and resume My Work. And if by the Law you must apologize to your brethren for your sin, then be it, for you apologize to their Spirits as well, which is the same Lord, and you do so to relieve their mortal soul for they are your human brothers and sisters. But remember He has already forgiven you once you repent to Him through your own Holy Spirit. And if they do not forgive you, then forgive them for they do not forgive you because they see with mortal eyes and you forgave by way of your spiritual eyes. And thus, in summary, repent and receive the Grace of God upon you and go on doing His Work.

So, now do you see how trivial mistakes are? I have said that if you knew you messed up, and within a blink of an eye or thought in your mind, you were back in the Lord's Kingdom through automatic forgiveness from God and Jesus, you would stay in the Kingdom because fear of sin is lost and sin has no power. This is known as Grace. But if there is nothing to forgive because mistakes are of no importance to the Lord for He accepts you in all your worldly trivial matters for these are like bees buzzing from one flower to the next in no direction, how important shall they be to you? I say none for they are not even powerless—they are like the wind.

Trust and faith in the Lord will take you in the direction you need to go and mistakes, though they are part of the process of life, are not a part of any qualifying process. Focus on the Hand of God guiding you for when He sees you make a worldly mistake, does His Pace in guiding you not change, is it only you in earthly desires that do.

This is how trivial mistakes are to the Lord. Keep your focus on your Work of God and, I tell you, you shall not be able to distinguish between what is a mistake and what is not. But you shall know what sin you make and acknowledge the Grace of God. For I tell you, it is my faith by the Lord upon you that one day sin will slow you down very little, for the one who can realize sin quickly with great humility and repent just as quickly and sincerely shall be like a light in the Kingdom on Earth to the rest of the world. But beware for jealousy from others will rear its ugly head.

The wisest person I know became wise primarily through making unwise decisions and learning from them after reaping the consequences. Then he not only began to become wise but he also sought counsel prior to his actions to become even wiser.

So, never concern yourself with mistakes, only sin.

33. Working and Owning

Some say do all your worldly deeds in Honor of the Lord. I say, never do worldly deeds, period. For though unbelievers see you do deeds of the world through their mortal eyes, shall you be doing spiritual deeds through your spiritual eyes through the love from and to your Father. Do not fill your head with worldly chores, mundane tasks. For this will surely not get you into Heaven. Fill your mind with not mortal tasks, but spiritual opportunities to serve the Lord. Each day, the Lord places opportunities in front of you. You shall see these when you are in His Time. You shall see the opportunities and the miracles.

He is your only employer. Those mortals that say they employ as mortal examples are only playing trivial games, as children do. For in the mortal world, jobs and tasks and their titles are distractions, but in the Kingdom, employment is zero and service abounds, for the job God has chosen especially for you is awaiting you to fill it on earth and in Heaven. If you believe in the Savior Jesus and accept the One True God, shall that be your interview and automatic offer. Take, in faith, the job of which He offers to you with all your heart though He may not at first reveal to you your entire job description according to His Plan for you.

Understand that after your salvation in the Lord Jesus Christ here on earth, it is time to enroll in the training of His work created specifically for you and in Heaven. Accept His training so that you can grow to better fulfill your useful lot on earth and in Heaven. (Proverbs 22:6)

So, if you must work at a mortal job, do not go to work for mortals, for they are like bees from one flower to the next with little direction, but go to work for your only employer, God. And be an example of Jesus Christ. For your paycheck is Love and your retirement is His Kingdom.

This is what you will eventually find out: Do what you love to do in the place and pace He created you to do everything in. This is in everyday life, including work. You must understand two things. The first, known as your place in life, is what you love to do without fear of failure in doing it because He is there with you. Remember that people who say “failure is not an option” are not very successful people. You will fail a lot in life and especially in your daily spiritual journey. Don’t worry. God expects this and knows this. It is vital that you know that if you don’t fail sometimes, then you can never proceed to succeed. God will show you how to get it right if it is important enough to Him. Failing at things is just a part of life that tells you either what you may not be gifted at or what you need to work on. Failing at things never makes you a failure, it makes you a winner if you will allow yourself to learn from your failures. Do your best but don’t be afraid to fail. In fact, if you don’t worry about failing, you *will* do your best because you emphatically know that God loves you either way!

The second is your unique pace that God has created you to do things in and guided by Him. Once you understand these two principals and act on them, your life will become fulfilling and much easier. Remember, understanding what you love without fear of failure is having conviction and purpose in what you do so that you still maintain that conviction even in the midst of discouraging people because you know what you do is important to you and ordained to you by God to fulfill His purpose. It can be cleaning as a way of serving to building the Space Shuttle as a way of serving. Also you must realize that whatever you do, you must ask yourself if the pace of where you will be working is greater than the pace ordained to you by God. Many people realize what they love to do but then do it somewhere where the pace expected of them is greater than that ordained by Him to them. And others find a job that the pace is near their unique pace ordained by Him, but they are bored or stressed because they are not doing what they love.

And this I will tell you as a learned man: Many of you will realize that you did not go to the traditional colleges and higher institutions of learning like others wanted you to (and then discourage you afterwards for not going) because what you love to do does not take that type of learning nor is the learning at your created pace to understand. I am not speaking of the basic education to understand. But what you will eventually find out is that the greatest education you will require and be fulfilled in will appear so basic. If what was ordained to you to do required getting a traditional higher education, don’t you think you would have been given the liking of traditional higher education by Him to attain it? Don’t listen to discouraging mortal fools. What do they know of you and the way God speaks to you? Life is not about how much you know, but how content you are and how and what you do with the amount that you *do* know. Though everything we go through may be temporary, that doesn’t excuse anything. You do the best you can in the best way you can with what you have and with what you know at the time.

Realize that when you do what you were ordained to do, you wind up gaining the respect of mortals because they see you acquiring mortal prosperity. It is then they, and by they I mean the prideful, will listen to you when you speak of the Lord.

And let me speak to you of what I believe is the triangle of mortal employment. In mortal employment the three points on the triangle are the client, the employer, and the employee. This is not unlike the three regions of your brain. Each must serve each other in love within the

realm of God so things can be achieved in a synergetic fashion. Each of the three must not force the other two into doing nor overcompensate for the other two's lack of doing but all must give up the controls to the Lord above and ask Him to provide the pace and magnitude to glorify Him. Then you will see miracles happen in your mortal workplace. In today's society, the employee appears to be the only one serving the other two and the employer only serves the client and each appears to serve for money, not God. This is why your workplace is in great disarray! Remember, all must serve each other in love within the realm of God and thus giving it up to God. And as each of us walks the earth in the same plane, should there exist no hierarchy among anyone. We should only understand our place in relation to one another but look each other square into the eye with equal respect and dignity. There is only one incident where hierarchy exists and that is from God to the entire human race. There is only one sovereign. No human belongs on a pedestal. That place is reserved for God only.

But this I must tell you. All careers and employment is given to you by God when it is a job that falls under His Law of responsibility, honesty, and respect. Sometimes we are not fulfilled in a particular job, especially if we have not learned God's ways of love and time. We may be in this career for a while gaining experience. But then the calling of God may come upon you to do something else that will become more fulfilling and one that enables you to use your spiritual gifting in great measure. It has been my experience that we must follow the Lord in the pursuit of this calling, but only in His Time and at His Will. Most every time, the pursuit for our calling is steady and slow and may take much of our lifetime to accomplish to the point of participating in it full time. This is why, as we pursue our calling, we must rely on the career that is less fulfilling so we can eat and provide for our family. This is quite a humbling experience and is, thus, a very good thing to do for God. This career was no lark! This first career was a God sent career for you to fall back on as you pursue His True Calling for you.

The Apostle Paul is a magnificent example of this in Acts 18:1 as he not only worked in his trade during his ministry so to eat, but he used his trade to reach others during his full time ministry. According to Jewish custom, Paul learned a trade, which was making tents. This was prior to seeing the light of Jesus Christ. He used all his past knowledge and experiences in his ministry of preaching the news of Jesus Christ, even sustaining himself by working his earlier trade during his journeys. And, in addition, he worked night and day in some vocation to also support his ministry (2Th 3:6-13). This I believe is right. Rest on the Sabbath. For true rest is always associated with a Godly purpose and Godly work. If I love God, I am joyous in doing His work and obeying Him. So then I may rest and look forward to my work that I love the next day. Some tire but cannot rest because they worry or are not happy at going back to the job they currently have. And you may sleep but not rest. Idle hands give way to idle minds, which give way to sin. But again, one must be compelled to do for the Lord more out of love and not so much because of punishment or fear. And one must not work himself to death just to avoid his sinful nature or confused mind. In this way, fear compels work—not God. We must also work through our fears with God so that we can pursue His purposeful work for us with joy, peace, and love.

Everything eventually falls into place in our own minds, but everything has already fallen into place for us in His Mind from the beginning. He is our Great Planner of our lives. God has provided the clock we go by and the dates we go by for our benefit. And so it is right that we go

by them to serve others. But God does not go by human time because He is limitless. When we realize this, we realize that all is as it should be. You will find that He has taken care of you throughout all your life when you realize this.

And realize that everything we do, we do it from the mind of God. You have created nothing yourself, though you may think you have. You were created by God so you think like God, but most of you do not realize this. I have not seen anything yet that does not resemble in one way or another that which comes from the creative mind of God. Give it up. You cannot escape this. You only think you own what you do not. It is an illusion. Do you see that for thousands of years, most of us have been living in an illusion of what we own and what we do not own? It is written that we were created in His image, but what many people believe is that the image spoken in the Bible is only the external image. Realize that you were created in his external and internal image and so you think like Him when you create anything. What will you create though is up to you. Will you create something evil or something beautiful? And now you know that nothing belongs to you.

Yes, the power of God may be in your hands if He wills it to be. This may be very scary for many of you, but He will not provide you anything more than what you can carry. Do not fight it but accept it. You will live a much happier life with much less logic. And remember life is a journey of discovery.

34. Seeking God and Choosing Heaven (Socioeconomic Solutions in Business, Government, and Commerce)

I understand this may sound a bit off the wall to some of you, so I am letting you know this now. My gifting is in creative communication. After reading this you may say that I have a creative imagination, which I do. Then you might say I have creative talents, which I do. But when we receive the Holy Spirit, we find that the combination of creative imagination with creative talents in response to the teachings of the Holy Spirit becomes the gifting of creative communication when put into action through faith. Again, what I say here may sound a bit off the wall, but it is only how God has created me to think when I interpret the teachings of the Holy Spirit. As I said before, we are all human translators for God, and all problems seem to exist within the translation. So, this may seem a bit fanatical, but its not. It's the way my God-given analytical mind works.

Have you ever said to someone that you can't understand a word they are saying and then that person rephrases it in a way you understand? Well, if your mind works in a way that you find this hard to understand, don't be scared, it just needs rephrasing to make you feel more at ease. I've come to accept the way I think and feel. I don't talk this way in everyday language, I just write this way a lot. And maybe that's a problem of mine, especially in translating it to the general public through the written word. Many people have a tough time understanding the Bible. All I can do is give you my own testimony on how God is teaching me. Maybe this translation will help some of you find Him.

Before September 11th shocked the world, a diagram came to me on how relationships among all creation connected with heaven works according to the words of Christ (see Figures 3 and 4). At the center is the resurrection of Jesus Christ and the ultimate solution is God On High. And

God being how all things should strive to become, any solution should be sought in the same way to derive a most beautiful outcome. When it comes to God, you and I are that outcome. When it comes to the mortal world, the outcome can be anything. In my enlightenment and in this Era of Enlightenment, I understand the righteous solution to any problem (our problem being our mortal nature) should produce an outcome or final product that concurrently benefits: 1) Technically or intrinsically defined as the way it benefits its own internal workings by way of its intrinsic quality provided during creation (The way we benefit is by our own will at the source which we have asked God to replace with the Holy Spirit which is His Will or eternal life engine that enables our own internal workings to work perfectly), 2) Organizationally (or operationally) defined as the way it directly benefits the functioning of its daily operations by being a crucial link that receives, translates, and transmits within a certain chain of events in the proper space (ours being His creation of our own mind and body to function by way of the Holy Spirit), 3) Publicly defined as how it benefits people and other living things (ours being from our bodily communication by way of our Holy Spirit in association with others), 4) Environmentally defined as how it benefits the atmosphere, waterways, and land minerals (ours being the understanding of how God's design works in relation to Him and each of His creations thus therapeutically enhancing our perception of life and the world around us), 5) Timely defined as understanding the appropriate time for it to begin, the process of its creation and growth, and how it will benefit all the above perpetually from then on (ours being our willingness to allow all things to happen in His Time so all the above that concerns our own selves and others in this world will fall into place without worry), and of course 6) Heavenly as in heaven on earth.

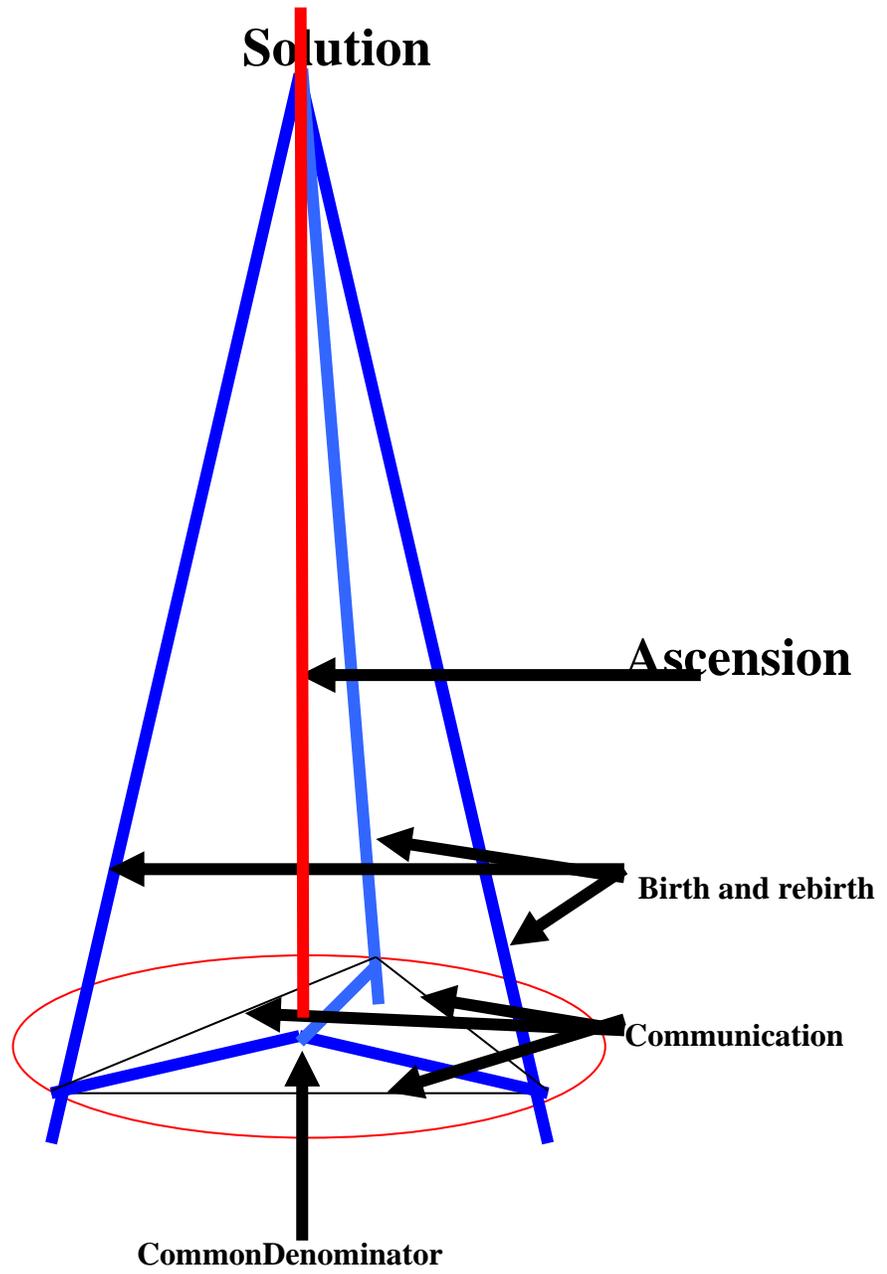
While seeking the solution and during the production of the outcome or final product, the solution desires the fullest prosperity in all these five conjoining areas. As each step in the sequence is developed in a positive way, the next step in the sequence automatically benefits from it, thus, our quality of life increases. This is with any creation in life—us, the earth, a tree, a link in a chain, etc. And with any idea, one must first use a method such as the TOPETH method to examine boundaries or limitations that will define the range of goodness that the idea is to live within. In today's society, ideas are usually executed rather quickly prior to good planning basically because of short term returns on investment. This is what will degrade society quickly, just as a person must have certain behavioral and physical boundaries and understand them along with his or her limitations in order to become and remain healthy. And quite often these boundaries are defined by inner values and morals.

However, in today's world we are going the opposite way and thus degenerating ourselves. When we try to control time more and more, we disconnect ourselves more from the world around us, which disconnects us from others, which disconnects us from ourselves, which disconnects us from the Holy Spirit and thus into a realm of nothingness. Look around you. Is this an epidemic with society and people in our communities or what? People have less self-esteem. More families are fatherless. More families are in divorce. More people are in mental-illness. Drug prescriptions are increasing. And it will most likely increase exponentially because the population of this world is increasing exponentially. Therefore, we are coming to an end faster and faster with each generation.

In addition, within the diagram with Jesus Christ as our teacher, all must serve each other and then follow Jesus to our rebirth so that we can become a valuable product to God, thus, feel

valuable within ourselves. Everybody feels valuable when they are doing something that is worthy or valuable for others and is appreciated for it. But to do something for God promotes the greatest feeling of value within ourselves because God loves and appreciates us so much more than we can even fathom.

This diagram is very much like the ancient diagrams found in certain areas all over the world and its process of serving is unlike much of the business world today where the employee serves the employer, the employer serves the customer, and the customer is required to serve no one. And though today the environment and animals serve us, we do them disservice. But it is also true that the design of the business world today is representative of the order of God, though we may not realize it. I am telling you that there is nothing that has been and is to be created that God has not created first Himself. The problem is we think we created it, we own it, so we have the power to manipulate it and then we wind up destroy it because of our own pride. This is the same with us as human beings of ourselves.



Remember, what we all seek is God. Those who believe themselves to own their own businesses or strive to make it to the top are only those that are really just searching for God. Not realizing it though, they are trying to replace Jesus at the top so they may be worshipped by their disciples below. And so when they get to the top, people ask themselves, “Where is the respect? Where is the comfort? It is lonely at the top?” It is only lonely at the top because you have not submitted to the Holy Spirit. If you did submit to the Holy Spirit, you would know that you are not at the top. And then you would still be fulfilled and have love and serve your disciples.

We were created to submit to love. When we do not receive love to submit to, we are miserable. How many of us have bosses that we find hard to serve because they do not yet know the meaning of love? In other words, they have yet to submit to the love of the Holy Spirit in order to provide love to their extended family in the business world. It is one thing to ask for the Holy Spirit so to be saved, but then you must submit to it so you can know love.

You will be blessed as a business person when you realize that: 1) the Father, Son, and the Holy Spirit are the owner, CEO, CFO, and COO and the Corporate Entity itself which all shareholders worship, 2) the Board of Directors are the managing principles submitting to the counsel of God, 3) the shareholders are the Body of Christ submitting to the counsel of God affirming board of director decisions, 4) everyone gets only one share and each share belongs to God, 5) interest from guaranteed securities is the way Jesus fed the five thousand, 6) shares are only representations of membership into Heaven and dividends are a way of providing food, shelter, and clothing, 7) medical insurance is receiving and faithfully submitting to the love and guidance of the Holy Spirit, 8) Life insurance is salvation and eternal life, 9) disability insurance is serving out of love as in the parable of the lost sheep, 10) items 6, 7, 8, 9 are known as profit sharing, 11) publicly held, or as I like to put it as publicly liberated, corporations are a way of sharing the wealth of salvation to all people who want it, 12) stock exchanges and brokers should never be used because all stocks should be sold over the counter and not to the highest bidder, and 13) all the above is our translation of the Holy Spirit. How else can you turn a \$5 stock into all the profit sharing you’ll ever need? Possibly, one day there will be no corporate minimum and no need for money or, at minimum, companies will stop shirking their responsibilities with 100% commission positions and provide true salaried positions. No one should ever have to derive their true worth by how much they sell just so the employer can avoid his or her responsibilities.

Maybe one day we’ll just do all this because we love God and one another. Again, nothing has been and will be created that wasn’t first created by Him. We just keep placing all of it in different forms, but what we are all doing is seeking God. It’s just a game that us children play in our own minds, but when we don’t have Christ in our lives, it is sadly a game that promotes suffering among many. This is why the Apostle Paul says do not yoke yourself with unbelievers nor believers that do not submit to the love of God through Christ because you will get mixed up in their game of suffering. Love all and serve all, but do not yoke yourself to all.

Now, the diagram I was talking about that describes the beneficial outcome to any problem also shows that Step 1 is the life engine or accepting the Holy Spirit, Step 2 is allowing the Holy Spirit to bring our minds and bodies back in synch with God, and Step 3 is communicating to

others the way God intended—from the Holy Spirit. Step 4 and Step 5 deal with place and time. In other words, the best benefit from Steps 1 through 3 is in a supportive environment providing the person their own unique pace to work at independent of what or how many worldly constraints are placed upon them.

Isn't this what God does for us. He says, "I (Step 1) know you inside and out (Step 2). Come to Me in My Place, trust in Me, feel safe, don't worry, understand what I say, and things will work out all right (Step 3). You will work for Me and be productive in My Kingdom on Earth as in Heaven (Step 4) because I have selected a way (place and pace) for you that suits you perfectly (Step 5) in everlasting life there and Here (Step 6)."

Wouldn't it be great if all institutions—government, family, business—worked this way. I pray we work to solve problems somewhat like this in the future. Let's use the language of everyday business in the following example. We all seek a solution (God). We'll call the mediator who helps us find the solution, the solutions broker (Jesus). We all need to find a common denominator so we can talk back and forth and understand each other so we can agree on the solution (Holy Spirit). We'll call the employee, or team member, and employer, or team leader, the broker-stakeholders (Disciples). And we'll call the clients the client-stakeholders (All others). And once the solution is achieved there is a new creation or outcome or resultant (Us after receiving the Holy Spirit and faithfully obeying the Law because we love God).

Believing a Problem Exists:

Once the solutions broker is given the scope of work, the solutions broker's team leader and team members are redefined as broker-stakeholders themselves in conjunction with the client-stakeholders.

The solution broker defines a problem as being within a specific component or link. The component or link is not at fault, but the fault lies within its translation of the input. If its translation seems to be satisfactory to the input received, the problem lies within another component. If the translation is satisfactory, the transmission will be satisfactory.

Once the problem is defined, the solutions broker does not dwell or continually revert back to any problem at hand, but always focuses on the solution to facilitate current and future production.

Believing in a Solution or Worth of the Resultant:

The solutions broker believes that a solution already exists and only then will the solution begin revealing itself in bits and pieces, that the solution dictates and creates the type of client-stakeholders and broker-stakeholders to attain it, that the solution is the driving force behind the people's production of creative ideas and the resultant or final product.

The solutions broker believes that as the solution reveals itself, the problems will become better defined and the solution will itself eradicate the problems in the process. After the solution is attained, the understanding of the true problem in the existing system will be revealed. Then, further reliance on the solution produces a better resultant. This is why the solutions broker does not try to fix an existing problem, but strives to only attain a solution.

Seeking the Solution or Worth of the Resultant:

The solutions broker believes that there exists a common denominator in each of the individual ideas of all client-stakeholders and broker-stakeholders resulting in a unanimous determining factor in attaining the solution. The solutions broker believes that the common denominator can only be achieved by the client-stakeholders and broker-stakeholders serving a common purpose, namely the solution, and by acceptance and unconditional support of any and all ideas by any one individual and relying on each other's expertise. During this time, the team leader facilitates seeking out the common denominator from the ideas of the client-stakeholders and broker-stakeholders and aids in producing more ideas from each person to help reveal the common denominator.

The solutions broker believes that the solution will be attained in its own time and that the client-stakeholders and broker-stakeholders must have a supportive environment to work in at their own unique pace independent of what or how many constraints are placed upon them. This must be done in order to attain the best solution in the shortest amount of time.

Arriving at the Solution or Worth of the Resultant:

The solutions broker believes that once the client-stakeholders and broker-stakeholders realize the common denominator, the solution draws each of them to it in a reasonably quick fashion and then the solution will reveal itself in full.

Creating the Value of the Resultant:

The solutions broker believes that, once the solution is attained, the resultant or final product is best produced when every client-stakeholder and broker-stakeholder are given ample time to catch-up and realize the solution and then, in a synergetic fashion through individuals' expertise and passions, produce the final product with the goal of it to perform to its fullest potential and be in fulfillment of its duties as a credit to the solution.

Communicating the Value of the Resultant:

The solutions broker believes that the resultant or final product is one that is created as being a crucial link within a certain chain of events and receives, translates, and transmits the desires of the solution in question to benefit itself technically, the company's daily operations, society as a whole, the environment as a whole, and future generations to come. In addition, the resultant or final product must serve the other links in the chain just as the other links are to serve it so to create synergy and the greatest product output, or production.

The Resultant becoming One with the Solution:

The solutions broker believes that after the resultant or final product is placed in action, it is to be well maintained and enhanced by the client-stakeholders and broker-stakeholders so to continuously strive to work in the ideal way it was meant to. However, the solutions broker believes that the resultant is expected to reach its ideal function only in ideal conditions.

The solutions broker believes that the value of the any resultant can average 95 percent or more of its ideal value over its lifetime when: 1) The resultant is always maintained routinely with care AND 2) Periodically and over its lifetime as technology becomes further advanced, the resultant

which is older now is transferred, installed, and possibly slightly refurbished somewhere else so it will become a valuable entity to some other chain that may or may not be performing the same function as its earlier chain.

The solutions broker believes that as long as you know the solution and the conditions of the chain did not change, you can always create a new resultant later in time to replace an older resultant. However, the new resultant is not expected to work exactly the same as the older resultant did in its new condition because of the new resultant's unique characteristics in manufacturing and the change in the condition of the chain over time.

The solutions broker believes that the resultant becomes synonymous with its solution when the resultant functions in the ideal way it was created to.

Well then after this diagram came to me, I felt a leading to see the words in the five steps in it. Initially I had the abbreviation as TOSEP with the "s" standing for socially and the "p" standing for perpetually. But I thought I'd play with it to see if it meant anything and it didn't. But then I noticed Topet in the Bible and it seemed that societal is the same as publicly and perpetually is the same as timely. I looked up a translation for this word and found that in ancient Hebrew, this word, which is interchangeable with Topeth, means "place of fire" which is an interpretation of Hell in the Old Testament (2Ki 23:10, Jer 7:30-8:3, Isa 30:1-33).

Topeth was in the Valley of Ben Hinnom just south of the City of Jerusalem where it is believed God chose to create the mouth of Hell, according to scripture. Now, people can construe most anything to what they want to believe. Was this a coincidence or not? Was my translation off by a little? Who's to say it was and who's to say it wasn't. But whether it was a coincidence or not, the Lord has shown us proof throughout history that there is a Hell and that indeed He created it. Where are we to say Hell is (MT 12:40).

I'd personally like to think of it as a warning or awareness for myself so I may continue to stay on the righteous path. By the diagram, He was showing me how to live a heavenly life but also that there will be destruction if we do not pursue His route. We are not perfect but by His Grace we can repent and through faith proceed on the righteous path. Remember, when Jesus died for us, even our current sins are already forgiven—that is defined as Grace. All we have to do is repent for our sin—that is say I'm sorry to God and feel sorry while we are saying it. Then move on with Him.

Now I do not say these things to scare you, but I am telling you that there is indeed a Hell just as there is a Heaven. So, then do as God commands and just believe in Jesus Christ as the True Son of God so that you may have eternal life (John 3:16). Then you can begin to pursue the righteous journey in faith. Then once you understand that the Lord provides you immense Grace, you will fall in love with Him as He has loved you all your life and at this very moment and will forever love you.

I tell you, the Lord may work through other nations to bring others to justice, especially those in power, but I believe if we ignore the warning found in the diagram, those same nations will be eventually destroyed. The "H" in Step 6 can stand for Hell, as well, if we avoid and counteract

the previous five steps. Isa 30:1-33 is not unlike the war in Afghanistan now in association with Iraq, where Assyria used to be, with Topeth awaiting their rulers. And “the beast was captured, and with him the false prophet who had performed the miraculous signs on his behalf. The two of them were thrown alive into the fiery lake of sulfur (Rev 19:20).” Assyria was also part of Mesopotamia, where Eden in the Book of Genesis is thought to have been. All this is a warning for these rulers to repent to the Holy Spirit. It is a warning to choose Heaven over Hell. And it is also to show that the same fate will happen to us if we ignore the way of the One True God, who is Pure Love.

In addition, the Sign of Jonah may be upon us as Nineveh in Assyria and Yemen (Sheba) condemn such rulers (MT 12:39-45). And I believe Rome (the Vatican) may be targeting for destruction in the near future (Rev 17:15). I hope this will instill in you further that the Bible is truthful?

How about family? The woman is traditionally more feeling, the man traditionally more logical and the child innocent (All known as the Body of Christ). If the woman and man (Congress) obey the Holy Spirit, the family is united and fulfilled and the mother and father become as one. The Holy Spirit by way of the Resurrection of Jesus Christ (executive branch) obeys God (judicial branch). But who keeps Congress in check in aiding God in His translation to the parents? It is the people. And who is the people I talk about in your family? This is getting good isn't it? Yes, of course, it's your children, and if not your children, then children in general. Children will be candid and they will tell you what is right and wrong. If you don't serve your children and listen to them, it is if you are running away from God. God placed children on this earth to serve you from Him. That's why I say, if your children have become valueless to you in this way because of your own pride, it is better you give them to someone who will enjoy them and listen to them.

Now, let's look at the government of the United States of America. Have you ever wondered why it works so well and why only within 250 years it has become so prosperous? It is the faith of the people of this nation that are attentive to the Will of God and, once God speaks to each of us, we move steadfastly to do the work for Him as He lays the path for us to get it done. Our forefathers, whether they realized in full abundance or not, built the United States of America according to the Will of God by the Love of the Holy Spirit which is evident in the Declaration of Independence and Constitution. For example, let us look at the legislative branch or Congress. Congress is divided into the left wing and right wing and are representatives of the people (All are the Body of Christ). The left wing is more feeling toward humanitarian causes, the right wing is more logical toward the analysis of business strategies. We really should call the left wing the right wing and the right wing the left wing. Possibly the person who coined them was a bit dyslexic in translating. This is typical of the brain. The left brain is thinking and the right brain is feeling and the people are it's frontal lobe. But when they work together in serving the executive branch or President and his cabinet (Jesus and His Disciples), things run smoother. And then there is the judicial branch (God) who places judgment on adhering to the law and even over the executive branch. If the President does not seek the counsel of God and obey His Laws, we as a nation will collapse. If the judicial branch fails to understand their duties to oversee that God's Law is upheld by way of the Holy Spirit, this nation will collapse. If the legislative branch fails to affirm the actions of the other two branches as obeying God's Law and

the people fail to affirm the legislative branch, we as a nation will collapse. And you will find more analogies to God within our government. Accept the fact that the United States of America is like the twelve tribes in the Old Testament. We were all, every one of us in this nation, brought and bought by God out of slavery. But beware of the prideful nation! Isn't that what we are doing now even in Afghanistan—cleaning the soul of the mortal in the name of God? Isn't funny how history repeats itself?

We can attribute much of the United States' success to the principles established through economic philosophers such as Adam Smith. Adam Smith's moral philosophies in his book, *Moral Sentimentalism* and monetary and economic philosophies in his book, *Wealth of Nations* were great contributors to the structure of today's American economic system. Adam Smith states that the best form of economic structure is through independent labor, or natural liberty, where each person contributes to the common good in his or her unique freedom towards contributing. This is indeed the moral fabric of the United States itself. This is why it is against the law to secede from the Union. This is not unlike the synergetic efforts of the Holy Spirit within each of us pursuing the common God of Pure Love. However, wanting to work toward a common goal and having to work toward a common goal are two very different principles. A corrupted system invariably transforms a "wanting to work" principle into a "having to work" principle. A loving system does just the opposite and the more pure the love is, the quicker this transformation. The corrupted system will, without fail, degenerate. This corruption is what is going on now in the United States. Smith also goes on to state that people seem to have an intrinsic ego and a desire to publicly serve one another. This is similar to the philosophy of worth and value. However, the problem is that we have placed money as the common good, or common denominator, and our desire to serve the public has turned into a tool of manipulation to yet again serve ourselves. Therefore, acceptance of each person for who they are and our pursuit of unconditional love toward others are deteriorating. Only God lasts. Money will not last. So, if we continue on this course, we will not last either. You can only serve one master (MT 6:24).

So then, why not an economy based upon value compensation? In other words, **HOW MUCH WOULD YOU PAY FOR AN ITEM?**

"My food is to do the will of him who sent me and to finish his work. Do you not say, 'Four months more and then the harvest'? I tell you, open your eyes and look at the fields! They are ripe for harvest. Even now the reaper draws his wages, even now he harvests the crop for eternal life, so that the sower and the reaper may be glad together. Thus the saying 'One sows and another reaps' is true. I sent you to reap what you have not worked for. Others have done the hard work, and you have reaped the benefits of their labor." (John 4:34-38)

What is Value Compensation?

Value Compensation is "The selling of a product or service "at-cost" where profit is produced by the customer's donation, which is dependent upon the customer's assessment of his or her own cost of living in addition to the customer's assessment of the product or service's usefulness to the customer over a [possibly designated] period of time."

In a nutshell, Value Compensation gives the consumer more power so that government, business, and the consumer share power equally. It is a mixture of not-for-profit and for-profit business. Unlike not-for-profit where much of the capital must come from the government or the well-to-do, a value compensation business derives profit from its customers. Also unlike the for-profit business where profit is included in the price of the product or service derived from unscrupulous marketing assessments, hidden “at-costs”, and increased through hyped advertisement or sensationalism, a value compensation business sells its product or service “at cost” (shown up front) and the profit is derived by the customer’s assessment of his or her own cost-of-living and is dependent upon the product or service’s inherent quality.

And though I believe all labor, all ideas, all goods, all knowledge should be given freely, a better worldly and *world-realistic* way of providing goods and services is value compensation. Hopefully, Value Compensation will become one step closer to a free exchange of goods and services.

Value Compensation also means that the values that make a society strong (belief, hope, trust, discipline, wisdom, humility, love, acceptance, devotion, friendship, freedom, and unity) must come into play in order for the nation and its people to prosper. So then, this system compensates its nation and people in value (quality) of goods and in values of a strong society.

What are the advantages of Value Compensation?

- ✓ Keeps more normalcy (stability) in the amount of inflation and deflation in the overall economy
- ✓ Regulates the buyer’s cost of living. Wealth is spread among the populace more evenly.
- ✓ Everything is based upon its “natural price” and not the seller’s retail or market value (mark-up).
- ✓ The poor need not pay a relatively stabilized market value determined by the seller. Thus, the poor retains their money instantly instead of waiting for the alms delivered by the well-to-do
- ✓ Every product gets to be used quickly and is able to achieve nearest to its maximum usefulness (ie, everyone has a right to reap from what each person sows)
- ✓ Solidifies trust in our economy and citizens
- ✓ The cost of the base mineral is regulated by the federal, state, county, or city government (depending upon the mineral’s locale and rareness) since they serve the citizens and are paid by the citizens in managing the mineral. Therefore, sharing of resources is encouraged and competition reduced.
- ✓ The seller, at minimum, meets all of his or her expenses.
- ✓ The seller is grateful with found humility for the profit he receives. The richer thus respects the poorer and the poorer respects the richer.
- ✓ Morality weighs upon the consumer and seller. Mutual trust is established and donation becomes a way of life.
- ✓ Ethicality weighs upon the manufacturer. Ensures quality manufacturing through high quality components, device operations, customer service and safety, higher environmental protection standards, and long-term usefulness. Keeps the manufacturer honest with no hidden agenda or contents. The old adage, “What you see *is* what you get”, is true.

- ✓ Quality is regulated by value determined by the customer, not wealth. Therefore, manufacturing costs are streamlined and efficiency/effectiveness increased.
- ✓ If value-based quality is high and profits low, then cost of living for the people must increase!
- ✓ Labor is a gift with no fee. The consumer pays for material, overhead, and other indirect expenses. Therefore, each person is seen as a valuable entity instead of an object or number. Each person should be able to reap from what others sow. Labor gets paid through profit-sharing. Prosperity is gained through production rather than labor. If prosperity is gained through production, children and adults' true gifts must be ascertained, developed, and placed in the right places in order to drive profits. This enhances true freedom of, by, and for the person and the common good. This also promotes interconnectedness and drives business to assist in the education of our youth. If labor is a monetary derivative in prosperity, then cost of living fluctuates through labor costs. Thus, the wages of labor (people) suffer and consistency of wage, benefits, and job security fluctuates as well. Thus, "buying a person" (slavery or low-balling) is a thing of the past.
- ✓ As the demand for the item is increased because of its quality and usefulness (even though the supply may be low), the at-cost of the item decreases because overhead is dispersed over a greater number of consumers. Therefore, cheap (low quality) goods are more expensive and identified more effectively in the short-term, thus, effecting long-term credibility. The manufacturers/retailers will have to change their way of doing business or manufacturing goods instead of using hyped advertising to try to manipulate the public into buying cheap or not-very-useful products.
- ✓ Increases the substantial progress of state-of-the-art technology and life saving research because production and quality create wealth. The "hitting the mark" rather than "marking up" of what people truly need will drive profits. The closer a company comes to "hitting the mark", the greater their profits. Thus, because there is no mark-ups, profits are now an indication of what people really need in society rather than what they crave or what business makes them think they crave. Business will find out that more people will pay for what they need rather than for what they want over a much longer period of time. Therefore, long-term profits will substantially out-weight short-term returns. Thus, advertisement and advertising costs will decrease. These are only some of the costs that will be re-invested in the business' research and development programs. The consumer will wind up paying for most of advertisement costs of the business through word-of-mouth and shared communication through newspaper, internet, and public television. The needs of the people outweigh their wants.

I'm telling you that there is nothing we have created that the Creator did not create first. Many of us are prideful. We think we have created. For instance, pick up something. Look at it. Is it symmetrical, does it have feet, does it have arms, does it look like something inside your body? What you have picked up is a translation. Are there blemishes within the product or imperfections? Of course because all problems seem to appear within the translation. And when you originally received it, was it valuable to you at one time? Is it valuable to you now? If it is not valuable to you now, then you do it a discredit. Give it away to someone who will enjoy it so it will always remain valuable. The selfish thinking of, "if it's not valuable to us then trash it or chuck it in a closet," has become an epidemic in this country. And now we are doing it to one another in our jobs, in our family, in everything. Would you like God to just chuck you? Well,

He won't because you are always of infinite worth to Him—so there! He is even sending us to Afghanistan in hopes that the destructive leaders over there can be saved.

The moral of the story is that you can never escape God. It is delusional to think you can or you have. So, you may as well accept that fact and start leading a more peaceful and fulfilling life. Not to be superstitious, because superstition is a way of avoiding God by your own mind expecting worldly outcomes through worldly views instead of Godly outcomes through Godly views, but many relationship concepts happen in threes, even what I have described above (Isa 33:22). Where did it all start from? I say it all started from where everything starts from—the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.

Pursue the Lord and you will prosper. Run away from the Lord and you will perish. It really is that simple.

35. Worldly Versus Spiritually

In the great faith from us to our Lord, shall you receive the Guiding Hand of God forever. For it is when you live in the Word, all within your own boundary of your own skin, shall that evil toward others disappear. For it is hard to explain, but through faith in the Lord, and you within His Time, shall become fulfillment in you and shall be not your choice to edify others, but your automatic craving to do so. You have chosen to accept the Will of God. Will you allow Him then to will you? The Lord will put the words, thoughts, desires of Himself in you at the time of His own choosing to do so. You shall become the tool of the Lord upon earth. And thus, shall you become the Word, still in mortal flaw, for we are all human, but in richness of realizing His Grace so as to move through flaw with Him in His Guiding Pace rather than against Him in mortal desire and shame and feeling of unworthiness. Judging will become only a mortal desire and be seen as trivial. Jealousy will be trivial, for you are men and women among men and women, but you shall see it dividing all of you and keeping you from doing the Lord's Work. Jealousy comes from the sense that you lack a special purpose and you feel you are less worthwhile and less deserved of God than others.

You are special in the eyes of the Lord. For realize that without you, the Body is incomplete. Trust the Lord to guide you and make less worrisome time on such matters.

36. Devotion

It has come to me in a dream, that what you see is not what you get, but is what you got. For you must choose to devote yourself. It is not good to roam the earth and not be devoted to serving God and the needs of others. I am devoted to the Lord and to the one He has given me. If you devote, shall you do it unconditionally, without judgment, for it is a Gift from God. For faith is the only way and God shall reveal to you His Plan, but you must be in His Time to see it.

And what of myself my friends? In my former life and in my new life, chains bind me from realizing total faith in the Lord, as it may be upon me. I am only human and sometimes I obsess rather than serve. Obsession is self-devotion which is outside of God's Time, but true devotion is Godly devotion within His time He has allotted you to become more intimate with

Him and others in your life. Some I have broken free from by God, some still remain while I do His Will. But it should be the goal of each of us to be unbound to any mortal, except to whom God has appointed to you. For there is bound and then there is connectedness, the two not being the same. And then there is "Of" being which we are with the Lord. So, if in marriage, then be your spouse, but not your children after they become adults or when they are married, whichever comes first. If unmarried, then it be no person, unless you were provided guardianship and then only until they become adults or are married. But shall you never be unhealthily bound to anyone mortally anyway, but healthily bound spiritually. For obsession (selfish devotion) takes much of your energies away from your relationship with the Lord and will destroy your relationship with the other.

To be devoted to the Lord, shall you have faith and understanding that you are of Him and that all falls into the schedule of God, and thus will work out in your spiritual favor. Mind you not about mortal favor, this is the devil's trickery to preoccupy yourself away from the Lord, for the conscious mind has a way of forgetting details over a period of time when not reminded. But know this: The spiritual mind never forgets and all things wonderful shall be stored within the spiritual soul to the end. From the spiritual soul, the Lord shall cleanse all that is dirty in the mortal soul and, thus, replace sin with love. It is with the spiritual mind that you should always think and understand by way of your spiritual soul where the Spirit lives. And your spiritual eyes should stay focused on the Holy Spirit. For mortal eyes only see one way—outward. But spiritual eyes see inward, as well as outward.

A guarantee of devotion to another person should never get in the way of our personal relationship with the Lord. We are slaves to the Lord (Eph 6:5-8, Rom 6:22). We should not be slaves to men (Gal 2:4, 4:8-9). In today's society, many people want contract guarantees of our long-term devotion not out of love but through manipulation (deception) for exploitation. I do not know what God plans for me tomorrow. If I make a contractual guarantee, I become slave to a person and place a person between God and myself. I will manage to my utmost whatever the Lord wishes to provide me. I will accept that what I have is enough to what He wishes me to do today. But if I place myself in a contractual obligation that yields all authority over to another to lord over me, I have done the Lord disservice. If another wishes me to provide a contractual obligation that I will be with them for a period of time, I do disservice to the Lord as well. How do I know the plan God has for me within that period of time? When I devote myself to a person, all I can say is that I will remain faithful to that one but the Lord is my master. If we provide a verbal or written contract to another where we cannot leave someone when called by God without a punishment by the other, we forfeit our spiritual lives. But realize that I am not saying we should not be responsible in our management of what is provided to us by the Lord.

Then there are the sacraments where I devote and obligate myself to the Lord guaranteeing that He be absolute ruler of my life. This is done in such things as baptism, communion, and marriage. When I devote to the Lord my marriage, I automatically devote myself to my spouse for life. But if someone says that you should sign a contract obligating you for three years to that person and that you will be severely punished for leaving that contract, we should never enter

into this contract. We should never affiliate ourselves with selfish people. And we should never do anything for mortal gain but only spiritual gain. Spiritual gain does not mean we cannot be prosperous. But if we work for the purpose of the Lord, we will manage the prosperity in the way God needs us to.

I believe we should only devote to something when it benefits our working for the purpose the Lord has given us. I even believe that such things as mortgages, when financed for several years, are very questionable considerations. Be happy with what the Lord has given you so that you can give it back to the Lord. Then you will gain prosperity in more ways than one. We should reason why we devote to contractual obligations, either verbally or written. Is it by marriage in true love and the desire to serve, or is it in selfishness so that we try to ensure we don't lose someone. If it is out of desperation or impatience to gain a mortal thing, I believe it is better we wait for the Lord to provide us. If we devote because without it we would be prevented from doing our work for the Lord, then further spiritual counseling should be sought and possibly some type of obligation is warranted to execute our abilities to love and serve God and one another.

Many of us try to do so much with the time we have that we may not be able to see the amount that the Lord wishes us to do in the time He has given us. Therefore, our natural will is to be impatient. But the Lord needs us to be patient for Him and work diligently to the beat of His drum. Then we will be able to discern from quality time in our lives compared to unproductive time. We will all die sooner or later. If I do what I want to do and when I want to do it, I will not have lived my true life. If I do what He wants me to do and when He wants me to do it, I will have lived my true life. But during this time that I give my devotion or production to the Lord, we sometimes feel that any downtime is unproductive. But we must realize that downtime, or time that the Lord is not calling us, is restful time given to us by Him as well. We may call this "teacher planning time" when God the Teacher is planning our life and we the students are to rest in the meantime.

37. Encouragement, Discouragement, Expectations, Perseverance, and Praise

I have heard many a time from others: I am successful because I believed in myself and I did not let anyone discourage me from my goal. I have money, power, and fame. I say you believed only what your mortal eyes saw. I tell you, especially you mortal children, to believe in yourself is the devil's trickery, but to believe in the One who works from within you by the way of His Kingdom, is the highest honor, for you shall reach the greatest goal. For I tell you, believing in your mortal self will surely play into the devil's hand.

A childish person seeks all for selfishness and fame and falls into immense temptation by his or her own choosing. But it is the man or woman who so deserves to be called such that knows that following the temptation of grandeur thinking through rose-colored glasses is a downward spiral led by the devil. I am not saying there is not a great pursuit for you according to the plan of God, but it is in the joy and suffering of the pursuit in God's Time that matters.

A righteous man or woman takes the harder journey in finding enjoyment in everyday things and becomes fulfilled within himself or herself without having to sell his or her soul to the devil, but

gives up his or her soul to Jesus. And again, I am not saying that journey cannot run smoothly and quickly if it is the will of God, but it must be in the journey and not the end to justifying the means that is important. Remember the devil will never completely own your soul because the enemy has too much fun seeing you suffer trying to entice him into buying it. If he stopped having fun this way, the enemy would discard you totally and then you would either be dead or you would turn to God for help.

While you are living, the later is not a viable option to the enemy. And so there is always hope in salvation. But Jesus saw your own suffering self and said that He will buy it because he and she too are worthwhile to receive His Love even in that state. And then when you choose Jesus over the enemy, the enemy will make great strides in enticing you back only to play the same wicked games over and over and over again where the only closure for you if you do not become accountable and repent is suicide and/or death due to irreparable damage.

See with your spiritual eyes. When doing so, do not preoccupy yourself with those who discourage you either mortally or spiritually. And do not preoccupy yourself with those who encourage mortally, except by Christians who do so sporadically, but later in realized sin; for we all are human. But those who encourage only by mortal eyes for the outcome of mortal rewards, run away for they lead you to the devil. You will wind up selling your own soul to the enemy. If this has already happened to you, receive the Lord, and He will defeat the enemy with you.

Discouragement happens when we are disconnected with the Holy Spirit within. We have heard the saying, "keep your spirits up." This saying is misleading because there is only One Spirit and that is God's Holy Spirit within, which is up all the time and operates in His time. Thus, when we are discouraged we want things to happen in our time and so we are disconnected from Him. If we were connected, then we would do the opposite and that is to persevere because we feel the love within and know that He has a plan for us.

What really is discouragement? I believe discouragement, impatience, pride, and expectations go hand-in-hand. Discouragement is when we believe to have great potential to become valuable and are impatient in attaining it. We usually want that taste of glory or fame from others. We then grow impatient because we envision a certain outcome in the future. We foresee our future and expect it to happen that way. Only the prideful focus on their own outcome. Then when there is a barricade in the way of that outcome, we get discouraged instead of seeing it as a possible detour sign guided to us by God. Expectation is an evil thing. It draws people away from God because, in our arrogance, we think we know the best way, the best outcome, and that we can predict the future (MT 4:7). I am not speaking about prophecy, which sees a certain outcome but still cannot discern the exact path taken to achieve that outcome. The journey is still left up to God. (MT 7:21-23) This is why we should anticipate what He has planned for us, but never expect what we think He has planned for us.

When we find disappointment in someone, it is due to our own selfish expectations of him or her. When we are disappointed in someone, we blame for what we perceive as inadequacies in him or her instead of owning our own feelings and conveying them to that individual. We should never say we are disappointed in someone but rather that we feel a certain way because of

what someone did that affected us. Being disappointed in someone is the same as saying that they should follow us rather than God.

When we are connected with the Holy Spirit, we understand that our potential to become valuable changes in a daily allowance to doing and feeling valuable to Him. When we fully feel His presence, we want to run when He asks us to crawl. And because of fear and mistrust, we want to crawl when He asks us to run. We must learn to crawl and develop our skills so that when He asks us to run we will have little if no problem in running. This takes patience and, when we come to understand this principle, we will slow down and not be so discouraged. Discouragement is out of His Time and it is usually that we are running so fast that we cannot focus on His Will or hear Him.

We must realize that nothing exists tomorrow except God. We do not exist tomorrow. Our church does not exist tomorrow. We exist only today and so each day should be spent searching for a deeper, more intimate relationship with Christ. We should do His Will as He guides us by the love of the Holy Spirit within. Our church doors should be open everyday. Our churches should hold some form of service each day. We should find love each day. We should make the most out of everyday. Conjecture of the future should be totally dismissed from our minds because it comes from the natural soul. Expectations should be totally dismissed from our minds because it comes from the natural soul. This is why we should settle disputes and forgive our brothers and sisters before the sun goes down, meaning the next day (Eph 4:25-28).

If we can live right now in each moment knowing we are experiencing and communicating His love from the Holy Spirit in some form, then we are assured that we are all right with who we are and what we do and am doing what the Lord wills us to do. And if anyone says differently, we have the permission to defer him or her over to God. Love never fails.

When we are connected to the Holy Spirit and within its love, we do not expect but we persevere. I seek to be in stride with the Will of the Lord. But should I just sit or should I persevere knowing that He will be faithful. I persevere to seek Him. Many times I know not where, but I persevere because I love Him. I persevere to do His Will. I pray and do. I do not pray and wait around for an answer. The answer may come while I wait but it will come as I continue to seek Him and do His work. If I do not hear Him, I at least know I am serving Him through perseverance. And how do I know I am serving Him? He has provided to me His Holy Spirit and I know the purpose of serving Him and His Children. So this I will do while awaiting further instructions. It is through perseverance that I can make a difference here for Him (Luke 8:15).

Yes, perseverance is an enormous quality in the Kingdom. Perseverance comes from hope which comes from faith which will ultimately find love. Love is the source that produces our wanting to persevere. We must understand how to persevere even in our confusion. These I believe are guarantees of righteous perseverance even when we feel disconnected:

- Praying. Praying accomplishes two things. It deepens our personal relationship with God and it slows us down to be able to hear Him so that we can receive His counsel and guidance.

- Tithing. Tithing reinstates our faith in Him and humbles us. We realize we should not do anything without His guidance and that we have control over nothing.
- Fasting. Fasting is a direct communication from you to God that you remain faithful and await His Word in perseverance and patience. We should fast as if we are in the Kingdom and within His arms. One is the most comforted and feels the most love when in the arms of someone they love.
- Serving. Serving is always a guarantee of doing right. When we serve others in His Name, we come to feel His Love and presence. We begin to feel connected to Him again. It humbles us and deepens our conviction of His Will as the right and only way to achieve true love.
- Fellowship. Christian fellowship strengthens our commitment to His Children and to the church. Our commitment to the church is one of a spiritual view as the body of Christ and not a legalistic worldly ritualistic view. We have fellowship to encourage and discover intimacy (bonding and connection) to His Children. This will help us begin to connect with Him again and remind us of our unique and personal way we have been intimate with Him in the past. And we must always remember that intimacy grows in a relationship through bad times as well as good times. With bad times usually comes a great deal of compassion for and by the people we love and that is something that creates great intimacy. This is important in every relationship, so it will mature and is especially important in marriage. This is one reason it is stated during marriage vows. When we are making this vow, we are saying that we desire greater intimacy.
- Discipleship. When we disciple, we are reminded of our original purpose and we are given once again a purpose and direction. When the times come that we are unsure of where to go next and our purpose is unclear, discipleship can always be used to fall back on as a way of feeling valuable with direction and purpose until God speaks to us again for our own specific purpose.

And now I speak of praise. My wife had been trying to help me understand this for years. When I try to praise her for her righteous deeds, she says to me that she has only done what is expected of her to do. I had a difficult time understanding this. Doesn't everyone want praise? Yes, but praise from whom. When I do what my Father wishes for me, I feel praise from Him. He makes it very known to me. It is the greatest feeling I have had. But when I look for praise from others, I start depending on it so much that I do things for them instead of for God. My own, natural soul becomes my source of motivation and praise becomes my reward. And if I don't get praise, I get discouraged (JN 12:43). But when I do the Will from my Lord and Savior, I know I am guaranteed praise because he loves me. I don't have to seek praise. The supernatural love of my Father becomes my source of motivation and my reward is the doing and not the outcome. If there is any end reward, it is everlasting life, which He has given to me already. So even that reward goes away. I do it because I know and feel His Love directed at me and I just want to love Him back and praise Him. That is all. (JN 5:31-47)

38. Fun and Games

*If it were up to me, I'd do all that I find interesting and fun (which is most everything).
The problem is the world takes what they do too seriously to allow such wishy-washiness.*

It has come to me today that all but the spiritual course of the Lord and the following of the Holy Spirit within each of us and the other is a mortal's game which means nothing. I am human and thus while also in the Kingdom on Earth, I cannot sustain that glory for I am not perfect. But it is in these times that you believe to fall from the Glory, not He of you and not you of He, but only the delusion of it. For as Jesus died for us, no one ever falls from His Grace nor Glory and thus you are always bound under His Law, whether in the mortal world or because you are of Him, in the spiritual Kingdom.

Where would you find yourself? For if you have work that you do not enjoy, that is mortal work or should I say one of many mortal games, and that is to the point that you cannot focus on the Lord while doing your work, then shall the devil lurch in the trenches when you believe you fall. While in the Glory, the type of mortal work matters none because you work in the employment of the Lord and it is there that you are fulfilled. But when you find yourself in mortal thinking, shall you require the mortal game that suits you, which is fun and encouraging because then shall you be able to reenter the spiritual realm quickly.

But realize that you will never reach the stars by your own decisions on whether to work here or there because no job is absolutely perfect, but will you be happy in it so to focus on your true employer. And the more places you choose that will make you happier, the greater you will be able to focus on Him. But you ask how? Abide by the Law. Where others have faith and obey the Lord, then that is where you will be most happiest. If you can have faith and pray, the Lord will lead you to such a place, but in His Time at His Pace He has selected for you. Be patient.

Do not think of the mortal thinking and its game as a pit but as a support. Find support in all mortal things you find yourself in for the devil will not tempt you as easily and you will Honor the Lord even in those times.

As a mortal child, you played only games you thought were fun. Do the same as a mortal adult because I tell you, the mortal adult who refuses to see that he or she is only a grown mortal child and, of all importantly a Child of God, will be in chaos. For it is necessary as a mortal adult that you understand that you are a Child of the Lord and the Lord shall be your concentration even more because your choices are not innocent like that of a mortal child.

The mortal world is a store of many games, given to you by our Lord. Everything is a game created to suffice the indulgence of its players. Find the one that best suits you and have fun so you can also Honor the Lord in those times as well. I believe the best games are those where honoring and understanding the Holy Spirit of yourself and others by participating in it takes a vital part, for as a Christian this will remind your mortal mind that you are truly a Child of God and then you can play without conscience, but by pure faith and you will be in joy while you play. Fun, laughter, loving in all you do—oh, you will be happy—are presents to God from you and to you from God!

And then you ask, if the Lord is all pure love, why did He create us? Was He lonely? I believe He just wanted to have fun. So, He created us in His image inside and out with free will to choose and created everything else around. And He delights in His creation as He wants you to delight in it as well. But now you know that with having fun comes with it responsibility.

And some I hear say it is cruel that we are to suffer. Believe me, sisters and brothers, God made you having pure love. If you must blame someone else, blame satan for trying to take that away. But better yet, because God granted us free will, we are accountable as adults in doing all our own way or His. Those are our only two choices. Therefore, I say do not blame satan for your own choice. Admit you cannot do it yourself and realize you are in control of nothing and give all control to Him where it truly is anyway. Yes, you are still accountable for your own choices, but you will become His tool on the righteous path. Then satan disappears and it is God and you.

39. Following Him into the Desert, Leading Me from Temptation, and Delivering Me from Evil

Brothers and sisters, did not our Savior Christ willingly follow the Lord into the desert with temptations far greater than ours will ever be and did He not come out for the Lord sent angels to attend to Him? Do not separate yourself from this, for whatever our Savior does and is of His account in the Bible and whatever He says, we are to follow (JN 14:12). But He went into an immensely vast desert once for forty days and nights. We are not as He. We as humans choose to pick up dirt as we go along and then much of this dirt gets buried and in our mortal soul, we find it difficult to believe that the entire dirt can be cleansed by the Lord. And so, how many deserts will we enter and for how long? I have known poor souls that have not even followed the Lord even into one desert for they fear too much. And for them, I pray my hardest. What has happened to them—so much abuse, immorality has been done to them. But as the Lord promises to us, you will never be given any temptation or have to go into any desert greater than what you can bear when you ask for Him.

And what is that you fear the most, how many fears do you have? But know this, you will not have to go into the desert an equal amount of times. But most will begin with lesser fears and enter those deserts to conquer to build up confidence to go into the desert for the greatest fear. But you must follow Jesus and thus the Lord into each beginning with the smallest to build your faith in Him, for you will require an even greater faith in Him to conquer your greatest fear. But know this: Just as the Spirit led Jesus, so will He lead you and so you should follow Him because as the Lord was with Jesus in the desert, so shall He be with you. And I tell you, most time spent in the desert is not equivalent to great lengths of time, but you will have pain because much of your energies will be in digging up the dirt in your mortal soul with the help of the Lord. But it is by Him that you will come out in joy on the other side.

What is your greatest fear? I believe for many it is the fear of death—that is the fear that if I go into the desert I will have such great suffering that I will die. And so is it the fear of death or the fear of suffering for no purpose other than dying? And so, you see, you wish to be happy. Our Apostle Paul in Second Corinthians talks about this in Chapter 12. He must go through yet another desert. And Paul chooses to go because He knows that each desert will only increase his faith and confidence in the Lord. And for you? Pray to help surround yourself with Christians who love you and follow Jesus and thus the Lord into your desert. For our Lord and Savior will protect you in the storm and His chosen people who love you will aid you in the storm when you see with your mortal eyes and drive you back toward Him. Most of you were dragged into many deserts by unbelievers, especially when you were a child. Is not your presence here a great

example of how the Lord and you survived all those deserts? I believe back then you may have not known the Lord was with you.

But, my brothers and sisters, you can only heal by choosing on your own to follow the Lord back into the desert—a rite of passage if you will. For the mortally abusive physical presence is over, but the mortal soul still is in pain. The difference now is that you choose by your own self to follow the Lord back into the desert to cleanse your soul. All of us have this need to be cleansed because no human is perfect and thus we chose to store dirt. This is the difference: Choosing and being accountable for your own choices versus being dragged. As a child, you were not at fault for what others did to you, but you are accountable for the dirt you chose and choose to store within your soul and the actions you made and make because of the dirt. Where did the dirt come from? Give it back by giving it up—to the Lord. In this way, you can forgive those who threw it upon you. For, as Jesus is merciful so are you to become. The dirt you have lived with for so long, do you wish to give it to anyone else, including he or she who threw it upon you?

If you survived after being dragged without any provisions, will you not survive after choosing to bring provisions with you? I will tell you my greatest fear was to be alone, for I believed in the Lord at even a young age, but, in the abuse of those I trusted and loved, my faith was squandered. And so I had felt abandoned by all. But I know now that I was never abandoned by God, and this is why I am here to speak with you. But I finally chose to follow the Lord into the desert, for He whispered to me that I must go and follow Him into it. Though I did not understand, it just took faith to do it. And while in it, I tried to escape from the pain by my own will and by what the devil placed before me, but the Lord gave me people who loved me to drive me back to Him and trust in Him, as He will provide you. And so He called me to separate from my wife because of my specific fear of loneliness and go into the desert, for He had given me mortal support as well as spiritual.

And so, I was led into the desert to be tempted by the devil, for when you come out of the desert cleansed will you know that the devil really has no power over you when you are with the Lord. For if the devil did not win you in the desert when you were younger when you did not realize the Lord was with you, then how can he win you when you now not only realize He is with you, but you choose to follow Him in and realize Him to be your protective armor? For the strikes will hit you hard in your soul, but will not penetrate to your Spirit. And then after awhile of strikes, you will say, be gone satan for you are a pest—my Spirit is alive and strong. Who are you to do this to me? Be gone! And then away he will go, but remain a pest less and less in your life to the point of just becoming a mere nuisance, for we are human. And you will say I have been to Hell and back. But was not God there with you? Have you then conquered Hell by the Grace of God and Him with you? And so does not wherever you go, so does the Holy Spirit and thus the Lord? If you have conquered Hell with Him, what can you not conquer with Him on earth? But be forewarned if you believe you were the only one to conquer it because then you shall face a greater desert later. For only do you fool yourself in thinking that you only without the Lord have conquered, but only have you avoided or circumvented the desert in which He leads you into.

And so to serve you, but not to boast, I will provide you accounts of my time in my most vast desert in which I followed Him in. Will this, by the Will of God, be one of your many provisions as you follow Him into your own desert.

Let this be known, the Lord led me into the desert and I was tempted by the enemy. But I was provided support, mortally and spiritually, by the Hand of God (Rev 2:1-11). I left my marriage to be on my own. Though my mortal soul dictated to find a worldly better, my God and thy Holy Spirit dictated to me to trust what He had trained and instilled in me prior. For He never left me. I was tempted many a time in the desert. The devil painted a pretty picture but the Lord sent me angels along the way and mortal support. The devil enticed me to seek external wants over internal life. When companies, commercials, people, and situations paint a pretty picture to entice you to them, it is because they cannot stand on their own. If it looks like a potential investment has been made to look good on the outside, it is because it is unable to stand on its own. This goes for anything in life and is rampant. If anything or anyone doesn't want to genuinely help you but makes itself look good to entice you to it, stay away because it is drawing you into its web of deceit. And if you are going, realize that you are not strong enough. This is when you must direct yourself to God.

I first entered an organization that helped the oppressed and served with love those who found it hard to help themselves. This I did of love, but I also hoped others would see my worldly value. Within a week, the Lord set me on stage in front of an audience to call attention to the abuses within God's families on earth. For God trained me throughout the previous year for this. I felt the Lord and He succeeded in me and then after, I still felt alone. Before the end of the day, I met a woman from the organization who appeared all that I desired in a woman and we then met once more another day. An angel spoke to me and had me notice that the woman embellished only on herself and served no other. And so, I listened to the angel and left. But I did not realize the lesson the angel was hoping that I would learn, which was that the woman was much like myself. But I did not realize.

Another time, I became a member of an organization of mortal rebellions whom claimed pro choice on abortion or death. I chose to show to others my mortal worthiness for their approval, for my delusional realization of unworthiness to the Lord was increasing, and I entered the lion's den. A temptress who was the leader of the organization was placed upon me, for she initiated the form of relationship with me. She listened like no other I knew at the time, but she was married and she felt no guilt and had no scruples in sexual immoralities. She felt no love nor belief in the Lord, but only in herself and cursed my Lord's existence in others. I then questioned whether or not Jesus was my Savior. I got to the point of copulation, but the Lord said fiercely to me not to copulate, and so I held my ground and said, "please go, this is not right what we are doing". And away she left never to be heard of again. (Proverbs 5). I realized later that she literally went by the name of Jezebel (Rev 2:18-29). And though she may have come from a less-than-desirable situation, I intently did not agree with her motives or reasons for such dishonorable actions.

Yet another time, I was encouraged by believers to seek a church of the Christ Jesus, but I chose a church that chose its members from anyone, believers and non-believers. For I wished to show the church how good I was to gain their approval and thus, I could adjust to anything they

placed before me without rule. Also, I would not have to be alone for I would always be around others. But the church was not there to convert or reform anyone in Jesus' name but allow safehaven to mortals believing in mortal ways. And so growth in Jesus Christ was not mandated nor essential but only to their own mortality. It was more of a "do what feels good while searching for insight" kind of thing. Many chose this church because others on this earth, some who call themselves Christians, struck at the hearts of these mortals to the point of exasperation and thus relaying the message that they were not worthwhile to receive the Lord, that the Lord loved different people differently, and acceptance and unconditional love were nowhere to be found or selective at best, but judgment from mortals was everywhere. Some believed Jesus to be their Savior, including some of the spiritual leaders. A great number of the congregation was of disrespectful homosexual peoples and, because we all have actual and perceived afflictions ourselves, the disrespect and not whether they were homosexual or not, was the key principle. This disrespect was addressed little and, thus, the disrespectful behavior was left to the conscience of the individual without much consequence. It is my belief that moral discipleship and education distinguishes true spiritual leadership. I even became a member of this church, so I may continue to be reassured of my mortal will. But the Lord did not leave me. And when I realized His asking me to leave, I left. It seemed more like an unorganized and confused gathering and safehaven for those who felt outcast and ostracized and of people who thought and felt themselves victims of some form. But within the doors, there was Jesus Christ who accepted them into His arms. Work with me and seek me He asks. I am here for you (Rev 2:12-17).

In another time, I helped a woman in trouble who was in distress. She warned me at first to caution my involvement with her because she was in great turmoil, but I did so anyway. For I was lonely. I did this for my own gain to be with what I thought to be a worldly better than my mate and, like what many of us constantly crave, something new. She had two children, all who had been emotionally abused including her and still was by the former husband—though neither of the children were by the only husband, nor by the same man. I began to fall for the three. I began to cling and an angel spoke to me, "Leave at once and do not look back!" And so I did.

In another time, I became a member of a group to entice myself in spiritual prostitution found by the Internet where temptation would be plentiful to seek a mate. I met the enticer, who was the director of the group. The enticer was dressed in black and set up business in a low lit mansion where I met her and she listened and caretook me upon my vulnerabilities. She was professionally, mortally skilled in understanding people's vulnerabilities. And she accepted me over thousands of other applicants easily. But the Lord spoke to me through His Angel and I listened. He said, "Do not do this for your wife is your gift," and I listened. I said away before I went to the first gathering, and away the enticer flew, and I began to concentrate on my wife.

My wife encouraged me to seek help and asked me to go to her church, which was centered on Jesus Christ. But I sought help by a group mixed with believers and unbelievers. But God did not leave me for it was here that he came to me in my dreams and said, "My dear child, you were the sweetest little boy. You were so dear to My Heart. I love you and I will always love you. I never left you. What others did to you was out of their own wickedness and choice and they saw you not of Me but of and for them. And so now it is time to be accountable for your stored-up dirt and actions due to that dirt and go through the pain of healing with Me." And I listened. And it was here that I went through great pain, with the Lord's Grace and began to tear

down my arrogance and pride and be humbled and grateful to Him. And then Jesus spoke to me and told me of who He is and why He came to earth in the body of a man. But within the group, the Lord was not realized in many of their hearts and it was made clear to me by the Lord that sickness begets sickness, though they were trying to heal by other powers than Jesus. For many idolized others than our Savior Jesus Christ. I had found a sponsor, and he was there for a small time. But the Lord was present because soon thereafter, the sponsor declared himself unfit to teach me for he knew not my way in healing.

And it was then that I entered the Kingdom by the Lord saying to me, “My Child, you have done well. Always worthwhile to receive My Love, you are also deserved to enter the Kingdom. Follow Me.” For I was always worthwhile in the eyes of the Lord, but I had to know it myself and so the Lord made it remarkably clear to me. Through my wife who is my soul mate and am bound to by the Lord, who speaks to us both in His mysterious ways, the Lord said to listen to my wife. And so, I went to her church of Jesus. And the Lord said to me that my training was to begin. “Have faith and follow Me,” He said and so I did. And He came to me in yet another dream where my soul was lifted and my Spirit was seen and my spiritual eyes were made clear to see. And so the first church within my new life and of my calling I entered. And the Holy Spirit began to cleanse my dirt. And eventually I saw angels within me and then miracles began appearing, not only in me or for me, but around me and in those I saw for others. And, thus, my faith quickened. And the Lord poured His Revelations upon me and I began to understand through faith the Law and Will of God for me. And it was affirmed by the Word and some of my Christian brethren. And later I realized that the Lord was also guiding me and showing me from the outside looking in of truly tortured souls crying out. I was not to live within or be yoked to that. But I was to wind up having compassion for such people because I, myself, can relate to it.

40. On Conversion

While I was in the unbelievers’ church during the time I was tested in the desert, you saw that by judging others, you condemn those who you could otherwise bring into the Kingdom. In this case, many of those who were judged by false prophets and false teachers sought safehaven in a church of the mortal instead of that of Jesus Christ. Much faith in them had been lost, for many will follow you first, instead of following the Lord. But not only do you condemn one, but also by outcasting and excommunicating one, you condemn thousands. Have concern for the brother who discourages others. Who among you has not given notice twice to their brother for wrong doing in fear of the Lord’s anger upon you or in fear of the brother’s anger toward you? Fear not my brothers and sisters, the day is upon us when Jesus will come again. Do not take the time to fear the Lord’s wrath or be preoccupied with satan’s workings, but love the Lord’s Son and so you too shall be loved in great fulfillment. For then you please the Lord and not your sinful soul.

I say unto you, within the Lord’s Church, that is the One Body, wherever you encounter brethren in tongue and ruler, comfort him with ear and heart. For angry rebellion never led anyone to spiritual peace and love. Be in the Kingdom of God on Earth so trust will be your flame. For anger in the presence of converting one to the Kingdom of the Lord is the doing of the mortal soul, and makes the converter’s spiritual eyes see mirages in the desert where the water is an illusion, and leads the so called converted to drink sand. Ye, speak softly, gently but in truth and

allow the Lord to speak through you. And if you must speak in harsh truths, do so with love. For there is sensitivity even in tough love. Like the farmer—plant the seed and allow the Son to shine upon it for it is true that if after you plant it and then you smother it with self, you are blocking the Son Light from getting to it for you place yourself between their soul and the Spirit. But once the seed begins to sprout, then only shall you cultivate it with love through your own Holy Spirit.

But know this, judgment upon you awaits you by the troubled brother and thus you must journey and approach while in the Lord's Time. For in His Time and thus in the Kingdom on Earth, shall you be in virtuous patience and hear clearly the Word of the Lord. And shall you be secure within the walls of the Kingdom because the walls become your impenetrable armor and you will glow with the Love of Jesus Christ, our Savior. But when you realize that sin is upon you or your mortal soul is speaking or is compelling you while with the brother, disconnect and retreat for the seed has already been planted in the beginning of your meeting. It is best to first realize the planting of the seed rather than secondly the smothering by the disciple and even further lastly to the realization that you could be in temptation to sin. For I tell you, if you cannot see the first-and-best realization when going in, do not go in. Rather, seek one who is stronger than yourself or reschedule the meeting for the Glory is not yours, but the Almighty God.

But I can say this to everyone who wishes to change themselves. When one wishes to change themselves, one is saying that he wishes to change his soul for the better. Trying to convince oneself by changing one's mind, will most likely be pointless. If the soul did not change, the mind will return to it. As I state throughout this book, one's mind is the receiver-translater-transmitter for one's soul. If you really wish to change, accept and trust Jesus so that God can change your soul by way of His Holy Spirit and then be attentive with your mind's-eye of that which comes from your renewing soul. If you want to change the way you think, change the way of your soul.

One is doomed to repeat what one runs from by his mind. One becomes like whom his soul is in allegiance to. If a man has not been conscious of his relationship with God from Day 1, his soul is filled with half-truths (delusionment). As soon as one becomes conscious of his relationship with God, he is shown the other half that lies in his soul through the use of his mind. And it is then that one must decide whether God or man is telling the truth. This is where conscious-minded allegiance begins, though the old soul will not give up so easily if one chooses God. And then his actions from his body makes his allegiance evident to everyone else. If one chooses God, one will experience an intimacy one has never known.

41. Call to Gather Up

In the days of the Lord, of Jesus Christ my Savior, have I been told through the Holy Spirit to travel in love to those who to Jesus guides me. People of all kinds, even those in the Spirit in our churches, are in great disarray by mortal thinking and it is not by the tongue and ruler shall I confront but by the ear and the heart shall He use me to help change that which is in their mortal heart, if their mortal wills allow. So, I will listen patiently and speak by the words of our Lord. And I will help them become as one for the Lord by helping Him in the Great Commission deliver them to Him upon His return. I am speaking of people and religious factions. It is, as I

understand, the calling from Christ among all His Christian Children. As Caiaphas had prophesied, “Jesus would die for the Jewish nation, and not only for that nation but also for the scattered children of God, to bring them together and make them one (JN 11:51-52).” The Apostle Paul affirms this by saying, “And He made known to us the mystery of His will according to his good pleasure, when he purposed in Christ, to be put into effect when the times will have reached their fulfillment—to bring all things in heaven and on earth together under one head, even Christ (Eph 1:9-10).” The Lord Jesus Christ is calling me back into that one head to deliver His people back unto Him.

For they are of goodness because they are My Children, sayeth the Lord, but the beginning has begun and you are to gather up. You are My messenger, I have told you this from earlier on. And now you are also My deliverer. Seek in him who chooses to give and let the others be who do not. I will and have given to you the first of many churches, but it is the first that I will provide My guidance in My teachings. I will give to you what you have prayed for, a mentor in Jesus Christ. For though I am the All, I shall speak through the Spirit and so you shall follow My Son and your wife will affirm His love, whether in rejection due to feelings of unworthiness or reception in feelings of worthiness. If you are in mortality, seek her, for she will wear My name (because knowledge comes easily to the discerning) (Pr 14:6). You will become a mentor to many and I will give you people to whom you may trust to mentor you. Cry My Love for the time has come, but the end is glorious. Your lifetime may not reveal to you My coming, for no one will ever know My coming, but I will be there either in yours or theirs. My Guiding Hand is upon you as we speak and more of My teachings are to come for the journey of your everlasting life. Your wife I have chosen, as well. I tell you, the two of you shall be My Children in My Beautiful Kingdom here in Heaven. Peace be with you, My Love.

Oh, Lord, You have delivered me to the Word. You guide me to the passages, the books of the Old and New Testament so to translate them by You providing understanding to them. You give me the understanding of feelings of those that are written. And You affirm through them that of which You have spoken to me ever before I have read the Word so to practice them and understand them. For you have revealed to me through my Holy Spirit which is Your Will before I have read the written Word. You said to me, My Child, I created you before placing you in your mother’s womb. I had not read to understand Jeremiah Ch. 1 and 2 before that time to which you approved of me, my Lord, even before I was placed in my mother’s womb. And it is by such as this that I know You and that I can discern between You and that which does not come from You. And it is by this that You have given me pleasure in teaching others. The term wellspring has come upon me. I use the term much in this writing, but I do not know where the term came from though I know why I use it. And then in John 4:13 I see you say, “Everyone who drinks this water will be thirsty again, but whoever drinks the water I give him will never thirst. Indeed, the water I give him will become in him a spring of water welling up to eternal life”. And then later You speak to me and tell me that I hold the key to heaven within me. And this is before I read Your Words to the Apostle Peter in MT 16:13-20. I also understand from these words that whatever I bind myself to this world will I also take up to heaven with me and whatever I let loose of and give over to You will I leave here on earth.

Glory in Your Name, my Lord.

42. Let Alone the Calling of Others

Let alone the calling of others. All people have been called from birth one way or the other by God and so are also being called as they live. Predestination is a more than realistic entity.

So then, how can I judge what has already been predestined in the general sense?
Seek and you will find.

But find what?
Find what God has provided for you to find.

So then who am I to question your findings?
But what I can do for you is to help you in your times of confusion. But my respect for you demands leaving you alone or only supporting you in your times of loving clarity and joy.

What about sorrow and despair?
Again, if in clarity, my respect for you demands leaving you alone or only supporting you. If you are clear but I find you confused, I am the one confused. Do I know your calling from God? God shows you despair as well as joy. If you are not joyful, who am I to get in the way of your despair?

Now, in the calling of your husbands and wives and other Christians, be told that it better you remained single because then your attention would be solely on the Lord. But not all are humanly strong enough to keep with the Lord and when sin comes, be able to bounce back into the Kingdom expeditiously. This is due to your mortal past impressed upon you or may it be some of your own calling by the schedule of our Creator. But in this I know: To each is given a special task from Heaven within the Kingdom on Earth and so, if you are married, realize that when your spouse's spiritual mind is in tact and presently active, then the sole direction his or her mind shall be on and with is the Lord. And so let the other be. There is no need to, at the time, rely on mortal support because the Lord's Hand will be all the support you'll require and trust with all your being. But two believers in the Lord's earthly household provide each spouse to support the other when you have entered the mortal mind. For then you will quickly come back into the Kingdom on Earth. This shall be the case in all your relationships with His believers.

So, I say do His Work and rest in His Time either away or with your spouse for there is no difference when completely in the spiritual mind, but in times of mortal thought first rely on your spouse for His Thought is both your thoughts and when one refuses to acknowledge, the other may wind up doing so as well. But never be so far from other Christians that, when both of you feed on the other in mortality for the sole purpose of seeking love, you can ask for help because He will provide a way to answer your call. He will never give up on you. All you must do is stop and ask and not be prideful because pride will block the true love provided by Him.

43. The Transformation into the One Will, One Body, One Love of God

It has been revealed to me this day that, as a part of the body of the Body of our Lord by the Holy Spirit within me, I am one with the power the Lord exudes through me. For we are so connected when I realize myself within His Kingdom and of His Will, that so if you should ask me to do something, do you ask the Lord God, not that I am He of course, but in the faith that I so do have of the Lord and that of my Savior Jesus does the faith become a part of me. For today and afterward when you ask me who I am, I am the Child of God as are you. And through Jesus, I received the Holy Spirit. But I am a man and by no means a perfect one. But my faith has delivered me as a watershed of my Lord. For now, when only I reach with my hand, do I touch the Body of my Lord, and does He take me into the light, into His Will.

And He speaks to me through the Holy Spirit as to say, "See what I have for you My Child and echo My commands over valley and hill and throughout nations. Hear Me, oh community of My Creation, come home. I love you. Go as I come along with you for together we shall bleed My Soul and Spirit and unite My Children. Listen with compassion and I shall be your voice. Keep in My Time. Let no man hurry the pace I have set for you. You are My Child and you drink and eat of Me."

In the name of my Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. Amen.

Understand that when the transformation begins, you will hear the Lord in greater and greater frequency through the Holy Spirit, thus by His Will. Will you hear voices or a voice? This is not for me to say. But it is for me that any other mortal voice you hear from inside you is your own, but when you hear His Will, you are shaken by the absolute truth of His Word. Sometimes it is a knowing without doubt, sometimes it is a hearing with love and compassion, sometimes it is a sensing or feeling with exceptional conviction, and sometimes it is a showing as in a miracle or the setting for one to come. But do not try to know the mind of the Lord, for you never will. Have faith in the Will of God. Trying to know His Mind will make you mad because you then try to replace His Mind with yours and His Will with yours. Can the mind of a gnat replace the mind of a human? Thus, receive, just receive and let go and let it all fill you, for you shall become the Living Word through your Holy Spirit and decipher with your spiritual mind when He sees fit for you to do so and the transformation will go only that much quicker.

For the Lord speaks to all of us with great frequency and effectiveness the greater your belief and greater your faith in Him that He does so. The realization of your transformation into Him is equivalent to a great amount of faith in the Lord. For one with little faith has a hard time realizing the transformation, but it is there, just in less pace as Thy Will be done, because you have a great deal more faith in your own will than in His. The question is will your own will die so to let His Will take over in everlasting life.

44. Faith, Hope, and Charity

Dear brothers and sisters, why am I willing to get out of bed each morning? Is it that I wish to socialize with the lost or embrace self-serving people? Is it that I long for the doldrums of the day so to muddle through and say I have survived yet another day? Is it so I can help others who I see as useless in helping themselves so that I may be right with God? No. It is by faith that I hope all of us are searching for greater love and greater fulfillment. It is that I, among others,

hold the key and it is my excitement and wanting to empower others to have it as well. In yet another day, I get to represent Jesus Christ and touch another either through words, character, or both. It is through such faith that I see hope in every one of us. It is by representing Him that my Father and I continue to grow closer and become increasingly more intimate.

However, this is an epidemic today that our children continue to try to represent their parents so to become increasingly more intimate only to find out that these children were never intimately and unconditionally loved by their parents. And so the child will continually seek this intimacy for his or her lifetime until he or she realizes that the parent in heaven is greater than the parent on earth. Once this happens, the child can see the reality that his or her parents are people in the world just as them.

But my heart is lifted by the Holy Spirit. When it connects with what and who I can see in the world, it automatically lifts that which is in the world to a greater level of respect and value in my eyes. And this charity, when done with respect and humility, empowers, supports, and uplifts the other in a greater state of peace and fulfillment.

What I can offer someone, even when I am penniless, is that which is beyond value. It is to enlighten someone so that they may receive our Heavenly Father's gift of His Holy Spirit in everlasting life.

45. Missionary Work

Dear Children of God in which His Holy Spirit through the resurrection of our Savior Jesus Christ is within us and which allows us to transform into our Savior as affirmed by the Apostle Paul in 2Cor 3:7-18, in the term "mission", understand that to do such work by the Lord, you may find His mission for you within an arms length to as far as universes away. In marriage, you may find your mission within the walls of your own home. But in all missions, children, the act by you upon your guests who seek Him shall be the same but the way to which they heal and find the Will of God shall always be different for each child is special upon the way the Lord created him or her and in the specific task He holds for them to do in His Kingdom on Earth. And so each one's mind receives the Love of God at different frequencies.

So as the mind seeks love, shall you as Christians find the ways their mind seeks it to then translate and transmit it. For, though we all receive the same love, if we assume that others translate and communicate love the same way we do, we are prideful and selfish. As Christians, our minds have found the eternal well of love and thus we can now spend our energies pouring the love into others however we must. Because we know that we have more than enough love to always fulfill us, we are to then dispense our overflow into others. And understand that we all are of the common community under God but uncommon in our unique way of serving Him.

Remember that the other's mortal will has picked up different types of mortal dirt in their mortal lives. So, the act of supplying love to them must also be accompanied by your spiritual eyes seeing the Lord working within them.

And so the Lord may only send you to listen, and if you must speak, allow Him to speak through you for they do not hear Him within them. It may be that their mortal will will not allow them or it may be that they do not understand what He sounds like. Remember the mind is like a radio. It must be tuned to the right frequency to hear the Lord. But their frequency is different than others. Patience my brothers and sisters for there are as many frequencies as there are people.

Also realize that the mortal minded may vent on what the Lord has worked on them that day. You may hear a range of harsh words and see a range of harsh emotions. Understand this is coming from their own mortal will. Only words are they. If you are too sensitive for these words and emotions because they affect your own emotions in a debilitating manner, then you filter your hearing with your own mortal will and then you may find it hard to give fully what is needed to the other to heal. Remember they must go through the desert to heal and the Lord be with them when they go through it. You may be in the desert with them. You must provide them support by way of God. Remember as long as they keep venting, their mortal will is believing that the Will of God is greater and continues to trust that it will not kill them once their own mortal will dies to all its unclean beliefs and fears. For the Will of God is entering their own will and thus cleansing the impurities in order to take over in purity to provide to become the One Will of everlasting life.

Do not fix, I say to you as a disciple of the Lord. To do so is to mortally judge and know exactly what the Lord says to them or perhaps even before the Lord speaks to them. And then unless the Lord wishes you to know by His Divinity on you to prepare you, you should only still listen. Realize, you speak in the spiritual sense to a mostly mortal minded and so to say in fixing is telling their mind and instilling in their mortal will that they are not worthwhile enough, that they are a million miles away in achieving what you have. And so, it is my belief, that the best is to listen and hear through them what the Lord has told them that day and then rejoice in that message. If they do not hear the Lord at all, then you must speak to them in the way that their mortal mind knows but from the Word of God.

The spiritual mind receives, translates, and transmits His Love so to edify others and Glorify Him. In helping the others who are troubled, you must do the same for them because they are Children of God and what they say may be what they believe true love is but is only lost in the translation. It is in the translation that most all problems exist. You must receive their words, properly translate their words, and communicate back to them your interpretation of what they mean (not what you wish for them to mean to fix them) so that you edify them. Then you will come to understand how they view love. Remember he or she who comes to you, seeks true love. But in order to find true love, you must for them as was with yourself, begin the journey with them at their place and in their time at their pace. This is no less than what God has done for us when He sent us His Son.

I have seen a community outcast new residents because they do not believe the way the community does. This is child's thinking. Realize that many people choose to be reactionary from external surroundings rather than internal. A mature Christian will feed off their own internal Will of God and be consistent in their loving way to all. Again, all people seek love. Will they find a loving community working for God or hypocrites working for themselves? If

something makes you feel uncomfortable, that is your problem. I am not talking about a sense of evil, but only discomfort. Own up to your responsibilities in becoming Godly people.

But those that hear the Lord even in the littlest amount may not realize it now, but you know that they hear the Lord by what they say to you and thus are following the commands of the Lord and therefore are into the transformation. But if you hear nothing from them of the Lord, feel compassion even more because they truly hurt even that much more. But keep faith that what the Lord is driving out of them is upon you. But do not exert all your energies on only one who is hurting because there are many to be saved in love, in Jesus.

I tell you brothers, he who goes to witness, to fix, to use the tongue and ruler, will truly keep the low in faith lower and he will only see the mortal in the mortal he wishes to bring to the Lord. For the whole goal is to give to your brother what he only craves for—love of the purest form. And so then you must see the Lord in them when you meet His Children. Know this: You serve the mortal minded as you would serve the Lord for you see both. Choose then which to serve when you meet them simultaneously—I ask that you choose the righteous and only one of true and pure love, which is the Holy Spirit. To you of who do not believe this, I pray for the Children you hurt, and I pray for your humbleness in your arrogance because it is most likely you hurt as much or more than the one you serve, but you hurt even more both of you simultaneously. Serve to empower. Do not take them by the hand and tell them how to live, as if their journey is exactly as yours is. Understand how they understand and build them up through serving them so that they will one day see how far they have come by way of the Lord. Then they will glorify the Lord and go out with Him and live in peace and freedom.

And then there is your presence in false pride, instead of true calling, that may add to an already dreadful atmosphere. One must be careful not to add to an already dreadful atmosphere by thinking that he or she is the cornerstone to its future turnaround. Later, you may realize that you are slowly being absorbed into the original mess. Is God using us for that specific purpose of turnaround or not? One should always understand that God is both the cornerstone and capstone and that we ride on His wings. You may help make a temporary better situation by your own Godly disposition provided you by the Holy Spirit in slowly changing the minds and wills of people for the better. After a period, though, that they refuse to change from their sinful ways, we must leave them to their own peril because they have been warned through us a representatives of God again and again. Do not let anyone fool you into false pride by saying you will be the cornerstone to change everything that is bad. If those who tell you this are not willing to change themselves, leave to your benefit and the benefit of others who are somewhere else so they you may really help them.

And what is love, brothers and sisters? Love is not going to where others are and accost them with the preconceived notion of manhandling or tell them what they want to hear so to manipulate them back over to where we came from. This is done for the sake of religion (law of man) and it is cowardice and selfish. No. Love is going to where others are and building them up with the love you bring to them in servanthood in the place they are. Thus, you place yourself in and become a part of their world even if it is only for a time. This is so they may come to inquire about you and where you come from without deception or manipulation but by their own free will. This takes confidence that your faith is unbreakable and your love unrefutable even

outside of your comfort zone. This is done for the sake of God, who is Pure Love. Jesus Christ did not preach from Heaven but, because of the love God brought to us by way of Him, we now inquire and search for it and we will eventually come to visit Him for eternity. For the purer the love, the longer we wish to stay until we eventually call such a place home. And why is this? Because love fully fills and thus is the fulfillment of the Law of God (Rom 13:10).

So when you serve to bring the Lord's Child home, shake the hand of the one you serve as if the Lord Jesus welcomed you home and took your hand within His. Peace be with you brothers and sisters in Christ Jesus who is of pure love.

And my friends, in the past, that is before the fulfillment of the Holy Spirit within me, I felt alone and abandoned because my mind was on me alone. But now as the Spirit works inside me and I grow to mature in Christ, I am content and more in love with Him than ever. But now at times the loneliness has been replaced with overwhelming grief. Grief is a process of lost love. And so, I possible grieve over my once delusional love. But it is also because the more I mature in Christ and having greater respect for others than I ever did, the more I see people as I once was. Some who are ignorant of what they do, I have great hope for. But those who realize their sin and continue to blame others through arrogance, I come to find more and more distasteful and immoral. I believe I understand St. Paul when he said that we must share with others, but if they do not listen, let them be. Give them up to God. Do not yoke yourselves with them. My hands and conscience are now clean and clear.

46. Lay Ministry

The Christian selects himself for service for God and others at the front battle lines in the war of arrogance and abuse. The lay minister professes not to be a professional in counseling, but when the arrogant and abusive refuse to seek formal professional help, it is the lay minister who works in the trenches to awaken the one lost so that then one may open up to counsel. It is not necessary for the lay minister to dictate spiritual jargon, but to express his or her own testimony and provide ministry in unspiritual, common language. The lay is to the milk as the ordained is to the food, though we are all royal priests (1Peter 2:9). It is only when those lost begin to open up to seek counsel can any spiritual language be used, but it is best if the minister respects the request of the one lost to discuss spiritual matters. By not respecting this one's wishes, this one's confidence in himself (self-esteem) will stay low. Respect says that the other matters and is of worth in the world and especially to God.

However, we should also not just minister to everyone. There are those who may respond and then there are those who are so arrogant and so abusive that arrogant and abuse is a way of life to their liking that they are not willing to give up (MT 7:6).

I realize that a lay minister can figure all this out on his or her own. What I am saying is that when you come across any situation, you can refer to that mental flag in your memory that will enable you to stop, think, and then proceed in a good, therapeutic, and cautious way.

The Holy Spirit works through me and utilizes the gift God gave me. I see bad behavior, as may you. But I must be able to separate the bad behavior from the person performing it. Do I hate you or hate what you are doing?

47. True Calling Revealed Further

It has further been revealed to me this day that my missionary work stems from my family. For it is with my family that I must be in patience and aid in the transformation of His Children in my family—that is, my immediate family at home. For the Lord, I see in most remarkability, is taking care of my other family members directly and also by a pleasant encouraging and occasional word through me. For I do not worry, they are of themselves by and with Him. But my immediate family is the greatest of missions right now for it is here that I will die my mortal death and the Lord will plant the harvest by the seed of Life.

I am writing this book for many reasons, one of which is to locate and distinguish my own true identity. But one truth, when it comes to our immediate families, is that the immediate family must come to have a unique identity of its own. And I am not speaking of characteristics or traditions that come from our own families while growing up that we bring into a relationship, but a blatant unique identity that is the immediate family's identity. This blatant act (not of spite but of cohesion) of forming a family identity is what will bring about true commitment, mutual respect, and cohesion between family members. Make new traditions, discover the distinctive characteristic of each family member and appreciate them as parts of the body that make up the whole identity of the family.

But foremost for the cohesiveness of a family (and any relationship for that matter), continue to remind yourselves and perform these three acts in relational and technical ways, which you will find me speaking of throughout this book:

1. Always be ready to *offer something* to your other family members—be it your service, your knowledge, your encouragement, your hard work, your feelings, and so forth.
2. Always *find a positive common denominator* with your family members so that your “wanting” to unite overrides your “having to” unite.
3. Always be ready to *learn something* from your other family members—which means respecting each other, listening to one another, appreciating each other, and truly incorporating other's strengths to better yourself.

Now, from the stem, I am to venture no further than the local area I am living in now for my family craves stability and warmth. For how long, my brothers and sisters, will I venture no further? This will only be revealed to me in His Time and if never revealed, then never shall I leave. It has begun in the local area with others and for others.

I do the mission of the Lord without seeking the mortal way of seeking. For I see mortals scattered to the ends of the earth in a frantic state seeking love through a myriad of ways. And what are they all seeking in every way imaginable? They all seek love, though they may not realize it. But that is what they all seek. By the love of the Almighty, I have been given the

wellspring of pure love through the Holy Spirit that dwells inside me. I am guided by His Hand as I hope you to be. I am given the Word through my lips and the understanding in my heart and in my mind through listening and believing all that I am to what I hear. I am also, in full commitment to my family the while, to gather those around me and bring together the divisiveness in His Church and the churches around me, but it has been little revealed to me at this time the way in which the Lord wishes this to happen. I only know that the elders of the church play a role in it. For slow as it goes and to I shall the study, revealing, and endurance amass, as I have stated in my first revelation of my calling.

My dear friends, the valleys are beautiful, the peaks alluring, but without the Spirit and the bondage of my love and because of the bondage of my love, it is the courageous man who stays, for the sight of such things is sufficient to fulfill my groaning emptiness. When in His Time, and upon once a Time, has He and shall He grant me this vision of His Stay without the legs of mine in movement. For His Reach is never-ending and He is everlasting.

48. Jealousy

*“But as for me, my feet had almost slipped;
I had nearly lost my foothold.
For I envied the arrogant
when I saw the prosperity of the wicked.”
(Psalm 73)*

Jealousy has a language of its own. When one says why you and not me, what they seem to really say is I feel either not worthwhile enough or unworthy to be able to have the same. Now, in mortal mindedness, jealousy crushes the core of the lowly in faith for jealousy will raise its ugly head even among Christians in varying degrees of faith and will grow and fester in the mortal mind for long lengths of time. For to be jealous and a Christian is equivalent to have lower degrees of faith in the Will of our Lord than the Christian who is not jealous.

Do you not realize that you share the same Holy Spirit as the other? That the Lord loves you the same through each? When you see with your spiritual eyes the Lord in another, jealousy is gone. When you see another and jealousy appears, you see with your mortal eyes and from your mortal will. When you see the Lord in another and are jealous, you see with your spiritual eyes but the jealousy is from your mortal will. Your mind was created to receive, translate, and transmit love from the Will of God. When you sense negative feelings, such as jealousy, it is your mind rejecting your mortal will for not sending it love. If this is all you seem to think you sense over and over, then a desert awaits you and the Lord asks you to follow Him into it. And if you do not go, your mind and body will continue to wither away.

Now, wickedness occurs in those that believe sin is love and thus their mind allows their body to sin without apprehension, and to that I will speak to you later, but know this that their death and destruction is quick to mortal death. May the Lord have mercy on them, for they were disconnected entirely from receiving the great love of our Lord. And to us who know of His Love, how sad we are for those that don't know it. But in any right, I am not speaking of those

people, I am speaking to you of faith in our Jesus and to whom of you know His Love and communicate in love from our bodies to others.

How about, you say, when someone does something wrong in the mortal world and gets away with it—that makes you jealous. But that is mortal thinking. Was what the person did a sin? Then when looking at him with your spiritual eyes, you should not be jealous. For in the spiritual realm, jealousy turns into anger first, for the one did something against the Lord and did not realize it. In the Old Testament, the Lord was angered as well because His Children did not listen. And so you wish to protect the Lord. Don't do this to my Lord, you say, it is not right. You wish to rebuke the sinner. The Lord rebuked His Children in love. Did He say stick out your hand for me to cut it off? No, He said to repent and when they did not, He said to them, stay in the desert longer. He did not say to them that they will all die from famine, but He still fed them.

To some, rebuking by attacking is the only way they choose to pursue the sinner. This does not work because attacking is the tool of the devil. No, brothers and sisters, rebuke with compassion. Teach by giving milk to the baby before you can give Him solid food, as the Apostle Paul says. Milk is given so the baby Christian can translate how he knows in the worldly sense. Show him by what he can understand first, but do it with compassion. For do you not see the same Lord in them as in you?

When you sin and do not realize it, do you not eventually hurt because of guilt against the Lord? Do not dwell on this, for the Lord by His Grace has forgiven you upon your realization of the sin and so you should forgive yourself the same. But you experience the hurt. Do you wish for the other to experience the hurt and thus the guilt, and even into shame, afterwards? No, but he will just as you did. So, rebuke him but do so with compassion and do not be jealous. Are you now jealous of his or her eventual pain and shame? Or will you feel the compassion towards him or her and then rejoice together over the Lord's Grace upon forgiveness? Are you not happy when the one comes home to the Lord like your son or daughter has come home to you?

49. Material Possessions

In the transformation into the Body of God through my Savior Jesus by way of the Holy Spirit, materialism was not to be found while in the spiritual realm. The same is for historical possessions as well. Though you are human, you may catch a glimpse of the transformation from time to time. During one of my times, I did not transform with the craving of knowing historical details of hill, architecture, culture, remains, ruins, buildings or any of the like. I knew they to be there through scripture, but details of material possessions for our translation I consider of mortal interpretation. But of the details of direct Creations from God, I wish to know. If a Christian architect wants to tell me about a building to the Lord he or she is designing, I will listen for his sake, but buildings, landscape, furnishings and the like are of the mortal mindedness and take away from concentration or focus on the Holy Spirit. For the Lord's Temple is in you by the Holy Spirit and from the earth for these are direct creations from God. When Jesus preached from temples, was it the temple that was important or the people He spoke to within the temple? But for the compassion of His disciples who fell into mortal mind, mortal

surroundings were a comfort to others because then people could regain their spiritual thinking quicker and not dwell upon strangeness.

So, do we not have hills, do we not have sky and stars, do we not have the ground of the earth and do we not have our own struggles the same as those in the past? For the Lord, time extends to eternity backward and forward from now and of now. And so temples and man-made things are for our mortal comfort. If I build the most beautiful monument or the most beautiful church, mortals will then focus on the thing rather than the spirit in which it was created. Be careful not to distract from the focus on the Lord and His Son Jesus, for then you pray in admiration of what your mortal eyes see and become idolaters. To illustrate, I have found that in today's society what is most news worthy, or noteworthy for that matter, is that which does not get placed into the news.

Nor is it good to relay the good deeds of others from the past as of to honor the man's actions over the love of the Lord. Be very careful. For in teaching the understanding of the Word, do not boast so about the men or women of the time and their actions in the Lord, but only of what the Lord did through them. For I tell you, the disciples of the past would not wish to be boasted about themselves—you then do the Lord and them discredit. For then, you tempt others to follow the person rather than the Lord. If you must teach from the example of others, be brief about the person, but always give the action of the person credit to the Lord. Remember, it was not because the man acquired so much faith, but because the Lord chose to provide Him that much faith once the person wished to receive our Lord and Savior.

And money is not yours either, like nothing you own is yours nor what anyone else owns is theirs but His. Give what you think you own up to Him and you will have a much happier life and care in joy in managing His possessions He has given you. The Lord may even be entrusting you to manage something for Him now to provide for another of His Children when He sends them to retrieve it.

50. The Story of Us

What Christ said, Christ felt. What Christ said in the Bible, Christ said from the heart. Many of us read the Bible like dictation. But once we allow ourselves to believe that the Holy Spirit is there within us to fill that which we feel is empty and cleanse us, we will come to feel what Jesus said. Dictation in the mind will turn into compulsion from the heart, from the soul. Divorce, for instance? As you mature in the Holy Spirit, you will find yourself not able to divorce your spouse. Not because it is wrong (dictated by Christ) but because your love, devotion, and compassion for your spouse will not allow you to. If your spouse is despairing because he/she cannot feel Christ, you know you are an inspiration to him/her. If your spouse is also mature in Christ's love, you will be happy anyway.

Thus, that which is dictated can be seen as law. But love surpasses law because what we do, we do out of love not because we fear the law. This is why the greater we strive to be Christ-like by abiding by and defending the law in logic, the more we have difficulty feeling Christ. The more we trust that Christ will give us all that is righteous in our hearts through our ongoing search to connect to him and his virtue, the more we are in touch with God and His Spirit. This is why

you have yet to begin your journey with Christ if all you have is knowledge of the law. If you follow the law in dictation and/or fear, you will always fall short of the law. But believe in Christ and begin finding yourself obeying God and an even greater integrity you will come to know that makes any human law only a fraction of what the fully encompassing and true righteousness really is. Thus, you will surpass any and all human law and not one person can declare you guilty of not obeying any law, in that which is partly or wholly righteous.

In our faith, brothers and sisters, I have come to know that the teachings of Jesus and into what we know today as the New Testament, is not only the story of God, Jesus, and His disciples, but it is the story of us, as well. For many of us read the New Testament, but I say as you read it, think of yourself as author of it. Not to say you spoke it rather than our Lord, but as if you wrote the accounting rather than the disciples. This will help you realize that you do not seek from the outside-in, but from the inside-out. For it is our language, brothers and sisters. Was there a time when you felt that you could not communicate to those in higher or equal faith and that you felt lost? That you did not understand what they were doing or where they were going? Or did you just feel lonely? Open the Word and read the Word and your brothers and sisters in Christ will come alive within you because the Word is what they are doing. It is the Living Loving Word. The Word connects us, it enables one's Holy Spirit to see the other's.

And does not the toe know what the arm is doing by way of the mind? When the toe moves, the arm is affected and when the arm moves, it affects the toe. And so is the Word the mind, that is the Head, for it is the Lord. And so we are all of the Body of Christ and Jesus is the Head. For does not it take time for the toe to know what the mind wishes it to do? But does not the toe have full faith that the mind will reveal to it how to move and in what direction so that it takes little time to do so? I say to you, have that kind of faith and your revelation will be just as quick. And as your faith increases and your knowledge of the Word does so as well, you will feel that you are one with your Christian brothers and sisters, even if the others are not physically there with you. You will use the strength of the others along with your own strength and they will also use your own to become a synergetic force to be reckoned with. In mortal terms, the greater the mass means greater the force. It will be like a flying arrow at the speed of light about to hit its target propelled by God either in push or pull so to reach Him (Power and Destination or Magnitude and Direction) with Jesus as its head (navigator through the righteous path), us mortals as its staff (followers united by their Holy Spirits as in JN 17:23), and the angels as its feathers (our stabilizers down the righteous path).

See how we are all one unit connected to each other and how each has a purpose in our salvation. This is the power of God seen and understood by some of us by Him. Did not Einstein understand such power and understanding and deduce $E=MC^2$, where E is the power of God who in providing more power, provides even greater speed and is He not also our destination thus propelling us of mass towards Him. But what is missing in the equation is Jesus the Navigator through the righteous path, the angels whose lightweight feathers act as stabilizers, the type propulsion in push by His power *together* with the type attraction in pull by His Power, and the intrinsic Holy Spirit properties of lightweight but extremely resilient and flexible (merciful) material. God's power comes directly from Him, thus the raw material and forces must come directly from His creation. Can man harness such raw material to push and such gravitational

forces from other heavenly bodies to pull? Should man try to harness even the smallest power of God?

What is apparent is that if one wishes to go the speed of light, and how certain ideas works is of similar patterns but different sizes, then a celestial body must be of enormous size comparable to the earth. These celestial bodies I do believe exist. They are perhaps one million, possible one billion, the size greater than that of earth or the sun. Just as the electron is forced by voltage and attracted to the ground, which is enormously greater in size than the electron itself, so would there have to exist an enormous celestial body for us to focus our attraction onto it in a more direct manner so for us to go the speed of light.

In our solar system, we show the sun as the center with earth orbiting around it, the moon orbiting around the earth, and us, in general terms, orbiting around the earth. And so we can go even smaller than that when it comes to within us. But it is my hypothesis that there are several, if not a fantastically greater amount, of these “super bodies” that are the centers of each true universe and that in the center of all the celestial bodies where all the super bodies revolve around is the most enormous body of all—known as heaven. Thus, we are in the gravity of heaven. And so if heaven is so huge, beyond our comprehension, and is the source of all being, then one can imagine how massive all of space is because of the simple fact that we cannot see it.

51. Placing Spiritual Power in the Hands of the Mortal Minded

Now, my brothers and sisters, this I know: The mortal minded and many of you in faith do not realize the power that the Lord has placed within us. For I have only glimpsed the enormous power. In the mortal realm, spiritual power is evidenced by mortal eyes and of that mass destruction. Do you not see that because you have the Holy Spirit, you may also be able to ascertain its righteous and destructive powers by way of your spiritual eyes? In glimpses through great faith, you are able to see the abundance of how God’s direct gifts function by equating that of God, Jesus, and the linking of our Holy Spirits to that of the direct gift as in sunlight. And thus, equations like the one previously mentioned that is a supernatural power, came to a man as Einstein with such an abundance of faith, but fell on those that did not believe in Jesus as their navigator taking them through the righteous path. Realize that these things come from the spiritual realm, a realm in which mortals cannot control, but in oneness can live in. When they fool with the power of God and in the mortal realm, power leads to mass destruction. Seeing is believing where a nuclear warhead harnesses just the littlest of God’s Power and the sad thing is that many mortals must see the power with their own eyes in order to believe it and then they must control it, instead of giving it up.

So the wicked will build it and then use it. For you have brought the Power of God among sinners, unbelievers, and the insane, and satan works through the sins of people. Thus, when you see power like this being corrupted against the Law of God and Jesus, you know satan is feeding them through their sins. And how do you fight satan, children? Through the faith in the Lord, for the Lord will win, but the Christians must unite. The more who unite in synergetic spirit, the greater the good power (JN 17). And you should not enter into mortal ways, such as fighting war for the pride of a nation or in anger for the one who is evil, for this is sinful now that the Holy Spirit is upon us. By doing so, you aid the enemy by prolonging the agony. In spiritual ways,

God guides our pursuit through the Holy Spirit in expelling the evil at the source, not the symptom. By only ridding the symptom in anything, we avoid the source of the pain, and thus we cannot heal.

But alas, I am not a dreamer but a realist and more wars will fall upon us. Mortals believe that we won World War 2 by fighting together, but the Lord won that fight with the synergetic faith of our prayers. But who really won and who lost, for satan through the sins of the powerful, deceptively gave others instruction to use God's Power against our own. For they unleashed the power of God among His Own Children! And how did World War 2 begin? Through the unfaithful placing of a man of great sins in power, a man who in his own mind purposely blasphemed the name of God. For you see, the unfaithful is deceived by satan and we all suffer. Desperation lead to following anyone who will lead. Thus, let us gather the believers one by one to God, and where we see the unfaithfulness or unbelievers gathered in droves, wedge an anchor of God between them so they will not be allowed to either multiply nor enter into our world of God-loving peoples.

So, I say until the leaders of the world realize this in full, shall mass destruction reign on us. And I say to you now who are physicists, geneticists, and all others in scientific and or behavioral study and gathering who bring to us the power of the spiritual realm, it is better to stop now because there are too much mortal mindedness on this earth. You will wind up aiding in our destruction, though you may believe you do what you do in love. Instead put down your man-made tools, receive Christ, and unify with our brothers and sisters in Him to bring His Children home. But like anything created by man, man will use it to accomplish great things and then use it to destroy, usually in that order. I say to all of you, you are either for us or against us. You must make that choice. And to you who use your skills to manipulate others and thus do evil, stop now. Instead use your skills to serve Christ.

52. Faith, Intelligence, Wisdom, and Age

Faith has little to do with intelligence and intelligence is not wisdom. We know that if you exist, you have intelligence. The least intelligent can have the greatest faith and one may have the greatest wisdom but not have the greatest intelligence. Therefore, I have learned that those who are greatly intelligent should never look down on the one less intelligent for they may enter the Kingdom when they die and you may not. I have come to see that many who are higher in intelligence are greater in pride and arrogance, but the wisest are those that continue to use their intelligence to stay humble. It is mortal society who rewards the higher intelligence with its greatest reward—that of money. And money will harden a heart quicker than most anything will. I say to you who have more money, give back to the Lord a greater percentage of your income without boasting about it as you grow wealthier so that you remain humble to the Lord and to others. For one with more money usually spends more money to surround him more in mortal comfort.

Now, to surround yourself in comfort is good if it is the kind of comfort that frees you from mundane mortal desires so you can serve the Lord and others in a greater amount of your time. And if it provides you greater time to reflect with the Lord. But all else is idolatry and should be swept away. For it does not serve the Lord, but serves only you and then your selfish comfort

takes you further away from the Lord. Also I see many who get richer, boast greater about their givings. You must boast because you idolize material and mortal things. And I have seen poor people give so that only God knows about it. Who, then, has the greater faith?

And so, I believe that it is better that you have little intelligence and great faith in the Love of the Lord, for you will live a happier life. Remember, faith is what you must have first to receive the Kingdom, then comes understanding through usefulness. Intelligence is good for greater understanding of the Word for your own insightfulness so you may become wise. Wisdom comes with maturity and maturity comes only through change. It has been said that one becomes wise by making unwise decisions and then learning from them quickly along the way. And one becomes even wiser when one realizes that seeking counsel before reacting is golden.

Many who are younger may realize this and become wiser early. Many who are old may never realize this and stay foolish. Therefore, age is not a sole deciding factor in being wise. Age is only a relevant thing compared to the age we die. If I die tomorrow and am young, I will have lived greater than 99 percent of my life up to today as I count the days I have lived. And if I die tomorrow and am old, I will have lived greater than 99 percent of my life up to today as well as I count the days I have lived. So, you see older or age is really defined by how one has used his or her life to the fullest in wisdom through the Holy Spirit.

It is common for a man or a woman to be immersed in the world, especially during working age, to only be discarded by the world when elderly. We were created to be useful. Much of society equates the elderly as less useful but wise for this very reason. When the elderly are discarded because those younger, who are in the world, find little use for them, the elderly have two choices—stay in the world and wither away or come into the light. Once a person comes into the light and becomes an observer of the world, he or she begins the journey of wisdom and also of a greater usefulness.

This is why age and wisdom do not increase at the same rate. One who lives in the light at a younger age will start to become wise when he turns his head as an observer to the world. It is better if a man or a woman steps out of the world at a younger age so, at minimum, he or she will understand what it means to feel useless to it by the world's own finger pointing at them. Then when he or she reaches an elderly age, he or she will remain useful because of his or her experience in the ongoing useful place in the light.

Do not worry about wisdom. One who is in the light will automatically show others the light through his own focused pursuit in following God. Those in the world are glad to manually show you themselves by any means possible. Thus, one need not be in the world to become wise. But one in the world cannot become wise without coming at least somewhat into the light. And the more one comes into the light, the more wisdom one gains. One in the world dreams of retirement and one in the light dreams of where he or she is today. Therefore, one in the light will remain useful to everyone forever and one in the world drains his usefulness to the world daily. And so, realize, that one can become wise at any age.

Many Pharisees were intelligent and all they had was the Law but not the faith in the Son of God. But then if not careful, intelligence will lead to pride and arrogance, and even the Law can

become a lost thing as was with many of the Pharisees and with many who believe to be spiritually-minded today. So then, were they of the past and are they of the present even wise? I do not envy those who are very intelligent. But no matter how intelligent, will you accept the way the Lord created you so you may do His Work in the way He desires you to suit His purpose? This is wise.

Now, great intelligence with faith in anything other than in the Love of the Lord can lead to insanity and madness, especially when one is obsessive with his or her intelligence. It is my belief that intelligence and obsessiveness must be discovered in others at an early age, but it is impossible to do so for everyone. So, then the faith in the Love of God must be there first and the rest will then be all right. This is possible because each of us can receive the Holy Spirit, listen from it, seek assistance by it and from it in others, and be accountable to it for their own actions. And so if the person's intelligence and obsessiveness does prove great, then it is the duty of all to ensure that the Love of God is with them, for if they are left isolated or with unbelievers, they may become mad.

I myself have glimpsed oneness with Jesus and the universe and the spiritual powers and, I tell you, madness can be attained, especially when one cannot ascertain whether it is their mortal will or the Will of God. They then may wind up believing they are a god. This is why when you receive the Will of God, that is all you must do—that is, receive and ask God to guide you from His own thoughts through you. To think the Will of God, that is to replace His Will with your soul, is impossible, and so if you find yourself doing it, stop because you will make yourself mad by trying to control God, for you do not know God.

You have seen madmen who are extremely intelligent and obsessive but without the Love of God. For when you want to take the place of God, you will inevitably lead yourself to your own fall with the enemy, as is written in the Word, and obsessiveness will get you there that much quicker. When using obsessiveness to get closer to the Lord, desperation and anxiety appear, and thus you again excommunicate yourself from the Pace of the Lord upon you in His Kingdom. So, it is not good to rush to anywhere, but only receive His Guiding Hand upon you to be fulfilled in His Love so you can serve Him while serving others.

And then there is the people-trying-to-save people because we think our intelligence higher than theirs. I tell you, we almost never give people credit for having even the intelligence needed to do the everyday things we do. I say give others credit for their own intelligence to figure things out for themselves so you will be able to see how less intelligent you think you really are and leave them to their own pursuits. And when we get upset because someone disagrees with us, again this is due to pride because we are not giving the other credit for his or her intelligence. Have you ever had a good time with someone though both of you disagreed? Practice this and you will begin to understand the true meaning of respect. This is also wise.

Everyone has the right to choose whether to respect another for who he or she is. We should not choose to disrespect someone simply because he or she chooses not to respect us. This promotes continual division among peoples. As Christians, we know that our continual respect of another, though he or she may not respect us, provides a beacon for those who disrespect us to later be enlightened to the way they have been treating us and others. Our continual disposition, even

after ingratitude from others, can eventually wear on the disrespectful to the point of them looking in within themselves and becoming accountable for their inappropriate actions (MT 5:38-48). This, brothers and sisters, promotes unity, and not division, for the sake of God. So then, respect everyone for who they are and for the choices they make—even if we disagree with them.

And genius, when used only selectively for a small group of people, is a title given to others by someone who only feels less valuable and thinks himself or herself less worthy. Genius is the realization of your true spiritual gifts and understanding how to use them through the Holy Spirit so to bring into existence something that is very valuable to people who use it. Genius has very little to do with high intelligence. If my spiritual gift is craftsmanship and through the Holy Spirit we create a chair to serve you, the chair will become the most comfortable and functional chair for your specific needs and you will call that craftsman a genius because the chair has become of immense value to you. And the Godly craftsman will give up the term genius to the Lord because He knows the final result was due to the Holy Spirit.

So, you see, because all people have infinite worth just by existing, do all people have the potential to receive the Holy Spirit, and therefore, all people have the ability to become “genius” by their spiritual gifting and in the unique way they use their gifting. Two craftsmen may build the same chair for two different people, and because of each customer’s uniqueness and desires, both customers may call their craftsman a genius because each chair has become immensely valuable to each individual customer. In this sense, we understand that genius and achieving our greatest potential is synonymous. Therefore, the greater we are around unhealthy people, the greater our genius is stifled. The more dirt we accumulate, the greater our genius is stifled. The more we are cleansed, the more our genius will be revealed.

If you do not think you have a spiritual gift, it is the feeling of being less valuable than you actually are and thinking you are of less worth than you actually are that is blocking you from realizing it. But how many of us say when we find genius that one who appears meek on the outside was gifted by God to be a genius (“Bless his soul”) because he is less threatening and those that appear quick and on their toes, we automatically think that they were chosen by God or are expected to be genius if not near genius even if they are discouraging and wicked people?

I tell you, the pressure we place on one another comes from our own insecurities. In fact, the one that is discouraging and wicked may have become so because of all this pressure. This one may have wanted to become a shoe salesman because he loves to sell shoes, but because of the pressure in youth, he hates being a scientist only because our society sees a shoe salesman as less intelligent or useful than a scientist. But if we think hard, we can find great use for each. Own up to your own insecurities and you will be a happier and more merciful person. Let alone the calling of others and seek your own Holy Spirit by asking God for it.

53. Revelation in the Receiving and Journey of the Holy Spirit Within

Understand that having faith so to receive the Lord by way of Jesus Christ is the beginning of your spiritual journey by way of Love and the end of your journey is complete and eternal

oneness with the Will of God or Holy Spirit given to you by Him. The end is when you continually live with no doubt in total faith that God has brought His Kingdom of Heaven to earth and that you understand that He is on earth within His Kingdom and so are you. That is the total and unwavering faith that the resurrected Jesus Christ who by such provided the way for us to receive the Holy Spirit within us to which we are to become as. Praise be to God. For the mortal mind believes that the end is coming by Hell and so all their life many people run from Hell but do not focus on pursuing God. They are always running from something and not pursuing what is ahead. But the spiritual minded knows better. The spiritual minded knows that total and complete faith and action within and by the Lord is the end of the journey and it is the journey that is a great adventure in pursuit rather than torture through escape.

The Lord does not wish you to focus on the enemy. Why would God condemn His Own Kingdom? Why would God kill what He has created? That is from the mind of the enemy that works upon your own mortal will. Be done with that thinking? As soon as you think that, be away with it for what does not come from the Will of God is not needed in your mind. That is to say, thoughts and feelings that make us think we are not worthwhile to God do not come from the Will of God. It comes from your own mortal will. Because you come from Him, you are always worthwhile to receive Him. And this is the same when focusing on the end of the world. How much fuss will you make over the end of the world? In your mortal mind, you focus on the end of the world, as if it means something. This will lead you down the wrong path. No, focus on the love of God and His Son Jesus, for then you will do what the Will of the Lord wills you to do. Why do you focus on what is to come, when you should be focusing on what is happening now? Is Jesus dead now and then will awake and come later? No, Jesus is alive now and wishes for you to do His Will now for what is going on now to perhaps prepare for tomorrow. But what will tomorrow bring? Us mortals do not know, so we must have faith in the Lord who guides us for His Own Purposes and for us. Sit, pray, and be guided and then act within His Time, not within yours!

Receive the Lord, and His Will will overtake and clean-out your own mortal will and you will be fulfilled in love.

We know that spiritual life comes by way of sinful death to the mortal will and world. And once you understand and have faith in the Law, it makes you realize and differentiate between sin and goodness in the mortal world. What you did before, you will begin not to do and wonder why you did it in the first place.

The end of the journey is where you must stop. You will not add on and you will not take away. Because in complete and unwavering faith to where the will of you is completely replaced by the Will of God, there is no higher and there is no craving of going back. If in any capacity, your mortal will believes it at the end, then to go further is destructive for then you try to control the Mind of God, and your mind will fight the very thing it was created for and from and you will go crazy and experience plague after plague. Be accountable where you are now. If you are standing in a desert, seek help from God. There is no end as long as you contain your mortal will, that is until Jesus comes to take us Home, as in the Book of Revelation. And if you do not realize this, it is the enemy not God that leads you on.

So, then you may ask where do I go from here. If I am pursuing the end, what will I become? My brothers and sisters, your spiritual journey will lead you to the end and all the while you have experienced mortal sin against spiritual love and you will find more and more spiritual love with mortal goodness because one precedes the other and it is the love that creates goodness. So, then go have fun and do good with the spiritual love of God through the Holy Spirit from you, for you, and to others in all you do. Serve, for there will be more than enough mortal goodness in the world available for you to do than will ever run out.

Now, the end of the spiritual journey on earth is when you shake the Hand of Jesus and become as One in His Likeness. So at that time, the earthly journey is over and there is no further. It is like a cul-de-sac, for the same road in is the same road out. And once you arrive, there is so much for you to do when you get there. Will you work from Heaven in aiding others along the road? For me, I hope so. Would I like never to go back by way of the mortal road but by the spiritual road so as to help mortals along their journey to shake Hands with Jesus.

54. Insanity and Euphoria

Listen, especially those who have just received Jesus in their hearts. The Love of Jesus is so mighty that a small glimpse can become a shock to your mortal will and mind and can be euphoric. This is not maturity in the Love of Christ. Now, I will not say that it cannot last or come back frequently, for God is Almighty and if it is His Will, then I humbly kneel and say yes Lord you are magnificent in the eyes of Your Spirit within me. But it has been my experience that the mortal will does come back, but not in full pain as it once was and only for a time. Euphoria begins to turn into fulfillment through understanding. The journey, my brothers and sisters, begins with the Lord and Savior, but it is just that—a journey. The beginning has begun, but the end is still to be sought.

Now, many who wish to bring others to Christ in that euphoric state may say that they can save and heal the insane or create an illusion in their own mortal will that keeps them in denial of their own pain and suffering. Some can be free totally, as God Wills it. I have not seen it in my lifetime. But most must reap the benefits and toils of the journey, the adventure of Spiritual Life. This is how you increase your faith and become mature and more fulfilled in the Lord and can then relate to the unbeliever or even your fellow Christians. And you must have a sense about you so that your mortal will does not take over and you wind up hurting others rather than serving them and not know the difference. And know that reacting to only euphoric emotion while ignoring understanding may become pointless. But fulfillment, not euphoria, is achieved through understanding and feeling working together in harmony.

How can you tell insanity even among your brethren? One type of insanity comes about by your Spirit wanting to achieve Oneness with your Creator but your good mortal will stays in the past. You see those who appear glowing all the time, but be cautious for great denial of their worthiness could be what you see. And then in others, something corrupt in their past has a bond that is very strong and so their good mortal will stays behind while their spiritual mind goes off with their sinful mortal will. In this way, the good mortal will is so suppressed that the insane mind cannot decipher between mortal goodness (for it is lost) and mortal sinfulness and believes now that the sinful will is the only one all the while understanding the love of the Spirit. This

will be the same when they deny that they are worthwhile for that is the sinful will at work. And so it is like they have no mortal will nor mind at all, when in fact their mortal will tries to control even God.

But I believe it is not the Will of God to keep His Children at bay and the sane who are mature in Christ sense eeriness when around such people. Now, there is uncomfortableness that you may have to go through for a short time to learn a lesson from God, but a sense of eeriness and evil are prophetic senses. The angels say be careful. The new Christian may fall in with these people. This is why, never follow people, but follow the Holy Spirit that dwells within you. If others who say they love you are disappointed that you do not follow them, they do not love you. Flee at once! They are not of the Will of God. And if they say they understand you and you still feel uneasy, flee to safety! And if they claim they understand you and befriend you and after a time become disappointed because you do not follow what they ask of you, flee!

Many of these people are extremely intelligent people because they are able to separate the mind and will in a controlling fashion and are able to suppress and do with whatever to their mind they choose, which takes great insight, but they are usually the insane ones. No one can control their own mind or will for any real length of time. After a while, mental sickness begins. Their understanding of spiritual love is great, but the feeling of spiritual love is corrupted by the sinful will. Therefore, insane people think that what they do as the sane sees as sinful and wrong, they believe they are doing it out of love. Many a time, the least intelligent cannot ascertain good from wrong as babies cannot for fantasy and reality mix and so if learned, they can also do insane things. Unbelievers who have faith in other religions and other gods can also be insane, as well. I do not judge what they do or do not deserve. I only know to be cautious, especially to those who are struggling with their faith now, as I once did.

Now, sanity can be found in the unbeliever but there is the absence of true love in spiritual mindedness. They may understand love is great but only in their mortal mind with the absence in their mind's belief that the Holy Spirit is not feeding it the fulfillment of true love. An unbeliever who does not have faith in anything at all dies quickly and usually by his own hand, but they are usually not insane; they needed to find hope and faith in something. This desperation can lead to mass destruction when evil volunteers to lead.

I believe Jesus is the true way, but if people do not believe so and refuse to see the pure and righteous route but have faith in something and are sane, let them go with the understanding that you love them, for they at least have faith in something to keep them alive. Perhaps from your prayers for them, another brother or sister along the way will open their eyes and their hearts through the Holy Spirit.

Now, realize that the insane who has faith in a god that promotes corrupt love or sinfulness will most likely not be able to be helped by you, unless it is by God Himself working directly through you. But, except in those rare instances, typically they cannot be helped by you for only a more powerful god to them can help them and then all you can do is pray. Do not be yoked with these people. But, though we must separate them from us, no one must murder them for you are Christians and obey the Law and you have faith that the Lord is all powerful and can do direct

miracles. And if He is to die, it will be by His Hands, not yours, for He sits in judgment, not you. Did He not create a miracle for you when you were created and then reborn?

Those insane who do believe in the way of Our Lord, who is the only God for He provides everlasting life and is pure love, can be helped back to sanity by His Children, but it will take one who is stronger in faith than the insane one and this will usually have to be someone who has glimpsed oneness with the Lord and has witnessed the Kingdom, for your faith takes a great amount to break and the Lord will work directly through you.

How do you heal the insane who believes in Jesus? If the insane believes himself to be Jesus, then you must pray for him and let God do miracles upon him because there is no stronger in faith than Jesus who walked the earth than God in Heaven. But you must not murder him for you are a Christian and you have faith that the Lord can do direct miracles.

If the insane believes he is less than Jesus is, then they can be helped by you who have great faith. For you can show them by the Word and your example of Jesus through your Holy Spirit that you are more powerful in his eyes and greater in faith than they and then they will eventually believe you. And once that happens, you can begin to unravel their past to uncover their mortal goodness that has been lost, but you must maintain your power and consistent faith over them. If you feel your mortal mindedness coming, excuse yourself. If you feel so prior to the meeting, you must postpone the meeting but reschedule. Each time they see a glimmer of goodness within themselves, you must reward them with something beautiful of this world, but only of which is a direct creation of God, like a flower or sunlight or something. Man-made things will only create man-made images in his mind. For the insane must believe that God shines upon them for doing good, but you yourself must give it to them, not from others. For as they see good within them, they will then follow you less, but it must continue to be a relationship between you and the insane one until the healing is at a certain point. For at that point, too much depending is not a good thing. For trust in the Spirit of others is essential. But until that time, if anyone else does him favors, he will think it came from God and wonder why God did not deliver it to him through you. And your power will be in question and the healing will cease, if the other who gave has less faith than you do.

Now after the above, how many of you can say your faith is enough to handle the insane? Unless you are totally sure and are affirmed by the Body of Christ of your gift, do not be yoked with these people. It is most likely that those who deal with healing these people have gotten to the strength in faith they have acquired by their own journey with the Lord, and the Lord has sought them out for this specific purpose. Concentrate on your own journey with the Lord and your true calling will be revealed to you.

55. The Sane Christian

Sanity is performing righteous acts in the name of righteousness (1Peter 1:15-16). For instance, loving (doing righteousness) in devotion to God (in the name of righteousness). Insanity is performing unrighteous acts in the name of righteousness (Ro 6:1). For instance, murdering (doing unrighteousness) in devotion to God (in the name of righteousness).

Brothers and sisters, many of us have been attacked and many of us have had our sanity in question. Many of us, because of this, question our own sanity. So to help you, I will describe the sane Christian.

First you must know the purpose of why the Creator created us. We were created for one purpose and one purpose only. To all your troubles and indecision and transgression, I say away with them for you only have to concentrate and know one thing, the one purpose I am talking about.

We are our Father's Children and, thus, we were created for Love by our Creator who is pure love. For we are all of one body and that body is love.

This is the path that is all you need to fulfill His Purpose and thus that within you and for strengthening others. I will first describe the way I believe the Creator wishes us to think and live. This first description is the way of creation by the Creator to the mortal:

The Creator is the All-Knowing and He is Pure Love who has provided us His Will which is the Holy Spirit He speaks through which wishes to cleanse the mortal will and then overcome it so it then will be your will which then feeds the mind which receives the Lord's Message and translates it and then transmits it to the body which communicates it to others to strengthen them in faith of receiving the Spirit within them and thus glorifying God. This glorification comes when you communicate back to Him while serving others and also from yourself to Him by giving of yourself to Him. That is all you need to know, that is all you need to do wherever and in whatever you do. That is our purpose on this earth.

Now, the first description already supposes you having faith. So, I will now describe to you the same one purpose but from the perspective of the mortal and I will feed you by communicating to you in writing by my hands:

Let us suppose you have not asked for the Holy Spirit yet and so it is in the Hands of the Lord awaiting its proper home within you. Now the Holy Spirit craves to be loved by God, but to you who have trouble with believing, you do not think that route. So instead of pursuing, you crave something else. And how much will you crave will depend on how much you wish to accept love from where it is supposed to come from in the Eyes of the Lord. So, then you crave the love of others through the communication of their bodies to you instead of the Love from the Will of God within them.

So, now let me put the one purpose in terms of craving: The body which communicates spiritual love craves the mind which transmits spiritual love (after it receives and translates it) which craves the Will of God within you by way of the resurrection of Jesus Christ.

We know the mortal body withers without communication from our minds to provide action. But I tell you, if the message is not one of love, it is better that you have no body for you destroy in the way you touch, what you speak, how you gesture.

Our minds have one purpose and one purpose only: To receive love, translate love, and transmit love to our bodies. The mortal mind seeks love as soon as it is created by God before the womb and that is its function all your life. That is it! Look no further! The mortal mind was programmed by God to seek out love wherever it can find it. When the mortal is born, whatever is the message from the parents is what the mortal mind believes is love and is stored in the mortal will. But if the mortal will is not filled with love, which a mortal will is never totally filled with love, when the sane mortal mind finds itself feeding from it later in infancy and beyond, the mortal mind will reject that which is not love from the mortal will and begin hating it—thus, many of you say you hate yourselves. But it is not you that you hate but what has been placed in your will as a baby.

Never, hate yourself! But cleanse the dirt which is in your mortal will. That is cleanse what is not pure love. And you ask, what is love and what is not? Now, you must seek the Holy Spirit, for then you will understand and come to feel true and pure love. And then you will know. Now, the mortal mind will seek love wherever it can, for that is its purpose. If it hates that which is filled in its own will, it will seek love from others. It will thirst for it, that even the smallest amount of love from the most abusive, it will stay just to receive that fix. It will go into itself to find love and disturb all that is natural to create fantasy. It will reprogram itself to become addictive and depressive, whatever works, just to get some loving attention from others or any other thing.

Now the way the mind works is that it must first survive and then it will seek a safe environment, but it will require a loving environment to be in before it can focus on maximum understanding and receiving and enjoying and providing love. The minimum understanding takes place at the beginning of a safe environment. Glimpses of love appear in the safe-to-loving journey. When you believe and begin to have faith in the Lord, you begin to feel safe wherever you are. The mortal will try to do these steps in this order everywhere it goes. Many of you stop between survival and safe. You never completely feel safe. But the Christian who is, at the time, in the Love of God by choice, is always in a loving environment and keeps receiving, enjoying, and then providing love.

It is the sane Christian who knows that for all his or her life, they will have times where they may not realize the Love of the Lord, which is indeed always there, that they must surround themselves in a nurturing and loving environment by surrounding themselves with loving and nurturing people and pretty and nurturing things. Then when they do not realize the Love of the Lord, they are still beyond the safe environment stage and can then be reminded and learn that love is within their grasp and they then return quicker to it. You who are new Christians and you who have a hard time believing, you must surround yourself with many of these things. You who are maturing Christians may wish to surround yourselves, as well, knowing He provides to you what He believes you are to have. You know that what you surround yourself with are possessions of the Lord given to you as a gift and you are to manage His possessions with loving care—including your own self. If you fear, then you must at least release what is not love from your life so to at least feel safe. And you ask, how do I do that? It is by seeking help from those that know how. You must have even the littlest faith in the Lord to seek help. First and foremost, pray. Then seek and you will find it. But you must pray, and then shall He prepare you for the desert you must go into. But He will prepare you!

Now, the mortal will and the mortal mind make up the mortal soul. So, then the mortal mind craves love from the mortal will. And it wishes to be fulfilled in pure love. Does not a car work better with clean and pure gasoline rather than dirty or crude oil? Do you not always seek a better cleaner to wash with? It is the same with your mind. Cleaner and purer is better and so it seeks the purest love. And when it receives less than pure it continues to seek until it finds the purest love, for that was why it was created. And, thus when it receives what it craves, it is fulfilled. Thus, when the mind receives the purest love from what is the Will of God, it is fulfilled and starts to become spiritual minded and becomes at peace and then the mind in its physical state and mental state begins to heal faster and faster.

Eat from what the Lord provides, not from what man provides. I speak of food of love from the Holy Spirit, as well as food in which you digest. All food from the Lord is good, but all food is not good. I am not talking clean, but healthy. Will you eat from which is dirty, from what has been saturated with man-made substances? I do not say that if man mixes food from the Lord together it is not good. But if man mixes food from the Lord with that not made to eat by the Lord, do not eat. Why do I wish to eat the Lord's Food mixed with pesticides, with unhealthy preservatives. Then I eat from the hand of man and his corrupt ways, instead of the Hand of God. Love that I seek from the hand of man will be mixed with unhealthy preservatives and pesticides. Then I digest that which my mind seeks with that which destroys my mind and then passes it on to my body. How can my body communicate the Will of God if corrupted with that which is man-made? For I am a Child of God and thus I desire His Love and what He has provided for me. You parents, how will you provide for your children, when all of you are His Children? We must come to know that we carry within us the Holy Spirit, which is the Living God. We are like the Ark that houses the Great Covenant. He uses our bodies to transport His Will to others. Therefore, we are to take great care of His mode of transportation on earth. We are His earthly portable temple. He owns us and we are His. We must take great care of ourselves to have the greatest quality of life to do His purpose. In order to have quality and provide quality in our lives (in relationships, craft, business, etc.) we must have intimacy. And true intimacy develops through a sharing and common bond in any relationship. The common bond we have with God, others, and ourselves is the Holy Spirit that produces intimate love within us and between us. Therefore, true quality can only be produced by way of the intimate love provided by the Holy Spirit. Remember, the product of intimate love of the Holy Spirit and the provision equals quality. Thus, when we ourselves have an intimate relationship with God by way of the Holy Spirit which radiates love within us ("us" meaning God's provision), we are the quality goods (✓x ☺ =>).

And so, the mind craves the will to give it Love and so it desires the Will of God to become its own will. Without receiving the Love from the Will of God, the mind deteriorates and withers. I believe this may be one reason many of the men of God in the Old Testament could live hundreds of years. Because they ate only from what the Lord fed them. Know this: The Lord provided His Son for you to die so you may receive the Holy Spirit to continuously feed you His Love. Will you allow your mortal will to be cleansed by the Will of God and thus become the Will of God through transformation? For the more you allow this, the greater in amount the Will of God becomes your own will and the greater your own will is lost until the day you are in Heaven and the transformation is complete. But during this time, you will say more and more, "I

like who I am and I am so blessed to be My Father's Child." And one day you will say, "I love who I am of who My Father has created so much that I wish that others can feel the same way I do."

Realize this brothers and sisters: The mortal soul has a survival instinct to survive. Only when it truly believes that the death of its own mortal will is crucial for its survival, then shall faith in the Lord begin. The mortal will and mind do not wish to die, but die it must to fully accept the Will of God, because it will die anyway, but it procrastinates by choosing to die later than sooner. Be accountable now so you may further receive, enjoy, and provide His love.

Now, I talk of the task at hand. The mind always needs a reference, something to compare things to if it is to understand. If the mind does not know the Holy Spirit or how to find it, it will ask another's soul to feed it. It will draw love out of another anyway it knows how until the other stops giving it to it. And then it will either seek another or give up. And in others, you will become their drug of choice and they will become, if they are not already, addicted to you and prevent you from stopping production at all costs. This is why love endures, this is why we must endure. This is why Christians must be there for these people and each other and we must endure for them as Jesus did for us. For we must provide them the Love of God so that they can find it in themselves. And we must correct our own when we see it in question, not only for our own kind but because we serve in action and example to those who need to be fed. If they refuse to find the Will of God, then their mortal will is too hardened at that time and all you can do is plant a seed and pray, but the more they refuse they will wind up perishing sooner than later and not be reborn in the light of the Lord, but will die mortally in suffering. Some of you will not be able to help because they will not allow you to. And when Jesus comes, many will wish to know Jesus, but then it will be our duty to run to Jesus instead.

Help those you can, pray that those you can't will find others to help them or that the Lord will provide a miracle upon them. But you are only human. Realize that you can only help those as much as you have allowed the Will of God to replace your own will and thus then in that amount of faith. You must know your limitations on this or you will travel into what is left of your own mortal will and be fooled. And your own will cannot replace itself for one body cannot replace its own. It requires feeding from the outside and it requires love. That is where we came from and that is where we are headed. For God is Love.

As for what the Lord has provided me and has shed His light into me: What is left of my mortal soul wishes to support the Spirit of my Lord by giving up it to Him and thus my transformation becomes even closer. I now even start to forget, for it has become trivial to me, the misery I brought upon myself when I chose not to receive His Son. For I believed all my life in the Lord, but my own pride and arrogance due to my hurting soul and kept dirt prevented my humbleness to the Lord, and so I kept me from listening by way of the Holy Spirit by way of the resurrection of His Son by way of His Teachings upon this earth by way of His placement on the earth by the Lord. And many a time, I feel fulfilled as if I have been all my life. It is as if all I have gone through and all I go through now and all I will go through has been and is done to understand how I sought love and what I will do from that learning and experience. And now I can share love for I know and have great faith that I am continuously fed by Him through the Holy Spirit and so I can now concentrate on providing love wherever He places me by His Own Hands.

And so, the sane Christian tests himself by this: God loves me, He feeds my mind through His Will. My mind gladly receives His Love and during translation rejects all that which comes from the mortal soul not of true love, but welcomes only the true love that is only by Him and thus the Holy Spirit of others, because I will not transmit anything but love to my body so that I may become fulfilled in His Love and can strengthen others and Glorify Him. That is the simple purpose of life. All else is trivial. This is all you need to know because this is all you were created for.

56. Pleasing the Spirit

In my accounts in the desert, I showed you each destructive event started with me trying to please my own mortal soul. This will lead to destruction, for you cannot serve a false god and the One True God, as well. You must choose between the God of True Love and True Life and the mortal soul. I choose the God of True Love by way of the Holy Spirit which dwells in me. Now, it is the same with others, as well. Do you try to please their mortal soul or their Spirit, which is the One God in you, as well? When you try to please another's unfaithful mortal soul, it too will lead you to destruction. If you try to please their unfaithful mortal soul, you will eventually die without spiritual rebirth or realization of where you come from for you will never be able to fulfill the other because their desires are erratic, too numerous, and unfulfilling even to them.

So, you ask, "Then brother if I must serve their Spirit, how do I do this especially when they cannot tell me how?" Dear brothers and sisters, the Lord which is in the Holy Spirit in each of us as He is in Heaven, teaches you nothing that He does not desire for Himself and that is from us to give to others for Him. He desires from us love which He delivers to which the Apostles Paul and Peter define. Thus, to be this to others is to be this for Him simultaneously. Speak to their Spirit somehow like this:

Be patient with others, be kind to others, be supportive of others, have concern for others, be encouraging of other's needs, be merciful towards other's trespasses against you in whatever you feel they may be, live for today with others and forgive the past, speak truthfully in love to others, help protect others from evil doers, trust others, provide hope for others, and persevere with others.

And so, you shall do this for Him, and thus to your brethren, and to you. You must do to his Holy Spirit and yours as well. You must receive all the love you can from your own Holy Spirit to love his, for then you will truly be able to love your neighbor as you love yourself. Love thy Spirit as you love your own. If you serve his mortal soul as you serve your own, you will always fall short for none of us are perfect, though we are all worthwhile. Remember, brothers and sisters, all crave that which God provides and teaches you, for we all come from God and so we all crave to go to Him. Be an example of Jesus Christ and speak and show your brethren the true path to Him. And if he attacks you, remember he does it from his mortal soul to yours, for he is not pure of heart in this state. And so, forgive him, for if he saw and felt the Lord then, it would be love he was showing you, not hate. And if he says, "Blasted your Spirit", again it is from his

mortal soul and rebuke him immediately. If he continues not to listen, plant a seed and begone. Hopefully, he will come to see the light.

We were created to speak to each other from soul to soul guided by the Spirit. But from what soul will you be communicating from—the Will of God or your own soul? For the Spirit, which is the Will of God, is the life engine. If we try to communicate with only our mortal soul or only our bodies driven by our mortal soul, death will begin as we wither away until our mortal death, at which time our potential worth for serving has so greatly diminished. I am not speaking of your worth as Children of God able to receive Him, but your value in your ableness to serve others and Glorify Him. He will love you always, but how much further will you walk away from Him? Remember, as soon as you reach out to the Holy Spirit, life begins again, everlasting life which provides you the means to reach out to others to strengthen them and by way of you, if by the Will of God, enables them to have life through God and our Savior Jesus Christ. For each man and each woman must receive God and His Holy Spirit by each own's accord because only God can place the Spirit within the mortal, but possibly through you, it will enable the other to make that glorious decision.

57. Worth, Deservedness, and Value (John 14:15-31)

Now I ask of you to listen, especially to all who are evangelists, teachers, and prophets. This I speak of is how many of you kill your brethren and unbelievers. This must be extremely clear: Worth is not deservedness. Deservedness is a result of acting, worth is a result of being. All are of infinite worth (worthwhile) as the Lord's Child, for we are created by Him. Deservedness comes from whether we obey the Law in faith or not, and even then, judgment in the degree of what the other deserves is reserved only for God. I cannot even judge myself to know how much I deserve or not.

I only hurt myself if I do not obey because I prevent myself from doing the greatest work on earth and in Heaven for the Lord. This is all I can do for you—help you love our Father by praising you your righteousness and helping you feel more fulfilled and in love in the righteous journey and compassionately make known to you in your unique way of understanding what I believe is your sinful erring in hopes that, if you are indeed erring, you will become accountable so you may come to remember and realize again your true worth so that you can continue to be valuable in obeying the Law. This I ask of you for me as well so I may be continuously on the righteous path and check if I am in full contact with the Lord's Holy Spirit within me. It is a fact that all begins from worth within and man yearns to return to it all his days. This is for everything, every system in creation. All creation that is provided the Will of God, therefore, appears to expand in its viability and its knowledge in worldly consciousness, only to return to and realize its original and pure state later.

In our search for truth and love, value is depicted through our actions in the search. Whenever we search for the truth and for love in what is a truly holy and persistent (what some may even claim as laborious, arduous, or labor input) search valuable to God, we always find more answers to the true worth within us. We come to reveal more about ourselves and who we really are. The more we question in respect within a holy and honest search in all that we do, the more of

who we are in relation to God is revealed. This is why obedience is good, but to follow without questioning things from the mind that God gave us limits us. Questioning is not necessarily disobedience because with questioning comes enlightenment. Questioning while trusting God and retaining the faith that the outcome will be fine and holy is only holy curiosity. We are children and children question things. By asking valuable questions, our inner worth and true identity are revealed as our trust is developed for that which is within us. This is why from true worth comes true value which again returns to true worth all while producing greater faith in our Lord, trust in our salvation and the Holy Spirit within, and confidence to do His Will.

The reason we must venture into true value is because we are humans with limited and infrequent concentrations and comprehension. God knows this because He created us this way. Venturing into true and holy value (what some may call good deeds or good works) does not take us off the righteous path but helps us explain what we come across as we traverse it. Value should be full of all sorts of feelings as we have fun questioning the different things in this life that God shows us. The problem arises when we do not respect value and manipulate it and exploit it as a slave to our deceitful desires. We are holy students who must learn from, respect, and teach others that which is shown to us by God.

In nature, theory suggests that nothing expands forever without contracting somewhere else at a later time. In the supernatural, nothing expands forever without contracting back upon itself at a later time. As humans, we are given the supernatural Holy Spirit. In our forgetfulness, limited understanding, self-absorption, and arrogance, we may even search for our true meaning in *naturally* specific endeavors. When we give up ourselves yet again to God, our realization of the Holy Spirit within us returns. It is then that we eventually come to realize that our true meaning was within ourselves all along. Thus, we began with the supernatural, expanded because of our natural state, and contracted back because of the supernatural. Once we realize that we will miss nothing “out there” from our curiosities and “nothing out there” will give us nearly as much satisfaction as our journey along the righteous path, we will stay to the path. Everything we need and desire will be given to us, just as God provided everything to Adam. Adam was within the righteous path, and God even brought to him the animals. Let God deal with “out there”. Anything “out there” that is needed for you here, will be delivered to you. God is the best Selector for your needs. Then you will have fun and even greater satisfaction in toil, but you won’t be led to grave misery.

And then there is perception of relativity, as Einstein concluded. Some scientists say that the universe is expanding. But this is not fact. Only the arrogant choose its own home as the center or basis of reality. Are we contracting slower than that which is expanding? Or are we expanding and the other contracting? Can we see the ends of all creation? Do we sit far enough away from our own center to prove this? God sits at the center of the universe. Only He knows what is contracting and what is expanding.

Remember, once you believe to be of worth and then obey the Law so you may begin to be productive in your gifting, you will begin to understand what it feels like to be valuable (worthy). For I pray for everyone to become valuable disciples of our Lord Jesus Christ and feel how immensely valuable you are to Him. “You are the ones who justify yourselves in the eyes of men, but God knows your hearts. What is highly valued among men is detestable in God’s sight

(Luke 16:15).” “Circumcision has value if you observe the law, but if you break the law, you have become as though you had not been circumcised (Rom 2:25).”

Now, someone who does an act outside the Law may not be deserved to continue on the righteous path, but once they repent, they are once again deserved. Do not judge anyone to fix them whether they are deserved or not. You do not have that right—only God does. You do not know why they do what they do, and if you did come to know, you would most likely have compassion for them. However, in the Spirit, caution those you see doing against the Law. But whether people obey the Law or not, they are always worthwhile to live, worthwhile to be loved, and worthwhile to be redeemed.

So, you evangelists, teachers, and prophets to whom people listen to, never mention the terms worthy nor deserving unless it is followed by an explanation. It is important to realize that the mortal world is so greatly confused between worth (worthwhile), deserving, and valuable (worthy) that most of them see those terms as exactly the same definition, and so you may kill whom you wish to save. The terms “worthwhile” and “worthy” have different meanings. And when you say things amongst others to praise God, never use the plural “we” with the terms undeserving. We cannot judge whether someone is undeserving. Remember, people seek us because they seek love.

The concept of worth and value is analogous to faith (that beautiful and loving mixture produced from both supernatural reasoning and feeling) and good works. Job 28 describes beautifully the distinction between worth (Job 28:13) and value, as does the Book of Ecclesiastes.

I have also noticed cringing when evangelists dismiss anyone. It appears overbearing. It is better to embrace the congregation by saying somewhat in these words, “We love you. Go in peace and trust in the Lord through His Son Jesus Christ.”

58. Submission, Obedience, and Authority

Many a time I have come across people who do things to me or wish for me to do that I believe are not appropriate or unfair but do not offend God’s Law. In my mortal sense, which can come quickly and I can tend to forget my spiritual mindedness, I get angry. “Why have you forsaken me?”, I say to them. “What have I done to you to deserve this? I am serving you but you take me for granted!” And I say, “Now what should I do to you in return. You are not of the Lord! You are from the enemy!”

People I must tell you, stop with all this enemy stuff. You focus so much on the enemy, fear captures your heart and then you pray so hard to the Lord in hopes the enemy will not conquer you, like the enemy has more power than you—God’s Child. I used to pray this way and fear was with me more than my joy of being with God. This fear will make you sick and will lead you to desperation and your desperation will lead you to touch others and lead them to desperation. What is so desperate? Nothing in this world is desperate—nothing—because you are already in the Hands of God by the choice you made in receiving Christ. The mortal world has become your child and you have become its parent. Every situation we go into we should go into as spiritual parents ready to parent and having something to offer, then as siblings or friends

ready to enjoy a relationship with a brother and sister, and then finally as spiritual children having learnt something when we are ready to leave so we can continue the cycle at a later time. The world is a scavenger hunt where each creation holds several pieces of the whole at a given time and several more at a later time. Each, therefore, is an important part of the whole body.

This is one of the most important keys: To those that do nothing to you which neither is unholy nor violates the Law of God, you may still think their actions unfair to you. In this situation, you must decide whether the enemy is attacking or if God is teaching, as your Holy Father. Will you see the one who attacks you as a servant of the enemy and place them in judgment or as an instrument from the Hand of God? As a servant of the enemy, you will either strike out or feel hopeless. Both are sins of the Holy Spirit. I say, see it as an instrument from the Hand of God. I say, “O’ Lord, I see that you are teaching me that I must be humbled, that my pride is still too much, that I must savor and totally believe that humbleness is golden and will never forsake me in this lifetime. O’ dear oppressor, how wondrous, how I thank you so that you were chosen by the Hand of my God to teach me this lesson—for you have definitely been blessed. Thank you for being the instrument that places me on the righteous path, yet once again. I will serve you and bless you in hopes that you realize how fortunate you have become. O’ Lord, in the name of Jesus, will I bow down to Your Grace, and serve Your instrument so that I may rejoin You once again! I will show You because I love you so much that I have learned my lesson well and go in peace with the patience I now have.”

Much of this will happen in life and much will especially happen in your work. And to that fact we should heed the words of the Apostle Paul in (Eph 6:5-9) and the words in Heb 13:17. We must realize, though, that obedience will only come about by the amount of love one has for another only because one is grateful for the love that one has within oneself due to the other. Therefore, to demand obedience before love is sinful and to wish for obedience in others before they feel love within themselves may result in a lengthy wait. Why would I obey you, a leader of me at the time, when you have shown me no love? I obey you and all my other leaders, in what is not unholy, because I love Him. I come to love everyone through the Holy Spirit, but I do not become partners or yoke myself to you (Eph 5:1-7).

This is the truth:

Love does not come out of obedience (you cannot draw love from a turnip),
but obedience comes out of love.

You either love someone or you don’t. It is as simple as that. And if other’s, even parents, wish you to obey them when you do not love them, they are continuing to act out of selfishness and not grace (which is why you probably don’t truly love them with mind and heart together). (Eph 6:4)

I tell you that right now the Holy Spirit is unrelentingly commanding me to seek obedience not just to God but to my Godly brothers and sisters and all others who ask me to do that which is not unholy. And when I choose to disobey, but pray on this matter, He provides me yet another chance to obey in this way (Ps 119, LK 11:28).

A problem that is an epidemic in today's society is that many in the working environment have great trouble seeing each working member as his or her own family member. In a family, people are able to accept each other easier and forgive greater. Each member strives to help each other in their shortcomings and all members speak to one another to share strengths, weaknesses, and fun and not so fun times. The key is to serve each other and be humbled and also speak of your troubles with the member you have trouble with. Then you should forgive. Ask your Father for help in humbling yourself and also help intercede so that you may see His miracles begin to happen. You are the child of your Father. "My Father, please help me and show me the way through?" And my Father answers, "My Child, you must be accountable for what you have done, but in what others have done to you, stay clear because I am here. Behold! Witness how much I love you, for I Am your Father." And then come the miracles.

All those that have come my way and You have led me to are there and here and everywhere by You. How wonderful is my Father. I seek Your counsel and Your wisdom and those You send to me in love.

Now, submission is a word in today's language that is very threatening. And many women have a difficult time with submission as Paul talks about in Ephesians 5:22 (NIV) because so many women have only seen prideful and arrogant men in their lives and so many women have been hurt by these men. And so many woman rather not serve a man because they fear they may be hurt once again. This is also true with many of you men. And so, as I further speak of this, you too be conscious of your own battle with submitting to our Father.

In the passage of Ephesians 5:22-33, understand this: The order of things is God, Jesus, man, and woman. Now, we know in Genesis, the woman was made to comfort the man. But much of the passage in Ephesians explains how most men cannot accept and follow divinity when left to their own accord. They become egotistical. And so, the Lord has placed Himself and the divinity of woman on either side of the man so that the man must look within himself and become humbled. I ask you, in a marriage, have you seen a happy woman among an arrogant man, or have you seen a happy woman who is not selfish among a humble man who serves his wife and God with sensitivity and love? The passage speaks about how the man, if he continues to stay prideful and overbearing toward the woman, becomes like a dark cloud overhead preventing the true radiance of the woman to shine through. Paul is saying that we must support the woman and offer her up to God in the full radiance she is. It is somewhat like when you hold something in such high regards that you lift it up to heaven and say here my Lord is the most precious of offerings I can give to you. Many men think otherwise and, I guarantee you, it will be their downfall. God does not tolerate anything or anybody getting in the way of the offering up of true inner radiance or that person will suffer. And then by offering up the radiance of the woman to the Lord, the woman in turn becomes like the sun overhead and shines brightly upon her husband and all the land, sea, and air. Then all can see him brightly as she says here is my husband, what a wonderful man I have married, how I respect him so. And at the same time she provides him light to see as well so he will walk with respect and not stumble. You will find Peter say pretty much the same thing in 1Peter 3:1-6.

The man may be acknowledged as the leader. But what many men must realize is the best way to lead is by serving with great love as Jesus did for us. Lest I'll put this another way: When a

man humbles himself and breaks himself down, will the woman come around. It is only for your own good that I say these things to you who are husbands or will be husbands so you may know, feel, and be fulfilled in love by the Lord. What woman who feels worthwhile to receive love does not crave to respect and honor a man who loves her unconditionally to the point of humbling himself to serve her? This is not unlike when Jesus washed the feet of the Apostles at the Last Supper. And it is not unlike when Jesus explained to the Apostles that they are now His friends, not His servants. And what friend would not die for the sake of another? That is real love! And He Loves all of us so much!

But also we must understand that one can be a natural leader but quite poor in navigating. A leader may be very good at gathering a following but quite poor at truly realizing the right way to get where he needs to go. I believe leadership is a God given gift but navigation is a mixture of natural ability and experience. Husbands (or wives for that matter) can be very good leaders but it has been my experience that wives are usually better navigators. Thus, a husband who does not listen and respect his wife will usually wind up quite lost, in pain, and without provisions. A wife who does not listen and respect her husband may be able to navigate and also reach the destination but she will probably have lost vital provisions along the way like possibly time or even people. This is not to say that the roles could not be reversed or that each could not be both an exceptional leader and navigator. But the point I'm trying to make is that a leader without the skills of a navigator and a navigator without the skills of a leader will have a difficult time reaching his or her destination. They must work together in unison.

If God is our leader who provided Jesus for us in physical form to show us how to navigate God's plan, then what is the Holy Spirit? Without a moral conscience, the greatest leader and navigator will wind up destroying themselves. Children in a family can be a moral conscience in physical form to the, let's say, father leader and mother navigator. Therefore, parents must also listen and respect their children so the family will make the journey safely and fulfillingly. In WWII, General Patton was a great leader and his staff were great navigators. But sometimes his pride got the best of him. If it weren't for the moral conscience of the people at home speaking up at critical moments but who were also mostly ignorant of what war was truly like, Patton would probably have never been as successful as he was.

God is our leader, navigator, and one sending morality to our conscience as one complete essence. But He has delegated the tasks for our sake and understanding. He is the leader who sent us Jesus to show us physically how to navigate according to His plan and who also sent us the Holy Spirit to become His conscience within us. All three are always working in unison to help us in our journey (God in heaven, Jesus in the Word and a symbol of every physical presence around us, and the Holy Spirit within us) but it is up to us to totally trust the leader, follow the instructions of the navigator while respecting everything around us, and respond (receive, translate, and transmit) from the moral conscience within us along the way—just as Jesus absolutely trusts God and the Holy Spirit absolutely transmits God's message to us.

And this you must understand, the woman before you is only under you in the mortal world outside the Kingdom of Heaven and on Earth. In Gen 3:16, you will realize that woman was not made to be submissive to man in the kingdom because they lived in harmony. Only once sent into the mortal world was the man to be ruler over the woman. I tell you, if you have a Godly

woman before you who does the Lord's work and is in true love within the Kingdom, there is no submission to be found without the loving one willing to be submissive. By trying to force submission on others (which is tyrannical ruling over someone as in Gen 3:16), you place yourself between the other and the Lord, thus trying to take the place of Jesus risen or the Holy Spirit. If you try to do this, the Lord will surely put you in your place and you will reap great sorrow. The Lord doesn't take the backseat to anyone, unless of course He wishes to. And God has no favorites (Eph 6:9). Christ has taken the place as gatekeeper to Eden and has lifted the curse in Genesis by the New Covenant. Therefore, we who live through Christ are relieved of that curse. Yes, the man may be the leader but both man and woman are co-rulers to manage God's possessions on earth. A leader is chosen by God to manage activities within a single body primarily through serving in love. The leading man now need not toil so but enjoy his work and his place in life so to please God. But a tyrannical ruler (which many spiritual men are delusional to believe to be scripturally correct for the present day) is one that exercises power over someone often harshly and arbitrarily.

In today's world, much violence in many of our homes occur. I speak, especially, of one spouse abusing the other as if an object to be controlled and powerful over. It is an addiction as if the victim has become a drug for the abuser. And how do you help an addict? By first telling someone outside so to offer support and then separating the drug from the addict. This must be done temporarily or permanently depending upon the degree of dependency the addict has on the drug. The victim, who has shown his or her own strength continuously, must leave because leaving helps the other get better. During this separation, the victim must heal with the Lord and the ones He sends in love to help. And do not be fooled, even spiritual men and women may be abusers within their own homes where there is no evidence of it in church.

So, for you woman who have been hurt, do not give up on your pursuit, but give it all up to God. Remember that shrieking of the word submission when seen in mortal eyes comes from a controlling nature. But when seen through the spiritual eyes and in love, as Paul was in love with Jesus at the time of his writing and has attested to these marriage happenings by account, submission is what we wish and rejoice in doing as do we wish to serve Jesus because He loves us so much. On earth you mortally will wish to submit to a loving husband who becomes an example of Jesus. And in the Kingdom of Heaven and on Earth through your Holy Spirit, you will wish to submit to Jesus Himself.

But you must remember on earth, and this is to all people, you must think the best about people and it will be the best you'll get back. And I hear some of you say that you have continually thought the best about the person you are with for a long time and you still get back terribleness and you don't understand. It is because, again, you are getting back the best they have to offer at this time. What does that tell you? Have hope but do not wallow in abuse.

And so, you husbands, I have been asked what your job description is as a husband. It is to become an example of Jesus through faith so you may embrace His sensitivity and love. And then all will fall into place in your family.

And to both of you, by the love of the Holy Spirit, you will wish to serve each other in true love. "Submit to one another out of reverence for Christ (Act 5:29, Eph 5:21)."

59. Usefulness, Wastefulness, Shame, Fear, and Satan's True Identity

Along the righteous path, God will bring to you and show you the world and how to behave in it as you walk with the Holy Spirit within you in your pursuit of the dream you have chosen for yourself. In your pursuit, be attentive to the gifts He provides you. Allow yourself the patience to rest and unwrap each and every gift. Then every step will be more simple, true, and necessary. It is here that we maximize our efforts, make more efficient our pursuit, and achieve our full value (usefulness) to God, ourselves, and others.

When we discover that all comes from God and His Holy Spirit within us, that is when we will begin our maximum usefulness. The pattern in life begins, unknowingly, from the Holy Spirit within us—where it had been sealed at baptism (JN 13:7). Yes, it was sealed within us, hermetically if you will, airtight and impervious to any worldly external influence. It cannot escape us and we cannot escape it. Its duty is to sanctify (anoint and purify) us throughout our everlasting life and we come to fully accept its sanctification (JN 13:8). It is to become us and we are to become it. It compels us to search, to seek ourselves. At an early age, most of us are unknowing to the fact that we begin seeking our own true identities because the Holy Spirit compels us to. It is the duty of the Holy Spirit to make you realize itself there in you. Then, in our search, we find value. Through our actions, we develop our disposition, which in turn helps us realize our own identities and our own self-worth. Through our useful actions, we then become conscious of the fact, somewhere down the line, that our true identities are being developed. (James 2:22)

If we choose our journey through Christ, we then will realize sometime during this conscious developing, or maturing, that it was the Holy Spirit that started the process to begin with. And it is soon after that we can come to realize that we are one with the Holy Spirit and that fighting it is why we are where we are today—but, by His grace, we are still alive and obeying His Law in some form. It is then that we realize that God asks us to dream and then says follow that dream with Him and He through you. It is then that we realize that a man or woman becomes what he or she dreams and that pursuing that dream along the righteous path will become a dream fully and genuinely realized for ourselves and our Creator. But we must be wise to understand the difference between dream of folly and dream of fulfillment.

When one realizes this, sin is not a way of life to him. Sin does not become shame, but waste—a wasteful (useless) detour from the hard work at hand. Sin does a man nothing and it provides him no gain, no rest (Eph 4:25-28). It adds no genuineness to his personality or disposition and is a separate external adversary to his existing being (Rom 6:1-14). Guilt is just a feeling that warns us that shame may be approaching. Shame is the deep-seeded emotion or inherent act we experience if we continue to avoid our guilty conscience. The Holy Spirit will let you know if you really did anything wrong. If we are confused, we should seek wise counsel immediately and then apologize if need be. Remember that your apology in good faith and sincerity provides you the forgiveness you desire from God, whether those you apologize to accept it or not. Whether they accept it or not is their problem, not yours.

Therefore, if shame is an act of guilt then shame is sinful. In fact, shame is more than sinful because it not only prolongs the sinful action you did on the outside but directly attacks and

infects you on the inside as well. Shame is therefore, a double-dose of sin and inherently evil. Anything or anyone that prolongs sin is as wasteful as sin is itself, but anything or anyone that prolongs the sinful act on the outside *and* directly attacks and infects your mind and body on the inside as well, is wicked. Therefore, shame is wicked and doubly wasteful—absolutely and unconditionally useless. Shame is the exact opposite of true love. And those who promote shame in you are wicked. Remember, shame is absolutely wasteful. It does not belong in you but in the world (JN 14:30). Shame does a man nothing and it provides him no gain, no rest (Eph 4:25-28). It adds no genuineness to his personality or disposition and is a separate external adversary to his existing being (Rom 6:1-14).

But even more than sin, satan is shame personified. Sin is useless to us as it is useless to God, but all sins are useful to shame. Shame is able to store all sin just as Heaven is able to store all righteousness. Therefore, shame is Hell. With God's help, we must attack shame at its heart in order to release our sins. It is not enough just not to sin. We must never allow shame to be connected to any sin whatsoever. Sin is just wasteful. That's it. It's not fire and brimstone. But shame is Hell and your disappointment in another is the spoon that you feed shame to another by (I speak of disappointment in another passage). We should not be disappointed in any person or thing. Who are we to ask anyone to meet our expectations of them? Place yourself in the perspective of the other. And if for any reason you see another feel guilty, it should be clear to you that the person places you in high regard. That should be plenty for us to forgive them and show forgiveness to them immediately. Do not promote shame by prolonging guilt in them. If so, it is likely that you are more guilty than they.

Satan is not a supernatural spirit as God is. Again, satan is shame personified in our minds. But God is real. We know this, even physically, by way of Jesus Christ on Earth. Therefore, God will always overpower our shame to release our real *and* imaginary sins. In other words, when your trap is clean of shame, you will find that there exists only God and you and satan was always an illusion. Now tell me. Would you rather fight satan or shame? Your illusion of satan can go on forever in your head, but shame can and will come to an end. And if satan was real, why do we care? When we get rid of our shame and fears, with the help of God Almighty, satan's out in the world anyway away from us.

And if shame is Hell then fear is the wall that surrounds Hell. Our fears encase, protect, and even cushion shame. This is why God requires us to face our fears and overcome them with Him, thus, tearing down that wall brick by brick. Remember, satan wants you within shame but God will overpower satan and deliver you into joy and peace within His kingdom.

We must now know that Christ died for all sins within us to be removed and forgiven. This means that once we received the Holy Spirit, all that within us became exactly like Christ—pure (JN 14:20). And because satan, and thus, shame had no hold on Christ, it has absolutely no hold on us anymore. We cannot do exactly as Christ. When Christ speaks in the Bible, he speaks of his own perfectly sinless self. Grace and the Holy Spirit within us purifies us even in sin so we do not have to succumb to shame. Original sin has been removed due to the New Covenant. Sin does not become shame anymore, but only waste—a way of just spinning our wheels without ever going anywhere in life. So, we are even free to sin, for as sin increases so does grace, but why even bother (Romans 5 and 6). Sin all you want and you'll come to one of two conclusions

like I did—I'll either wind up dead or sin's just a useless pain in the rump. As your faith increases more and more, the later will become more and more evident and you'll wind up sinning less and less (Romans 5:1-2).

The war within us is nearing completion and we have won. We realize that our only war is with the outside world. We know for certain that we have been sanctified and cleansed within. We begin to realize the purity of our state within. Where ever we go, God comes with us and where ever He wants us to go, we go without hesitation. He listens to us as we listen to Him.

It is through this value, this doing with righteous morality, this usefulness, that we learn and consciously realize more and more of our own self-worth, more of what our own Holy Spirit that possesses us and given to us by God offers us. For instance, it is through *practicing* God's Word that we come to identify and truly develop an intimate relationship with His Spirit within us—so much that we continue to transform into it. And it is for the sake of our own-selves and that of others that we must synergetically put into action our dreams with that of God's Will within us. His Spirit is within me and I am within my Father who is within me. I am my Father's child.

Do not waste the gifts He grants us, but maximize their usefulness. As you maximize their usefulness, you maximize Him and His Will for you. You maximize you who is He inside you. Once we realize this uniformity or sameness, it is ever the more necessary to act upon it so to maximize our value to all of creation, including ourselves (Eph 4:25-28).

But realize that those who only wish to philosophize all the while after and extend no useful value (where even information can be a form of useful value) to the other is like an island in the middle of a huge ocean. They have a rightful place on this earth, but no one can benefit from them (James 2:20). And it is only through useful relationship with our Creator and His creations that we can discern what kind of person we are and who and what is within us and what It is made up of. Once we truly realize It as God's Holy Spirit, It educates us of who and what It is made up of. That is part of its duties commanded by God (JN 16:5-16). Therefore, everything we need, we already have within us—but everything within us far exceeds everything we need because God knows everything there is (JN 14:9-14).

60. The Commission of Authorities

If God places people in authority, what are they commissioned to do in His name? Should we expect the public servant to do what we tell him simply because we pay him? God commissions people in authority to do His Will and follow His commands. They are to be the role models of Godly living for others. They set up the rules based on Godly principles and our punishment by them is justified when we break them. And like any earthly judge, they must refer to God for the type and degree of punishment. The punishment is justified when it obeys God's Law. Is the death penalty justified? Absolutely not. It defies God's Law. Whatever was created as an attempt to serve us in His name out of love must also require a punishment when we break the law, not for their sakes but ours. But punishment because we break a human law is not justified. If you say I must be something I wish not to be and you punish me for it, you are in sin and not me.

Authorities must determine what is providing the Will of God to His children on earth and what is enabling sin only because the majority of His children want it done. In today's society, many do not wish to follow the rules and ask for the rules to be changed to their liking. For instance, there is a highway where I live that I travel most everyday. The majority of people speed past the speed limit. The highway is usually bumper to bumper with accidents and backups the majority of days. And there is a movement to expand the highway. But expanding for what purpose? The speed limit is an authority's rule provided to us for our safety and the desirable pace of traffic associated with the volume of vehicles traveling. Yes, it was created and designed for a specific pace and place—like everything, including each one of us by God. It was not created for punishment but was created out of love for us. So then, should we enable sin? If we all drove the speed limit, would there be a problem with the traffic or would we just become impatient? Yes, if the volume of traffic has come to the point that the highway cannot handle it even at the minimum speed limit, then yes the authority is doing us an injustice because they make us wallow around in pain and discomfort within Godly living. But just because we want to defy authority, we ask authority to change it's rules and designs for us, and that is not love. That is selfishness. Should I ask God to change His rules so I can wallow around in sin?

Obedience because of a healthy fear of punishment is good because it is a punishment we know we are deserved of for undoing ourselves. Otherwise, we would keep on sinning without truly feeling sorry because we would take it for granted that we could control God in forgiving us and be totally selfish. This is just like when Adam and Eve took Eden for granted. It wasn't good enough for them to just accept what God gave them, they had to be arrogant and think that they could figure it all out and dissect and control and manipulate what He gave them for their own delusional purposes. When we realize this and then come to know and feel grace, we definitely know that He is in charge and truly know and feel sorry for what we have done. What loving father would continue to enable sin in his son or daughter? And thus from this understanding, the messiah was naturally known to come one day as prophesied in the Old Testament and, indeed, Jesus Christ was born. But it is better when we are obedient because we love our Father and we know He loves us. It is best when we allow the Holy Spirit to guide us and drive us knowing that the Spirit provides us the feelings and thoughts of justifiable punishment and love in holy living. Never take what God has provided us for granted! Serve and be obedient to what He gives you. This includes a husband to his Godly wife and a wife to her Godly husband. But, alas, the Second Coming will come.

So then, God commissions the authorities to provide to us the Law of God out of love for our sakes. The greater the authority, the greater public servant he or she must be. We are all accountable to God but to one who has been given authority, the weight of Godly living and servanthood is placed heavier on his shoulders. And it is the people, especially the holy person, who come under authority that are justified in enlightening which is evil and unholy in earthly authority, not so much for themselves but for the one in authority and others under the authority.

And as we know, many who are in authority are also monetarily wealthier than most. I accept that I may not ever be monetarily rich, but I can still encourage and convince those who are rich to be humanitarians and philanthropists because I have the greatest treasure inside me to inspire the greatest in authority. That treasure is the Holy Spirit placed in me freely by God Almighty.

(Romans Chapters 2-8, [especially Ro 6:1-4, Ro 6:15-18, Ro 7:7], Hebrews Chapters 10-12)

61. Freedom Through Obedience

Now that I have a certain amount of understanding of why I am to be obedient to the Lord, I believe the Lord is now providing me the opportunity to understand obedience to people in authority whom he has placed over me. It is not enough to be obedient to Him, we must also be obedient to others. But because Jesus' Word has also made known this to me, I am obedient to God once again as I am being obedient to others.

I had already been tested. One in authority over me and others said to me that he wishes to groom me for his position. But he said do not tell the others under him who are my co-workers. My first thought was that this is deceitful. Why not be honest and sincere with the others by telling them of this? As a child, I would have usurped his authority and did what I believed was right and then proceed to tell the others.

Now people in the world will play you. Because of their own fears of confrontation, they will send you in as spies to communicate to them what others have said. And others may do this to find out what authorities say. We must be careful, brothers and sisters. As Christians, we love all and try to befriend all who will hear Christ's Words and even those who will not but who we are hopeful will later. And by doing this, we wear many hats for their benefit and without playing favorites while continuously knowing our own true identities which comes from the Holy Spirit within us (James 2:1-13).

But then in searching for an answer, I was reminded of the Parable of the Workers in the Vineyard (MT 20:1-16). What is it to others why the boss does what he does? Doesn't he know the situation better than me? Who am I to judge the one in charge by defying his wishes or any person's wishes? As a Christian, it is a one-on-one personal relationship I am interested in. How can I help you in your journey to Christ? Is the boss being deceitful? He may be. But will I deceive him by disobeying what is not unholy? I cannot be concerned with the foolish games of man but be only concerned with fulfilling my purpose impressed upon me by God's Will. I cannot get in the way of how God calls others by playing foolish games and listen to blame and jealousy from a boss or co-worker. But what I am concerned with is the personal salvation and Christian journey of the boss and co-worker.

Why is life a paradox? It is so because God's way and the natural human way of sin are exact opposites. When we are asked to do God's way, we have a difficult time seeing how it possibly can work because it contradicts human nature. But it does work magnificently. Let's take obedience or submission, for example. It is human nature to see obedience, especially obeying other people, as confining to our self-identities. And it is indeed confining when we seek our identities from those humans whom we obey. But when we are continually receiving our true identities from the Holy Spirit, wherever we go, we find that it is through obedience that we find increasing freedom because we do it with a serving heart. One way we achieve freedom, besides focusing on Christ, is that by obeying people in authority to us, they come to trust us, respect us, and leave us be more regularly. They come to connect a greater degree of righteousness with our consistent disposition. They come to respect our beliefs and faiths that allow us to continue this

disposition, whether these people are selfish and see it as only benefiting them or loving and see it benefiting others. Yet another paradox has been recognized. Obedience equals freedom. Self-serving equals chaos and destruction. Restoration is opposite to entropy. Freedom and thus obedience restores the one body from its continuously degrading state to a continuously therapeutic state. Jesus the Man was obedient to God, the Holy Jewish Law, His parents' holy requests, and even the ruling of Pontius Pilate to be put to death.

But then we may ask what is holy and what is not. Yes, in order to know what to obey, we must know what are God's Will and His Word. First, one cannot successfully obey anything without first wanting to by the Will of the Holy Spirit within him. To obey successfully is to obey with love to strengthen others to find greater love in Jesus Christ and develop a stronger bond with God. This is why, as Christians, when someone disobeys us, we cannot get emotionally upset as it being a personal attack and attack back. We must be patient and continue to focus on our goal which is to help others understand, realize, and receive the love of the Holy Spirit. Without this, all our attempts will be only to a temporary avail. It may come a time to provide tough love but a compassionate heart must prevail. And then, secondly, after receiving the Holy Spirit, we must be taught so to understand Jesus' Words. And thirdly, we must seek guidance and counsel from others in our decisions of what is holy and unholy when we are having difficulty discerning between the two. And lastly, but most importantly and before any decision is made whatsoever, we must pray and ask God to provide us His Will in the decision and in the process of acting it out. We must realize that our degree of faithfulness is equivalent to the sum of our degree of faith plus obedience. As we transform into Christ, our decisions will become as Christ but it has been my experience that confusing and tough decisions continue to be ahead of us.

And who is our boss? In every environment and situation we are in, there we will find a boss. Again, we do what is holy, but everywhere you are, you have a boss. God is your boss everywhere you are—an thus, Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit within you. When you are at home, your Godly spouse is your boss that you should serve and serve quickly in whatever he or she asks you to do holy. If young, your Godly parent is your boss. At work, it is your employer, but also your peers (not necessarily your trainees, but then again possibly on other matters away from the office). By yourself it is the governing rules (stop lights, stop signs, signs in general). Yes, everywhere you are, you have a boss to be obedient to and serve. You will one day become a boss, but you must first understand the concept of and practice obeying the bosses you have now. But even then, you will always have a boss everywhere you turn.

Do not be arrogant or defiant. Do not disgrace God by being defiant to whom He gives you. Accept who and what He provides you. Accept Him, Jesus, His Spirit, and all others He brings to you. Do not be like Adam and Eve and take what He brings you for granted—thinking that you could do and achieve greater on your own. It is only your own downfall that you will achieve.

But then, which is better—to serve or obey? Or are they the same? Obedience is, indeed, better than serving. When we choose to serve someone or provide them an offering or sacrifice, it can be in the way of our own choosing or at the time of our own choosing. We can still be the master providing alms to the needy and choosing the time to do it. But when we obey, there is no question over who is the master and who is the servant. When we obey, the act begins with

the wishes of the master and continues on till the ending wishes of the master. Obedience dictates true and truth in serving. Happy obedience is absolutely honest serving. It is wanting to absolutely serve and it shows itself this way. This is because one may obey and still have a rebellious heart while serving. Serving without obedience is a false serving done primarily with the servant as the focus of attention. It is a form of manipulation and not true representation.

“But Samuel replied: ‘Does the Lord delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices as much as in obeying the voice of the Lord? To obey is better than sacrifice. For rebellion is like the sin of divination, and arrogance like the evil of idolatry. Because you have rejected the word of the Lord, he has rejected you as king.’” (1Sam 15:22-23).

So then, should the rich obey the poor? Of course, because, at minimum, many who are poor are much wiser and holier than many who are rich. But, alas, it appears that the rich provide alms (offerings) to the poor. And to whom do they provide it to—the less poor or the desolate? Choosing is an act of favoritism or discrimination, as well. Oh, how terrible to disgrace God in such a way. (James 2:1-13). Give to whomever needs it and obey their holy wishes in your giving. Again, “when you give to the needy, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing (MT 6:3).” Just do it!

And to men. Men obey your wives as you should have unequivocally obeyed your mothers when you were a child. I will not speak of wives obeying your husbands because you wives have been instilled in this forever. There is nothing more here that I can add to what you have not already heard. But men, you arrogant creatures, obey your wives in everything that is not unholy. Do this for your own salvation. They are the radiance. There is a reason why the New Jerusalem is known as the bride (Rev 21:2). And do this so that your children, especially your male children, will obey their spouses later as well. Obey each other so that both of you shall become one—neither fully male nor fully female—but as one complete entity.

And if it is accepted or if chosen that the man be the leader of the family, whose decision will be final? You, men, will your decision be final just because you are men? So then you say that even if your decision is more corrupt than your wives, your decision is final. You arrogant creatures! No. The purer decision is the final decision.

62. Children and Surviving Violence in the Home

*People were bringing little children to Jesus to have him touch them,
but the disciples rebuked them. When Jesus saw this, he was indignant. He said to them,
‘Let the little children come to me, and do not hinder them,
for the kingdom of God belongs to such as these.
...And he took the children in his arms,
put his hands on them and blessed them.
(MK 10:13-16)*

I don't need to be your friend. You want to be arrogant and controlling and abusive, but you want me to be a part of your life? I will try to enlighten you on your arrogance, control, and

abuse because I don't need to be your friend. I'd rather our apparent relationship end if that is what it takes for God to enlighten you.

Children, honor your mother and father. And spouses honor your husband or wife. Honor them in the Lord. By this I mean, see what they ask of you in your spiritual eyes. Do they ask you to do things that are holy or unholy? You are not bound by unholiness because you have a greater Father. You must submit to your Heavenly Father. All children should realize that just because one is a parent that does not automatically make that parent an adult. In fact, I have seen many a child grow up and become an adult through Christ, as I, and one or both parents stay as a child. But for you who feel trapped, see the parent who asks you to do things in unholy ways as a signal to obey your Heavenly Father.

If your parent beats you or abuses you, I say run, but if you cannot run, it is better to take the beating than to sin against your own Spirit. But at the first chance, run into safe arms. And know that only love is supposed to enter your soul. Always know, no matter what, that the Lord is Your Loving Father. It is not Your Father who beats you, but your mortal father or mother. Your mortal father or mother chooses to disobey God and so he or she will be punished by the Lord for what he or she has done to His Child. Oh, how miserable a soul not to know thy Father. But, oh how fortunate am I to know the Love that my Father gives me, even in the lion's den. For He will give me love all my days through and I will love in spite of my troubles and unholy choices of the mortal world. I will choose to see this as a way to make me stronger so I may do even greater things for the Lord, but I will not seek out these abuses because I have the Lord's work to do all my living day. Yes, I will see this as a way to increase my faith, though my Father cries with me. I will devour this corruptness by showing my Father who loves me that in the end I will never fail Him as He has never failed me. And I will be so grateful to receive the Love He gives me. O' Lord, even in my sorrow, do I still see compassion in Your heart.

Now, know this: Children do not belong to the parents. They belong to the Father. Realize that the Father created your children just as He created you before they were placed in the womb. You, mother, are a vessel chosen by God to carry and deliver His Child to His Kingdom on Earth. You, father, have been chosen by God to produce such a child. You are to be an example of the Holy Son and love your family as He loves you through the Holy Spirit that dwells within you. You, as parents, are then to teach the child as Jesus has taught you. For the Lord can take away what He has given you and just as quickly.

I have heard many parents say they want a child to love, to hold, to be with. But should they have a child to grow in the world that is in its present condition. Understand, there is only one reason to have a child and to want a child and that is to ask the Lord if you may bring one of His Children into His Kingdom on Earth so to Glorify Him and manage His child for Him. And like everything, will He say yes, no, not right now, or I have a better approach? Whichever is the answer, is the right answer. There is no wrong answer, for He has chosen what is more important—for you to have a child or not to have a child at this time. But either reason is sufficient, for you have asked and He has answered. Love each other regardless of the outcome.

O' Lord, if it is Your Will, I so do want to bring one of Your Children here and deliver him or her for You, by You, and present him or her to You. For the child does not belong to me, he

belongs to You. May I glorify You by providing him or her all the love and teachings You have given to me. And then may I pave the way so he or she can glorify You. When he is older and can choose wisely, may he choose You. And if he chooses You as a bachelor or she chooses You as a maiden, so be it, I give him or her up to You. And if my child chooses to marry, so be it, I give him up to You. I will not get in the way between You and my child. I believe that if I have loved my daughter or son the way You love me, he or she will seek me out and honor me as I do You. But to cling on him or her dishonors You for as I have free and willing choice to honor You, so shall I give him or her free and willing choice to decide and so shall I have faith that he or she will ask Your Guidance always, even in my physical absence.

I have seen many parents who wish to fix their children. They say they know what the child is going through and the parent commands from afar. Many parents say they would not wish to travel that route again for all the money in the world. And so what I hear is your child isn't even worth all the money in the world. But would you do it for God who is infinitely more than all the money in the world? If you do, then what I hear is your child is of worth to God. That is what your child is feeling, I guarantee you. For as many people that have existed, has the Lord come back to the actual place we all are in our journey to Him. He only asks you to do that for the number of times you have children of your own—though later you may wish to do that for as many of God's children as you are able.

You see, we will all walk similar paths throughout our lives, but each of us will walk our own unique way through the path. One reason God has given children is so that their parents will become accountable and serve them and empower them in the child's own uniqueness. He has given each parent an opportunity to re-walk their own path in life to conquer their own fears of the past so that they may further live at peace. Children are then indeed our future. Remember, command from afar because you fear to go through the similar path and your child will sense little love.

Many parents, through pride, are afraid of how the child will see them during this time. And the child needs you to experience and understand his or her own uniqueness. But, you see it is all in the disposition. Children react immediately to their feelings with intensity thus becoming highly emotional and irrational, which can lead to destructive behavior. The adult tells himself or herself, after experiencing the feeling, that there must be a logical explanation why the other did what he or she did. The adult then proceeds to ask the other. This promotes respect, trust, and faith in the other. Then the adult proceeds with the feeling in a much more rational way. You as a parent should be more stable when confronted with fear and accept it. You can do this through the Holy Spirit. Then yes, the child will know you are scared allowing him to express the feeling as well. But he will eventually be calmed by your stability and admire you for it and understand the Holy Spirit more. If you say there is no way you could go back through those times, I say it is better off you do not have children. But seek the guidance of our Lord Jesus Christ so that one day you will find peace with your past.

Remember, your child who brings to you your birthday cake only to slip and drop it on the ground, cries not because of the cake but because he or she has spoiled the moment for you. Will you place yourself in his or her shoes and be compassionate and warm and say that there is nothing you can do that I won't still love you and that mistakes are moments to cherish too? Or

will you be the parent that is selfish and says look how much you've dirtied the carpet? In other words, will you allow your child to fail so that he or she will understand grace or will you instill in your child that he or she is a failure? Which legacy will you leave? Much of the latter is because of the hurt you received in your own lives, but I only wish for you as parents to become accountable for your own selves and accept God in your hearts so that you can start to understand love and forgive. This is so your children whom you love will help others love and forgive when you are gone. That is the greatest legacy any person can give. And you will be fulfilled when you realize that a new chain of love has begun in your household as the chain of love began in the household of Adam and Eve. It will be the beginning of a whole new frontier.

63. Responsibility

Be responsible to no mortal, but only to God. For if you are responsible to God, you become a responsible person even in the mortal world. Be responsible for no mortal except yourself, but only help others in time of their need and encourage them. But do not caretake—that is do not do for them—for he who wishes to be caretaker does not help himself by seeking the Lord and will surely take you down with him. You are responsible for you by being responsible to God. Let all else take care of itself in the Hands of God.

Our job is not to save anyone, that is God's job, but only obey the Law of God and have faith in His Abilities and be His tool to guide His Children home. And like a tool, we are able to do what we were created to do only when our Master wields us in His time. Jesus is responsible for saving all those who seek Him when He comes. But by obeying God, will you plant the seed in others by becoming an example of Jesus. I tell you, if you try to become an example of Jesus by your mortal will, your faith is lowered because you try to replace the role of God that is to work through you. But if you focus on the Lord only, He will naturally transform you into that example. Do not worry what others will think of you. And do not worry about others. They cannot save you and you cannot save them, only the Lord can do that.

64. Sufferings and Turmoil

In my life I have been placed in many different turmoils and have embraced many different sufferings. Why is this? For what purpose? Yes, in addition to those placed upon me, I have chosen to do many of them to myself, especially in my younger adult life. And to a great extent I have suffered. But what does suffering have to do with the Glory of God?

Dear brothers and sisters, without sounding boastful, I have suffered, as may you, in so many different ways so that I may relate to all kinds of peoples in their sufferings. The Lord has graced upon me the understanding and feeling of His Love after all I have suffered so that I may use each of my sufferings to understand each of your sufferings in an empathetic, unique, and compassionate way. I am so thankful to have gone through each of those sufferings just so that I may be able to relate to you further and thus serve the Lord.

Now, even in my youth, I even sought out suffering to sabotage myself because I did not feel worthwhile and felt ashamed—this I do no more because it is God I hurt when I do such things because He is not only outside of me but inside of me as well. And I now know the definition of

value. But I understand sufferings, which may include much embarrassment, that I come upon now in me to be opportunities to strengthen my faith and help others relate to their sufferings. And I understand that sometimes the Lord uses me to be in some suffering so I may not only strengthen my own faith in Him because He needs me in a higher faith in the future, but that my suffering (during and after) is planned to wake some of you up in your journey. Yes, of course with suffering comes some pain. But being attentive to Him during those times, I have gained more in the end. And so, now suffering does not seem so much like a heavy attack on my soul as it once did but more of an opportunity to release my Spirit upon others.

And some say that you must intentionally suffer to gain sainthood or qualify for His love. Yes, many others have suffered greater in their life than you, but it is because of the life they lead. No person should compare his or her life to another but be realistic about his or her own life. Enjoy the good moments because suffering will come. Suffering is a part of life which comes naturally. It does not need your help to force it along. It is the good times when we are absolutely sure that God is with us and we feel so close to Him that will get us through the suffering times. But if we suffered all the time, how much hope would we have if we did not know God and His mighty grace upon us in the good times? Yes, through those suffering times, we can come to even have a greater intimacy with God. But human we are and that means that forcing suffering on ourselves will undoubtedly disconnect us to our Lord who truly loves us. Who are you suffering for—God or others? God does not wish us to unduly suffer. There is too much happiness that needs to be spread among His children that are suffering naturally.

And then there is just the opposite. So many of us fear suffering that we will do anything to sustain a good feeling forever. We fear suffering so much that we chase fantasies in desperation. And desperation leads to misery. But because life changes all the time, the good feeling doesn't last. You just have to take life as it comes. We have a choice to place ourselves in as good a place and as good a frame of mind as we can during that time. And through experience, we can be in better places. But a great fear of ours is that the good feeling will never come again—or even come again soon. And then you can't even enjoy the good moment that you are in because you are in constant fear that the good moment is fleeting. You always see misery right around the corner and, thus, one of the greatest human frailties is among us once again—the mind is not where the body and the Spirit are. The body is in the good moment with the Spirit, but the mind is around the corner. Many of us are even more relieved when the good moment is gone because our suspense of the unknown is gone. But when one suffers with the Spirit and body as well, he comes to realize that the illusion of suffering is usually greater than the actual suffering itself. Then his fear of suffering can subside. (Proverbs 3:25,26, 28:19)

I have been given the gift to communicate to each of you in unique ways special to each of you so you may understand. If I could write all this again for each of you, I would, but I leave this up to God as you read the words. I will, however, attempt to communicate by way of the Holy Spirit to each of you what I write in the way you understand when I see you. I may communicate to you only in portions, speaking little and with conviction and purpose so I do not confuse you or myself. The littlest speech can have the greatest meaning and impact at a given time, and it is easy for me to lose my train of thought with so much unnecessary chatter.

Glory be to God. Love and serve one another, even in suffering, to feel fulfilled and valuable.

65. Embarrassment: The Golden Nugget of Spiritual Maturity

Embarrassment comes from discomfort within us from reacting to an external source when your God-given internal source, which we know as the Holy Spirit, communicates to us. It is where God's righteousness acting through someone or something on the outside meets up with God's righteousness within ourselves and does a "squeeze play" on our own mortal will. It is a double dose of divinity that makes such a profound statement upon you when you are in your mortal state. We know that these moments come only so often by our own choosing and usually more frequently while we are healing by way of the Holy Spirit. And when these moments come, the lasting effects stay with us for a lifetime.

Understand that embarrassment is a calling from the Lord as golden nuggets of opportunity for you to follow the calling of Jesus Christ and further mature in His Name. When we run away from embarrassment, we run from the Lord and our guilt pursues us to the point that we purposely avoid any future reference to such a moment. Our eyes then become so focused on expecting it to come around the corner at anytime that we begin to isolate ourselves even further from anything and anyone. It will be a blessing to you when it does come around again so you may have another opportunity to follow God. After receiving Christ, I have never met an embarrassing moment I didn't like. I have come to know embarrassment as a treasure chest filled with many insights of God Himself freely giving it to me. When I accept embarrassment as a teacher of the God Almighty and attend faithfully and submit to it as I submit to my Master in Heaven, I grow exponentially in Christ and am always in greater fulfillment and peace after graduating from it. Embarrassment is an absolute guarantee of divine wisdom and further knowing and feeling the salvation within you from God Almighty. Embrace embarrassment and tap into the Words of Almighty God.

66. Looking Forward to God

In speaking and listening to many brothers and sisters, I hear the name of the enemy spoken more than of Our Savior and Creator. Many a time, one Christian says it to another like, "Oh, I see what you are doing, the enemy loves to see that." And all that does is produce guilt in the other. It is sinful for you to produce guilt in another. Many of you look for despair and treachery around every corner because you have been hurt before by even your brother. But the hurt is of and from the mortal world. And so much fear lies in you and so your mortal eyes stare at destruction in each event God has made for you that day. Realize that when in the Love of Jesus and the ounce of faith you realize with your spiritual eyes at each moment, you are shielded by the armor of God for you are in His Spirit, which the enemy cannot touch. And you His Child are stronger than the enemy is.

How many of you fear death? What is death but everlasting life. For your Spirit cleanses the fear of the mortal soul, and so then mortal death is meaningless but Spiritual Life is meaningful. What more can the enemy do to you than bring you death and then he helps you, not hinders you.

It is a trick, brothers and sisters. For in the mortal mind, if you keep fearing, it will lead to your destruction and our fears are never as bad as you think they are. Remember dying is a great fear

of many, but it is the greatest reward (1Cor 15:26). So, how much more worse can the fearful event be than what you imagine it to be? Know this: When you keep thinking that something bad is going to happen or keep running from the bad in your past, bad happens to you but what you truly seek is the comfort when it is over. It is like a fix. And so you will fall. But when you continue to seek God and love, God and love will be what you find even in the midst of any bad and this is why any and all bad will get better and better until there continues to be much more good than bad in your life.

Many of you fall into the worldly minded and worldly state, concentrating on the bad and making it just as or more important than the good because you fear something. God is infinitely more powerful than satan. Once you understand His Great Power, satan will become a nuisance, as a fly is. When you get to the point that you are in the spiritual realm and are thinking of our Lord and seeing His Love in everything on earth, so then when you get into the mortal state, you will say, "Oh, there is that pesky fly. Shoo, fly, shoo." Trust in the Lord that He will protect you even in that state for we are His Children and our power of faith exceeds the destructiveness of the enemy. "Shoo, fly, shoo. Fear not I for my Father is here and He flicks the enemy away as if not even there." For when you are in the Kingdom even on earth, the enemy is no where to be found.

Our Lord is our entire world because He Alone fills our body and soul with all His True Love by the way of the Holy Spirit. So, only look forward and see God and grow in faith. Do not worry what has been done and do not worry what will come. What is to come is God! Concentrate only on God for He is your everlasting life and your goal and the love you receive will be all you'll want to be.

Peace be truly with you.

67. The Unbeliever Closest to You

In the Book of Mark, Jesus could only heal a few people in His hometown because so many had so little faith in Him. My experience is much of the same as many of you may have also experienced. Why is it so hard for those that you have been around all your life to have as much faith in you as the stranger down the road has? Sometimes the stranger has greater faith in you. Many of whom I have been around all my life are unbelievers or believers but without faith. And so they do not see the Holy Spirit that dwells inside.

You see, people who have known you for years in your hometown may not have the faith in you that you desire from them (though you should never place your path in life on the mortal) because they already have a past imprint of you in their wills. And how they have seen you may be how they believe you still are or will be. Do not be yoked with those who do not have faith in you, but exemplify Jesus so that they may come to know you. This is one reason I would rather remain anonymous, if it were not for my calling to help you find the love of our Lord. Those who have known me all my life may not be able to hear by reading this because they may continue to believe only of my past actions. Whether or not this be true, I'd rather not take the chance for their sake. But when I see them, I will love them. I imagine the Apostle Paul must

have struggled with this greatly because of his past. But like Paul said, many will reject solid spiritual food without first understanding the milk of the secular world.

68. The Fix is In Accomplishment and Love is In Fulfillment

During my childhood I liked two things very much: Fixing things (like most men) and deep communication (like most women). I wished to become a creative communicator, but so many said to me that I should become something worthier like an engineer because I was so good in mathematics. And I thought engineering was fixing things, but I was wrong. But what is it about fixing things that appeal to most men? Is it the slapping of stuff together to see if it runs or is it the time and nurturing of putting things together so we can admire our accomplishment which we take as fulfillment afterwards? Because society has definite roles placed on women and men on how they should or should not convey their feelings, men go into this secret “underground railroad” away from societal pressure and get their feelings out through fixing. Fixing is a man thing that has become a façade sheltering him from societal rejection of relationship topics such as feeling and nurturing. It is in fixing that a man can express those feelings. But nonetheless, I know now that it is through engineering that the Lord has blessed me in a trade and provides me a position to do His work for others. I prayed to the Lord to place me where He wills me to be. I thought the ministry at the time. But He placed me in an engineering and managerial position. So, today I am to do His work ministering the Word and helping others through my position as an engineer and manager. I would still like to become a full-time minister later. But, as I have spoken in another passage about working in your trade during this transition, this is the work I do now for Him. How about tomorrow? Let tomorrow take care of itself.

The problem is that because very little rejection comes from fixing as a way to express their feelings, men (and now many women) go from fixing things to fixing people. Then when we get rejected from people when we try to fix them, we get upset because we are confused and don't see any other outlet of expressing our feelings. But people are not things. Only God has the right and power to fix anyone.

We should not get accomplishment mixed up with fulfillment. Accomplishment is the feeling we get after we work on something ourselves. Fulfillment is the feeling we get when we know He is working on something through us. Accomplishment is usually a high intensity rush, but leaves a temporary satisfaction or relief inside. Fulfillment is a calmness with a sense of feeling really good inside that has great long term effects. Accomplishments are the ends to the means. Each accomplishment is a separate thing to itself with a lot of traveling through lonely gaps in between on our own. Fulfillment is the means that attracts many ends. We forget many of our accomplishments. Fulfillment stays with us for eternity. Accomplishments are all left in the past. Fulfillment is always with you to the last breath. When we feel as if we have accomplished something, we give little credit to God. When we are fulfilled, we have given all credit to God. Accomplishment comes with little surprise. Fulfillment comes with surprise because we could not see how something happened better than we could have imagined. So then, accomplishments come in our time, but fulfillment comes in His Time.

This is why it is much more rewarding for us to ask God to work on us from the Holy Spirit within us so to help ourselves, just like we should go to the place where others are inside them to help them help themselves. This is why fixing goes along with accomplishing, but fulfillment goes along with love. Find fulfillment in finding love by way of the Holy Spirit within you so you will be able to help others. When we allow God to heal us, then we get to the point of helping to heal others as well as ourselves. Then we want to change our environments into nurturing and loving ones. And so, I enjoy helping others who are in despair or who do not understand what true love is and help themselves change their environments.

69. Patience

*One who gains knowledge seeks belief; From belief, faith;
faith, hope; hope, perseverance; perseverance, wisdom; wisdom, courage;
courage, courage, true love; true love, allegiance; allegiance, self awareness;
self awareness, innocence; innocence, freedom; freedom, peace; peace, True Self (heaven on
earth).*

And then there is patience. For example, how do you know when the Spirit guides you in a spiritual career on earth? For me, it is when whatever you wish to do and the outcome you attain means everything to you that you will not require the approval of those that can or cannot see it. In other words, if you have done something and someone says to you that they do not like it and puts you down for it and you then can say without a flinch, "I don't care whether you like it or not. I love it and I did it for God. And I will always remember it as something special I did with the Lord and through my Holy Spirit, whether you like it or not." Then that is what you should do. Of course, we all like to receive compliments, too. See, I love to help others find love within them through many creative ways and if you do not like what I do, then that is fine for I respect you but I love what I do and I know that the Lord loves what I do, especially since He is the one who provided me the special gifts so He may use me to reach you. So, I do not need your approval, just as the Apostle Paul did not need mortal approval to be an apostle. If I tell you not to do what I see you have been called with great passion to do by Him, then I am defying the same God that takes my hand with my own passion. Who am I to judge? I am only His guide to help guide you on the righteous path.

When God calls upon us, He rarely wishes for us to begin the good fight and end the good fight close thereafter. As the Great Teacher, He provides lessons and then tests and also milestones in our journey. But the duration of these lessons and the appropriate times for these test and milestones are all determined by Him. So, then it is our responsibility to be sensitive to His Teachings and be patient through His Lessons so we can be the most ready for His Tests and then be greatly fulfilled in love at the time He provides us our milestones. It would be incredible if we could be greatly fulfilled during His Lessons and at the time of His Tests for us as well. But most have a difficult time being fulfilled in these times. But it is the patience that will reap the greatest fulfillment. When the milestones come, we can look back and be fulfilled in that we obeyed the Lord through the lessons and passed the test. But with each milestone comes a crucial point in time to decide to follow Him or be filled with self-accomplishment and follow ourselves. We must remember, though, that if we faltered during the lesson, our repentance and

His Grace have made us perfect along the way as well. Repentance during the greater lesson is a smaller lesson in itself.

Therefore, patience is a win-win situation. Others may say that you wait in vain. That God does not help those that won't help themselves. This is not from the love of the Lord. This reasoning dictates qualifying for the Lord. It is that God helps those that focus on Him and have patience through faith that He is working out His Plan for us as we humble ourselves and await His Arrival in revealing to us on earth in His Time what that plan is. To fight Him because we are impatient is a fearful and feeble attempt in getting what we want. For instance, if we lose our job. Should we go out and get just any job to feed our families? How many hours will you work just so you have any old job? I have talked earlier about humbling ourselves by working in our previous trade while doing His ministry so we may eat. This is good. But during this time, it is imperative that we work hard at our personal relationship with Him because He is taking care of us. And we should not worry because He has guaranteed that He will provide for us (MT 6:25-34).

Many also say that we must initiate everything and then God will come on board because God only helps those who help themselves. And to which direction is true and where do I then find my moral compass? Except in seeking Him (and even to that we may have been led), I have found quite the contrary to be true for a content life—one filled with fulfillment and quality. Sometimes when I look back I think it was my fear of dying without knowing my true self and finding contentment, which would unveil my wanting to do good instead of having to do good, that motivated me to seek knowledge (Pr 1:7). I have found that we must be patient to hear from God and then climb on board Him. Thy Will be done by us, not our will be done by Thy. We justify our actions through our natural impatience. We say, “it must be time by now,” and yet it is nearly never the time. Our faith must surpass our impatience.

70. Honesty, Probity, Honor and Integrity

*“Before his downfall a man’s heart is proud,
but humility comes before honor.” (Pr 18:12)*

There is only one true way to develop a nurturing relationship with Jesus Christ. We must be accountable for all we do and all we have done. This means that we must be incredibly honest with ourselves and with others in our intentions, why we act the way we do in fear or otherwise, and why we think the way we do. If I am dishonest with others, I am dishonest with myself. And if I am dishonest with myself, I am dishonest with others. It is quite difficult to try to be dishonest with God because He knows every reason you do everything. He knows you inside and out. He knows you from your innermost secrets and desires to the 1000th hair on your head. But many of us try to pull “the fast one” over on God and then we are angry when we have to learn our lesson.

I would say that dishonesty is the number one culprit that prevents us from living in fulfillment. And we live in fulfillment by our direct loving relationship with our Father. Most of us realize that we are dishonest because we fear repercussions from other people. We fear rejection for

who we are because we may not believe ourselves to be worthwhile and we fear the “beating” for admitting our sins.

Yes, now we see that by placing people over God, we live in constant fear. It is evil and the wicked who reject you for who you are. It is evil and the wicked who beat you for admitting your sins. And it is the fearful who ask you to suppress your sins. God knows who you are because He is the one who created you. He did not create the fearful child you see before you. He created the brave and loving child that is in you waiting to come out. Only evil would not want God to come out. Evil fears God and so evil fears the true you.

So then, it is honesty that destroys evil. Dishonest people will separate themselves from honest, continually forthright people. Do you want to see immediate discernment between the righteous and the wicked, lost, and evil in this world at the precise moment in our own journeys on the righteous path? Then be continuously honest with a passion for not being able to be corrupted in our pursuit and it will be as the parting of the Red Sea for one such as Moses (Exodus 14). The act of being honest leads to honor, integrity, and affirmed probity. It is honesty that allows God’s Love to speak to you through the Holy Spirit. Webster’s states that:

- Honesty implies a refusal to lie, steal, or deceive in ANY way.
- Honor suggests an active regard for the standards of one’s profession, calling, or position. But more so in line with honor is reverence and deference.
 - Reverence implies profound respect mingled with love, devotion, or awe.
 - Deference implies a yielding or submitting to another’s judgment or preference out of respect or reverence.
- Integrity implies trustworthiness and incorruptibility to a degree that one is incapable of being false to a trust, responsibility, or pledge. But more so in line with integrity is chastity.
 - Chastity implies purity in conduct and intention with restraint and simplicity in design and expression. True chastity can only be done on a consistent basis by giving oneself up to the compelling nature of the Holy Spirit. Performing chastity through one’s own self control is usually an avoidance mechanism corrupted by fear rather than delivered by selfless love.
- Probity implies tried and proven honesty or integrity, adhering to the highest principles and ideals.

We do this because we love God, not because we wish others to like us. In fact, it has been my experience that we will have to corrupt our honesty when we do things so others will like us. It is very easy to convince and give ourselves permission to do something because the majority of people do it. The quantity of people doing something should never justify us doing it, and thus, deter us from the quality of our honesty and integrity. There are many who will ask you to do what they do, and then in a heartbeat, condemn you for doing it as a self-righteous attempt for them to look good in their own and others eyes.

IT IS FORTHRIGHT AND CONTINUAL HONESTY THAT PROMOTES LOVE, MAINTAINS OBEDIENCE, AND REJECTS WORRY. And with love comes fulfillment—the type of fulfillment that only Jesus Christ can provide.

Honesty should also be a matter-of-fact science. One should always see the statements or questions another makes as fact with no underlying theme or manipulations. Receive a statement from another just as that statement is said without a “what do you mean by that?” or “I wonder what he or she meant by that?”. And answer a question matter-of-factly trusting that the direct answer to that question is all the one who asks needs to know. If a statement or question is a tactic or manipulative move by the other, then the one who gives or asks it has the problem, not you. And it is not your responsibility to try to figure it out. One forces another to come to the true root of a manipulative question or statement when the receiver continues to reply to a question and statement matter-of-factly.

And now I will help you come to an honest account of yourself and begin to peel away any pretense about yourself in order to get to the root of the solution. This is done by asking yourself over and over again “why” to any feeling or action you have or that another person has done that you feel inappropriate toward you. But the rule is to always ask “why” by focusing on yourself and not the other person. Ask, “Why do I feel (fill in the feeling here) when (fill in the person’s name here) (fill in the action here)?” For instance, Janet asks herself:

- Q. Why do I feel sad when John yells at me?
A. Because it hurts when someone doesn’t like me.
Q. Why does it hurt when someone doesn’t like me?
A. Because I’m a nice and giving person.
Q. Why am I a nice and giving person?
A. Because God made me this way.
Q. Why did God make me this way?
A. Because He loves me.
Q. Why does He love me?
A. Because I’m His child.

So, we see that we continue to come down to the root of the solution. When we focus on our own feelings and well-being, the basic root is that God loves us and we are His children. But we also come to find out something wonderful about ourselves that we may have not realized before. “I am a nice and giving person and therefore, I don’t deserve to be yelled at. And besides, when you yell at me, you are yelling at a child of God.”

In this way, we see a vital contradiction—first that “I’m a nice and giving person” and secondly that “John yells at me”. So we can deduce one of two things. First that “maybe I’m not a nice and giving person and that’s why John yells at me”. Or second, that “I’m a nice and giving person and John shouldn’t be yelling at me”. And this is where so many of us become confused. But we only get confused when we place people on a pedestal instead of God. We must decide to either follow the actions of a human who is imperfect or God who is perfect love. “And the Truth shall set you free.”

Janet is right that she is a nice and giving person and doesn't deserve to be yelled at. She has integrity. But when it really comes down to it, no person period deserves to be yelled at by another person. Here we see that God is Janet's focus and He is the only one on her pedestal. Therefore, Janet responds to John by saying, "I feel (fill in feeling) when you (fill in action)." In other words, Janet responded to John by saying, "I feel sad when you yell at me. It hurts me. I'm a nice and giving person. I don't deserve to be yelled at." Janet knows that if John continues to yell at her, Janet's true Father will find it most unacceptable for her to hang-out with John anymore. If John will not honor Janet by being receptive to being taught or shown the proper and loving way to communicate with people and to execute probity, John most likely does not yet understand love and respect.

Now let's reenact this by focusing on the other or blaming the other person. "Why does (Fill in other person's name here) (fill in action here) even when (he or she) knows it makes me so (fill in feeling here)?" For instance,

Q. Why does John yell at me even when he knows it makes me so angry?

A. Because he doesn't like it when I don't pick up the clothes.

Q. Why don't I pick up the clothes?

A. Because I don't have the time?

Q. Why don't I have the time?

A. Because I have too much to do.

Q. Why do I have too much to do?

A. Because I have trouble prioritizing.

Q. Why do I have trouble prioritizing?

A. Because I'm stupid.

Q. Why am I stupid?

A. Because that's the way God made me.

Q. Why did God make me this way?

A. Because He doesn't love me.

Q. Why doesn't He love me?

A. Because I'm not worth His love.

Now we see that whenever we focus on or try to deduce reasons for other's actions upon us, we wind up blaming ourselves. In fact, we come to derive a delusional basis that God doesn't love us and we are not worth much if any. But we also come to a delusional self-awareness that we may have come to before and that is that "I am stupid and therefore, deserve to be yelled at." In fact, we concluded our Q&A with a negative feeling about ourselves and John and his abusive action is clearly out of the picture after the first or second Q&A.

In this sequence, there doesn't appear to be much of a contradiction to many of us. "Stupid people get yelled at" is a fact to many of us, but it is definitely a myth. Many of us take it as fact because we either follow an imperfect person and place him or her on a pedestal or we follow a God that is of impure love—which is not the True God but a false god. Either way, we have yet to place the one and only True God on the pedestal instead of others.

Something else is revealing as well. In the first Q&A, picking up the clothes never comes up, but picking up the clothes comes up in the second. Why is this? This is because the true root has nothing to do with picking up the clothes. It has to do with how Janet feels about herself and John's action (for whatever reason he does the thing he does which is an issue for a counselor and not Janet). When we feel insecure about ourselves, we usually place people on a pedestal and, thus, the root in our own minds has to do with how we feel about ourselves and *our* actions—like picking up the clothes—compared to others and their actions. As Janet changes her insecurities to securities, John's actions will change as well—maybe for the better and maybe for the worse. But nonetheless, we know one thing for certain—John's actions must change for the better on a *long-term* consistent basis or Janet must and will leave him.

Therefore, by taking an honest account of our own feelings to any and all actions from ourselves or others, we come to some startling and wonderful conclusions about our true identities. But the first question and answer we must ask ourselves and answer before we begin any Q&A session must always be, "Who do I follow?". This will lead to true honesty, honor, integrity, and probity.

71. Anguish

In many situations, I have found myself angered over events not happening in my time and people, even spiritual leaders, avoiding me when I tell them of what the Glory of God is doing in my life. When events do not happen in my time, I am quick to realize that I have fallen in my time and out of His. Then my faith returns as I pray to Him that His Will be done. (MT 26:38-42, LK 22:39-46) But when I provide testimony to what God is teaching me and I seek spiritual guidance by even spiritual leaders and they turn their heads, I am very anguished. Is it God who turns their heads and hardens their hearts or is it that they wish to stay in their comfortable boxes? Spiritual leaders have even preached to "rock the boat" yet many of the leaders even under them do not practice this themselves. Who can say they are spiritual leaders, yet even they do not obey their authorities? In these passages, I speak of us as links in God's glorious chain. But I never imagined that spiritual leaders could be among the weakest links.

Who are among the weaker spiritual leaders? I say those with pride, lack of obedience to authority, and little faith to stretch themselves even in discomfort. Discomfort becomes true comfort when it is further along the righteous path. And so it is right to love everyone and not judge anyone. Whoever wishes to stay in comfort, let them be though they do not realize that whatever they loose on earth will be loosed in Heaven and whatever they bind on earth will be bound in Heaven (MT 16:19). Fine then. Who am I to be angered at them? It does me no good toward myself to do so because I leave His Time when I do. But am I to stay? Am I to tell them of my observations? Am I just to go? As in MT 5:24, I must tell them of my observations. And if they still do not take me seriously, then I am to go (Ps 118:8-9) but not in anger but in a great amount of hope for them that they are following God as God is willing them to do so. But my spiritual journey must continue on closer to being one with our Lord.

And when I speak in anguish over something and vent to my brethren, even though they have nothing to do with the event, I am seeking only listening. But we must be careful. If we vent to those who are unbelievers or of little faith, they may take it as a personal attack on them or be

apathetic or be caretaking. Now, I am not responsible for their feelings, but they are not ready to listen to my words without affecting them personally. The one who is apathetic, does not listen. The one who takes it personally does not yet feel themselves worthwhile in God. The one who caretakes and fixes, does it so they can sleep at night and are not very concerned about whether you can. All these are still drinking milk and not eating of the solid spiritual food. But why do I wish to disservice them? It is not right to continue pounding my anguish out on sounding boards who hurt when I sound out upon them. So, then if we are to vent, we must vent to God and our spiritually caring brethren who have much faith. Even Jesus vented to the Lord (MT 27:46). And did the Lord strike Him down? Absolutely not! The Lord understood His anguish and listened and loved Him (MT 27:50-51) and knowing this, Jesus still yelled out, “Father, into your hands I commit my spirit (LK 23:46).” So, by this we see that God gave His Love and Listening to empower His Son to fulfill the purpose Jesus knew He had to fulfill, even after venting in anguish. And so, Jesus chose to yell to God what is said in Luke 23:46 because Jesus felt His Father empowering Jesus to make that decision of Jesus’ own free will (MT 26:53-54).

72. Baptism

This is the account of baptism to the knowledge passed on to me. Jesus honors the Lord above and the Lord within by going to John the Baptist to receive the Holy Spirit. He goes to John the Baptist through the guiding of the Lord in the presence of others. Jesus humbles Himself by being baptized by a man thus showing to everyone around that He at this time is just a man—that is, a man not to be followed. For He shows everyone around that they, like He, must follow the Holy Spirit, the Will of God that is everywhere and is to be within others. This is by the same way He washed the feet of His apostles at the last supper. The Holy Spirit then comes down to Jesus by way of the Lord. And then John the Baptist who baptized our Savior concedes to Jesus and thus now shows all that it is not John the Baptist you follow either, but only the Will of God and the Son of God. For John the Baptist paved the way for the coming of Christ. Jesus has humbled Himself in front of the Lord to serve the one from the earth who has the Will of God within him, who is John the Baptist. To serve others is to see the Holy Spirit and the Will of God within them. But even the Christian of great faith must concede and serve to the one with continuous pure faith because mortals will always at times find pure faith but it will not sustain in that form because of our own wills. John the Baptist saw pure faith in Jesus and knew Jesus was the Son of God by the calling through the Will of God to him.

This is what He taught—that the least shall be first. Some of us may have heard the expression and believe and feel true by our own experience that nice guys finish last. Well, I’ll tell you that a great number of times this is true when it comes to the mortal world. But I will profess over and over again that nice guys may finish last but they will enter first into the Kingdom of Heaven. If I know I am to make it into the Kingdom in Heaven, I will never mind finishing last in the greed and wickedness of this world. Did not Jesus serve all of us? Jesus served us by serving us up to the Lord. Jesus taught us the Will of God and thus loved us so much as to serve us up to Him because our Savior loved and loves us that much. And did not John the Baptist serve Jesus, and us as well? When you are baptized, humble yourselves not only to the Lord and our Savior, but also to the one who baptizes you for you both serve each other.

In baptism, you are sealed in the Holy Spirit. You have it, you are saved. Rest then because you can only go forward (1Peter 1:4,5). And there is no such thing as being a little saved. Many spiritual people forget this matter. When we forget this, we think that we can lose God. No, because it is the true spiritual person who realizes that God is not ours to fear losing but we are God's who never fears that He will ever lose us. We do not have to worry about losing God because God will never worry that He doesn't always have us.

So then, in baptism we are sealed whether we realize it during infancy or not. In communion, we choose to seek the Holy Spirit so that we may form an intimate relationship with it. In confirmation, we then choose to listen and then act in faith. Confirmation has nothing to do with religion. Confirmed to listen and then act in your own faith of the Holy Spirit is a personal confirmation between Him and you.

73. The Link in a Chain

Brothers and sisters, I have spoken of the flow of pure love from our Lord by way of Jesus Christ to us who are fulfilled and then to others. There is a system to all this that you may easily see. The Lord works in many ways. One way is that when one is in need, seldom does He send only one to assist. The one who sees with spiritual eyes will see many miracles in a short amount of time to help the one in need. And so He calls many to assist as if a crowd of people close in on a single purpose or goal.

This I also have seen: The beginning of a journey by His Pure Love and the series of events required to achieve His goal ending in His Pure Love. He is indeed the Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. Of all the journeys I have seen, short and long, I have noticed a system. Each journey is like a chain. Each journey is given a select amount of people chosen by Him. And each selected person is as a link in the chain. You have heard many in the mortal world speak of a chain of events or a chain reaction. The Lord begins wondrous chains, but how we know that what began as something wonderful can start to be corrupted and may result in destruction. And yet we have also seen many chains remain loving and end in great joy. Why is this?

First, you must realize that you are always a link in a chain. You have been selected by the Lord many times over to be a link in one of His glorious chains. Sometimes the chain will be short and sometimes long. And if you see love, you will see the beginning of Pure Love in the chain you are in. One who does not realize their place in the chain, prevents or resists the flow of pure love and to what is the end goal of our Lord to be achieved. And your place is just as important as any one else's place. You are special. Without you, the Lord would not be able to achieve His goal as originally intended, though He knows the hearts and desires and reasoning of all of us. So, therefore, the results in the general sense of the word will still come about in His Way and in His Time. And some of you may ask, "Why me, O' Lord?" And the answer is, "Why not you? Are you not My Child?"

74. History Repeating Itself

Now, I speak of history repeating itself in direct correlation to the chain I have just spoken of. This is how it works. All things begin with love—All things. You say, “But so much bad has happened.” I tell you, if you go far enough back in the chain you will find out that it all started with Love. Now, we know the chain of creation of us all and the earth we live in was created by our Creator in love. We are all a link in that chain right now. But let me speak of the beginning of other chains that began by us in love.

When someone sees with their spiritual eyes in great amounts, they can begin the chain with the creation of great powerful things from the spiritual world. But remember, that the greater thing through love that is created by what is within the spiritual world, the greater it can be used for evil by someone else. Let me provide you with some examples.

From the mineral level, Nobel introduced dynamite to us because he loved people so much he thought it could be used for great good. And mass destruction came about. From the atomic level, Einstein introduced the splitting of the atom because he loved people so much and was in touch with great spiritual insight and faith that he thought it could be used for even greater good. And greater mass destruction was produced by the atomic bomb. These are just a couple of examples.

Now in present day, man’s great spiritual insight has led him to seek genetic technology and even human cloning. I tell you, if you think you have seen mass destruction, you have only caught a glimpse of it. You say that you will be able to heal so many physical afflictions and cure so many ailments. You may be able to do this, but what you do not see is what many of those like who I have mentioned before did not see. I will tell you what I see. I see armies of cloned humans secretly produced like those who forced women to have children to make a pure race. And these cloned humans you will not be able to stop unless you kill them. Because we know that it is very difficult to kill one who does not fear death before they kill many others. And we know it is even harder to kill those who do not fear God’s wrath before they kill a great many others. But the hardest one to kill are those that believe that to love is to kill. They believe that by killing you, they serve you and the creator out of love and compassion. At minimum, they will keep on killing because, through genetic mapping, they will never get sick. This will be the enemy you will come upon in millions in the eventual future. Your satellites will not be able to see the underground birthing places of these human clones. They will be produced all over. There will be great fear among so many. People will begin to disappear without you knowing how or why. The death makers will come from under the ground. And as you destroy, more will become born. I tell you, you have not seen mass destruction yet.

This is how history repeats itself. Remember, everyone is a link in a chain. But it is the one link who does not realize this during their different journeys that will hinder the process of true love along the chain. And then starts the downward spiral of the chain reaction toward mass destruction because the original chain of love has been broken and another desolate chain may have begun with the one who does not realize, unless one is fortunate to have one who loves within that new chain to begin another chain of love. The greatest hurt is when the one who does realize delivers what he has received to one who has surrendered to evil. The most beautiful chain reaction is when each link pulls together in synergetic fashion to do the Lord’s work. This can only be done when each link realizes his or her own place in the chain. And so, I tell you, be

in God's Time. Allow Him to guide you and receive His Pure Love so that when the time comes for your link to shine, very little resistance will be applied to His Love along the chain.

So, in the present and future, there is great love that will begin, great love that you will find in the end, great love in your journey, but I fear, great evil you have not seen yet.

And so human invention that is of the spiritual world, I say stop. Rely on your faith in the Lord to provide you all you need. Love is the answer. Receive the Will of God and stop trying to figure out the mind of God. Rely on your Holy Spirit. It is the responsibility of the Holy Spirit alone to seek the mind of God because it craves to do just that as you crave the love from it. And if through this way, you understand some of the mind of our Lord, it is His Will. But if you try to understand it yourself, you will lead yourself to destruction.

75. The Lord is Permanent

Many people rely on worldly things to escape their hurts and fears, temporary things—fantasies or drugs—but the Lord is everlasting. It is right to go through the hurts and fears, but to do it alone will lead to destruction. The Lord will reunite you with Himself as you unleash each fear and hurt to retain you to your pure state to which is your Holy Spirit and that of His Kingdom. For He is the Alpha and the Omega from whence you came from Him and, by Him creating you, shall you return to Him in everlasting life. It is right to focus on Him rather than mortal logic, mortal feelings, will, and body. Thus, focus on the Lord for He is permanent throughout your life. He will help you lose your mortal mind and He will protect you when you face your pain and hurt. Even if you believe and have little faith, it is all you need to stay away from the destructive path. The path to God is a righteous one and righteousness and love shall grow in you.

And this I know by way of the Holy Spirit: Our Savior Jesus Christ came to us by way of our Lord and allowed John the Baptist to baptize Him out of humility for the One God because, by this example, it is through serving you that we serve Him and it is not the man you must follow but the Will of God. Thus, upon asking, the Holy Spirit will be placed upon you because of our Savior's resurrection (after dying on the cross for us and thus for the cleansing of our sins). By His example, when we repent and thus present death to our sins, we may still live again in the Kingdom. This is why each of us must carry along with us our own cross and offer it up to the Lord just as Jesus died as a man for our sins on His. Each day, think of the love you gave by receiving it from Him, and say, "I love you, dear Lord." And also think of sins not repented and repent, and if you need to, apologize also to the one you sinned against in the mortal world.

I pray that I may never come between any person and the Will of my Lord. As shall I pray you never do either. Never place yourself above but only below for then you will be always humbled before God and your head will never get too big.

And never worry, even in tough times, because not only does worry take the place of your work for the Lord, but most importantly, He promises you that your basic needs will always be met. So, do not worry, for faith in Him by way of the Holy Spirit given to us through the resurrection of our Savior Jesus Christ is all you require.

76. Our Jewish Brethren and Other Faiths

Oh, yeah Jewish brothers and sisters. You are the love of my heart. But many of you choose so hard a way to gain the Kingdom. For if you choose not to accept the Son of God, you replace the faith of the Holy Spirit with the excessive rituals to gain His favor, but also to continuously remind you of Him. This is also so in other faiths. The excessive rituals are even evident in Christian denominations. Much focus is on the mortal rituals and the bylines on the Law than the transformation and discipleship through faith. Oh, how hard it is to try to stay in the spiritual state from the conditions of worldly rituals. But it is good that you do this for if you can bear it all, then you may realize the Lord in your life most often. But, oh how difficult. For the Old Testament was a way of the unbeliever to follow and believe in Him, and to teach the believer faithful of Him how to do. And today, it is through the Holy Spirit through the resurrection of our Savior that you should follow the Lord. But you have made it so difficult for yourselves that many of you fall upon mortal ways and your country and people are in disarray.

But many of you belong to the Lord and dwell in Him for He has chosen a number of you. But whom shall He choose compared to the ones who believe in the Holy Spirit and the Son of God and thus will find Him through righteousness. Ask in faith that He is there and you will receive Him. When the Spirit dwells within you, you may then allow it to consume you and fulfill you in Holy Transformation, and many more shall be able to come to Him. For the New Testament teaches the believer the love of the Holy Spirit and the way to the Kingdom by following the Shepherd and, as in the Old Testament, also teaches the unbeliever what is required to receive the Lord. And you shall become one with Jesus and of the Body of our Lord. Thus, the New Testament gave to us the name of the messiah promised in the Old Testament (Acts 9:1-6).

But who am I to speak? Am I to know the Jewish Law to what is Holy of that pronounced by the Father, Son, and the Holy Spirit and of that learned by Paul? Is it possibly best that I am taught that which is the Jewish Holy Law pronounced by Jesus? Or is it that the Holy Spirit automatically provides me obedience to Jewish Holy Law pronounced by Jesus as the Spirit provides me obedience to Him?

For many miracles exist by spiritual sight through the Holy Spirit and less through the sight of those who have yet to receive it. And many seek Him in the heart of places. For the Lord placed His Son on earth to show us and take us by the hand to the Lord because we as mortals had little faith in what we could not see and so like many of us, we had to follow a man. But know this, it is the Spirit we followed and is the same Spirit that we still follow to this day of He who dwells inside us. We cannot run from Him who believes in Him and when you force the soul to fight the Spirit, you become ashamed and your destructive feelings force your body to be destructive as well. Is this discernment the same with you?

But you who do not believe can deny the Lord in greater amount because out of sight is out of mind. And so, it is harder for you. God Bless you my brothers and sisters in the Lord. I pray that you see the Lord in all your moments. I cry for you to do so for He loves you. Come back to Him, oh Israel, and dwell in His Kingdom once again. Many a Christian would say you will not succeed to the Kingdom, but I am not the Lord and He loves you so to reward you His

Kingdom if it is His Will. The Old Testament is external seeking and internal transformation by Him to what the New Testament is external and internal seeking with great fulfillment and great transformation as well, but with no way of falling backwards because the Lord is then around you, behind you, and within you. And so your faith will not drain from your soul.

So close to redemption are many of you as are many people in all nations and all faiths. It is like seeing the forest but without seeing the trees and being blocked from understanding the Love of the Lord because you cannot see the trees that grow from within by receiving His Son.

And in other faiths. Some say you focus within to something inside. But does it consistently promote Godly love, morality, *and* true usefulness. But what helps you get there and then what makes you keep getting there for a temporary period, as in a fix as your drug? But then you always come back to the world and always back to the same hurt. And others say it is to be part of the universe and thus you feel as one, but then you feel as one to what you see mortally and you may encounter spiritually, but what work shall you do then and after your mortal death because you have responsibilities even after. How can you be responsible there if you are not responsible for yourself here first? (Eph 5:15-21) And then even other faiths cast their spirituality by following only mortals and that is by far the worst destructive thing. For you do have to focus outside your mind and body to gain spirituality but it is in the purpose not for us but for others even after our mortal death that becomes evident. Thus, seek beyond your short mortal life to the Kingdom and do the work of the Lord for it is that you shall crave and He will provide everlasting fulfillment and joy, though the road is not easy in getting there.

Enjoy this life and see the daily miracles that God provides and the things He has placed here for you to enjoy, but know those things are temporary for their is work to be done in the Kingdom on Earth and when we are received by our Lord in Heaven.

The difference between other faiths and ours is this: That Jesus was resurrected by the Will of God and the Holy Spirit is given to us within us as in the Body of our Lord as a testimony to all believers and unbelievers by the exemplification of our Savior. This is truth be told. And it is the miracles shown by Him to us even today. All this we have seen yesterday and today and we are fulfilled in the Spirit of our Lord and Savior each day. I pray you choose the righteous path through our Savior Jesus Christ. Can I say you will go to heaven or not? Of course I cannot. Believe in Jesus Christ while you live because you will ultimately be judged by Him when He comes. You cannot enter heaven without going through the judgment of Christ (JN 14:6). If you do not believe in Him, will you still go to heaven? Again, I cannot say because I am not God. But because I love myself and respect God so much, I choose not to fool around with my own eternal life.

You see, the Christian has a supernatural entity and force within him, known as the Holy Spirit, that consistently compels him to morally do the right thing. It is not fear, it is not shame. It is of pure love promoting Godly morality and true usefulness. Law is not a supernatural force. Even supernatural law is not a force or entity. And that is all the difference in the world.

77. The Road to Heaven

Oh, Dear Lord, it is if your angels set the brick before me one at a time as I proceed to you. I see the miracles that your road, which is being laid before me, takes me through and sets up my life. All comes together from my calling to that which You have called me to do for You, to serve You, and to serve my brethren on this earth. It begins to become clearer, ever so clearer to the point that I begin to see farther down the road. A system emerges as a result of my many prayers that your will be done from your unwavering faithfulness. I see it coming together as one who places random things into a perfect order of events made to pave the way. And your glorious opportunity for me presents itself, and it is up to me to seize the moment and this magnificent gift. But I am to be cautious that I step only after the brick has been laid because Your Pace for me is Your Will and my will belongs to You. My impatience will only turn against me in the long run. Oh, does my soul get excited in our journeys!

And it is this I know: Your attention is spread among all, but the portion allotted me is more than enough that I need. You can still provide my needs and all other's in over abundance and still yet in all those who come after me because You are of infinitely greater measure than I can ever perceive. The amount you give me is if I am given your full and only attention, but my faith knows better, but is all I need of Your Will to gain Your Kingdom. And I believe that as my faith still yet increases will you show me even more, for this I pray in abundance by way of Your Son. I am blessed to receive such gifts even at my age, but as we know, age is a relevant thing compared to the age you die.

Blessed is the Lord who has given me life before I die and death before I began living!

78. Choosing God Over People

And then it was today I became saddened, but then hopeful, and then grateful. For I love the Lord so, I said unto Him, "Oh, Lord, I wish to be continuously with you but others I love in my life too. And so I am torn." And He then replied, "Dear child, you see Me within you and around you and for this I am so happy—will you not see Me in them when you are with those I've given you to love? Speak to Me, even in them, and I shall listen."

79. Forgiveness and the Depth of True Love

Oh, Lord, I have loved those I have had great faith in and they have crushed me. And so I am scared to love.

"Oh, My Child, many like you do not show love because of such a thing. But will you see Me even in those who have crushed you. For I am in there trying to heal, but they will not accept My help. Oh, child, I love you and I wish you did not have to be around such people—speak to their Spirit and leave the rest to Me. But love them because I love them and if people hurt you, which they will most likely do, but not really on purpose for they are irrational by the dirt they choose to keep, will you see Me looking at You from within them and thus separate their mortal dirt from their true being—which is Me."

"They all were pure love at one time too and sweetest little children. Yes, they must be accountable for what they do, but understand where they have been, as you have been in similar

places. You have found love in spite of and because of being in such places. It may have been easier for you to find love than it is for them. Count yourself fortunate, for you are attentive. You have used the eyes I gave you. So much fear and pain do they have inside them, forgive their trespasses. Do this for Me.”

“At least once in your life, be with one you love and one you’ve forgiven as they pass and care for them in love on their deathbed—for then you will see what true love is and you will understand death as the beginning of life. Find the legacy they leave you through the gathering of those who have come together from all over at the time of their death. Do you see that even at the time of death, they leave the legacy of life? Serve them when they need you most. Cry, My Child, so you can then laugh. Freedom is a wonderful thing. Serve and you shall receive Me.”

I wish to return to You, O’ Lord. May in my journey, I gain more of You each day as I walk upon this wondrous earth You have created. May I become alive in Your Beauty and may I rest among Your Creations, as one with the universe You have delighted in creating. I must remember and feel that love holds onto no past accounts.

80. Faith and Good Deeds

It is by our faith that sets us free—the knowing and trusting that Jesus is our Savior and the Son of God who came to us on earth. The New Testament says that to obey the Law is right, but to rely only on that obedience to receive the Lord I find is wrong. Many a religion today will say do this our way, but they say rely on the obedience of the law to receive Heaven. This is why the Lord made one Spirit of whom One came to us and of one faith so that no religion in Christ may say unto any other religion that they are right or better. For the law will not get you into Heaven first, but your faith will lead and then you will follow the Law of God (Love) because He speaks to us through the Holy Spirit who is within us by way of Jesus Christ our Savior. Many men of this world say that the other is better. I say belief and then faith must come first. How else will the deaf, the mute, the unlearned, the illiterate, and the oppressed see Heaven and become righteous by our Lord in the great day of our Savior Jesus Christ’s coming. Having to do good deeds and wanting to do them are two different things. So many times have I heard having to do good deeds coexisting with fearing condemnation and damnation. But I have almost always heard and know within me that wanting to do good deeds coexists with love.

For there is only One Church and that is of Jesus Christ. Division of church is made by the law to which men contort to their own ways, but One Body and His One Unified Church comes from faith in the One Jesus. You will then overcome the worldly talk and false teachings of worldly men who follow the Law greater than faith, and you will follow what the Lord says to you is the Law you see written before you. And then you will be able to discern between what is taught to you right and what is wrong by men and the spirit of the antichrist and Spirit of God Almighty.

But genuine faith will yield useful deeds anyway and, thus, you cannot have genuine faith without doing a good deed. So, therefore, we are *justified* by genuine faith alone. As we grow greater in genuine faith, we feel compelled by the Holy Spirit to become more and more truly useful in doing good deeds. Our genuine faith yields hope which enables us to do good deeds in some form (Romans 5:5). I believe James speaks of belief as “faith without good deeds” in

James 2:14-26. But it is belief in Christ (John 3:16) that will save us, in contrast to believing in a single God (James 2:18-19). However, belief in itself, is just intellectual acknowledgment without trust and, therefore, has yet made it to the heart. Thus, belief alone has not yet become useful in serving others, and though we are saved by it (James 2:20) in becoming a worthwhile entity for salvation, we are not justified or actually worthy of salvation until we step first into the genuine, trusting faith (James 2:24, using the term “belief” as the faith James speaks of here).

Usefulness, and thus worthiness, begins when we take *an act* of genuine faith (John 14:12-14). Thus, when we believe in Christ, we still stand in the dark but are able to see the light ahead of us. Our sight has released us from condemnation and damnation. But whoever steps into the light is justified because, by your faith, you have demonstrated that you chose and trust God to expel evil (John 3:16-21). You have taken the first courageous step in facing your fears, guilt, and sins by way of God revealing them to you and the entire world—even if that step was the smallest of all steps. And for that step, your reward is His grace and righteousness. If you run away afterwards, you will run back at least into belief and I hope you will at least turn around to face the light again. And though you stand in the dark, you face the light, and thus, you will not be condemned or perish. You will eventually be reborn either in this life or in the after-life. (1Peter 4:1-6) God is incredibly merciful (JN 3:3-8; JN 6:37-40).

I have stated the following in an early passage, which I think bears repeating. What is the source and the reason of our doing a good deed? Do we do the good deed because it is the logical thing to do? Or do we do the good deed because of the reward which is the feeling we get after doing it? Or do we do the good deed because of our expectations that someone else will be happy? Or do we do the good deed so someone else will be proud of us or that we are in need of praise by another? Neither. Sometimes the good deed is not the logical thing to do and sometimes sadness accompanies it and most of the time our expectations are foiled. The last is a dire way of seeking approval and love from people who may or may not know how to show or share love themselves. So how can we have joy with each good deed? We can find joy when we commit the source and reason to simply be because we love and cherish God and we wish to give back to Him in appreciation the love which He gives us. Each good deed is a “thank you” we show to the Lord—a thank you from the heart.

81. Religion and Spiritual Arrogance

Certain Christians will place themselves greater or holier than others and begin taking the place of Jesus. Even the Apostles left judging to the Lord. These I speak of judge in mortal ways while in spiritual clothing. These certain Christians say that you must pass through them in order for you to find Jesus. They believe that your spirituality must only take place through them because you do not have the ability to fully understand. They force you to be humble to them and God and force you to say things that the Holy Spirit automatically gives you to say, while their egos are over you. They take away much of your free will that the Lord has provided you—that is the free will with to choose to receive the His Love by yourselves and thus, find the special qualities God provided you upon your creation. They say the Holy Spirit is in you, but they have little faith that you can receive or are worthwhile to receive His Will in you because they concentrate on you in greater amount than they see God. And they believe that their own

will is greater to receive the Lord's Will, as if their own will is more sacred to the Lord than yours.

This is near blasphemy, brothers and sisters. Their egos are so in arrogance that they decide for you what is proper to obey in the Law, what is not, and they censor the Lord's Words from your ears and eyes. As if they could. For with your faith, the Lord will reveal to you His Word. So many of their traditions are shown as if political influence was allowed to corrupt Godly principle. Do they not know that once you receive the Holy Spirit upon asking of Jesus, you realize you are in His Body? These people tend to believe they are in the Body, but you are of some other unworthy appendage of God, though they do not say so, but you know how they make you feel. Every hair, every portion of the Body of God is worthwhile to receive the Holy Spirit within you. Who would not wish to love themselves in whole? They believe they see with spiritual eyes in comparison to what they believe are the mortal eyes of their predecessors, but in truth, it was done through logic and less through faith. They believe to have 20-20 vision into the Kingdom, but tell you that you need spectacles. They depended and many still do depend on much of their own will because their own egos will not allow them to escape their own belief that they must be of automatic righteous divinity and superior to all others. They even force you to bow down to them as if their Holy Spirit is greater than yours is. But then they are insulted if they are required to bow down to you.

Did not even Jesus say to John the Baptist who was filled with the Holy Spirit to baptize Him? Did not even Jesus wash the feet of His disciples at the Last Supper? Is not one part of the Body as equally important as another? They perform hypocrisy by saying you must be directly accountable to Jesus, by they also leave a lesson in you without saying but by their example that you do not have to be as accountable directly to Jesus, even though the Will of God is in you, because they force you to repent through them so they can then give to you your punishment, and thus, during the time between the sin and the giving of the punishment, they make you live outside the Lord's Kingdom on Earth. Here I am not talking about offering themselves to you as a token of love so that you can come to forgive yourself who need a physical entity. No, here I am talking about those that see you as empty shells who will not pass to heaven except by them personally. Therefore, they judge the degree of your own deservedness. Not only this, but many nation's laws are more loving and protecting than even their own. How can that be? For God's Laws are by way of Pure Love that is produced in you by His Will which is the Holy Spirit. So they being Christians, how can their laws be greater in corruption than the laws of many unbelievers? How can you force what is already given freely to you by God? Be careful, brothers and sisters, this is not faith, but arrogance, for there is such a thing as spiritual arrogance, too. These people for they feed you as prostitutes, that is as cheapened goods, to the Lord and then make you pay them for their own egos.

This is true of much and many religious peoples, in huge and in small parts, and may as go so far as found in some form within all religions. Many and most churches are guilty in some portion of this game. There is no such thing as an infallible earthly middleman or infallible spiritual leader in terms of salvation and redemption along the way. Some would even ask you to die rather than leaving their religion. Some would excommunicate you if you left and make you feel guilty and not even let you come share with them later. Does God ever excommunicate you from Him if you leave a church or religion on earth? No of course not. God even loves the

unbeliever. But, ah yes, a decision can be infallible when it is made from and in the true love of the Holy Spirit. But this does not make the human person infallible.

Realize that many have a warped sense of love in this world. God is love. If you ever are confused, go to Jesus Christ for the answer and not an earthly middleman. If you want greater understanding on spiritual issues, ask a spiritual leader—understanding he or she is fallible. But never place a person over the Lord. I know that when you are immersed in the Kingdom on Earth, what I call “in the Spirit” and what others may call Nirvana, your decisions are always infallible because they come from God Almighty. The problem is that “noBody” knows when you are “in the Spirit” except by your disposition and decisions. It is the duty of the entire spiritual Body to question the decision. Therefore, no person’s decision is infallible and final until affirmed by the spiritual Body. Unfortunately, many spiritual leaders do not believe that God has made anyone of the so-called common body of the church as great as the elite body in spiritual understanding. This is a cause of great arrogance. However, if the decision was truly from the Holy Spirit and dealt in what some call *ex cathedra*, most of the Body will not have any problems with it because their true inherent search for love will recognize the source of the decision as so. In other words, their Holy Spirit will recognize the decision coming from the Holy Spirit.

This arrogance is an epidemic throughout the world. Most people do not give others credit for intelligent understanding and decision making. This is why affirmation from the Body as a whole is so important. It keeps the leaders humble. I say we would be better off if each one of us would see others as aliens when we first meet them (Ex 22:21). Every alien comes from his own world. Once we get past the fear stage, reacting in avoidance or attack, we can become inquisitive. Questions like, “What is your world like? and Share with me your experiences on your world?”, are asked. How about the question, “How do you get to your world?” Many of us would ask that question as one of the top five. The problem is that even if the person does not wish to share with you the location of his world, we believe we have the right not only to go there anyway but, once we’re there, to tell them what’s wrong with their world and how we will fix it for them. Then when we drink some of their water and it makes us sick, we beat them for not warning us. And they didn’t even invite us—probably because they knew that their water would make us sick. See, we fail to give each other enough credit for intelligent understanding, especially of their own world and the world in general.

We are a conquering people. The problem is that we have a hard time understanding that we are a conquered people by God. If you cannot give up your life to and for God, you have no right to ask anyone else to give up any portion of his or her life, or world, up for you. But I promise you that if you give your life up to God, you will not wish others to give up their world to or for you but help enhance their world with their permission. And when that happens, people will give up a portion of their world to and for you—to you because they trust that you can help them enhance it and for you because they will wind up loving you. But the spiritual person knows that whatever someone else may give up to or for you is never yours and will in turn give it up to the Lord as well.

How hard is it to believe the way of the arrogant. The Apostle Paul asks Christ’s church in Corinth, “Shall I come to you with a whip, or in love and with a gentle spirit?” (1Cor 4:21) And

through the ages, how many of these I speak of have decided upon the whip when we asked them for the love and gentle spirit? How can we trust such who continue to not listen to the Body but believe themselves to be infallible so they need not listen to anyone? How convenient a way to keep power and control over the body. I am a spiritual man. Will you not listen to me either? I may not be as pure as I think I am either, but will you too admit your impurity as well? Will you truly listen and then rule, or will you discard our voices as you have in the past—with filters of a lost paradigm?

When you treat me in love the way Jesus treated His Disciples and the way His Disciples treated you, then I may listen. I forgive you the past for not relaying to your missionaries the skills of understanding the righteousness of the Holy Spirit when it comes to relating to people. Must I still remain sad for a church that wishes to be accountable to God but not to the loving children God sends them. Jesus chooses His prophets well to test those who were once instructed to listen. Many religions still do not listen to the prophets of today, but still blame others for leaving. And then for your delusionment, cursed divisiveness occurs in the church. Prophets warned the Jews and Christians alike in olden times and many did not listen and they were cursed many a time. Prophets may have warned you and you have excommunicated us by not listening. Yet more divisiveness occurred. You say if we choose not to be part of you, we will face the consequences. But what exasperated child wishes to come home to a whip? Must every human become his own church to get the point across?

I do not expect churches to change, I only hope they do. I do not attest to be perfect either, but I do know that we need each other. It is time to gather up and come together. I am extending my hand, but I do not see yours. You may have greater in knowledge, but I believe less in remorse. I may be wrong, but again I do not see yours. I have remorse because the many parents act like children and the child believes now to be the parent, and indeed some of the children have become the parent and some parents have indeed become deserved to be called parents. So, in the midst of all this confusion, I can only count on the One True Parent and that is the Christ Jesus by way of the Holy Spirit—that is, the Christ who has told me that He is my father now and my mentor. The one and only Church must begin again because we all have gone astray to the teachings of the Apostles.

You may say you founded the church from great spiritual leaders. To this I have no doubt. But you do not exemplify Jesus as is asked by you. The Lord chooses leaders for a reason. Many of these leaders were once very prideful, but Jesus humbled them through the Holy Spirit. They were not infallible in their decisions or disposition because others had to correct them from time to time. All spiritual leaders have denied Jesus at least once, but you say you will never deny Him. Scripture says that “no prophecy of Scripture came about by the prophet’s own interpretation. For prophecy never had its origin in the will of man, but men spoke from God as they were carried along by the Holy Spirit.” (2Peter 1:20-21) But many still renounce the prophets of old and new and do not accept that other churches have been allowed by God to be set up to praise Him directly because of your prideful ways. And because you will not accept this and become accountable, the church you manage for Him may be perishing in the wind without you realizing it.

To one particular church, it is true that those who have left you are still children for not forgiving you and reconciling with you. We have learned to avoid one another well, though we tell each other in our own circles to confront one another. The children do childish things such as pointing fingers at you and even among themselves for their behaviors, which only tells me that they never really left you and yearn for your loving return for greater guidance. We children claim you are not Christian or less Christian. This is spoken by hearts and unforgiveness of children. Many times we filter even our own interpretations through our own lost paradigms. But if your child slips on the floor you are to manage for God, doesn't a good father pick the child up and then kneel down and clean the floor entrusted to him so his child will not slip again? But the floor entrusted to you is apparently still muddy. Why do I wish to come back to muddy floors? You say your floors are not muddy any longer, but you have yet made great headway in showing me the muddy mop. I will even respond to a dirty mop. But I have no right to talk because we ran away. We have, as you have, cleaned some of the mud off from our own knees by way of the Holy Spirit, but we have yet shown you our dirty knees. Possibly, one day we can all manage the same floor and clean it together and then clean each other's knees all while worshipping the Lord.

But in any case, where would any church be without this first church. Can any church say that they would be where they are today or any Christian would be a Christian today without the first church? This church should be appreciated for what they have done for us and all other churches should humble themselves to it—just as that church should humble itself and serve all of us. I myself honor this church by being baptized as a child in it and receiving communion and confirmation as an adult in it. Though I was baptized as a child, this baptism was one way of my parents declaring that their child is of God and is God's and the parent's decision to only manage the child's unique God-given path. Infant baptism is provided by the parents as an act of dear appreciation to God for giving them such a wonderful gift. And I as an infant am granted the Godly journey from the start of my God-given life to fully honor Him. When I was baptized as an adult in another church, I gave my own self up to God. I did not fully realize what that really meant and I did foolish and destructive things for a long time afterwards. But God knew what that meant and, without me realizing it, He worked on me until the time I became enlightened. And now I realize that He works on me today in ways I cannot realize and in times when I forget He is there. As an enlightened Christian, I find myself understanding and agreeing with decisions dealt in ex cathedra, but I do not agree with every religious regulation. I am, of course, not a perfect Christian but I strive to become one because I love Him so much. But we must realize that it is because of His Grace that we can live as imperfect Christians.

Many people, including ourselves, may have a much higher expectation of what a Christian should be and act like then we are able to provide through our disposition at this time. The pronouncing of John 3:16 makes us Christian. Let us not listen to others that judge us for not being good enough Christians. Many people will say this to us to break us down so they will not have to go through the trials and tribulations of being and acting like a Christian as we have. What they may really be saying is that God is telling me to go, but I do not want to go and I needed your affirmation to not go. The more we listen to these people, the greater we believe it of ourselves. We should always commit our aspirations to our own personal, intimate relationship through our own Holy Spirit. That is what will fulfill us and propel us to our next step in our own person spiritual maturity with Jesus Christ.

We should realize there is that which comes from the Holy Spirit and then there is that which is derived in the name of religion. Religion may come from the Lord but its members are comprised of varying degrees of spirituality. Thus, religion is corrupted by mortal desires, unless every member is “in the Spirit” all the time. Faith from the love of the Holy Spirit is a spiritual perception derived from the divine desire of God Almighty. It is very rare that every member of the church is “in the Spirit” even at a given time. Therefore, one should not be surprised that every religion is fallible or that every one is corrupted. The religion (comprised of people like us) will most likely never reach perfection as a whole because it is mixed with the mortal soul. Whether the religion is denominational or non-denominational, it consistently requires the cleansing of it by the Holy Spirit. This also goes for every person in that religion. And we must understand, one who chooses no religion is a religion of himself or herself. Thus, religion will only get you so far down the righteous path. But now we realize that only the faith of the Holy Spirit by way of the resurrection of Jesus Christ will get you all the way to the Kingdom.

Any religion, just like any business, is only as good as its spiritual leaders and spiritual members who are in the love of the Holy Spirit. But it is through the Great Commission that every church is called to have members in varying degree of spiritual maturity. So, therefore, it must be every member’s personal relationship with Christ that will foster the church in that love instead of the members’ dependencies solely on the religious institution or religion as a whole to get them to the Kingdom. If a spiritual leader ever says to you that it is the religion that will get you to heaven and not your personal relationship with Christ, run because you will most likely rarely realize the true love of the Holy Spirit while a member in that religion. But if a spiritual leader says to you that it is your personal relationship with Christ that will get you to heaven and that the religion is only a vehicle that will enable you to enhance that relationship on a more continual basis, I believe you should pray so to find out if God has called you to that religion, and the specific church within that religion. And I say pray also to find out your own purpose and role that God wishes you to play as a member of that religion to benefit the religion and the religion of others as well. Remember, every religion can benefit from some unique teachings of every other religion. But it is your faith in Christ that will get you to the Kingdom.

But what is religion and what is spirituality. The Holy Spirit is an example of spirituality as evidenced in tradition as well as scripture. So then let me be the contradictor awhile and for a certain purpose as I illustrate afterward. The church law of priests not to be wed cannot be upheld by both tradition and scripture. Therefore, this is a dogma that should not be mandatory because it is obviously an opinion of the church. But it cannot be enforced as a Holy rule. The Apostle Paul says it is better not to marry but not all can be like him. Paul says, “I say this as a concession, not as a command. I wish that all men were as I am” (1Cor 7:6-7). He goes on to say in 1Cor 9:5, “Don’t we have the right to take a believing wife along with us, as do the other apostles and the Lord’s brother?” Even the Apostle Peter, who guides the Pope and began the Catholic Church, even had a wife. Therefore, it should be of choice, but not mandating not to marry. To mandate such as thing will destroy the Church because those who can truly be as Paul are very few and far between. And then the Catholic Church places a great marketing campaign when there are not enough Priests, and sexual immorality exists within the own church. And the Church hides it instead of expelling the immoral brother to stop the natural apocalypse of the

Church. I am married and if God wishes me to be a priest and married, I will be a pastor whether they ordain me or not. I do not obey the rules set forth by men, but only by God. Therefore, I follow the spirituality of Jesus Christ rather than the religion of men.

Fine then, so what is it about spiritual leaders to live in poverty and not wed? My friend, it is a decision upon the part of the individual. But we must realize the constant attention to God's needs for us and the freedom to serve at a moment's notice. The more worldly resources we give up, the less expenses we have, the more freedom we have to do at the precise moment what God calls us to do and where He calls us to do it. This is the same about marriage, if it is God's will that you not marry. Yes, it is a decision but the decision cannot be made by a human mind but only by the compelling nature of the Holy Spirit from within us. Many a time the human mind will make such a decision to escape the sinful nature or the facing of a certain fear. But the Holy Spirit compels us to live in the fulfillment of our Lord for His purpose for us on earth. How may I serve you? When will you require help—in the middle of the day or at an odd hour at night?

This is the same as mandating law from tradition. The church sacraments and the such were provided out of love for Christ and love for us. We cannot mandate some rule when we do not have faith that faith will prevail for all or some. Then we corrupt faith by using it against itself. For love provides human tradition to enable all of us to connect more fully with Christ. But by mandating it, we discount love and, in time, promote justification by law instead of by faith. This is exactly what the Apostles warned against (Acts 15:5-11, Rom 3:27, Gal 3:15-25). This is from the lips of Peter, "God, who knows the heart, showed that he accepted them by giving the Holy Spirit to them, just as he did to us. He made no distinction between us and them, for he purified their hearts by faith. Now then, why do you try to test God by putting on the necks of the disciples a yoke (law) that neither we nor our fathers have been able to bear? No! We believe it is through the grace of our Lord Jesus that we (the high spiritual leaders that by God were Jewish) are saved, just as they (all members of Christ including the Gentiles) are (Acts 15:8-11)."

Peter was saying that arrogance and prejudice must be abolished in the camp of the spiritual leaders in their thinking that the Gentiles are beneath them in their faith of Christ. Mandatory church law enforced after the person realizes the benefit of the law is a form of delusional love set up because the prideful believe the "lesser in faith" cannot make it to heaven without it and therefore, need it to qualify for heaven. When done in true love, church sacrament and tradition are provided to serve people so they may have intimacy in Christ by their own free will. The first way judges people through our own arrogance, which always discounts their worth to those who judge and makes law a heavy burden (yoke) on people crippling even those that would have come to attain enormous faith (MT 7:1-6). The second way becomes a humbling offering to others, and because we love them, we give them full credit for their worth and intelligence as God's Children. This passage will sum up the certainty between faith and law. As the Apostle Paul puts it, "Before this faith came (by way of Jesus Christ), we were held prisoners by the law, locked up until faith should be revealed. So the law was put in charge to lead us to Christ that we might be **justified by faith**. Now that faith has come, **we are no longer under the supervision of the law** (Gal 3:23-25).

But what is this tradition that we should incorporate in our faith? Are we to follow tradition of men? So many accuse others of following tradition, but it is by our acts of accusing that we show ourselves slave to the tradition of slanderers? Remember that all were born out of pure love. Ask how love began such traditions and how love will add a unique flavor to traditional activities that are perceived today as rote. Again, can we add love to the rote traditions of others by staying in our own home? As parents, we mandate a certain rule knowing that it will benefit the child and help the child feel better. Much of the time the child will go kicking and screaming only to realize afterwards the parents were right. But then by mandating the same rule afterwards, we continue to keep the child a child and wind up exasperating the child until he or she has no other course but to leave in order to become a man or a woman. So then, isn't it better to mandate a rule for the first and/or second time and then allow the person to choose for himself or herself to continue the rule without judgment from the church. For then we leave judgment, good or bad, to God instead of trying to control and pass judgment on the one's we love.

I will summarize what I am saying. The sequence to love is first logical reasoning, then belief, then hope, then abandonment to self and acceptance to receive love, then comes the experience of love. We cannot make dogma or principle or rule from the place of any step before that of our experience of true love. If we make principle from any step before love, all other steps after that "step of decision" is lost and God's Children will suffer.

But now let us compare the natural and the supernatural within the sequence. Some of us start with the overall sensation of love and then follow it to reason, which is how I believe Jesus did because being synonymous with the love of the Holy Spirit delivered by God. But we are not talking of the natural logical reasoning but supernatural reasoning only to communicate the love to others. In other passages within this book, I describe the supernatural processes of our purpose in receiving, translating, transmitting and communicating love. But let me separate the sequence I am now talking about. It is as follows:

1. Natural Process: Feeling and Logical Reasoning
2. Transitional Process from Natural to Supernatural: Belief of the supernatural mixed with feeling, then Hope, then Abandonment of self by way of trust and then a willingness to accept the Love of God
3. Supernatural Process: Experiencing the true love of the Holy Spirit and then logical reasoning so to communicate this love while in this love and a compelling to obey His Law, which develops a greater understanding of the true love of the Holy Spirit and repeats Step 3 over and over again.

Notice that in step one and step three, logical reasoning comes into play. In step one, the logical reasoning is a natural (mortal) reasoning. This natural reasoning comes before experiencing the love of God within ourselves, which is the love that will make us feel fulfilled and complete. In step three, logical reasoning is a supernatural (Holy) reasoning like in the Bible as communicated to us from Jesus and the Apostles who are in love with the Holy Spirit as they write to us. Thus, supernatural logical reasoning is not a stage in the process like natural logical reasoning is. The only "reason" why supernatural logical reasoning and obedience to His Law exists is because supernatural love propels us to communicate itself to God and others and be obedient to Him.

We must realize that obedience will only come about by the amount of love one has for another only because one is grateful for the love that one has within oneself due to the other. Therefore, to demand obedience before love is sinful and to wish for obedience in others before they feel love within themselves may result in a lengthy wait. Why would I obey you, a leader of me at the time, when you have shown me no love? I obey you and all my other leaders, in what is not unholy, because I love Him. I come to love everyone through the Holy Spirit, but I do not become partners or yoke myself to you (Eph 5:1-7).

Many religions do not get to the supernatural logical reasoning of step three. They make doctrine and principles somewhere between hope and willingness to accept the love of God as a bartering or qualifying tool. It is my belief that no doctrine or principle should ever be followed if not communicated while experiencing the love of God. This is also true about interpreting the Bible. If one is not deeply and overwhelmingly experiencing true love and grace and empathy while interpreting the Bible, then let the interpreter interpret to himself only. If one has trouble experiencing this deep and overwhelming true love, grace, and empathy, then he should know immediately that he does not have the gift of interpretation and translation to the masses. Let your own reasoning dictate your own conscience and leave the rest to their own reasoning. Translation is from Holy Spirit to Holy Spirit and, thus, from true and pure love to true and pure love. Anything else added or any other character added is thus known as quasi-opinionated translation and is better left to oneself.

And so we should be very careful what is natural, transitional, and supernatural doctrine. Natural and transitional doctrine is fallible. Supernatural doctrine is infallible. It is my belief that there are actually very few supernatural doctrines in any one religion. Why? Because when a doctrine becomes a permanent dogma, that is not already in the Bible, the process in getting to that dogma is forgotten and the ends will wind up unmercifully justifying the means. In other words, as written in 1Corinthians, Hebrews and 1Peter, spiritual milk must be given to those that are still worldly so that solid food may then come. One in supernatural logical reasoning will mercifully recognize those in natural logical reasoning so that they may feed them milk. Then as they come to have faith and hope in the transitional stages, spiritual food is provided more and more to build them up to experience the true love of the Holy Spirit. When one is not in the supernatural logical reasoning, guilt is given when one does not accept a dogma because impatience is evident in the false spiritual person (Heb 6: 9-12).

What is one sure way we know a doctrine came out of supernatural love? The surest way is when we experience the love of the Holy Spirit within ourselves and It recognizes itself. I have said before that the Holy Spirit within us recognizes perfectly the Holy Spirit within others. Our own filtered translation may be a bit off but not by much. If we have yet to experience the love of the Holy Spirit, we can know if a doctrine is from God's love by a question and the disposition of others when we question it. The first thing we must ask others is whether they feel love and fulfillment within themselves. If they say yes, we then should evaluate their humbling, child-like disposition and servanthood personality. We do not want to hear about their disposition, but we want to see their humbling disposition. A true servant will say and boast extremely little about their servanthood. If they boast about their servanthood, we must be careful that it is not an act they put on for their and your benefit. Do they serve happily or sadly? Is their serving coupled with positive or negative feelings of worth and caring? If they

serve but they portray negative feelings about themselves when they do (depression, anger, stubbornness, cockiness, overbearingness, pride, apathy, caretaking), then they may not feel love and fulfillment greatly within. Therefore, we must not only hear love in their voice but we must see a constant love in their disposition as well. In Isaiah 29:13-14, “The Lord says: ‘These people come near to me with their mouth and honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me. Their worship of me is made up only of rules taught by men. Therefore, once more I will astound these people with wonder upon wonder; the wisdom of the wise will perish, the intelligence of the intelligent will vanish.’” “The fruit of righteousness will be peace; the effect of righteousness will be quietness and confidence forever (Isaiah 32:17).”

I know that many churches who were angry and cruel are now gentle today, despite what the previous generations and present society communicates to me. But is it only a few as me that realize this? This is only because I come to the many of you. But where are you? Many sit inside and I never see your faces. The past still haunts you because you have not come out to shake hands with the present. But please do not come from where you are. This has always been the problem—demanding that we interpret your translation exactly. This problem has now spread worldwide in our own selves. How well we learn from our parents. But I request you to come to where we are, as we should want to go to where you are. The Apostle Paul was very good at doing this. Follow his example. And maybe one day we will even see each other cry. We work haphazardly without you and you do the same without us. Only together can we work in harmony by asking our Lord to guide us as a synergetic spirit.

Where are all of you in this Great Commission? Again, come out and greet us. Where would we all be now if Jesus defied God and was stubborn in providing His communication with the Apostles? Where would the parent be if the Apostles were stubborn in providing what they were asked to by Christ to our parents. And I ask the children, where would we be now if it weren't for our parents? To all of faith in our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, let us unite. “We have spoken freely to you and opened wide our hearts to you. We are not withholding our affection from you, but you are withholding yours from us. As a fair exchange, ...open wide your hearts also (2Cor 6:11-13).”

The Protestant faith was bound to come. It is the same understanding as the left brain and right brain divisions of the mind. The Catholic faith is deeply engrained in reason and logic (left brain). The Protestant (Fundamentalist) faith is deeply engrained in feeling. The Protestant faith is the bride and the Catholic faith the bridegroom. But it is the union or marriage of Protestant and Catholic faiths that results in the completeness of the faith of God. One should not rely solely on the Protestant faith or solely on the Catholic faith to understand God. We must find the declaration of love from both these faiths and pronounce false any attack provided in any doctrine of one faith upon the other. If the left brain continued to attack the right brain as being false, the experience or feeling of true love within cannot be attained. This is why most of the Catholic faith cannot or will not understand the doctrines of the Protestant faith because you cannot logically reason a feeling. And what you cannot logically reason, you deduce as false or illusory and obviously cannot trust. Supernatural logic must be taught by some form of rational, low emotional diction, but supernatural feelings must be shown and fully expressed. The Catholic faith has not been good at showing feeling. If the right brain continued to attack the left brain as being false, the understanding of love within cannot be attained. This is why most of the

Protestant faith cannot or will not understand the doctrines of the Catholic faith because you cannot feel logic. And what you cannot feel, you deduce as false or illusory and obviously cannot trust. Again, supernatural feeling must be shown, but supernatural logic must be taught by some form of rational, low emotional diction. The Protestant faith has not been good at teaching logic. Many of those who are non-Catholic attack the Catholic Church by saying that it is a church of lecture and law. Many of those who are non-Protestant attack the Protestant churches by saying that it is a show of flash and conjecture. Both denominations deny this because each is comfortable in its own way of communicating lecture and showing feeling. Both attacks are wasteful. Offering to share each others strengths is useful.

Balance must be achieved to attain the greatest faith. Therefore, I believe it is best to instill in ourselves the love expressed through reason and feeling (but obviously greater in reason) within the doctrines of the Catholic faith and the love expressed through feeling and reason (but obviously greater in feeling) within the doctrines of the Protestant faith. By disregarding the love provided in each faith, we deny ourselves completeness of the Body of Christ. Protestantism was never meant to be a permanent division, but because the parents exasperated their children, forgiveness has yet to be granted. The Catholic faith must face the reality that they have not been very good parents in the eyes of the Lord in true and unconditional love and they must admit this. Until they admit this, division will continue.

But it is this that I truly recognize. Vatican II was the beginning of the Catholic faith to humble itself and ask the Protestant faith what it has to enrich the Catholic faith. It is the modern-day Catholic faith that is incorporating the combined synergetic effort of logic and feeling in a humbled manner. But much of the Protestant community attacks the Catholic faith as being even non-Christian. I ask now. Who is prideful and who is humbled? Feeling without boundaries is a dangerous thing that can bring about destructive emotions. And logic and tradition without feeling is unjust. But both separated will end in destruction and sin. We must have both logic and feeling working together. Therefore, we must have a balance of the feeling and fulfillment of the love of God and tradition, which provides boundaries, or ensuing madness through immoral interpretation can prevail. Love without true moral reasoning is a very dangerous and destructive thing, as is reasoning without true love from the Lord.

Without both faiths relying on the Holy Spirit of supernatural guidance and abandoning their natural wills to disclaim the doctrines of the other, they will both perish, as may be predicted in Revelations. Or, in contrast, unity will prevail which will also create a new and purified Church and, thus, the prediction will be realized as well. In earlier passages I've described to some degree the understanding of the harmonious working of the complete mind with respect to right brain and left brain acceptance. This is why we must never totally dismiss any Christian faith. By doing so, we execute division of the One Church, One Mind, and One Body (1Cor 10:17). Today, we are finding that interfaith acceptance is growing because, I believe, we are in a state of survival and the Lord has called to gather His Children. As I speak in a passage on my true calling, God has fixed upon me His overall purpose of gathering His Children and providing a warning of our Final Sin, which is the denial of our impending destruction and the Second Coming of Jesus Christ.

One of the great differences between the natural and supernatural state is entropy and enthalpy. The natural state is equivalent to the entropic state which is the steady degradation or disorganization of a system or society or the degradation of the matter and energy in the universe to an ultimate state of inert uniformity. Entropy is a natural law. The supernatural state provides an enthalpic state producing the accumulation or sum of the internal energy of a body. The natural or entropic state begins with a complete system and is continuously broken down and divided over time. However, the supernatural state or enthalpic state maintains the cohesive of the individual entities within one body making up the body as a whole. Without acceptance of each entity, the supernatural state cannot exist in whole. God accepts each entity because each entity was born out of the whole. But when the individual entities refuse to accept one another and especially God as the supernatural bond, entropy progresses toward that ultimate state of inert uniformity or deficiency in the active supernatural properties within. Therefore, the separation of the Catholic faith by that of the Protestant faith physically denotes this realization of entropy. The further division (faction) within both faiths physically denotes the further realization of entropy, or natural state. Humans cannot stop entropy, but God can and He can provide this knowledge to others through His Children to bring about a perpetual therapeutic state if He wishes.

It is my belief that Christ Himself is propelling contemporary Christian interfaith. I believe that the universal church, in theory, is still in tact. The Protestant faith is only the suppressed form that was freed within the Catholic faith. The Catholic faith should understand that the Protestant faith was only a suppressed faith within the Universal Church that felt excommunicated by the Universal Church long ago. Whether the Universal Church likes it or not, they bore fruit and many are abandoning their children. They have taught a worldwide lesson on parental abandonment. I speak of parental duty in other passages. As long as the Universal Church as a faith entity or the individuals within the Church continue to excommunicate a supernatural piece of itself, it will continue to live in fragments and live in sin (MT 5:11-12, 1Cor 12:12-31, Eph 5:29-30). So, I will not listen to these who excommunicate for the Lord said, "Do not be afraid of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. Rather, be afraid of the One who can destroy both soul and body in hell (MT 5:11-12 and 10:28). And as long as the Protestant churches or individual entities excommunicate the Catholic faith through unforgiveness, it will continue to live in even greater fragments and live in sin as well. Why is this? This is because reason and logic will hold something together more than high emotion.

And then we ask ourselves how Jesus preached the Word of God before receiving the Holy Spirit? Can we do this? And then, can a person who has received the Holy Spirit only for a short time disciple and know God greatly? This is in line with the Parable of Workers in the Vineyard. Yes, many churches are threatened when someone comes along like this and then, in hypocrisy, the church asks questions like, "Who does this person think He is?", or "Where did he come from, I've never heard of this person?". What should a church do with such a person? And should the person run away or help unite? Let me answer your questions with another question. How did the disciples handle the newly transformed Paul? Is your line of questioning similar to that of the Jewish people of the time when questioning Jesus? In any case, follow Christ (JN 17:23).

82. Representation, Manipulation, and Imitation (Matthew 23)

“Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites!”

Dear brothers and sisters, when we disciple for our Lord Jesus Christ, we must know the difference between being a representative and a manipulator. Manipulation always begins with us and ends with us. Representation always begins with someone else and ends with someone else. The one we represent asks us to convey his or her message in the way so to achieve the same end result as if they themselves had conveyed it. The representative wishes for the person receiving the message to understand the way the one being represented feels on one or more topics. The one who manipulates assumes that they know what is best and needs no instruction on how to convey the message from the one they are representing. And so the manipulator always places himself or herself in the forefront. Then it is only when the manipulator is happy and fulfilled with the result does he or she end the message.

When we represent Christ, He asks us to convey His message from God’s Will, which is the Holy Spirit just as Jesus on Earth was the preeminent emissary of the One True God. Thus, we convey His Message from the understanding of what the Love of the Holy Spirit is telling us to convey. We do this because God wishes for all His Children to understand Him and find true love in their lives. And so, when we find Him, then we are fulfilled. So then the representative begins with God and ends with God. We should not go out to minister to others solely because we wish for them to feel the love we feel. This is selfish because we limit their love. They will then only develop to the level we have developed in Christ. We should go out to minister to others so they will understand and find the love that the Holy Spirit within them provides so that they may understand and feel love to the greatest extent possible. We must remember that our fulfillment of love and desire to share love always stems from Christ’s gracious provision of His love to us through the Holy Spirit within us because He sees us of worth to receive it whether we deserve it or not. That is simply an amazing thing!

When we go out to disciple for God because of ourselves, we become manipulators “hiding behind” God. When we go out to disciple through submission and obedience to His Instruction He provides through the Holy Spirit that dwells within us so that others will come to have a personal relationship with Him, we become true representatives of our Lord and Savior.

And now we come to imitation. As God The Father trained His Son, Jesus, what is right by instruction and example and so Jesus The Man trained his disciples in the same way, so are we, the parent, to train our children. As God sent His Only Son to us to give us a physical example of how to live life, so now can we imitate Him. And because we now have His Spirit within us, we have no excuses but only our saving grace by God Himself. Before our age of reason, we exemplified our parents who are of man. But at our age of reason, it is the duty of our parents to let loose of us so we may be allowed to choose to follow Christ in full trust. It is here that we must consider if we are to imitate men or His Spirit within us.

One has only law and others to imitate if he has yet to choose to receive the Holy Spirit. The Apostles were given the instruction to spread the good news and baptize so that man may now

imitate Christ—not so man can imitate or compete with the souls of the Apostles who are men. “Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned (Mk 16:15, 16).” This is why it is said that “if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under law (Gal 5:18).” And though as a baby suckles from his mother, you may have to suckle to one who is truly holy and matured in Christ first—which hopefully will be your parent or your priest—who is not to be your True Father but only a nursemaid who nourishes you in those beginning stages and who administers the law to you given to him by the True Father. But then there comes a time when you must be weaned to acquire the confidence to go out into the world in full trust to imitate and be intimate with God who declares Himself and administers His mercy and justice through His Spirit (who lives within you) into your soul. Realize that the soul lasts an eternity, the mind a lifetime, and the body only a short while. The priest or parent now becomes your servant for counsel and not your nursemaid or magistrate any longer. You become solely and directly accountable to God and His mercy and justice. No longer will you be able to hide behind men and remain as children.

Christ and his Apostles gave verbal instruction and moral example. And this is the proper way to instruct. No true imitation can be developed with only verbal or written instruction without moral example—then the student imitates delusion and breaks his own spirit and, later in the hands of a true leader, he or she becomes disillusioned. Any leader or parent who expects so is not righteous. Nor can a one imitate a true leader by just moral example without instruction—he may die before he is wise—because knowledge brings wisdom. Again, any leader or parent who expects so is not righteous. The old adage, “Do what I say, not what I do,” is meaningless and wasteful to the student. It is better if one just said instead of doing. And it is best, of course, if one also did what he said.

83. The Wedging of the Lord and His Placement of Angels Upon Us

The Lord this day wedged Himself and His Angels between me and my oppressor and those who would attack me, as He may for you. As promised by Jesus in Luke 12:51-53, so has God wedged Himself between them and me and will not allow me to pass to them any further. He pushes me away and says to seek love and righteousness, I am not allowed to enter the evil. And the Angels, upon His Command, say to me, come my brother, there are great and wonderful things to teach you. We are all around you. The Lord will forever place Himself between you and them. For He commands it. Love them and honor them by praying and forgiving them, but do not enter the lion’s den. The Lord is your father now and Jesus your mentor. He has severed the ties to those relationships for the sake of His Child, which is you. Pray and leave the rest to Him. Come, let us walk together and my brother and sister angels will fly over head with us. We will show you great things. We so love you, my brother.

Goodbye my oppressors. I love you and forgive you. (Eze 18) But you are now a stranger to me, and I do not talk to strangers.

84. Intercession (God in Relation to the Saints in Relation to People)

As we are in love with God and develop as one into Him, our individuality disappears but our identity is made known. If any, our individuality transforms into Him. We are the direct offspring of God, we are His children. In other words, our selfdom disappears and we unite into Him as a singularity, not remaining a divisive entity. We come to discern our unique character or personality for Him as He created each of us for a specific purpose. But none of us are separated or disconnected. Therefore, identity is not the same as individuality. Individuality has “divi or diva” well entranced in its definition. Identity is congruent.

In an earlier passage, I spoke about representation and what it means. As we reach our true identity, we develop this understanding of representative or intercessor or advocate for God. This is because through the Holy Spirit we come to realize our true identities and transform into Him. And as the Holy Spirit is the true representative, intercessor, and advocate of God, so are we because we transform into Him through His Spirit compelling us. And as this happens, we as humans, develop great humility toward God and His remarkable grace and understand that all credit is His. At one time we denied any affliction within ourselves as a survival measure. But the Holy Spirit compelled us to find our true selves because it knew that we could not survive in that state. We then acknowledged our afflictions, and realized we did not have the power ourselves to overcome them, prior to our realization of the Holy Spirit within us. We then saw ourselves as “messed-up”. But then the Holy Spirit compelled us to find grace and, because it could identify itself perfectly, it enabled us to identify grace as well. And it was then that the Holy Spirit compelled us further to come back to itself, to who we truly are, which is a wonderfully loving spirit.

When we realize this, as humans, we give all of credit for how we love and why we love to Him. There is no more need for individuality because we have transformed into His love. We come to find out what and who we transformed into transcend all we need on this earth. We have overcome the world. We do not need praise, we do not need to be placed on a pedestal. We are at peace with our Father.

“Do not pray to me or honor me”, the angel/saint in heaven says. “There is no need to give me credit. I do for God because I love Him and He has shown me that I am love. He has given Himself to me. It is at this time that as entities, we exist and our existence is acknowledged. But we do as representatives or intercessors for God. There is no need to thank us. You may see us and, thus, acknowledge us. But thank God for us. There is no physical need of ours for your prayers or your honoring. God tells us what we need to know and what we do, we do because we love you, for we are love. Do not martyr us, individualize us, or focus on us. You realize we are here for you, which you should because the Holy Spirit recognizes us and he lives in you. You are attentive. Understanding in your human state that you have a difficult time separating the heavenly saint from the earthly saint and from the True Saint, we understand that you need to show your gratitude. So you say thank you, which I will gladly accept on your behalf. But I’d rather you say thank you to God. You won’t hurt my feelings. I do not need to be appreciated from earth because all the appreciation I could ever feel or want is from God Himself. Really, we need no thanks. Thank Him who has sent us for you and who allows us to intercede by Him for you. We are fine. Do not wear our idols, but always realize that you wear Him within you. I say this for your benefit because I was once as you are and I understand the most great way to help you. I am not as you are now.”

85. The Gatekeeper

Jesus Christ is the Gatekeeper between the Kingdom on Earth as in Heaven and the evil in the world. When the soul is not sure, pray and ask the Lord in Jesus name. But do not step out on your own on dirt roads rather than the brick He has laid for you. The goal is to remain in the Kingdom. My Lord faithfully and without question bestows on me all my provisions and provides me His disposition. As the Master Builder, He is building tomorrow for me today. His angels go out beyond my understanding of time and build tomorrow. And as a child, I only get in His Way when I worry how He builds it for me. For He builds my future perfectly and marvelously because He loves me so much—more than there are stars above.

He says to me, “My Child of My Great Heart, enjoy today with My Angel Children who will love you and comfort you because I am already there tomorrow to catch you.”

My Angels say to me every morning when I wake up, “Oh come brother, we have things to show you today.” And I ask, “Oh my Angels of God, what do we do today? Where do we go from here? What am I to learn about this Kingdom I am in?” And I am excited to learn.

Oh, Father, as Your Child, show me. Thank You, Father. Thy Will be done, for my will which cometh from You has been answered. How loving You are!

And my Lord replies, “Now go and play and learn with My Other Children in the Kingdom, with your Angel brothers and sisters for pure are they. And when you see your mortal brothers and sisters along the way, say hello for Me. Oh, how I love you all!”

Amen. My Father.

86. Taken Care of By The Body

What comes from within will show on the outside. Do not burden yourself with showing off your bodies. The Lord knows what you look like inside and out. From your Spirit will your mortal mind and mortal body be taken care of. What will go to heaven—your mind, body, or Spirit? Only your Spirit goes, which is the Body of Christ and the New Covenant from which you transform into everlasting life. So, then by taking care of His Body by receiving and then giving back to Him the love He gives you, shall you then be taken care of.

Always understand that you are a hollow vessel filled with Holy Light. We should always strive to keep anything less than loving and holy out of our minds and body because we are the Body of Christ. The Light should fill the body and mind and glow to the outside. Anything that is destructive deserves our rebuking. By the Spirit of God, we have the right to confront and deny entrance of anything hateful and distasteful to enter our minds and bodies, and furthermore, not feel guilty for it. Any guilt is the voice of hateful and distasteful rejection provided you in the past by mortals. We are Children of God. We hold a higher power to present justice to the wicked. And it is as Children of the Almighty that we are held accountable by Him to reign over the wickedness in this world. No man is greater than God, but nothing and no one wicked is

greater than His Child is. There is a penalty for wickedness and that penalty is always realized once the wicked comes across that which is holy. We who claim Jesus our savior are holy and all who are wicked pay the price when they come across us. We present them up to our Father who we request pass judgement and provide just punishment. If they do not come across us directly but by some other means, we are then ordered to find them through our prayers and the Lord will present them to us kneeling and begging as the slithering snake still striking at our boot heels. It is then our duty to kill their evil pride with divine love from the Holy Spirit until it is time the Lord decides to deal with them directly for their incorrigibility.

And then there is the physical body. Every part of our physical body was made in love by God down to the tiniest hair. So, we should love every part of our bodies and not be ashamed of any part. The body is a loving whole as is the Body of Christ. In today's society, we differentiate between "private parts" and all other parts. Many people will say that it is not alright for others to touch you in your private parts but it is alright if they touch you in the other areas. The truth is that if we find any displeasure with people touching us in any part, "private" and "not private", we should tell them so. If they continue, we should physically separate ourselves from them and continue to do so if they have not learned their lesson. But more importantly, people should never expect that it is alright to touch another person. We should first have permission by some kind of communicative gesture. I believe direct verbal communication is best, but there are times when playful gesturing is a welcoming permission.

Now in touching ourselves, I believe we should feel free to touch ourselves anywhere and everywhere without guilt but only because we love our bodies. We should never do harm to our bodies. But how do we discern between harmful and therapeutic touching? We should think of our bodies as the Body of our Christ. It may help you to discern between correct (therapeutic) touching and incorrect (harmful) touching of our own bodies, the bodies of others, and any other creation of earth if we imagine touching the Body of God in Heaven when we perform the act of touch. Then as we learn to love God more and more, we then will learn to touch and respect our own bodies and the bodies of others greater. And then we will learn to appreciate and respect others and ourselves greater and greater inside and out. If we are angry at God, then our touching and taking care of our bodies will most likely be harmful. Possibly we will take the next step and be angry "with" God, which will tell us that we have a relationship with Him. It is a next step in healing.

As with anything we manage for God or touch for God, our disposition and the disposition of others and other things we come in contact with will become more loving and more well-maintained the greater our love for God grows. This is very important because more loving and more well-maintained go hand in hand. If something appears well-maintained but does not have a loving disposition, idolatry is most likely the cause and not the love for God. If a person's disposition exudes love but the person or thing is not being well-maintained, then this may mean that the person has given himself or herself up to the Lord but is lacking the understanding of maintaining to serve others. In other words, if I am not taking care of my own body, it may be because I know I am going to heaven sooner or later. But what we are lacking is the understanding that our well-maintained bodies may allow serving others in greater quantity and quality, to include our spouses. I know as a man, I must work on this even though my wife continually reminds me of this fact. This is the same if I love God and I am managing a couch

for Him where I live. If the couch is well-maintained then more people over a greater amount of time will find respite on it and each will be able to find it structurally sound and comfortable.

Thus, we serve others very well when we love and well-maintain in a synergetic fashion. When we love and do not well-maintain, we are self-absorbed. When we maintain without love, we are mortal idolaters. If we love the Lord to the point of not wanting any object to manage but to only do His work, we still have our own bodies to manage. So, therefore, at minimum we must well-maintain our own bodies so to serve the Lord and His Children in quantity and quality. Self-absorption is reflected in direct proportion to our act of maintenance. If we do not take care of our own bodies, we are still self-absorbed in good deeds even though all we may do is serve others and Him. It is a paradox, but life is a paradox everywhere you turn. You ask how can taking care of myself not be self-absorption? This is because you are not taking care of yourself. You are taking care of God's direct and most prized possession. I tell you self-absorption always leads to mental and physical illness. We must learn to be in a freeing-up mindset if we are to be in the greatest relationship with God. God has created our bodies and minds to automatically go into the freeing-up stage when we exercise them. He has done this for us to become closer to Him. Therefore, when we take care of our bodies and minds in nurturing productivity and in the mindset of serving, we obey God and do more in His Time than being self-absorbed in our own time. This is one reason we must work because if we do not work, we cannot eat of the fruits God provides us from inside and out (2Th 3:10). The greater you are in the mindset of serving, the greater you allow Him to guide you and the less worrying you will do.

87. Prophecies and Miracles

Now, I will speak further about prophecies and miracles. Not to boast but to show you so that you may become aware in your own life the prophecies and miracles in front of you. Many times these two accompany each other. When I saw with my spiritual eyes in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, I was shown many things. One of them was prophetic images varying in size. I am by no means today a great prophet, but have only been shown things by God. At that time, I began to nurture, to see in color, to see beauty among all that was around me. And I sought out color to surround me whenever I could. And I then also began to experience miracles.

One day I felt loved and fulfilled and the Lord placed in me the will to paint in many colors. I began to paint with a certain particular pattern but eventually the pattern was not the one I started with. I chose many different colors and painted in many different shapes and sizes and at the end, I saw nothing more than a lot of color and shapes and sizes. But I thought it was beautiful so I placed it where I could see it everyday. And then one day I turned and, behold, I could not believe what I painted. I had painted images of the crucifixion of our Savior, certain stations of the cross, the grail and bread of our Savior given to the Apostles at the Last Supper, the flame of the Holy Spirit upon the resurrection of our Savior, and the awesome cloud of the Lord overhead.

The painting is simply entitled, "God". Shortly after my personal pentecost I felt compelled to paint. Wanting only to brighten up my life by swirling bright, dynamic colors together, I began to paint and ended with what I intended as just a swirl of bright, beautiful color—or so I thought. After one week, I passed by this creation hanging in my living room only to realize something startling. Through free

association, I, by way (I believe) of the Holy Spirit created this extraordinary painting. It is the Triune God (Father, Son, and Holy Spirit) within the framework of a single painting (as all three within one essence).

Find the pillar of cloud (far upper left) and pillar of fire (upper middle) as in Exodus 13:21,22. Notice the tongue of fire of the Holy Spirit descending upon a person (it could be me or an Apostle such as Peter) at Pentecost (upper and lower middle) as in Acts 2:3. Notice the chalice containing the wine as the blood of the New Covenant (bottom far left) and the bread as the Body of Christ (at the immediate right of Peter) as in Mark 14:22-25. Notice the three main events of Christ. The first being Christ's suffering in the desert (bottom right), the second being Christ's missionary journey preaching salvation (center far right), and the third being Christ crucified with the blood and water coming from his side (between the tongue of fire and the missionary Christ). There is a huge white dove in flight with one wing on the left side of the tongue of fire, its head pointing downward at the left of Peter, the bottom of its breast just touching the unleavened bread, its tail on the right side of the tongue of fire, and its other wing outstretched to the right. I hope that each person who sees this painting has a unique translation and revelation of God. It is believed that this painting provides absolute proof in physical form the existence of the Holy Spirit today as promised by Jesus Christ himself 2000 years ago (John 16:5-16).

In another event, the Lord placed in my mind to draw a type of house shared by two people with two similar housing structures on both sides of a common living quarter between. In some months later, the Lord paved the way in mysterious miracles not by any of my doing so that my wife and I were living in the type of living quarter depicted in the drawing.

In another time, I chose to go to an establishment to serve the Lord and when I went nothing could be done to help me. I said to the Lord, "But I do this for you, O' Lord." And then, I said to myself that perhaps this is not where I am supposed to go. Then I prayed and said to the Lord that wherever You wish to take me, take me. And on my way to another place, I passed a similar type of establishment and felt a strong feeling that I should go there. It turned out that the establishment He led me to served Christians on a continual basis.

Many times I have sensed evil because I am open to the Lord and the Angels He sends me. I sense evil and great sickness in the heart of some cities, and so I don't live there. But I know great evil lurks there.

And in yet another time when I was in the Love of the Lord, He granted me a vision which struck me in awe. I saw my wife and I within the walls of His Kingdom and was in great peace. A few months later, He revealed to me that my wife and I have been chosen to live in His Kingdom after our deaths. "Do not worry", He tells me. "Follow me on the earth because I need you there. You have already been chosen."

And yet another time, God spoke to me before September 11th and gave me the knowing that something will happen and I will be dismissed from my occupation. And He said to me, "You will lose your job. But do not worry because it is necessary in the job I have for you." And so, I did lose my job because of September 11th and I remain faithful in His Word. I am attentive to His Plan for me and it is revealing itself to me as I state in later passages on my revelation of my calling. And during this time He has instilled in my wife calmness as well with a great supportive disposition.

And so that I do not become boastful, I will only provide you with those examples. I say to you that many things like these are revealed because, when you see with your spiritual eyes and have faith and receive the Love of our Lord, He provides you certain understandings that you have been chosen to receive so to do His Work. He may have provided things to you already. But you must see by faith and belief to see them. Glory be to God.

88. Stress and the Right to Change Your Will

Dear brothers and sisters, stress in your life will destroy you. Stress is the equivalent to the resistance of faith in the Holy Spirit. It is the resistance of true faith in the pace He created you to proceed in and preoccupation with worldly things. The greater the stress, the greater the lack of faith or doubt that the Holy Spirit will provide the fine outcome. Do not worry, grace is upon you. Understand that when you are not stressed, you then allow the love of the Holy Spirit to flow through you and you shall do His Work in His Pace He has created you in. Many of you choose to go in the pace set by others. How much more will you be able to serve others if you select the pace specifically chosen for you by Him?

Remember the mind craves the love of the Holy Spirit and the body craves the mind. When you are stressed, your mind is cut off from that love in proportion to the amount of stress you have and then the mind will wither and then the body withers, until so much stress accumulates in you that you die because you could not receive the Lord. It is like a resistor in an electrical circuit. The electricity always flows to the least resistance wishing to seek its goal quicker with less resistance. So is the love through you by God. And when the resistance is greater and greater to which you were not made to hold, you destroy yourself not unlike when a circuit burns itself out. Remember stress kills everything because there is a lack of faith in the Lord.

So then you must die to that which resists the Lord. And if you have stress in your life, you must rid yourself of it so to accept the Lord fully. If your job is continually stressful even though you love the Lord and are in the mind that you are there to serve others for Him, you must leave that job. Your created God-given pace and place are not within the mortal deadlines and operations of the business.

The key is to enjoy your work within the pace God set for you. For your surrounding preoccupies your mind too much. It is my experience that if you have a job that provides you continual stress, you are in the wrong job. The job the Lord has provided for you is fulfilling and enjoyable in His Love. Even the Apostle Paul in his job, even though he went through so much turmoil, was fulfilled in it and full of love by the Holy Spirit. Now every job will be stressful at some time and many an event in your life will have a little stress to it. I say be stress-free, but if you can allow the love of God to flow through you in great continuity throughout the day, then do not leave your job or that situation. But work on overcoming that stress by changing your belief in your mortal will by receiving the Lord, working for Him, and serving His Children.

I, myself was not created to submit to impossible deadlines in the mortal sense nor money where my quality or full usefulness regularly suffers, but to use my spiritual gifts to encourage and create quality ways to communicate the love of God to others in His Time by receiving His Love

through the Holy Spirit within me. The only deadlines I have are those shown to me by the Lord during my journey from one situation to another—which may coincide with what appears to be mortal deadlines as well. Why do you suppose people call them deadlines? Because, with the amount of stress built up by the time you reach them, you may wind up dead or a little deader. But with the Lord, He shows me the miracle of Him pointing out to me His milestones or lines He gives to me and so I call them Lifelines because they remind me that I am His Child in everlasting life. I cannot serve two masters. God is my master. And so be it with you in your job and in every situation in your life.

Now, many of you believe that stress comes with the territory to get ahead in life or to muddle through in life. I tell you this is a learned behavior from your past and it is not true. The Lord wishes you to live in peace by receiving all the Love He has for you and communicating it to others without stress. Whenever you find yourself stressed, pray right away and begin seeing the signs that the Lord has come to your asking. Instead of acting out of control, serve His Children and become an even greater example and you will feel better.

So, when you are stressed, understand that you are resisting the love of the Lord and you are resisting the purpose of your creation. And so I suggest praying in this liking:

Stress is a thing in my own mind. It is a delusion. I am allowed to change my will to that of the Lord. I was created to receive and communicate love from the Holy Spirit. I will not worry for You Lord will lay the road in front of me that will make the outcome fine. I will leave this worldly situation by having faith in You and all will come out fine. I love You, Lord. Provide me with Your Love and Your Will so I may not question whatever outcome You have for me. In Jesus' name. Amen.

And remember, be cautious of the phrase “it’s just natural” when it comes to doing things. Doing the natural thing may wind up causing you more stress and grief later. We are not interested in doing the natural but the supernatural—meaning not doing the natural mortal way but the natural way of the Holy Spirit. We should equate natural with mortal and supernatural with God.

89. Fanatic Christian and Committed Christian

Many who have had the calling and received Jesus Christ in their hearts become fanatical. Now, I am speaking of those who, when they see you, see only God above and not the Holy Spirit in you, for they are the same. I speak only of my own observations and experiences of only those I have come across. A fanatic of anything appears desperate and is usually one step away from falling into his own demise. Fanatics usually must avail themselves in such an over-exaggeration because they feel a great amount of hopelessness in themselves and sense they are not of much worth, though they are of great worth to God. And because they believe themselves of little worth, they feel themselves of little value to the Lord and His Children. They so desire you with them to affirm them that they will go to enormous lengths to reach you but in irrational manners. They consider you worth saving but they do not consider you as you are. They see not the journey but only the end. Fanatics usually believe that at any moment the enemy will pull

you in or that God will come and dismiss you, when it is usually themselves they believe this of. They usually believe deep down that the enemy pulls with almost as much force as God does, which is greatly delusional. They usually try to force their opinion on you asking you to come to them instead of providing you the love of Christ at your own pace and at your own place. Much of the time they will provide you with just enough information to confuse you so you will become dependent on them and not leave them. You should be concerned and merciful toward these people, though do not spend your lives with them.

Now, the committed Christian devotes himself to Jesus Christ but in rationality understands that we are on a journey and so they see the Lord within you as well as they. The committed Christian is usually fulfilled and content to a great extent within himself or herself. They do not always need you around because they are usually confident in the continuous love of the Holy Spirit within them. They are compassionate to your troubles because serving you is to serve the Lord above and within you. They persevere with you with compassion instead of with indignity (in this case, translated as a form of disrespect). The committed Christian grows to the love of God and exemplifies the love of the Lord.

Now, there is what we call tough and truthful love. But all kinds of love by the committed Christian are done with sensitivity, compassion, forgiveness, and mercy, even tough love. When the committed Christian provides tough love to you, it is because you have shown great pride and arrogance and the direct approach is required in greater amounts. But he hopes that you will come to understand the love of Jesus Christ and he will persevere with you. However, the fanatic Christian usually dictates what you should do in an even more direct manner and provides you an ultimatum in a short period of time and then leaves you when you do not commit in his time, ignoring God's Own Time.

Brothers and sisters, though the fanatic Christian believes in God and may have some faith in Him, do not be yoked with them. They are usually irrational and cannot discern their own will from the Will of God because they are impatient. Now, some who are committed Christians have been called to be direct with you, but in calmness and compassion, not in anger and indignity (in this case, translated as a form of disrespect). Fanatic people are usually angry people ready to control. Committed people are compassionate in their endeavors ready to serve.

Do what a fanatic Christian tells you and you will receive the temporary compassion from them only until you stop doing what they tell you to. Do what a committed Christian tells you and you will receive compassion. Do not what a committed Christian tells you and you will receive compassion, for they will always love you and pray for you. The fanatic Christian discounts you if you do not do what he says. This may make many of you feel guilty. This kind of guilt is not from God. No committed Christian would ever attempt to make you feel guilty to manipulate you into anything. Remember this. If you feel guilt because a Christian manipulates you or gives you an ultimatum, run. But do not be discouraged. Committed Christians abound. Seek them out and you will find them.

I tell you, the fanatic Christian will try to save everyone in the shortest amount of time possible and while doing so will pass judgment on whoever does not follow him. The committed Christian knows that the Lord guides him to bring others to Him who he can and understands

that the responsibility of saving everyone in the shortest amount of time and judgment is for our Lord and Savior when our Savior comes the second time.

Now, it is not I who wish to judge as the mortal does because it is wrong and I disgrace myself to the Lord by doing so, but I do have caution. I can only help guide you back to the righteous path and help you stay on it, as I pray others will continue to aid me in my life time, but I have no right to judge whether you deserve and in what degree. I believe it is right to be cautious of or concerned for certain people within the Church, though they be our brethren, but are lost within the righteous journey to the Kingdom, for if you choose to wear sunshades, it will block the light. But many of these I talk about have brought people to Christ, but many who have heard them have later run from them and from God because of what or how they do. I am not saying stop them for they do in Jesus' name, but understand that entering in with them does not mean you must leave with them as well. Purity is pure and much of what I talk about here is not near purity. So, brothers and sisters, be concerned for them and merciful toward them, for they are our brothers and sisters as stipulated in MK 9:38-41. You may encounter those I describe to you now:

- * Many ask you to give love but they say to you that receiving love is wrong and nearly sinful. They say to you to serve but that receiving is not appropriate. Now, it is indeed better to serve of your own choosing because you love for you feel fulfilled instead of doing so through obligation which results in negative feelings afterwards, but they correlate receiving with selfishness and giving as righteous. This is black and white behavior. If you were created to receive love by the Lord and transmit that love to others and to the Lord, how can you transmit what you have not received? Those who tell you this do not see the wellspring to drink from. They tell you to give love without a source to get that love from. Remember, the more love you receive, the greater the love you are able to give. Do they not know that when you receive love from others, you serve them in great amounts because you make the other feel happy in presenting you a gift? When you choose to receive love from the Lord, you make Him happy. One must always communicate to the other one's wants and needs—not as a demand but in confidence of why and how God designed oneself to be so to be happy. There can never be any servers without others requiring needs and wants to become happy people. We all have needs and wants that God designed uniquely in each one of us to acquire for our happiness in life. One should never be ashamed to ask for what will make oneself happy in life.
- * You may see certain Christians that appear in a constant gracious trance as if through hypnosis. These are those that when you approach them, their faces do not change from a constant joyous expression. They seem to have glazed eyes and glazed expressions continuously or in apparent perpetuity. They tend to see through you as if seeing God somewhere else instead of seeing within you. They appear to see even the one behind you for they appear to look through you. These people may appear great in faith, but may be escaping from a deep hurt or deep anger and are deathly afraid of entering the desert with God. To some they may appear in great faith, but may be one step away from snapping.
- * Many people see things in black and white, light and dark, only extremities. These people I can understand can have great peace within themselves when darkness does not enter their

life, and then they become extremely violent when it does. But the world is full of different shades of gray and are filled with vibrant colors. However, they appear to be color-blind. They too escape from enjoying the creations on this earth within His Kingdom on Earth created by the Creator. They will try to serve you at all costs. Either they will never give up on you by taunting you continuously or they give up quickly when you do not do what they want and turn their backs to you even in passing. Many take the Lord's Word out of context into irrational thinking. They may see themselves as soldiers of the Lord, their only duty to seek the unbeliever and low in faith and convert them in any bad or good way, and can be delusional in thinking that even the greatest in faith is the lowliest in faith. They see satan all around them but in isolation feel perfectly protected by God, as if they are children who believe they can do anything without regard to you. In seeing themselves as a soldier of the Lord, they believe they are to seek out your mortal soul and kill it themselves as a sacrifice to the Lord, and so they become in their own minds, the Lord's mercenary, not missionary. Thus, they do not see in you full of good, but full of evil. As mortals, those who continually seek out evil shall become evil.

- * Many people—evangelists, prophets, spiritual teachers—will speak of the enemy almost as much if not greater than speaking of God. Just in that, be cautious of these people. But be even more cautious of those that not only do this but also will manipulate you through guilt and fear to seek the Lord, as if the mere asking by you to the Lord to receive the Holy Spirit with one word is not enough. They seem to have great faith, but they have little faith. They speak with tongue and ruler, either raising their voices or in condescending tone and pointing at you as if you were not worthwhile. They say the Lord can do miracles, but then they believe that if they do not force you into the Kingdom by their own hand, you will never be saved. Remember, speak evil greater and you shall become greater in evil.
- * Some Christians will act like the dealer on the street corner. They will provide you with a false incentive to reel you in only so they can pitch a sell to you once you are there. These people are dishonest and deceptive though they believe to be saving you. And again I do not say that they have not brought many to Christ, but many have also left later to their amazement because of such tactics. And then they blame the enemy and not themselves. They say the enemy got you and that you weren't strong enough, when all along they were not strong. What many of them see is an empty soul in you and also see you as less intelligent to be able to figure out their ploy. This is also selfish because like a dealer who works on commission, so does this Christian believe he too works on some kind of commission from God, as if the quantity of good works surpasses the quality of the prize. They tend to have a hard time seeing that when their advertent and inadvertent actions by all sorts of communication are representative of the example of Jesus', they speak greatly to others, especially if they first listen.

You then may ask, "Either way, are you still not manipulating?" No, brothers and sisters. How can you manipulate by not shedding your skin? Your mortal will believes you must sell. The Will of God is the treasured goods. Is His Will in you different than His Will in me? Not at all. Has God made a different law for you than for me? Not at all. It is like, in the mortal world, when one turns their head at something they like and wants to buy it. Has the thing in itself enticed them? Did it change its own created characteristics or venture

outside the law of physics to entice? No, it kept its characteristics the same throughout and stayed within the law—that is, it stayed the same way as the creator created it. And did it not still sell? And did it not respect the buyer by not changing because it knew it was worthwhile enough to be bought and that it supposed that the buyer was intelligent enough to ask questions about it so to make an informed buying decision? And then once bought, it made the buyer very happy through its use and thus, it became of great value. But many in their lower faith either believe themselves more worthy than you because they actually feel they are less worthy and in their less worthiness entice you by their own mortal will. Some even get you into familiar surroundings and even ask other Christians to help them surround you as in a pressure-cooker. Be careful because though the aroma brings you in, you may find out later without realizing it that you have been cooking as the main meal all along.

90. True Calling Revealed Further

I have been told this day that I am to minister the sensitivity and love of Jesus Christ to whoever will listen. I must help others see what true worth and value are by way of the Holy Spirit. God has given me a gift of apostleship to set up such a ministry. He wishes for me to apprentice others so that they may teach groups of others. I am to setup a program with the apprentices He sends me and then the Lord will send many to each of them at a single place of gathering. The current church God has sent me to will be the first church to setup this ministry. Other ministries may follow. The Lord has given me the gift of creative communication and so I am to create media programs by way of writings, music, plays, and whatever else He wills me to disciple to His Children. All these things the Lord has taught me and showed me how to do and will further teach me so to do His Work where, how, and when He wishes me to do it.

May you realize your true calling, brothers and sisters. For me, it started general and like a funnel became more specific. Listen to the Lord and He will guide you at His Pace. Do not get discouraged along the way. Pray and listen and it will be revealed to you.

91. Living What I Have Written with Confidence

And now I must continue to live in Christ to what I have written because in doing so, I will gain my balance with less logic and greater faith and so I will become simple-minded as a child and continue to reveal my true self. The more logic I place as a substitute for faith, the more control I wish to have and the longer I stay away from what God's purpose for me. We must emulate Jesus by giving up all of ourselves to God and let known completely in our hearts, "Thy Will be done." And as I abandon my natural self, I will come to know right from wrong and just do what He wills me to do, for I know and have the confidence that I have been selected beautifully.

May your faith deepen further and your logic reason less. Practice and it will become easier. Worrying comes from thinking too much. Gain your confidence in the Lord by way of the Holy Spirit given to us through the resurrection of His Son. We must come to not assume but know forthright that our opinions as we speak in love from the Holy Spirit counts immensely. God wishes for us to be confident on our opinions, not worrying what others will think about our opinions.

- We must come to care very little if we are judged by others or by any human court. We must not even judge ourselves. Our conscience must remain clear, but that doesn't make us innocent. It is the Lord who judges us. (1Cor 4:3-4)
- We must come to know undoubtedly that the Lord will be our confidence (Proverbs 3:26).
- We must come to experience that the fruit of righteousness will be peace and the effect of righteousness will be quietness and confidence forever (Isaiah 32:17).

And how do we gain our confidence? I suggest somehow in this format each day. Pray for His Words before we express our opinion, practice our opinions in love on others, persevere to make good on our opinions by consistently supporting our decisions based on those opinions as this will help define our true identity, and say and contemplate the Lord's prayer every night before we go to bed to humble us.

Amen. Jesus. Amen.

92. Top Reasons of Contemporary Dysfunction

In my experience, three top reasons exist (apart from our specific belief in Jesus Christ) for our personal and cultural dysfunction in today's society—a lack of true identity (worthlessness), a sense of being valueless in society (purposeless), and a lack of an awareness of unconditional love (abandonment through unforgiveness).

Who am I? I cannot know who I am by asking myself. I cannot venture expecting to find it somewhere on earth. I cannot figure it out through natural reasoning, but only by supernatural understanding. If we truly wish to know who we are, we must ask our Father who created us so to be shown by Him and by others who He has chosen to teach us. But as soon as we place others more important than Him, we start to lose who we really are. Our identity can only be truly known while in a personal and intimate relationship with our Father.

Why is there so much hatred toward each other? Why must one person have the need to control another? In my experience, this is because we must possess a sense of purpose which results in our feeling valuable. Controlling is a forced value self-placed upon the person who is controlling. If we feel we have no true purpose in this world, we will create a following of people to provide us this purpose. But if we know our purpose ordained to us by God, then others are not our center focus. And it is not just productivity that fulfills in us a sense of purpose. Productivity without a goal is purposeless, but may be all that some have in their lives to feel a part of something else. If we sense no purpose, it is at least better to be productive. But we provide action via our purpose by being focused in our relationship only with the Father, Son, and the Holy Spirit. Others become our objective to serve because we are driven by the Holy Spirit and we love our Father. And so we always feel valuable because what we do we do for God. Because we have an intimate relationship with Him, the Lord sheds light on our continually evolving purpose each day, which provides us with a feeling of great value each day. When we allow others to drive our lives, we tend to forget our true purpose.

And then there is unconditional love. How can we come to feel unconditional love? There is only one way we can feel and know we are unconditionally loved and that is by grace. Through

grace we know we are forgiven. Through God's Merciful Grace, we know we are forgiven and we feel forgiven because of the Holy Spirit providing it to us from within us. This is how we can have unconditional love and love others unconditionally as well. This is how we know we have been forgiven and how we can forgive others. It is how we know someone loves us so much that they will absolutely never abandon us. God chooses not to abandon us because it would be as if He was abandoning Himself. And on Judgement Day, I as human can only be saddened that Jesus must choose among God's children.

93. Love Yourself

This is how you know that you love yourself: Oh, Lord, I accept and fully believe I am Your Child. And when I am not on Your righteous path—the path that I see you walking with me and paving—I feel cheap as if I bought my own self for a useless purpose.

This is most crucial of all I have spoken, but it is what I hope you now see in you as I see in me from all you've read and came to understand: Dear Lord, first I had to know I was of worth by Your Creation. And now I feel valuable to You, my Father, because I know You love me.

I wake up to You and You hold my hands as I place my little feet on Yours and You kiss me good morning. I love You, Father.

And in our journeys during the day: Come on, Daddy! Come on, we're almost there! Big Hug! Uhhh! I love you.

And at the end of the day You say: Rest My son. Sleep in my arms. I'll carry you the rest of the way. Tomorrows another day. Good night My son. I'm with you always. Dream pretty dreams.

Good night, Daddy! I love you.

94. Leaving the Nest to Face the World (Unveiling the True You for the Lord)

Brothers and sisters, when the Lord called upon me to write, I was certain to remain anonymous for your sake so you may be fully aware of who the true author was. And through this journey of ours, the Lord said to me that I shall place my name as the author so that I may be known so to help you. Still, at that time, I asked the Lord to place Himself in front of me to weather the storms ahead. And He faithfully answered my request. For that I am so appreciative.

But the Lord said to me this day, "You are strong enough My Child to face the world. You glow with My strength and I need you to come out from behind me. I am sending you out so that others may see you very clearly and you will wear My Name, for I Am God. You will face the wicked, encourage the struggling, instruct the mighty, and play with all who are loving. They will see you are from the Kingdom and that the Kingdom is in you. They will know that all you need to do is call My Name and I Am there to see them inside and out. They will know that whatever you ask of Me that is of My Will, I shall provide. And they will know that whenever

you wish to come Home, the door will always be open because you hold the key within you. You are My Child and to that I will make you wise and show you where to go. I will guide you and watch over you, and those that do you harm do Me harm and they will know what true reaping is. And they will know that I await you at your death to give you everlasting life. And they will know your mortal name so that they shall come to know mine. I Am All, the Alpha and the Omega, the All Powerful and the All Knowing, and My Love is My Gift and My Life is My Meaning for all of you, all My Children.”

The Lord is telling me that because I trust in Him, I do not need to fear any person any longer. He has provided me the courage to search and find the true me. He has provided me opportunities, which I took advantage of, to understand my real me and my gifts and my full abilities He has given me when He created me. In my early life, I felt so scared to search for who I really was, let alone unveil any of my real me to anyone else. This was because I feared people rejecting me and ignoring me. In fact, one person seemed so insecure that he couldn't even let his own children be all they could be because, I suspect, he feared that he would seem so insignificant in his children's eyes and that his children would leave him one day. This amounts to the fact that he probably saw his children as a greater hope than him but his children could never know this. My mother is a strong woman. Later in life, she regularly, over time, looked at herself in the mirror and sought greater accountability with a serving heart. However, many of my family seem to have a difficult time understanding who the real me is. They have never seen the real me before and so they believe the real me is some illusion or air I have concocted. But the old me was that illusion, not the now new and real me shown me by God.

When I found God and followed the way of Jesus, God took me through the desert so that I was and still am able to search the true me without fear. I was so scared because when the true me started coming out, this true me was greater than anything I ever imagined. I always thought I was not worthwhile, let alone valuable enough to anyone. In fact, I thought I was going a little mad during this transformation. But I am starting to accept who I am now. And so the Lord said to me that during this infancy of searching myself through Him, it was acceptable to hide behind Him because I was so scared of showing this “other” person to anyone. I thought they might think I was mad. So, I asked Him to be my shield.

And now the Lord has said to me that I am strong enough to face the world because my faith in Him is great and my confidence is high and I've come to know that the “other” person is the true me. The previous person was someone that others created because they needed me that way. It is very wicked what they did to me, but I forgive them. And even more, God has said that now that the current me is gaining so much ground in transforming into the whole true me, I am to take this true me and demand that others take notice. I am to let them know who I am, what I can do for them, and provide me the opportunity to do it in this world. Obviously, I am to do this with respect and in serving others. But in order to reach my full value, I must go out and market myself for God and me in the full confidence and knowledge that I have now. Dreams can now become realities. The question, though, is whose dreams. Mortal dreams are meaningless. God's dreams are meaningful. The difference is that pursuing your own dreams ruins a man. But living day to day allows a man to fulfill the dreams God has for him.

God is saying to me to leave the nest. Go fly. I have you in my hands and I am now setting you free to go do what I created you to go do. Go do. Go fly. I will be with you always where ever you go. I'm telling you to go now, so go! Go with all My confidence and all your true you in that confidence and make your life and your dreams work. You have chosen My way and so now I give to you your choice in creating your own destiny. Choose and go persevere greatly. Plan your dreams and then go realize your dreams. Go, Go, Go! Make the noise so that all the world will know I have sent you! Make the noise so that all will know I can do the same for them if they let me! Go! Go be My beacon of true light and my example to the world and share My love with everyone. Bring them to me so that they will come to know themselves as well. Go, my son. You are My light. You are My angel. Now, go. Go make your dreams realities.

It is now that you can make your own dreams reality. But making your own dreams without the morality of the Holy Spirit within you to guide you is wasteful and unproductive. It leads to misfortune. With the Holy Spirit, the journey, whether realized fully or partially, will be fulfilling from the beginning until your death in this world. And then everlasting life is what you have to look forward to.

What is my dream? My dream is to live a holy and content life day by day. I have found that pursuing my own dreams is meaningless because I wind up leaving alone the Counselor within me. No, my dream is to live life and find contentment in the average hard work of today (Pr 14:23).

95. I Know I am because He Says I am...

My name is Tim. I am God's child. I am a holy son of My Lord. I am the creation with which on this earth God has made me in His image, just like you, to share His fullness and love with each one of His Children.

I am a very creative, intelligent, and loving. I care so much about people. I am a man with great dreams that may come true in this lifetime or, from humble beginnings, will come true in later lifetimes. Because I have God and His Spirit has me, I am able to see, think, touch, feel, educate, perceive, discern, encourage, help, promote, provide, and support others and myself for great periods of time.

And I can only hope that God will allow me the time on this earth to make a great legacy in your life by providing you some form of His over-powering love. When it comes right down to it, all you want to do is love someone so they can come to love themselves. If you can do that, your life is complete. If I can have the opportunity to do that, I will be at rest. My life will have come full circle.

96. The Working Relationship between Heaven and Earth

A revelation came to me today. I used to think that I had an angel and that which was delivered upon me by my asking was a choice between the devil enticing me or God providing me. But I know that the devil has no power over me. What if I die? But during this time, I could not discern and I was going through misery finding the right choice to make. But the Almighty Lord

revealed to me this day that I have many angels as is needed and as I have described in an early passage. Yes, I knew I traveled among angels, but what I didn't understand is that they desire to do things for me by God's command. Yes, God and all in heaven really do love me.

I am telling you I have experienced miracles. I now understand what the Jesus and Apostles were saying. To whatever I ask which is holy, the Lord delivers (MT 7:7-12). And be specific in asking. Not in the way it will happen, but your holy goal. He in His perfection will make it happen infinitely better for us than we could imagine anyway. Yes, I have experienced many miracles and my mind comes up with a variety of holy things to ask in my Savior's name (JN 16:23,24).

I said unto the Lord, I'd like to work in a manufacturing plant to provide some day Pastoral Magistracy, and behold He delivered to me a job at a manufacturing plant by dispersing one or more of His angels. At nearly the same time, I said unto the Lord, I'd like to possibly work with the government to know what a real public servant does, and behold He gave me an opportunity to interview with a government authority by dispersing one or more of His angels. And around the same time I said, Lord I'd like to become a pastor for You, and behold the Lord provided me a school that has a business leadership program in conjunction with a seminary. And about the same time I asked, Lord I want to become obedient for You. I wish to learn the old way through the Universal Church, and behold the Lord granted me a personal interview with a Bishop of the local diocese who founded the local interfaith council, meets with CEOs and administrators of the local community each month, and within one hour referred me to the church's three year lay ministry program starting in six months. I am not there to learn rules and more rules, but to provide enlightenment as an apostle just as they may further enlighten me. I am young and sometimes foolish and it is wise for the young and sometimes foolish to heed the words of spiritual leaders who provide words of encouragement out of love.

All that I asked that were holy, He granted me as He instructed His angels. And they love doing for me because He commands and they love me. That is our working relationship with Heaven. And He provides me choices to decide which to attend and love Him in doing so. Sometimes He'll offer me different places for the same purpose for me to choose. Is that a loving Father or what? If there was any doubt whether I am saved, there is none now for "are not all angels ministering spirits sent to serve those who will inherit salvation? (Heb 1:14) He makes his angels winds, his servants flames of fire (Heb 1:7)."

And now I know what Paul meant when he said not to pray to the angels, but pray to the Lord (Col 2:18,19). It is because the Lord commands the angels. We do not do earthly childish ways from our childish thoughts. We do not have false humility and play off the angels to fool God to get whatever we wish, as if we could ever command angels. We do not say, ok angels go do your legwork for me with no humility and appreciation in taking all creation for granted. The Lord knows what and how things are to be done. The angels in love supply to us through His Commands. They never act alone in Glorious Heaven. What is from Heaven? Ask which is holy and receive and you shall then know at that time.

No wonder it appeared as if I was going a thousand different ways trying to follow the one way that God provided to me that I thought was the one and only way. Now I know He loves me. I

am not torn anymore but am like a Heavenly child in a candy shoppe and I will enjoy selecting. I am so humbled to my Father. Thank you, Father! Thank you!

Father, can I become an angel when I get to Heaven?

97. Bringing Heaven to the World

How will you use your spiritual gifts? Because they were created by God and from Heaven, it is our responsibility to use them to show others on this earth who are less fortunate some portion of what Heaven may look like when they get there. This will make their journey here on earth easier. And it is our responsibility to brighten the lives of everyone around us. We do this by providing everything in our power given to us by God through our Holy Spirit, which we glimpse a little bit of Heaven by. You do not need the greatest talents to send the greatest love. All you need is a caring and loving disposition. I know in myself, as may in you, I have so much to offer, yet so little I have done to this point.

Some are so fortunate, but many, even Christians, are doubting and some sense hopelessness creeping in. So, brothers and sisters, share a slice of Heaven with all of God's Children. Because you see it, God wishes you to show it to them. Remember, it is our responsibility to provide others love so it will provide them hope. And it is more our responsibility as Christians to be the light of the world, a beacon of hope in such a time of confusion for so many others. And by doing this, you too will be even more fulfilled in the love of the Holy Spirit.

One will never know how many lives one has touched on earth until one gets to heaven. The key is to touch at the pace and in the way God uniquely created one. Do not try to be an evangelist if you are not one, but let your everyday words touch others with a loving imprint. Do not try to be a missionary if you are not one, but make it your everyday mission to touch others with love.

98. We are the Morality Keepers and High Managers of this World

Dear brothers and sisters, now I am about to talk of what is sac-secular to the common world. Today, a common anthem is the striving for equality to do whatever and think however we wish. But, when it comes to morality, there is a definite division of moral standard among Christians and it is moral standard that characterizes equal status. I am not speaking on judging others, whether of high or low position. But there is a division nonetheless. There is the self-serving, self-absorbed immoral person, which is the lowliest standard. There are those that believe in God but are not accountable to Him, which is a step above self-serving and self-absorbed. There are those who say they are Christians and believe Christ as their Savior and have a contrary self-serving disposition, which is yet another step up. There are those who are Christians in part time only, which is yet another step up. Then there are those who strive to be full time Christians using God's Grace to persevere with a compassionate heart guided by the love of the Holy Spirit. This is better, where Jesus the Man was beyond the best of men.

I say this because the Christian's responsibility is to be a deposit of morality in the world. We are to set the highest standard humanly possible so to keep morality within the world. Without the Christian ethic, the world would eventually become another Sodom. (Ro 9:29)

This is not a position to be taken lightly. It is a position given to us by God because he chose us to have His Spirit. We are to set an example of morality for the rest of the world by our disposition. I am not saying that we should be prideful and arrogant. No. We know the greater the leader, the greater the servant and the leader of morality is given authority by God Himself. We should “be willing to associate with people of low position (Romans 12:16).” When we do so, it is they who will wind up humbling us. But we should never degenerate our disposition or purpose. It is not we who will succumb to their disposition and it is not they who will succumb to ours. We all must succumb to the disposition provided by the Holy Spirit, but by representing Christ, we must be like magnets to their willingness and curiosities.

And so, brothers and sisters, we see how we are the true managers of this world managing all creations and also people lost from our dear Christ and mentoring those who have faith in Him. Again, Christ manages through us. We manage nothing ourselves. We manage not as business men and women but as men and women doing God’s business. We do not promote aggressive, self-seeking, arrogant people (Romans 1:26-32)—on the contrary. These are signs of weakness. We promote compassionate, loving, understanding yet determined individuals who see work within the Christian relationship of brotherhood. We manage holy from the Word of God. We seek direction from the Holy Spirit and say when we are wrong and ask others to freely inform us if they feel we have wronged them. We mentor in Jesus’ name as we manage and strive to set a standard of true moral living for all to see even behind closed doors.

99. True Calling Revealed Further

The Lord guided me this day. Since my last revelation of my calling, He has involved me greatly further into the church so to learn His teachings and help His Children. This day He asked me to create an organization with three primary functions. The first function is to create by way of Him Christian publications through all sorts of artistic media having to do from the love of the Holy Spirit and provide these publications free of charge to all His Children. The second is to provide consultation on His way of running industry having to do with technological, organizational, societal, environmental, and perpetual benefits as stated in an earlier passage. The third is to provide a Christian social work program. At this time, the organization may be called The Contemporary. Because of my knowledge of and experience in all these programs, I am to become the Director of the organization and Facilitator of the industry consulting division.

Within my calling I am to help businesses run the way of the One and Only Church of Jesus Christ. He has provided me His instruction as He said He would. He has provided me different departments throughout universities, businesses, and seminaries as He said He would. And He has done this through miracles provided to me because I am faithful and attentive in discovering His Plan for me. And I pray and am faithful that He will provide me the funding for His Work when He is ready.

100. Finding the Underlying Message Within a State of Chaos

First we must understand that God commands and controls everything in the natural and supernatural realm. And He commands satan. God focuses on all supernatural, natural, and all else, but satan focuses on the things of men. As Christ says in MT 16:23, “Get behind Me, satan! You are a stumbling block to me; you do not have in mind the things of God, but the things of men.” So, it is satan who has been demoted in the supernatural world as only a pest to men, where once he was an angel in the Kingdom in Heaven. I tell you when God says spiritual blasphemy is the greatest of all evils in the Kingdom of Heaven, He makes good on His Punishment (MT 12:31). So, then we should understand in suffering comes as a lesson. To suffer and not ask why is avoidance of what has happened to open the eyes of the world.

On September 11th, God allowed satan to use certain people to provide a wake-up call to this nation’s industry and its people. And even soon after, supposedly corrupt corporations began to tumble. I am not saying the people who provided that wake-up call did it for our benefit because they themselves more than likely have a great deal of dirt in their soul and thus welcome satan to influence them in a great way. No, evildoers do not do for our benefit out of love, but they do for themselves out of hate. But God allows things to happen for our benefit to teach us a lesson. I pray that those who died in the tragedy are to be in Heaven because of this divine purpose.

But we should understand the difference between the message and the action. When a person is abused, he or she may seek vengeance on the abuser. The action of vengeance is childish and emotional, but all or part of the underlying message is rather clear and within the guidelines of reality. This means that there is some inherent good in the person. The fanatical action may be through murder, but the message says that you have hurt me when I needed love. In the case of September 11th, the fanatical action was murder, but according to the leaders of that action, their message was that industry is becoming an evil empire without much love. Though, I believe the even deeper truth is that again they were saying you or people in their lives have hurt them so much when what they wanted was just to be loved.

But there is some truth in that message of industry. We must see that these people have been so focused on seeking love wherever they go that they will tell us (through evil actions) where there is not much love. Though to them, being fanatical, they choose to see that there is absolutely no love where there is at least partial love. But we must not disregard the message just so we will not give them what they want. Not changing who we are just so we won’t have to “give in” to someone else is childish and irresponsible to ourselves and the many other people who would benefit from our change.

Many people have a difficult time separating the action from the message. We run away from or attack conflict. We run away from people or attack people who are angry with us. We are a world of avoiding people and attacking people. We must realize that the action of the attacker is inappropriate behavior, just as addiction or any other avoidance mechanism, but within each attack or avoidance there is a realistic underlying message or warning that people must understand. And it is our duty as Children of God that we try to understand that message. One who is overly harsh and rude to you may still have words of wisdom underneath if we are mature enough to listen (Pr 15:18).

So, I wish to create by way of Him an outreach program marrying Christian lay ministry with ethical business practices. This can be done by providing consultation to business executives on God's way of running industry having to do with technological, organizational, societal, environmental, and perpetual benefits as depicted through scripture.

Within my calling I am to help businesses run the way of the One and Only Church of Jesus Christ. He has provided me His instruction as He said He would. He has provided me instruction in different departments throughout universities, businesses, and seminaries as He said He would. And He has done this through miracles provided to me because I am faithful and attentive in discovering His Plan for me. And I pray and am faithful that He will provide me the funding for His Work. It came to me to call this Pastoral Magistracy in Business (PMB).

As I have stated in earlier, I said, Lord, I'd like to learn how to become a pastor in business for You, and the Lord provided me a Ph.D. program in Christian business leadership where my studies can be overseen by pastors of the Catholic church. And about the same time I asked, Lord to further fulfill Your plan for me, I want to learn how to be a pastor in providing comfort for Your children. And the Lord granted me a personal interview with the bishop of the local diocese who founded the local interfaith council, meets with CEOs and administrators of the local community each month, and within one hour referred me to the Church's three-year lay ministry program. And in support for me to do His Will and fulfill His total purpose, God gave me my pastor to aid me in lay ministry experience and another pastor who has a business management background and is passionate about Christian business management in the Church.

We should understand in suffering comes a lesson. To suffer and not ask why is avoidance of what has happened to open the eyes of the world. We are a nation ratified by God, but today we are in great number choosing to go a different route than that of the righteous path. And so, He has provided us a wake-up call. This call is obvious by our unity in the September 11th by our hearts and actions all gathering in His Name. So, I am to provide a division of business consultation or teaching for business according to His Law through Pastoral Magistracy in Business (PMB) using principles based on Christian lay ministry and Christian management.

Pastoral Magistracy in Business:

I wish to help businesses run according to Biblical principles by creating an outreach program marrying Christian lay ministry with ethical business practices. This can be done by providing consultation to business executives on God's way of running industry having to do with technological, organizational, societal, environmental, and perpetual benefits as depicted through scripture. It came to me to call this Pastoral Magistracy in Business (PMB).

Conceptually, PMB is to be taught as a joint venture between private or public universities or colleges and seminaries or within theological universities. It includes an administrative missionary philosophy by which people who wish to be spiritual ministers in business are placed within a large company that is in that specific industry of their choice or in a small community center (a chapel of ease, if you will) to provide ethical and moral consultation in both personnel and technological processing/production according to biblical principles. The company or business locale will become their missionary church/community, per se.

Therefore, PMB is a business philosophy that provides psychoanalysis within an industry or business compliant to biblical principles. PMB combines the relationships of people in the workplace in conjunction to the product or service that the business provides all under the biblical process. PMB sees people (personnel and customers) and technology as two independent processes married within the business structure with one common goal and solves problems within each individual process and also the marriage to reach that common goal. It is like individual and marriage counseling but the marriage is made up of people on one side and the product or process on the other. PMB is used to solve personal and technological problems in the industry so both will work in a synergetic fashion according to biblical principles.

For those who want to be a minister as their primary major, their own seminary or Christian University would be their primary institution of learning. In post-graduate work, they will study ministry as it pertains to business with an affiliated public or private college linked to the seminary in some form or fashion or within a theological university. This will be in the form of a MBAPE (an MBA specializing in Pastoral Education). Then, just like a person out of medical school, they will intern with an affiliated company for a time. After internship, they will get their Ph.D. in Christian Business Management or Education and go into professional practice as Pastoral Magistrates (Administrators) in Business (private/public within a secular company or directly within the Church). They will be called upon to manage the corporation/parish in Christian ethicality and morality.

The curriculum can also be used to teach future or existing corporate administrators, who are already within a corporation, biblical principles in relation to their specific industry. This can be done at public/private universities or colleges with visiting ministry professors, or vis-à-vis. They to can get a degree in MBAPE.

This will involve direct inter-denominational and interfaith relations. The primary focus is to bring people to Christ and to serve Him according to His Will. During post-graduate work, it would be beneficial to learn something about the different faiths so the pastoral magistrate can relate to as many people as possible in the business and speak about Christ in a language they can understand. Therefore, the university educational administration may include an inter-denominational and interfaith council on public affairs within the post-graduate program and would most likely include an inter-denominational and interfaith population of students. However, the program would be under the auspices of the Catholic Church.

Our further goal is to have a chapel at our workplace or within our communities for others to come and find our Lord Jesus Christ and ask questions and find answers. On our off-duty (non-work days), we have the existing community church. On our on-duty (workdays) we can have our new mini-parish (chapel of ease) educated in PMB within the walls of the bigger corporate workplaces. We can also have our new village mini-parish (village chapel of ease) with people educated in PMB centered within a square-mile or so for smaller local businesses within that area. These missions will at minimum give guidance in the areas specified above and, by the will of God, come to be supported in part or whole by local business. Each chapel of ease's administration will be under the auspices of the main Catholic parish central to the communities and will be guided by a council made up of affiliated churches already serving that community.

Pastoral Magistracy in Business Specializing in Education:

I believe Pastoral Magistracy in Business Specializing in Education (PMBE) can help solve many of the problems of today's youth in their education and moral upbringing while benefiting the families quality-of-life, as well. Those who wish to specialize in education would go through the same program as in PMB but specialize in education. The village mini-parish (village chapel of ease) would also be a center for educational missionary work within its own specific community. Again the chapel community will be one-to-two square miles. The chapel, itself, would provide after-school education and mentoring for students, in addition to a central meeting place for the community business owners. Pastoral Magistrates will run the chapels. Educational missionaries (from the lay-ministry and volunteers within the community) from the chapel would teach within the chapel and also go to individual homes to teach when children/adults cannot make it to the chapel.

One of the main problems with schools (mainly due to funding) is that they frequently require all that seek their knowledge and product to come to them. They are able to teach the mainstream of students but cannot provide the individual attention to them. The missionary chapels provide new hope for families that I believe will change battered and neglected communities into new and revitalized village communities. One other advantage of such a center is that its staff can better connect with teachers at the public/private schools and, with missionary work, can better understand the educational and home dynamics of each student. With a smaller concentration of children to manage, greater individual attention in school and at home can be achieved.

101. The Art of Pastoral Magistracy

You have heard me speak of Pastoral Magistracy involving Christian administration of business relating to people, technological processes, production, and services and how to unite each. My passion is Christian Business Management providing ethicality and moral structure in businesses by serving the full Christian community in the workplace through knowledge of different religious translations and interfaith mediation. I pray that this will spearhead the development of missions within businesses throughout America. The company will be the Pastoral Magistrate's mission per se, and if possible, an actual chapel should reside there.

Why are there so many Christian religions today? Some may say it is due to disobedience to the first church. Others may say it may be because of corruption within the first church and yet divisiveness was destined to be for a similar reason why God created the different languages due to the building of the Tower of Babel (Gen 11:1-9). And others may say it was due to suppression of joyful emotion over a personal intimacy with the Lord. I have discussed this in earlier passages. But I am not concerned with reasons for prolonged and progressive divisiveness but Christian unity (JN 17:23). I am not concerned with religious rules but the pursuit of righteousness by the Holy Spirit and the rules provided by God Himself.

What is an imperative part of love? Love demands that you go to another's place and empower them in their pursuit of love in their unique pace. Selfishness demands that you expect others to come to your place and obey your rules in your pace so you can arrogantly strive to help them in

their pursuit of love. God has led me to a certain fundamentalist church (fundamentalist meaning out of the Protestant Reformation), but in order to fulfill God's purpose, I must learn and live in the way of the first church as well. Some fundamentalists warn me about entering into the lion's den. Other Catholics warn me to repent for leaving their church. Both say I must be totally one or the other. Yet why is there an interfaith movement in both? My community even has an interfaith organization lead by a Presbyterian minister. It is because there are loving people in all Christian religions who accept the fact that we are all Christians.

In Pastoral Magistracy, I and those who graduate from it will have to serve all peoples. The important thing is that we help them pursue Christ and, by the Holy Spirit, feel compelled to obey the righteous law of Godly living (MK 9:38-41). For instance, I know only the English language. How can I serve someone who only speaks Spanish? I must then learn Spanish. I cannot expect Spanish-speaking people to learn English before I present them with the news of Christ. That is not love. I am not bothered by their refusal to learn English. I am only bothered with their salvation. So, I must learn Spanish. But now you see that I am not slave to English or Spanish but am able to use each to serve more of God's children. So then each language is beneficial to all. No, I am not slave to the language. I choose to learn the language and, out of respect, be involved in the lifestyles of the people who use the different languages so to build them up in Jesus Christ in their way of understanding and help them further along in the righteous journey. I am slave only to God who is the creator of the languages (Gen 11:6,7).

102. St. Peter and the Catholic Church

Dear friends, of all the apostles Jesus could have chosen to start the church, why did He choose Peter (MT 16:15-20)? Of all the apostles, Peter understood Jesus the least. But Peter followed Him in great faith even though he did not fully understand Him. Peter was one of the first disciples Jesus chose (MT 4:18). But at the death of Christ on earth, Peter still understood Jesus the least of the other eleven disciples (with the exception of Judas). Peter even denied Christ three times from the Last Supper to Christ's crucifixion. Wouldn't it have been better if Jesus chose John? John not only understood Jesus probably the most (one can still have more intimacy with another because they understand each other more but still not be known as favorite—but equal—in the eyes of Christ's love for all people) but John also lived much longer than Peter.

As I understand it, Peter was placed as head of the Church because of that very reason. I believe one reason Jesus placed Peter as head was to learn how to love and understand and feel fully that of Christ. If Peter listened to his peers, who understood love greater than he, Peter would become and remain humbled in his position. Peter was not very good at explaining and teaching love, at first, but he then came to realize all that Christ was teaching him by way of the Holy Spirit and by way of those that Christ gave to him.

Peter needed a great deal of love. He was probably the apostle that suffered the most in his childhood and his adulthood. Peter was most likely abused enormously during his childhood. Christ knew this. And so because Christ loved Peter so much and Peter overcame such enormous suffering (MT 16:15,16), He gave Peter the Church and surrounded him with the most loving people on the face of this earth. Even Paul, who did not walk with Jesus the Man, knew love greater than Peter (Gal 2). It is evident that Peter knew a great deal about suffering from his

letters in 1Peter and 2Peter. And how much did Peter suffer inside further after he denied Christ? And, thus, Peter became a great teacher of love. And so it is indeed true that the least shall become the first. What did Christ see in Peter that others had a hard time seeing?

So, what does this have to do with the Catholic Church of today? Friends, most of us can attest to the fact that much of Peter's ways of teaching love have been lost in the Catholic Church throughout the ages. Not that there is not love within the depths of the Church (just as there was love within the depths of Peter as he walked with Christ), but the Catholic Church has not been and still is not very good at teaching true love. Many of you may have asked yourself why I wish to place the Catholic Church as the administrative head of the Pastoral Magistracy in Business and Education program above. This was not planned on my part. One day the Lord said to me to go back to the Catholic Church. I did not understand at the time, but I did it anyway. And I am now a part of their Pastoral Ministries program to help in this regard and unify God's children.

See, Christ is asking the Catholic Church to do as He asked Peter. Be humbled and learn what true love is by way of the Holy Spirit and at the same time surround itself with those different congregations that truly know love and how to teach it. And as Peter was asked to do in order to stay humble, the Church must listen to the others and admit it is not very good at teaching love and, thus, learn from them. The Church must admit it is sinful in this way just as Peter had to admit it 2000 years ago. The Church began doing this with its own lay people recently and some ordained ministers have been able to teach love better. But now it must continue to do this in an even greater capacity. This is not so much a penance as it is an offering to the Catholic Church by Christ because He knows that the Church will wind up finding a greater love if they indeed do this. And in today's time with immorality being exposed, it is the perfect time for the Church to do so. It is a chance for unity of all Christians and a profound chance to progress greatly in interfaith relations (JN 17, Rev 3:1-6).

103. Exercising Today's Glory

I have come to learn not to be too comfortable and complacent where I am now because it may only be a respite in the plans for me according to God. One who follows Christ should be attentive to one's destination allotted by Him and then ask, "What am I to do here for You, Lord?" One who gets too comfortable and complacent to where he is and with the worldly things will have a hard time leaving it when God calls again—that is, if he can be aware of God's timely calling. But when we know God, our time with Him is in the present and He will take care of our future as we follow Him.

Throughout my younger life, I have met and played with several people who have perished—sometimes even the following day. Did they know Jesus? I do not know. Some were bosses, some were friends, some were just friendly acquaintances. I have prayed for them all. Should I trust that they did know Jesus or should I be a beacon by way of my consistent disposition provided by the Holy Spirit within me while I am within their lives?

Each day the Lord provides me people who need His love. When I look to tomorrow, I find myself overlooking the important times I could have touched them today. Today is what

matters. What matters is the consistent focus of who is with me today so that I may communicate Him to them through words and character. I am to take seriously the standard He has placed in me for not only my life (it is already being taken care of) but for the lives of others. A day becomes a fulfilling day by this exercise of Godly focus for others. And when I find moments in the day of a reluctance to do this exercise, I pray and I understand that it is only a moment in the life of one whole day and the moment will pass in anticipation of what is to come.

The sun will set (praise God) and, if it is His Will, the sun will rise again beginning a new day resulting in a new fulfillment by way of a myriad of thoughts, feelings, and experiences from the same consistent exercise of love.

104. Divine Provision and Progression

God knows us inside and out and has provided us all provisions within our own makeup to live a healthy, happy, and Godly life. Until we receive the Holy Spirit, these provisions lay in a more or less dormant state awaiting to be energized by the Spirit. Our Creator allotted us these provisions uniquely for our own divine purpose. Excavating all of them will most likely last at least a lifetime, but it is essential that they are excavated so that our heavenly puzzle known as our holy identity draws closer to completion.

Some may ask if I can return to my old self. I answer, “What is my old self? Do you know?” Though I can retrace my past actions in my mind, the feelings accompanying those actions are now different with compassion and grace. And so I continue to answer, “I have no past to go back to because I know no familiar past. If I become corrupt, it will be a new corruption. And when I find a greater righteousness, it will be a future righteousness built on a present fulfillment of the degree of righteousness I have today by way of the Holy Spirit.”

105. Recipe for Life

Dear brothers and sisters, we cannot expect, besides it being impossible, to rely on and stay under absolute authority of another’s personal view and formula for living a healthy and spiritual life. I am speaking of personal view not God’s omnipotence and absoluteness of authority. Through God’s grace, we are allowed to live holy and the Holy Spirit is just that—holy. Whatever we do by its authority, we do holy and become in oneness and perfection with Christ. But, again, I am going to speak on personal rather than God.

Oh, how so many of us search for the one thing that will make our lives complete—the one book, the one view of another person, the one this and the one that. No, my friends, there is no one personal view that will make you complete. There is no single weight loss program. There is no single book by a spiritual earthly author. There is no single man-made anything that will get over your woes and your feelings of emptiness. There is no single person. There is no single purchase. There is no single view, period.

Why is that? Because my love, they don’t involve you. You cannot feel complete without offering yourself into the mixture. God knows this and so He gave His Son so you can have an

intimate relationship with Him. You are now in the mixture. In our pursuit for oneness with Christ and feeling fulfilled and content, we must first receive Christ. Yes, that is the first thing.

Now, let us speak of knowledge and understanding through the views of others with Christ in our lives for the goal of fulfillment and oneness. I provide ideal time frames for each where the concentration of each is critical and natural, but each can and will most likely be done and experienced throughout life.

The Heavenly Host

My friends, life is like your grandmother's secret recipe made with love for you. Everything tastes better when it is made with love. Yes, so the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit is that love in and throughout our recipe from the beginning to the end. It is what holds all the loving base, ingredients, and spices together. Pray to receive Him at the start of each day.

Ideal time frame: Provided to us at our creation in heaven and is with us in the womb. (Infant baptism seals this gift from God for us on earth and simultaneously our parents vow that the child is God's. The marriage vow either to God or spouse, thus before the child is conceived, is when the parents vow to raise the child according to God.)

The Base

Now, we must create a base. And that base is His Word (1Cor 10-15). We strive to read and familiarize ourselves with His Word daily so to become intimate with His Spirit which dwells within us and thus be able to discern between what is holy and what is not holy.

Ideal time frame: Learned in early childhood by other's examples (0-6 years of age)

The Ingredients

Now, we add the ingredients. We sample different ingredients and see which ones go well together for our special recipe. So, we sample other views and accept from that which others freely give to us what we feel are quality ingredients to promote our well being. (We must not take anything from others against their will). This is opposite of finding a single personal view to change us. In our childhood, our ingredients would most probably be made up of our parents, but not all the ingredients. Other ingredients will come from friends, spiritual leaders (many times from various churches and religions), and other family members. And still some others may come from strangers like authors, television, and daily acquaintances. It's kind of like a scavenger hunt for ingredients. But when we are deprived of ingredients in our life by evil-doers, do not fret because Jesus Christ will catch you up on the ingredients you need. The Holy Spirit within us will educate us. Whenever a person we count on misses the opportunity to love someone as special as you, God makes up the difference. But, at any rate, respect their decision.

But we must remember that everyone holds a piece of the puzzle of life and we should sample as much as possible so that we may add those ingredients which are holy to how His Spirit speaks to each one of us. This is not because the Holy Spirit is incomplete, but it is because our own comprehension or translation of His Message is incomplete. Yes, I did say holy. "My food," said Jesus, "is to do the will of him who sent me and to finish his work. Do you not say, 'Four

months more and then the harvest'? I tell you, open your eyes and look at the fields! They are ripe for harvest. Even now the reaper draws his wages, even now he harvests the crop for eternal life, so that the sower and the reaper may be glad together. Thus the saying 'One sows and another reaps' is true. I sent you to reap what you have not worked for. Others have done the hard work, and you have reaped the benefits of their labor (John 4:34-38)."

By serving and therefore becoming intimate with Christ and as many of His Children as possible, our understanding or decoding of the message becomes clearer. Not only do we seek counsel from God and His Children, but others seek counsel from us because we too hold a piece of the puzzle that is their right to reap from our sowing. We work in this way to become more in one with Him and more intimate with each other. "I tell you the truth, you are looking for me, not because you saw miraculous signs but because you ate the loaves and had your fill. Do not work for food that spoils, but for food that endures to eternal life, which the Son of Man will give you. On him God the Father has placed a seal of approval (John 6:26-27)." Therefore, our ingredients must be holy. Do not just accept whatever someone is determined to give you, but only accept that which is holy. And in turn, only offer to someone else what is holy because you love them and wish to strengthen them in their journey or search or hunt. For Jesus is "the bread that came down from heaven" and our belief in Him and His resurrection for us is the wine. "He who comes to me will never go hungry, and he who believes in me will never be thirsty (John 6:35)." He who believes in His physical presence and who has faith in His promises through His resurrection will never go hungry or thirsty.

Ideal time frame: Accepted through reason or discernment and practiced during childhood (6-12 years of age)

The Spices

Now, then my friends, are we done? No. What are we missing? We're missing spices. Yes, but what is left other than our Lord, parents, friends, spiritual leaders, and strangers? You, my friend, you. You are the spice of life. Add a smidgen of this and a smidgen of that of whatever you holy desire and by all means have fun and with the incredible freedom to do so without any interference from others. Remember, everything and anything you add which is holy is absolutely fine and don't let anyone else tell you differently. Live my friend. Some say other things are the spice of life. No, friends. We are the spice of life because our Lord loves us so much.

Ideal time frame: Acted out during adolescence (12-18 years of age)

Bake and Serve

Cook (reflect) at the desired pace and environment uniquely provided to you by God each day of your life. And then you will begin to notice the savory smell. And then eat (digest and retain) that which you have acquired each day for "He has given you your daily bread (MT 6)." And then use it to feed thousands more. When do we get full? In Heaven my friends, when or if God says we are full.

Ideal time frame: Experienced, then examined and concluded through previous knowledge, and then taught to others by testimonials throughout adulthood (18+ years old)

In reading this book, I, of course, do not expect you to believe everything I say. But it is my desire that you take some of it with you to add to your own ingredients. Yes, take what you will because I freely give it to you and then go somewhere else and find another piece. It is my belief that any church or religion that says that you must follow them absolutely in toto is a religion that has been corrupted by evil. It is only the One Church of Jesus Christ as the Son of God that you must follow in toto. It is we humans who see Christ's church on earth divided because of our own arrogance. But, spiritually, we remain indivisible. This book is my cookbook delivered to me by God. It is entitled, ME, not You. We'll leave who you are up to the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.

106. The Paradox of Life

In my journeys, I have learned that life is a paradox. It is so because God's way and the natural human way are exact opposites. When we are asked to do God's way, we have a difficult time seeing how it possibly can work because it contradicts human nature. But it does work magnificently. And so, this is what I pronounce by way of the Holy Spirit that lives in me.

- ❖ When you want to speak, take the time to first listen.
- ❖ When you want to act, take the time to first reason.
- ❖ When you want to get even, first ask yourself why the other is at odds.
- ❖ When you want to leave, serve even more.
- ❖ When you want to have more confidence in yourself, make greater strides to have more confidence in God and others.
- ❖ When you want more control in your life, give up more control to God.
- ❖ When you want to love someone else, first receive God's love He freely gives you.
- ❖ When you want to place conditions on people, go abide by the conditions God has placed on you.
- ❖ When you want to love someone but only if they do what you want, remember God loves you even when you do not do what He wants.
- ❖ When you want to discern good from bad as an adult, place yourself in the mind frame of a child.
- ❖ When you want to have more of your own time, live more in God's time.
- ❖ When you want to be fulfilled in love, humble yourself and serve others.
- ❖ When you want to become a greater leader, become a greater servant.
- ❖ When you want to cry for yourself, cry for someone else.
- ❖ When you want someone to come over, first go and knock on their door.
- ❖ When you want to seek something new but remain unchanged, let God tear down what is old so you may find what is new.
- ❖ When you want to stop your life from crumbling on a weak foundation, let God continue to demolish it so he can create for you a strong foundation to build upon.
- ❖ When you want to focus on the end, live the journey.
- ❖ When you want to rely on people to be fulfilled, depend solely on Him.
- ❖ When you want to be angry with God and leave Him, remember that God always loves you so that you will want to obey Him even greater.

- ❖ When you want to run and hide, remember that God is with you wherever you are and knows already where you're going and is here and already there at the same time.
- ❖ When you want to be truly meek on the outside, first find God on the inside.
- ❖ When you want a child to obey the law, trust that the child has the law within himself and allow him the freedom to find it.
- ❖ When you want to be free, know your limitations and live within the boundaries God has set up for you.

107. Unifying God's Children through Missionary Work

*“Woe to you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, you hypocrites!
You travel over land and sea to win a single convert, and when he becomes one,
you make him twice as much a son of hell as you are.” (MT 23:15)*

Dear brothers and sisters, throughout this book I have demonstrated ways of uniting us to our Lord through Christ. I have also demonstrated ways of uniting peoples in our everyday relationships. And one of the greatest ways we unite is through missionary work. At this time, I should explain missionary unification as it pertains to all religions, all faiths, and all peoples. We must learn to transcend the boundaries between us.

I spoke before of people being like radios—receiving, translating, and transmitting love. In addition to this, each person works on a unique frequency. Religious centers work on bandwidths that encompass many frequencies. A bandwidth is a range of radio frequencies, which is occupied by a modulated carrier wave, which is assigned to a service, or over which a device can operate. In this definition, the Holy Spirit is like the modulated carrier wave, the church is the service, and we are the devices operating at unique frequencies. We come to operate within the church, which operates within the Holy Spirit. However, people usually do not like to venture too far off from their own unique frequency. Most spiritual leaders have a broader view of things and can come to operate within farther distances from their unique frequency. This broad distance or range is known as a bandwidth. Some may even think of it as a link within a great chain, which I speak of in an earlier passage. But, in any case, people tend to congregate to churches or spiritual leaders whose bandwidths encompass the frequencies of these people. Is this the Holy Spirit compelling you to go there and stay within its unyielding boundaries forever or is this the Holy Spirit compelling you to go there and your fear that asks you to stay there forever if the church is unyielding in its boundaries?

See, life is a growing process. It is a journey. We, as humans, tend to learn more about life and ourselves over time and, thus, gather insights that expand our views in loving matters. This is healthy growth. Unhealthy growth is when we fight this. We then usually wind up grumpy and unhappy people later on with little social skills. So, many times we will outgrow situations or places primarily because the situation or place was unyielding in expanding its boundaries and growing with its congregation. It is then usually the spiritual leaders that wish not to grow and, unhealthily, require you to stay within their own bandwidth. This is selfishness and arrogance. This has little to do with love and a great amount to do with fear of the unknown, especially when the congregation's loving insights has manifested past its old boundaries or is busting at the seams.

The problem is not so much that there are so many bandwidths, but that each spiritual leader may come to believe that their own unique bandwidth is the only true bandwidth. This is arrogant and narrow-minded. The Holy Spirit is a carrier of infinite bandwidth proportions. So then, the question is how can we broaden our bandwidth to the point of even transcending other church boundaries to help further unite one another (JN 17).

Because the Holy Spirit is a mystery, the Holy Spirit holds a great array of definitions and degrees of Christianity based on, “For God so loved the world that He gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life” (JN 3:16). So where does belief begin? It obviously begins before we *realize* we are walking in faith. If one man believes that God created Jesus to provide us His message of His gift of love, is that enough belief to start eternal life? Does belief start at the point we realize Jesus was sent from God as only a prophet or a healer or a counselor or an apostle? Is it enough to just believe God sent Jesus for us, period, so that we may be curious and begin to seek His way? Where is it enough?

Even the greatest of spiritual leaders, I believe, truly fail in realizing just how many Christians there really are in this world. I guarantee you that there are exponentially more than you realize. What is your definition of a Christian? Is it *your* definition or Christ’s definition? Ask yourself this question. Who knows of Jesus and who does not? Then ask yourself this question. Who *wants* to do good rather than do bad, even if they don’t seem to make it a lot? Look around you. The good you see is the goodness that is the result from Christ’s presence on earth even 2000 years ago. The world really isn’t as bad off as you may think.

I spoke in an earlier passage about true belief and true unknowing. Some say it only starts when we realize Jesus to be our savior. But we come to realize this at the start of our true walk in faith. We realize the Holy Spirit within us and then have a compelling faith because we then know how much God loves us. It is then that we truly realize He is our savior. But is it then that we are saved into eternal life? No, I don’t think so. Others may be missing out on the experience of such love, but I believe they have long since been saved by their belief in Christ Jesus. We are all on a journey and at different levels or degrees only that journey. As the Apostle Paul puts it, “Before this faith came (by way of Jesus Christ and then the realization of the love of the Holy Spirit within us), we were held prisoners by the law, locked up until faith should be revealed. So the law was put in charge to lead us to Christ that we might be justified by faith. Now that faith has come, we are no longer (because there is no need to be) under the supervision of the law (Gal 3:23-25). So, we must first believe in Jesus and begin to practice His teachings in order to gain faith. Then we can begin to walk in faith when we realize the compelling love of the Holy Spirit within us.

The question really is, “How far are you willing to expand your bandwidth before enough is enough?”. As we expand our bandwidths along the wave of the Holy Spirit, we transcend many people’s boundaries and we are then able to begin unifying, especially when we find a common denominator. Love is our common denominator, and thus, the human race has a common denominator known as the Holy Spirit waiting to be received by all of us. Thus, we must change our own selves in order to unite all peoples (JN 17:23).

Missionary work is the most valuable and most realistic way to transcend other people's boundaries, as well as our existing boundaries. But we must realize that missionary work only "works" when we use it to broaden our own views and, thus, increase our own bandwidths. See, a great number of spiritual leaders provide missionary work for the sole purpose of spreading the word of our Lord and Savior. This is to provide everyone the chance to receive the Holy Spirit. This is also for our unification. Thus, this must be done first and foremost. But the problem is when each religion "witnesses" as if it is in a marketing campaign to bring you into its own range of views or frequencies, thus, its own bandwidth. This is known as grave arrogance and disrespect for the child of God. Love demands that we widen our bandwidth, rather than sustain or narrow our bandwidth and force others into it. The latter is usually based on fear. Now, I am not speaking of broadening our bandwidth to include what is unholy but only for holy purposes. We do not broaden our bandwidths so that sin may be acceptable. No. We broaden our bandwidths to make room for greater love and holiness in our lives. And this greater love and holiness can be found from other peoples with frequencies that exist outside our bandwidth that is still along the infinite carrier wave of love of the Holy Spirit. We must seek the Holy Spirit wherever we can find it.

Many religions of today and yesterday have sent missionaries for two primary reasons: 1) To proclaim the word of Christ and; 2) To accept all peoples into its churches, but only if these peoples accept in total the absolute authority of the church's spiritual leaders and no others. This second purpose is arrogant. It is not true love, but delusional love. Remember that delusional love is true love mixed with corruption. So, the first mission of proclaiming Christ is true love, but the second mission corrupts the total missionary journey.

What I speak of next is what I believe missionary work within true love is so we can unite peoples of all faiths. The first step in missionary work is to proclaim Christ by our own testimonies so that all will come to believe in Him *in some form* and then be able to seek, find, and *identify* the true love within themselves by way of the Holy Spirit. This is done so we can have a common denominator of true love to communicate to and from. Jesus is the Great Provision toward intimate true love. We must see people as unique planets, we have yet visited, within one great universe. I speak of seeing people as aliens in an earlier passage. In this way, we as missionaries of the church, must take the next step and ask permission to visit and then stay with them as guests on their planet. Sometimes, people see themselves as empty and not even having a planet. Then we must ask if we can help empower them to create their planet through God or find their unique planet given to them by God. Then we must *intimately* get to know them and eat their food (1Cor 10:27 through 11:1). We must find out what is good and what is not good there. We must offer our holy services to help empower them to increase the good and rid the bad (that which is providing them misery), but not for us to fix or pass judgment but only help educate in servanthood to cultivate righteousness and love, if they choose. We must then take the next step and become friends and till the soil together.

And now this is the dividing point where many of us begin corrupting the other. We come to a decision to either force the other into our views or to continue our unconditional love. To continue our unconditional love, I believe we must take the next step and *learn* the love from the Holy Spirit they have to offer us—that is, any of the love they had when we first met them to any new love they acquired while we are there. And then we must take the next step and not over-

stay our welcome and leave, but ask if we may stay in contact. If they ask one of us to stay further, we will, but only if they ask. But leave we must because we must deliver back to the church all that we learned as loving from the other person or people. The next step is for the spiritual leaders of the church to receive this love (which may be outside their bandwidth) and digest it and retain it so as to broaden their scope or range or bandwidth. Then by doing this, that broadening has made their old boundary transcend the other's boundary and unification can begin through loving understanding and loving communication and true respect (Luke 8:15). See, by intentionally providing them only our love (and not *forcing* upon them our points of views) and we accepting theirs, we transcend old boundaries and overlap our new boundaries with theirs. We may also think of this as hooking our link with their link to help unite the chain. But bandwidth boundaries can expand further and further, where links usually do not because they are so rigid.

And so, we see by providing missionary work in this manner, over and over again, the church's bandwidth can grow so large in holiness that it can eventually come to encompass (or unite) most every frequency by our common denominator of love coming from the Holy Spirit. And, at the same time, the church is respecting each and every person and his or her unique frequency or planet. The key is to discern, by counsel of the Holy Spirit, what is true love and how and where to identify it before we even think of asking them permission to visit and stay on their planet for awhile. Otherwise, we corrupt them and their planet.

108. The Book of Life

Life is like a book. The beginning is God in Heaven. The middle is the journey through life in the Kingdom on earth. The end is God in Heaven. I once believed the journey was a series of stops-and-go's. Life is easier when one realizes the journey is just one go until we stop. It is difficult when we try to control life by stopping something only to start up something else over and over again. It is much easier to adjust ourselves to what we are able to see coming, adapt ourselves to whatever comes, accept the good and bad while going through it, and then apply what we have learned for the betterment of others while we continue to re-adjust, re-adapt, and re-accept. At our time of rebirth, we discover a new life and nearly, if not entirely, a time of do-over in our lives. We were led by the law and now that true faith has hit us hard, we are compelled to do right. This provides us a 180 degree turn into wonderful freedom. But remember that now, in what is our continuous journey as we desire to stay along the righteous path, there are no dead-ends in life, only detours. God is good and God and His Infinite Grace are here for all eternity.

109. The Key of Life (Beginning of the Journey)

And so I will now speak of the key of life. This is the key of life: Faith in God and Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit, providing to you the purest love.

110. The Meaning of Life (The Journey)

This is the true meaning of life: Receive love and communicate love always by the love of God and Jesus through Your Holy Spirit and when with others, love others the way God loves you from your Holy Spirit to theirs in everlasting life.

111. The Goal of Life (End of the Journey)

This is the goal of life: To achieve Oneness with the Lord and with each other by way of our Holy Spirits in everlasting life.

112. Accepting Yourself the Way You Are (Finding Stability)

Dear brothers and sisters, we now have come full circle to who we are. In our own search for who we are, in our young arrogance and self-denials, we were but a nearly immovable and heavy rock reaching out to passerby's.

“Can you help me?” you ask. “Can you tell me who I am?” Dear Tim, “Who am I?”

“You are who you are. Where you are is where you are because of where you have come from. Do you like where you are?” I reply.

You answer, “There was a moment in time that I liked where I was. Not so much the place but the feeling, and I was good there. I was good there and I was good at what I was doing there. But it had to end. And so, I was lost again.”

“Why did it have to end?” I ask.

You answer, “Because the job was over. I left the place and my time there ended.”

“Yes, but the question you must ask yourself is not whether the job was over but whether you were over the job. It is not whether the place and time made you ready to leave but whether you were really ready to leave the place and time in your mind.” “My love, some of us find something we like usually because we have taken a risk. But we stay in the mind frame of following people and circumstances. People will prevent us from taking the risk and pursuing our hearts. Circumstances end and cannot tell us where to go afterwards. And so, we remain ever lost.”

“So what do I do? How do I know?”

Dear friend, there are two understandings we must come to embrace in our lives. The first must be spiritual understanding. We must come to embrace the love of the Holy Spirit. This I have spoken about throughout this book. Once we are fulfilled in this love, we transform from the heavy rock we once were in the midst of passerby's to a simple pebble immersed within the constant dynamic mystery of the Holy Spirit. It is then that we determine and feel guided by

God Himself and realize that nothing in our lives was a fluke. The past, present, and future become one—a complete whole—in all its beauty and pain.

And it is then that we can come to the fullness of the second understanding, which is that the way we are and what we have done, are doing, and will do are because of who we are. And if what we do, because of who we are, is being done within the mystery of God's Will, then it must be right. Why is it right? It is right because we, as humans, cannot fully understand either the mystery or where God's mercy and grace end. We cannot go to infinity because we cannot fully understand where infinity ends no matter where we turn. And to each and every place within the mystery, you will find the same constant pure love. Therefore, one place in the mystery is no better than any other place in the mystery. So then where we are is as good a place as any. And if we are within the mystery, we are then within His mercy. Thus, we are who we are supposed to be. Therefore, the second understanding is automatically true once the first understanding has been revealed and realized.

There will come a time when you will investigate yourself, by way of His guidance on you, through tests—God's tests as well as mortal tests—and reflection times between Him and you, and a myriad of experiences. You will be intrigued to know “what makes you tick.” You will read, inquire, assess, and question yourself in a great many ways. You will come to accept all these as useful in your journey. But without the love of the Holy Spirit within you first, you will most likely discount all these in some way and continue to search and search for what is truly missing in your life.

Remember that the acceptance of self within the mystery and mysterious mercy of Almighty God is the best any one of us can be. It is then that we see each other and ourselves as the legacy of Christ Jesus, which is deemed as “love walking.” We then come to find peace within ourselves—through our full acceptance of ourselves within the Hands of the Almighty.

In other words, do this: Accept the love of the Holy Spirit and leave the rest up to God. Because of your belief, you have been sanctified (holy, anointed, and blessed) in all that you do, and you will come to determine righteousness in your own journey and in your own unique way guided by God because He flows through you as you flow through Him.

And so, true love is who you'll truly become because true love is truly who you are.

113. Discovering Your Center (Peeling Away Pretense)

When we come to our center, which is realizing that who we are is just fine and where we are is where we are supposed to be (as I have described in an earlier passage), we then land right at the doorstep of discovering our own pretentious pontification. All of our exterior pretenses and phoniness have been stripped away and we come to our own meek belongings. Who we are is fine with who and what we have become. We have come to a proud and yet humbled moment in our lives where we don't have to prove anything to anybody else but ourselves. And we care very little if others agree with this philosophy or not. We do what makes us happy and holy and, thus, the greater outcome will prevail.

Instead of building on a good foundation and erecting my life from there, I started from a façade I made for myself to help me survive the rejections of life. But I stopped building the façade with God's help and began to unravel every façade I ever created for myself. And this was very hard and at times I felt nearly killed me. But with God's help and the help of others, I persevered and still do persevere with faith and hope. At least, now, I can leave this earth feeling pure and clean with maximum integrity (Ecc 5 & 6).

But facades are like vows ready to be broken (Ecc 5:1-7). This is why we must find ourselves, our center. This is done so that we may be educated in our true useful lot in life and accept it whether we think it is below us or above us and whether it makes us monetarily rich or not. The important thing is that we lived our lot in holiness and as God's will (Proverbs 16:33).

Our natural self thinks of our value towards others. God knows our true hearts. No matter how much value we try to place on anything or any person, we always wind up reverting back to our own inner worth. No matter the market value, the marketed good always reverts back to its natural price. It is how we were created. God is concerned with our true worth—the riches and treasures stored within and not without. True worth is like our central headquarters built at the crossroads of life. Two roads on earth lead from our inner worth to the outside world. One road is known as the road of worldly value to others and the other road is known as the road of righteous value to God. The road of worldly value leads to deserts and more deserts and eventually to endless torment. The road of righteous value eventually leads to green pastures. Our true inner worth is where both roads begin. It is up to you whether you choose to buy your worth as false and cheap leading to only a flashy disposition or choose God and purchase the quality worth that is true and priceless transporting us to a righteous disposition of meekness. If you are on the former road, allow the Holy Spirit to transform your worth so you may encounter the later and live a content life.

Look within. If I say I want to be nicer, I must find that portion of my spirit which contains the quality of niceness. The new find will compel me to show it, independent of other's responses to it. But to be nice without this search compels me to be attentive to the reward I may gain from someone else's affections after the niceness is received by them and then awaiting to react positively or negatively to their response. The first promotes confidence and identity. The second promotes insecurity and a lost soul.

114. Our Compulsion for Holy Procreation (Leaving a Legacy of Love)

Now we have come to procreation. Once we find the center of our true identity, which is love, and this love fulfills us like a spring welling up inside us, we have a compulsive desire to procreate this love. That love, which is created and delivered to this world, is an offspring from God. I have spoken of bringing children into this world in earlier passages, but now I speak of creating a holy child that is not human flesh and blood but of Christ's flesh and blood. This is for those, especially, who will not or cannot have children. For us, the true love of the Holy Spirit compels us to have an offspring, a creation, for God to give to this world. Holy offspring is delivered through servanthood. The offspring is an offering to God Himself and from God

Himself. We sacrifice ourselves through perseverance in creating and raising and nurturing this offspring, even in times of sufferings and turmoil. The Holy Spirit compels us, delivers it unto us, and so we then deliver it unto Him for the world.

What will you feel compelled in holiness to bear for God and create with your own two hands? What will you build to serve God and serve His children? Some buy an automobile and care for it and cherish (idolize) it above what is important in life. They call it their baby. Some create things and call it their creation and idolize it and keep it for themselves all their days. But this is not holy procreation, but worldly procreation. Holy procreation produces a child (some form of physical presence) for God to give to the world.

Holy procreation is when we ask God to bear for Him that which we will give up to Him once born and then send it out into the world after we have nurtured and developed it through Him so it may spread the good love. Worldly procreation does not stem from true love, but delusional love. Worldly procreation is when we bear for us and wish for the product to provide us happiness as we keep it near us all our days. Holy procreation stems from our deep love provided by the Holy Spirit within us. We have a compulsion to procreate love so that it will spread itself throughout the world. And so, as I have said earlier, love is who we truly are. When we come to truly realize this within ourselves, we feel compelled to bear fruit for God and all His creation.

Holy procreation need not result in a human offspring, but another form of physical offspring. Discipleship is a form of holy procreation planting a seed into another to produce a holy person through his realization and actions. Creating a center for educating peoples about God's love is a form of holy procreation. The center will, in turn, produce holy human offspring for God. Any holy idea by way of the love of the Holy Spirit that is produced to serve others in God's love is deemed holy procreation. Immaculate Conception is still alive today, just not in bodily form. Holy procreation, when created within the mind by the Holy Spirit, is a holy idea conceived immaculately which produces that which is holy in physical form to the outside world. Some may call it divine inspiration, but I rather call it Immaculate Conception because our instantaneous impulse is to have immediate and direct focus on whatever is produced is God's and for God.

God commands that if you truly love others, you will set His creation free to serve others. Controlling is the opposite of serving. Control is the opposite of God's way. Nothing is ours but His. We manage and feed for a time that which He produces for us through procreation. So then, we must set all that is His free after the time of managing and feeding is over.

And so, God's command to be fruitful and multiply is by the mind as well as the body as Jesus commands us to spread the Word of God. It is to be a physical form representative of God Himself. For those who cannot have children, provide another type of child for God. This holy offspring, just like a human child, will be your legacy of love to the world well after you have departed. God must come first. And so, we must procreate for God first in our lives in the proper and holy way provided by the Holy Spirit. I say do not just create with love but create love so that it will in turn procreate love later as well. Remember that our minds were made to receive, translate, and transmit His love to our bodies so that they, in turn, will communicate His

love in some form to the outside world. This is in hopes that this chain will continue on for eternity. This in itself is the original form of Holy Procreation.

115. Do the Right Thing (A Full Time Career)

Our willingness predominantly exposes itself in one area throughout our lives—morality. In everything we do, we either do it in a moral way or immoral way. Morality is defined by God. If we focus on an intimate relationship with God through the Holy Spirit within us, which came about by His son Jesus Christ, then all worldly requirements and needs will be provided. This is because, in our transformation into Him, we come to identify with and become one with His Holy Spirit within us. Thus, in our willingness and action within Godly morality, we come to be who we were meant to be. We find what we are supposed to find.

The sacraments are our true full time career. Sacraments are relationship devotionals to God. Therefore, relationships must surpass everything else in this world. This then means that supernatural relationships must surpass worldly relationships. God encompasses all sacraments, so therefore, God is our most highest relationship priority in focusing full-time. Because of our true faith, we work hard at focusing on Him, trusting Him, and learning from Him. We know that by doing this, all else will fall into place in this world because the more we understand Him and ourselves, the more we will overcome the world. Baptism is a supernatural union between God in Heaven and us on earth. So, from our baptism, God becomes our ultimate full-time career. Marriage is a supernatural union between God in Heaven and two people as one on earth. The marriage or family, itself, is our second career that is nearer to full-time, especially when we have God in our lives, in comparison to any other worldly relationship. Within marriage is the supernatural binding between two individuals on earth, thus our dedication to our spouses is part of that full-time marriage career (Ecc 4:12). Then comes our relationships with those we are intimate with now, such as parents, and then friends, and then all others we have responsibilities to for God.

Now then, where do I find the time to be concerned over worldly functions? Where is the time I have to be considered over which earthly job I am supposed to have, what things I'm supposed to buy, or what even tomorrow will bring? These are God's functions to be concerned over. When you choose the moral way in God in your relationships, you give up the concerns on worldly provisions and worldly matters to who and where they belong—with God. Do not be concerned with the job. Be content with the job God gives you. Do not be concerned over this purchase or that. Be content with that which is useful so that you may serve God. Do not be concerned over what tomorrow will bring. Be content with how you live for God today. Be content with all this of the world because they are only provisions to you by God as he deems for you to have. They, in themselves, matter little. When we are doing the right thing in our relationship with God, all worldly needs become sustenance to support our worldly form that encases our spiritual lives while on this earth. It is not the work that is important as much as it is our relationships with God and others within the workplace. It is not our purchases that are important as much as it is our relationships with God and others that our purchases can support our frail minds and bodies in supplying. And it is not tomorrow that is important as much as it is the relationships with God and others that we develop and embrace today.

When we find ourselves concerned only with ourselves, search for God and listen as He communicates His Words to us. In other words, do the right thing. When we find ourselves developing animosity toward others, be the greater servant. Do the right thing. When we want this most specific job and that greatest position, be content with a good job and a moral position. Do the right thing. When we want this thing or that thing, be content with what is useful. Do the right thing. And when we want tomorrow to come quicker, find something that adds love in our lives today. Do the right thing.

I do not know whether you have noticed, but doing the right thing is a full-time career. Be content with whoever you are with now, with whatever you are doing now, and with wherever you are now. As you develop faith and come to identify yourself with the Holy Spirit and realize you are one with it, you will come to be content with it all. You have overcome the world (JN 16:33, 1JN 4:4, 1JN5:4,5).

Once we have come to the point of high Godly morality and become aware that we are overcoming the world, where do we go from there? All our lives we have sought out ways to be useful in this world. We sought out jobs to specialize in expecting them to make us feel useful. We sought out high positions in community and among groups of people expecting to be very useful by way of their gratitude. Everywhere in this world we sought to be useful. But my friends, once you reached high moral ground and represent Godly morality on this earth, you may still try to find your usefulness from worldly things or people. First of all, people don't want your high morals reminding them of their low morals, even though this is never your goal. Low moral people only associate with low moral people. Even the high moral people that obey the law not through faith but because of wanting worldly glory don't want to associate with high moral people in faith.

Morality compelled by faith is genuine morality. People with this genuine aptitude realize that they are or have overcome the world because the Holy Spirit within them overcomes the world. As we develop into synchronicity with the Holy Spirit within us and become one, we realize that we are overcoming the world.

So what do we do now? God created us to be useful. We yearn to be useful. We may have a sense of strong worth by way of the Holy Spirit within us, but we still yearn to be useful. We may feel trapped between Heaven and earth. I cannot, spiritually, return to earth and become worldly but I cannot live in Heaven at the same time either. It is now that you must decide what career do you want to work at and for who do you want to work for—God in Heaven or people on earth (Rev 3:14-22)

What we must come to understand is that, now in our unique place, there is only one above us— one master. He is in heaven. We come under Heaven and are over the earth at the same time. How then do we become useful and who do we become useful to and for? Our job, which God has placed us in this unique position, is the job of *physical* representative, liaison, intercessor, teachers, promoter, and deliverer for God. It does not matter anymore what job you have, though you must have one that helps maintain your basic needs. But we rely on God to do this in any job we select. This is because the job we select now is the job the Holy Spirit selects with us

because we have become one with the Holy Spirit. The type of earthly job is unimportant. Our planning and planning out our career is unimportant. Our worrying about promotion and rising to the top is unimportant. This is because our career now is being a physical representative, liaison, intercessor, and teacher for God to His children on earth. God guides us to the earthly job, whatever it may be. It obviously is a job that utilizes our existing skill. We then go to work for Him. Where is the job and what is the job are unimportant because the earthly job is not our true career. And that is it.

Now where ever I go and whatever I do, I feel useful because my true career is never ending. Earthly jobs end and if we depend on them for our usefulness then our lives are like a roller coaster—all through our lives we repeatedly encounter peaks of usefulness (fruitfulness) and then drops into valleys of futility (fruitlessness) and then rises into peaks again. But when my career is the one I described for God, there is a more stable, even keel. Our usefulness is greatly constant throughout our lives.

Now we don't feel trapped, but freed. We have an employer that we can trust totally and we are freed from the mundane and turmoil of worldly functions. So where do I work? I work between Heaven and earth. I'm both God's messenger and deliver. I stand at the door of the earthly jobs and physically knock for God so that they may have the chance to hear and be delivered to Him. My job is to provide people on earth God's message and then deliver people on earth to God. I like it here. He will send me where I need to go and for however long. It is a fun job now (Rev 3:7-13).

116. Hope and Dreams

What good are man-made dreams? What good is a man-made vision? Neither are good and both are meaningless. One spends all his time pursuing dreams and visions of folly and ignores God and the Counselor within him. God has the dream and God has the vision for you, but we are not willing to give our own up to Him.

Three things matter in the world. Faith, hope, and love and one must not go to extremes in, meaning exploit intentionally so to control, any one of them. Dreams and visions are extremities of hope. Hope is our willingness to rely on God for our future. Dreams and visions keep us from doing that. We become people of great expectations and great disappointments and depression. What good does it do me to have my head in the clouds detached from my body on earth? What good does it do me to have my mind in the future when my body is here ravaging in the present? And one must not be legalistic. What is legalism? Legalism is an extremity of faith. It tries to control the action of faith in God to provide for us. And one must not be caretaking. What is caretaking? Caretaking is an extremity of love. It tries to control the love we have for others and ourselves and the love others have for us.

And all this learning. What good does all this learning do you? Learning the math, sciences, and everything else. There is only one reason that any of it may do any good and that is to aid us in managing that which God has given us. But dissecting, inspecting, and exploiting that which God gives us for the sole purpose to strive to control it is meaningless. This is because all we are doing is trying to understand God so to take away the control of God and place it in our hands.

And all this scientific study is an extremity of nature, which is God in His simplified form. It leads to nothing and nowhere—only to more complexity with which we have neither the means nor time to figure out. And so learning to only advance nature is meaningless.

So then, I say that if you dream it, don't do it. Follow God and the leadings of His Spirit within you instead. Be content with where you are now and what you are now. Leave all dreams and promotion to God. Do not dream of how the future will present itself, but do in the toil of now and let alone the future. You will never be able to plan your life better than God has planned it for you. Be centered in yourself and in your *lifetime*. And be content with being average. When you live in the present and leave the future to God, you wind up managing what God gives you moment by moment. And this is why you were placed here to begin with. Focus on following Him now and be patient. God's plan for you will be revealed in His good time.

**117. I'm Not so Special in Your Eyes, But That's Ok. I'm Special in God's.
(I'm an Average Joe)**

*“If anyone thinks he is something when he is nothing, he deceives himself.
Each one should test his own actions.
Then he can take pride in himself,
without comparing himself to somebody else,
for each one should carry his own load.” (Gal 6:3-5)*

*“Do your best to present yourself to God as one approved,
a workman who does not need to be ashamed
and who correctly handles the word of truth.” (2Ti 2:15)*

God opens the doors that develop your life. Some doors are for sainthood, some doors are for Fortune 500 leaders, some doors are for heroes, but most doors are for the Average Joe.

We must be realistic, sensible, and practical. Some of us are very “feely, feely” people. I am one of those. But we must come to be just as realistic and practical, as well. This is also true in reverse. For instance, if all our lives we have lived as the Average Joe but our minds and expectations are to live as saints or heroes, then we are out of touch with what God has ordained us to be.

I am not a saint in the honored tradition. I am a saint in the average way because I love God. I am not a hero in the honored tradition. I am a hero because I keep on keepin' on through a world that is not so easy but that I can still have some good times in. I'm not a Fortune 500 leader, but then again, I am fortunate to be here to love and know God and share Him with you.

Nope. I'm just an Average Joe. I work in the trenches and walk in the beauty. I like it this way. Life is more fun and the beauty more beautiful because I work hard with my hands and with my mind both in intimacy with God.

See, my expectations of myself were once too high, too out of synch with what God wants me to be and created me to be. I was reaching for the stars because I wanted to be a star in people's

eyes, but I'm no more special to God as a star than I am as an Average Joe. I feel special and more valuable to God as an Average Joe because I *am* an Average Joe. He created me to be an Average Joe. And if its glory I want, the Average Joe gets the glory without even expecting it. Those who are consistently moral and loving and hard working at the same time are the real heroes. These are the people we gauge society by. These are the people that are the "natural price" that all others keep gravitating towards, whether they know it or not. These are the balanced people because they are one with their Creator, with their true identities inside (Proverbs 23:4).

Look back at your life. Are you an over-achiever or under-achiever and still feel out of place or out of synch or out of touch? You're probably an Average Joe, too. We need more special people like you. It takes a great deal more courage to admit this to yourself and become one than it does to exorbitantly reach for the stars or ride the wings of the wind, especially if that is not where you belong. And as we know, this means that there's peace and fulfillment in there somewhere.

Don't expect so much or so little from yourself, and you won't worry so much anymore. Love yourself the way God created you because He wants you like this.

And who are the true heroes? On September 11th, were the heroes those in the towers or those who went into the towers to save them? In the mine in Pennsylvania, were the heroes those in the mine or those who saved them? In the restaurants, are the truer heroes the servers or the ones who bus the tables so the servers can expose themselves? In the media, are the truer heroes those on the screen or the person behind the camera helping the person on the screen expose himself? Who are those in the true light and who are those who remain in the darkness yet in the limelight? True light delivers true righteousness by *exposing* the darkness within those who are in true light. Limelight is false light which delivers false righteousness by *covering* the darkness within those who are in the limelight. Remember that the first shall be the last and the last shall be the first in the Kingdom of Heaven.

One must understand that those in the light who unselfishly, without reward and without accepting reward, help rescue those from darkness are the heroes. These are people who come from nowhere, slip in and help, and slip out just as silently. He does not have to speak about himself or advertise. He is the common man, the Average Joe, who just does his job because God asks him to through the Holy Spirit within. His reward does not come from man, but from God (MT 6:1-4).

Where those in the light and those in darkness meet, God is there within the mix. But on the outside, wickedness lurks. Who was the wicked that lurked around the miners in Pennsylvania after they came into the light? Where were they when the men were in the dark? If they were there in the mix, why know it? How much do they advertise themselves only after the true heroes slipped silently away (Proverbs 27:6)? Who is the real deal and who is false? Who, just like after a battle, came in to strip the clothes and dignity of the dead and dying while always in fear that the true heroes may return to expose them? If you are in the dark and come into the light, strive to remain in the light. Do not be tempted by evil but continue to seek righteousness. Slip away silently and join those who were once where you were and chose to serve God and help

others come out of the dark. Take not riches and fame, but integrity and servanthood. Become the Average Joe.

If I am a teacher, who is the truer hero—me who is Godly who may need to show myself to you in greater glory or the Godly one who makes the chalk who I never see so that I may teach? Who is the truer hero then—the one who makes the chalk who is physically seen more or the Godly one who mines the ore who is seen less so the chalk maker can make the chalk so the teacher can teach? And then who is the truer hero even then—the one who mines the ore who is physically seen more or God who creates the ore who is never physically seen so the miner can mine the chalk so the chalk maker can make the chalk so the teacher can teach?

And what about the Godly person at the end of a grocery line with two items when everyone else has many. The Godly person waits because he is content with his reward. Others who see his patience and Godly disposition may acquire the humility to ask the person to go in front of them. Does the Godly person count on this humility to go in front or is he happy for you that you acquired such humility and then go in front upon your asking?

Who will be the first into heaven? The spiritual leader on stage who has a need to show himself to you in greater glory or the one who made the stage for the spiritual leader? The more one strives to get into heaven, the further in line he becomes. But the more one counsels the Holy Spirit within him to be more like God, the closer in line he becomes. The simpler life one achieves because of God, the closer in line he becomes. The person who makes the mandatory law for you to lead a simple life, has no true faith in you nor God. He will be nearer to the end of the line.

Who is the greater hero—the Godly person who buys you an expensive car or the Godly person who brings you flowers or the retarded person who brings you a blade of grass? The Godly one who buys you an expensive car seeks his own glory. The Godly one who brings you flowers sees the beauty in you. The retarded person who brings you a blade of grass sees the beauty in the blade of grass and wants to give you it because he sees the beauty in you too. In the beginning of the movie, Forrest Gump, one of the most important and beautiful things to Forrest was a simple feather that he placed in a book. At the end of the movie, the feather is released and winds up in your hands. And who created the feather and who created the simple person? Thus, the truer hero than Forrest is God. So then, who is the greater hero—the showy person or the Average Joe, the more intelligent or more simple minded?

So then, I am a teacher. Am I jealous of the Godly simple person because I know I will not be the first into heaven? No, because I must accept my lot God gave me (Proverbs 16:33). Heaven is not a “while supplies last” place. All who believe in Jesus, will be in heaven. Appreciate the simple because they are truly the heroes to us. So then who can I speak to and who can I teach? I can speak to anyone of my own testimony (and not condemn others) without trying to convince them I am right—because it is right to me (Romans 14 and 15, especially 14:22). But I can only teach those who wish to be taught. I don’t have all the answers—far be it—but I am happy to share with those who come and ask. There are a great many more people who want to be parents of this world than wish to truly reside as children of God (Romans 12:1-8).

God wants me to be an Average Joe. He gives me command approval and says, “I don’t need your head in the clouds and your body on the ground and I don’t need your head so in the world and your body afloat. I need both working hard in the fields for me full-time and I will also be your joyful reward from time to time and in everlasting life.”

Thank you, God.

118. The Complete Person (I’m God’s Friend)

Now that we have focused our energies on worth (true faith that God intimately loves us as revealed to us by our intimate relationship with the Holy Spirit within us), we now get into the realm of value (usefulness). It is here that I can go no further because your faith has been found through your own personal relationship with the Lord and your own usefulness to the Lord is a personal perception—what is useful for you to do is between God and you. Who am I to say what is more sacred or not for you to do? Who am I to say that you are lazy? Who am I to say that you need to get out of the boat? You may be out of your boat already. It is terrible of me to even believe that you should be in my boat. All I can suggest is that you consult His Spirit within you daily so that you may rely on faith to be useful servants in some specific capacity. How you do this is between God and you. It is not right for me to judge the degree of your usefulness to God. All I know is that because you have faith in the Lord, you are doing useful things for Him and with Him. Let me only be concerned with encouraging our continuance of both of us in our faith, but let me not be concerned with the way you declare it. That latter concern is reserved for my own personal and intimate way between God and me (Romans 14 and 15).

Dear friends, how do we give all we have up to God? By relying on or trusting fully in faith. What is our maximum output in this area? The best way to give all we have up to God is by not thinking of doing so while we live—but trust that morally we will do the right thing even if we first do the wrong thing. Understanding true grace is the key to all of this. For instance, when we work, we must be fully absorbed in doing the work well. It is then that the results or fruits of our labor will present themselves. If we fantasize about the results of our labor, the results or fruits of our labor will not come because we did not put in the required labor (Pr 28:19).

This is the same when working for God. We must not ask ourselves what we can do for God, but accept that which God gives us to do and then do it morally well. It is then that we truly give all things up to God. Thinking about what and how to give to God without the instilled faith is still a controlling, qualifying act by you. You have preoccupied yourself with things instead of useful action compelled by faith (James 2:17).

What rejects worry better than useful and moral production or labor? Whatever you do, work hard at it and work well in it. Leave promotions, bonuses, and raises to God. So many spiritual leaders focus on reaching heaven that they drive themselves to Him like a fast train heading for some destination. What they do not realize is that God is inside the train. God reveals Himself to us through the Holy Spirit while we are laboring in the useful action by way of morality. In labor we choose God or man, we choose morality or immorality, and we choose ethics or deceit

(James 2:18). God comes out during our labors more than anywhere else. If we wish to be closer to God, we must consistently, morally and lovingly work hard at whatever we are given.

The Average Joe accepts his useful lot in life and works hard at it. The dreamer of folly works hard at avoiding his lot in life. Therefore, the more we focus on God on the outside, the less trust we have in Him on the inside. The greater we work to develop ourselves in mind and body through labor, which produces insight, the greater trust we give God that he will develop us in His image. The more we philosophize about who or what God is, the less we allow ourselves to fully experience God and truly understand Him.

Once we come to emphatically believe and trust that the Holy Spirit is within us and faithfully guiding us, the less God asks us to focus so much on Him in Heaven. Our continuous focus on God in Heaven reveals to us that we fear or do not trust He who is within us. The more we risk in producing useful labor for Him who is within us—He who deserves the best we can produce for by mind and body—the greater trust of He who is in us do we show God in Heaven. God did not send His Son to earth for us to avoid His Spirit within us but to totally accept and trust His Spirit within us. Our heads must not be in the clouds when He is actually here on earth with us. Focus on what is at hand with our Lord here on earth. Pray to God in Jesus' name through His Spirit that dwells within you. God will definitely hear you.

Therefore, in order to give up all things to God, we must focus on our useful labor for Him rather than His outcome for us. The more we produce for Him our useful labor, the more worldly things become unimportant and the more we come to be fulfilled with Him as our lover. Because Christ provided us Himself in baptism so that we may be sanctified and come to know Him in true faith, we will come to find our true identities as righteous and good selves and want to do His work through serving Him and his children, and thus, wind up being His friend. (2Ch 20:7, James 2:21-24, especially 2:23) And it is then that we will truly realize what Jesus meant by:

“You do not realize what I am doing, but later you will understand. Unless I wash you, you have no part with me. A person who has had a bath needs only to wash his feet; his whole body is clean. And you are clean...” (JN 13:7-10)

“Now that I, your Lord and Teacher, have washed your feet, you also should wash one another’s feet. Now that you know these things, you will be blessed if you do them.” (JN 13:14, 17)

“As the Father has loved me, so have I loved you. Now remain in (be engulfed in) my love [within you]. If you obey my commands, you will remain [engulfed] in my love [that is in you], just as I have obeyed my Father’s commands and remain [engulfed] in his love. I have told you this so that my joy may be in you and that your joy may be complete.” (JN 15:9-11)

“I no longer call you servants, because a servant does not know his master’s business. Instead, I have called you friends, for everything that I learned from my Father I have made known to you. You did not choose me, but I chose you and appointed you to go and bear fruit—fruit that will last. Then the Father will give you whatever you ask in my name. This is my command: Love each other.” (JN 15:15-17)

What does it mean to be Christ’s friend? It means that we are completely accepted by Him. Thus, we are complete.

God sent me my mentor, Jesus Christ, just like He told me He would. And His Spirit never left me. My mentor is faithful to a tee. We walked along together as I listened and wrote and saw what he told me and took to heart what he showed me. I became attentive to detail. And now today, God said to me by His Spirit, you are my friend. We shall walk together forever more, My Son, My Compadre, My love.

And you know what? Today’s my birthday. Happy Birthday. I’m 36 and my mother just now sent me a Mexican birthday card. So, I looked up the word “compadre.” It means: 1. Godfather, 2: father of the child (in relation to the Godfather), and 3. Pal. In other words, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. My Father sure can pick ‘em good.

Thank you, God.

119. The M.E.R.I.T.S. Relationship System (A Soul Searching Philosophy)

*“...His compassions never fail. They are new every morning; great is Your faithfulness.
I say to myself, ‘The Lord is my portion; therefore I will wait for Him.’”
(Lamentations 3:22-24)*

I must always remember that God loves me! I am the light of the world. A city on a hill cannot be hidden. Neither do people light a lamp and put it under a bowl. Instead they put it on its stand, and it gives light to everyone in the house.

In the same way, let my light shine before men, that they may see my good deeds and praise my Father in heaven (MT 5:14-16).

Every one of us has the urge by way of the Holy Spirit to want to feel useful to society. We have a need to contribute in some way, i.e Holy Procreation. Without it, we come to degenerate ourselves and feel useless to the point of non-existence. First, I believe, we must feel useful to God and the Holy Spirit within us. This will truly develop who we are and provide us self-esteem and self-worth. I believe the best way to be useful is through obedience. Obedience provides us freedom (as I explained in an early passage) and extends our usefulness to others as well. And if we can use our gifts, skills, and talents in whatever we do, we begin to maximize our usefulness.

When we obey God's laws, we are useful to God. If we use our gifts and talents to understand them even more and want to fulfill them in everyday life, we maximize our usefulness to God. Because all of God's laws are undeniable, we cannot use our gifts and talents to better them. This is why we must use our gifts and talents to understand them greater so to fulfill them greater by just following Him.

When we obey man's existing laws (in our work or relationships, for instance), we are useful to man. If we use our gifts and talents to understand them even more and want to fulfill them in everyday life, we become even more usefulness to man. But because some of man's laws are either corrupt or flawed and thus do not work well, we can use our gifts and talents to better them for man, mankind, and for God. This is why we must use our gifts and talents to not only understand man's existing laws in whatever we do to our greatest extent and fulfill them, but we must go further and better the laws that need bettering by using our gifts and talents. Then we can maximize our gifts and talents and maximize our usefulness to man and for mankind. It really matters little what you do because you can use your gifts and talents to better laws in every field. But does your boss want them bettered? If not, don't better them. Just obey and leave well enough alone. Better yourself instead. Keep the job and go find someone else who wants things bettered in the meantime. Then go *there* to help. (MT 10:11-16, where town can also be company or work house)

But we must first obey God's laws and strive to maximize our usefulness there first. One cannot better man's laws and mankind without using the knowledge of the Holy Spirit first. Remember, as I explained earlier, that the Holy Spirit will provide an enthalpic booster to society through us. If we only offer ourselves without the Holy Spirit, we will provide an entropic booster to society in some other form, thus, degenerating society further. Always provide a morality booster to man's law wherever it needs it in addition to bettering its process by striving for a more Godly process—a process that parallels Godly philosophy of how things work by way of Jesus Christ.

For instance, many people think that we should not be exploring outer space. One reason is that they believe it is morally wrong to place great emphasis on outer space and avoid our own inner space right here. Another reason is because they believe it takes enormous power to just clear the earth's atmosphere, which in essence provides a clue as to not keep pursuing this endeavor. Gravity is a force that "gravitates" everything toward the center of a heavenly body, such as the earth. But God does allow us to clear the atmosphere. But do we go because we are subconsciously or consciously avoiding the earth? This is the same with ourselves—a heavenly body. As soon as we get away from our center of where the Holy Spirit is, the greater we are reminded by the force of the Holy Spirit to go back to it. The sinful action becomes guilt which even becomes shame as we continue to avoid our true selves and move away from it. But because we are sanctified, sin (like exploring outer space) now is known as wasteful and shame need not be there preventing us from coming back to our loving Father (or Mother Earth). This is similar to Adam and Eve feeling so shameful for what they did that they just couldn't feel happiness in Eden when with their Father. But God sent us His Son so that we may have the Holy Spirit so we could come home. All is forgiven.

So you see that the Holy Spirit provides the gravitating force back unto itself for us. If we continue to avoid it, we may believe to escape its grasp but then we become lost just wavering

back and forth with no true direction. It is believed one day that we will avoid this planet so much and exploit outer space that the earth will become a lost concept of not much worth to us and then we will be at the mercy of everything else that exists around us. Do we explore outer space to better understand our own planet or do we exploit outer space for our own greedy progress? In other words, is our integrity in question?

So, then we must utilize our gifts and talents to understand God's laws and fulfill them so that we can better man's laws and mankind as well. The following is my own general provision for daily usefulness. The specifics are up to my own way of doing by way of my own God-given gifts and talents. I pray God instills in you, yours. It is not something I do legalistically but from faith in serving God.

Introduction

First of all, I must realize that God does not ask me to step out into glory. He shows me my life and then asks me to accept it. He does not ask me to be a perfect saint, but to be someone who strives to be morally perfect or perfectly compassionate. Strive is the key word here. He does not ask me to *be* perfectly moral but he does ask me to *strive* to be perfectly moral. I can never be perfectly moral because I am human but I can continually strive to be.

So then, with this is mind, God only asks me to do what is simple and basic and not complex or over-the-top. He asks me to be who I am and strive to do good in His name. I believe He asks me each day to fight the basic good fight and leave any promotion to Him. This basic good fight of Godly usefulness can be expressed in a simple system of progressive activities throughout the day. I call it, the M.E.R.I.T.S. System (merit being another word for value or usefulness).

By doing any small part of the M.E.R.I.T.S. System each day, I believe I can be rest assured that I have been useful to God in some way today. My faith compels me to do at least an increment of a part of one activity in this system, thus attaining some usefulness in my daily life.

Also doing more than what the system suggests may be fine, but I must be careful that it is not just Godly gravy. I do not wish to get mixed up in Godly gravy because it usually means I must forsake relationships with others or myself. Most Godly gravy is for show and does others and myself little good. I don't wish to over-extend myself, but be content with my basic life.

I do not have to go overboard in our giving or doing. I just "do". But the true usefulness is when I do each step with the counseling and truly intimate relationship with the Holy Spirit within me. In other words, each step must come from the heart.

I may wish to repeat the process during the day, and for variety, do a different type of activity within each step (ie, meditation the first time around and fasting the second time around in the RELATE step) or do more than one activity at the same time in each step. Also, I usually eat three main meals a day. At these meal times, I may wish to start the system again. What is important, though, is to complete all five steps in sequence before doing the system anew. Just be leery of the Godly gravy. I may have the ability to repeat the process several times during the day as a natural and unhurried progression of our daily goings on. This is great. But I realize

that I am not in competition. I am not in a race competing with another for the checkered flag. If I can repeat the system seven times to your one time, that makes me no better than you. But if my seven times takes me out of my natural rhythm and your one time is your natural rhythm, then you are actually *better-off* in living a content and satisfying life than me. And I must realize that quantity does not make up for quality.

My personal goal is to find balance in my own personal life

. I have been given a unique and natural pace and place in time by God that is never to be judged by any human, including myself, whether they or I think it is right or not. I must accept my individual useful lot in life and the way God created me, including my own self and my own lot.

Merit is another word for value or usefulness. This system continually repeats itself through life. The period where I go from Step 5 back to Step 1 is known as rebirth, renaissance, resurrection, or reawakening. Worth (my intimate relationship with the Holy Spirit within me) must be associated with each step in the merit system. If worth is not associated or involved with each step, the system is useless to God and everyone involved. The greater the worth is involved in each step, the greater my merit (value, usefulness) (1Peter 4:11).

I ask myself. If the Father is the mind where all things come from and I am the body, how does God take care of me? (JN 6:32-40) How is the Holy Spirit within me useful to God and how well can my soul rest if the body does not follow obediently? (John 14, 15, 16, and 17; Psalm 23:3; Eze 18:4)

The M.E.R.I.T.S. System can be used in all areas of my life. First I'll illustrate how it can be used in God's relationship with me. Then, I'll illustrate how it can be used for one-on-one relationships, running a business or work area, small groups or organizations or family, and neighborhood restoration.

The M.E.R.I.T.S. System is also based on offerings I give freely to God because I love Him. But at minimum, I believe the Sacred Offering should be practiced as well as possible each day. "The Lord said to Moses, 'Tell the Israelites to bring me an offering. You are to receive the offering for me from each man whose heart prompts him to give.'" (Exodus 25:1-2) "Then have them make a sanctuary for me, and I will dwell among them (which alludes to the sanctuary of me that houses the ark that secures the Holy Spirit within me where no wickedness can touch it without being destroyed). Make this tabernacle and all its furnishings exactly like the pattern I will show you." (Exodus 25:8-9) Thus, God will teach me what and how to furnish myself and my soul in His love by way of the Holy Spirit (the Testimony) which I am given when I ask to receive it. When I ask for His message and guidance in the Sacred Offering, I meet with Him at the ark and His power is unleashed with me and through me by way of the Holy Spirit. "There, ...I will meet with you and give you all my commands..." (Exodus 25:22)

The other Various Offerings given here are only some of many types of offerings I can give to the Lord, just as the Lord commanded different types of offerings to Him during Moses' times in Leviticus 1:1-7:21.

If I do the M.E.R.I.T.S. System on a daily basis starting with having a relationship with God and then for each of the other offerings as well, I will increase my quality of life substantially and seldom be bored with life. But it is when all this becomes second nature (or really first nature) and you do not have to think so much about doing it but you just do it that you will be happy that you are you. You will come to love yourself very much and become one with God.

M.E.R.I.T.S. SYSTEM

THE SACRED OFFERING

God and Me (Exodus 33:12 through 35:3)

M is for MINISTER to the mind and body. The first thing God may do is to feed separately that which supports my faith: the mind and body. The mind is He who protects me and provides me His message through the Holy Spirit by way of His Son's resurrection (John 14:20). The body is me in physical mind, body, and soul.

Pray to provide a channel in receiving God's daily message to me. (Exodus 33:12-13, MT 6:5-13, MT 7:7-8)

God nourishes the mind (Holy Spirit) through His very essence provided it in transmission (Exodus 33:14; Hebrew 1:14).

The body is nourished by our physical minds receiving the very essence of God via the Holy Spirit. (Exodus 33:15-20).

E is for ENGAGE the mind and body simultaneously. The second thing I must do is engage mind (Holy Spirit) and body simultaneously in some form of useful action. I transpose or translate the message I received from ministering into everyday useful language that is easy for me to understand (Exodus 33:21 through 34:26).

R is for RELATE positively with my soul. The third thing I must do is relate to my soul via my physical mind and in a positive way by utilizing my spiritual gifts. I must be useful in morally promoting good and Godly relations with my soul during the day—whether at work, home, or out in public. This means I must connect with my soul first. This can be done through meditation and fasting. (Exodus 34:27-28 first sentence, MT 6:16-18).

I is for IMPACT my soul in an intimate way. The fourth thing I must do is be determined to do something special for my *soul* during the day. I may have received a specific message within His essence God has sent me. I begin communicating this message within this essence to my soul from my physical mind. As I continually communicate God's message with that essence via my physical mind to my soul in that useful translation (via chanting or in some other way), I eventually impact my soul by faithfully (remember that Godly faithfulness is absolute trust that what is provided to me is absolutely good for me plus that of obedient action) following God and

communicating that specific message to my soul. The messenger must not go over-the-top but quietly give the message intimately for the soul to gain the most impact with God's essence. (Exodus 34:28second sentence – 34:32, MT 6:19-24)

T is for TRUST the Spirit within . The next thing I must do is to take the time to trust the Spirit within me. This is my time to “soak in” the day, have some fun and get your mind off things and let the Spirit within me take over. By allowing faith to take over, I will witness for myself the automatic good deeds compelled by faith alone and commanded by the Spirit and, thus, rediscover my inherent worth. (Exodus 34:33-35, MT 6:25-34)

S is for SLEEP so you can rest assured. The final thing I must do is to reflect upon the day, thank God, and then be able to rest with the assurance that I have truly received and now believe what is required of me by my Maker. It is here that, at the end of the day, my physical mind will come to know, unequivocally, that my soul received the message while the powers of the body are restored. (Exodus 35:1-3; MT 11:25-30).

VARIOUS OFFERINGS

The following offerings follow the format of:

Plan my day according to the message to include the different places I will be practicing His message. (Exodus 35:4 through 36:7).

Start my day and work hard according to my plan striving to have a Godly disposition wherever I go. (Exodus 36:8 through 40:33)

Trust solely the Spirit within, not concentrating on the work at hand. (Exodus 40:34)

Reflect and thank God and rest my soul with the assurance that I have truly received and now believe what is required of me by my Maker (Exodus 40:35)

Repeat the M.E.R.I.T.S. System (Exodus 40:36-38)

PERSONAL OFFERING

One-on-One Relationships (used in any environment)

M is for MINISTER to the mind and body. The first thing I must do is to feed separately that which supports my faith: my physical mind and my physical body.

I nourish my mind through activities such as critical thinking, learning, and/or contemplation. For instance, finding the message that God sent me in the Word is a daily exercise which feeds my mind.

I nourish my body, or structure and organs, through physical exercise, cleanliness, regular essential medical upkeep.

E is for ENGAGE the mind and body simultaneously. The second thing I must do is engage my mind and body simultaneously in some form of useful (translated in a way that is easy for me to understand and practical) action. This can be done by putting the message and translated Word into a morning action plan.

R is for RELATE positively with others. The third thing I must do is relate to other people and in a positive way by utilizing my spiritual gifts. I must be useful in morally promoting good and Godly relations with people during the day. I must associate with others for my own well-being, as well as theirs. I do this by, let's say, eating breakfast together at home as a family or elsewhere with a friend or co-workers. (MT 5:13-16)

I is for IMPACT another in an intimate way. The fourth thing I must do is be determined to do something special for at least one other person or another of God's creations sometime during the day. I may use the message I have learned to impact another person in a positive way, possibly by giving a special intimate little gift that reflects that message in some form to someone that I thought of while planning my day. The importance of impact is to be respectful and empathetically give someone something that he or she would actually like to receive, not be judgmental and give something I think he or she ought to have. The other importance of impact is to try not to go over-the-top but quietly give something little and intimate, just enough so someone knows that because I care and I love God and have faith in His love for me, God cares for them as well. (MT 6:1-4)

T is for TRUST the Spirit within . The next thing I must do is to take the time to trust the Spirit within me. This is my time to "soak in" the day, have some fun and get my mind off things and let the Spirit within me take over. By allowing faith to take over, I will witness for myself the automatic good deeds compelled by faith alone and commanded by the Spirit and, thus, rediscover my inherent worth. I may wish to do this on the way to work.

S is for SLEEP so I can rest assured. The final thing I must do is to reflect upon the day, thank God, and then be able to rest with the assurance that I have truly received and now believe what is required of me by my Maker. It is here that, at the end of the day, my physical mind will come to know, unequivocally, that my soul received the message while the powers of the body are restored.

WORK OFFERING

Running a Business (which can also be used for worker's areas)

M is for MINISTER. The first thing I must do is to feed separately that which supports my faith: my mind and body. In the case of running a business, the I as a worker of the business am one of

the minds. The structure, lot and all equipment associated with it (such as the facility, accessories, parking lot, furniture, company automobiles, etc.) is the body.

I nourish my mind by workers meeting together each workday and apply critical thinking, learning, and/or finding the message God has sent me somewhere in the workplace.

I nourish the body through general maintenance, cleaning, and/or upkeep of the facility, equipment, etc. when I get to work.

E is for ENGAGE. The second thing I must do is engage my minds and body simultaneously in some form of useful action. This can be done by putting the message and translated Word into a working action plan.

R is for RELATE. The third thing I must do is relate to other minds and bodies and in a positive way by utilizing my spiritual gifts. I must be useful in morally promoting good and Godly relations with others daily, weekly, or monthly. I must associate with others for my own well-being, as well as theirs. Therefore, I must meet others in my neighborhood/firm and freely offer to assist them with the upkeep of their businesses/work areas by using equipment from my businesses/work areas. This can be done for neighborhood businesses/work areas as well as client's businesses/work areas. Trade organizations, national and neighborhood, come into play here. Note that neighborhood trade organizations can be created for any trade or common denominator (i.e., secretary, facility maintenance, etc.) even if each business in the neighbor supplies a different product or service. This is also where trade outreach ministries come into play as well.

I is for IMPACT (INTIMATELY). The fourth thing I must do is be determined to do something special for at least one other business daily, weekly or monthly. I may use the message I have learned to impact another person in a positive way, possibly by giving a special intimate little gift that reflects that message in some form to someone that I thought of while planning my day. The importance of impact is to be respectful and empathetically give someone something that he or she would actually like to receive, not be judgmental and give something I think he or she ought to have. The other importance of impact is to try not to go over-the-top but give something little and intimate, just enough so someone knows that because I care and I love God and have faith in His love for me, God cares for them as well. For instance, if I see that my business neighbor/worker or client has been relaying in some fashion that he needs to get a new desk for his secretary (or a pen holder for his desk), when we're out together, I may buy him one from my company account/paycheck that he picks out in a catalogue or retail store without placing it as a gift at tax time. The workers of the business utilize the desk (pen holder) which directly affects the upkeep of the business (the body).

T is for TRUST the Spirit within . The next thing I must do is to take the time to trust the Spirit within me. This is my time to "soak in" the day, have some fun and get my mind off things and let the Spirit within me take over. By allowing faith to take over, I will witness for myself the automatic good deeds compelled by faith alone and commanded by the Spirit and, thus, rediscover my inherent worth. So, now I can enjoy the results of my labor and the body can

savor it as well. I may wish to hang banners, or buy something new for fun (like Christmas ornaments). And then I leave the workplace and rest as the body (business/work area) does too.

S is for SLEEP so I can rest assured. The final thing I must do is to reflect upon the day, thank God, and then be able to rest with the assurance that I have truly received and now believe what is required of me by my Maker. It is here that, at the end of the day, my physical mind will come to know, unequivocally, that my soul received the message while the powers of the body are restored.

As I repeat the M.E.R.I.T.S. System with each of my neighbors and myself, the businesses will be maintained or restored beautifully.

GROUP OFFERING

Family, Small Groups and Organizations (used also for rooms under the same roof)

M is for MINISTER. The first thing I must do is to feed separately that which supports my faith: my mind and body. In the case of small groups or organizations, I as a member of the group or organization am one of the minds. The structure, accessories, and equipment (such as the facility, accessories, furniture, etc.) is the body. (The small group or organization can be the family and body the residence) Possibly I am now home with my family or at a social function after a hard-days work.

I nourish my mind by the members meeting together periodically (daily if at home, or periodically if at a social function) and apply critical thinking, learning, and/or finding the message God has sent me somewhere in the group gathering.

I nourish the body through general maintenance, cleaning, and/or upkeep (chores). (It is important to note here that the portion of a facility that is utilized by a group or organization should also be maintained by that group or organization—even if it means taking up a collection for new light bulbs).

E is for ENGAGE. The second thing I must do is to engage my mind and body simultaneously in some form of useful action. This can be done by putting the message and translated Word into a gathering action plan.

R is for RELATE. The third thing I must do is relate to other minds and bodies and in a positive way by utilizing my spiritual gifts. I must be useful in morally promoting good and Godly relations with others periodically (daily, weekly or every two weeks, for instance). I must associate with others for my own well-being, as well as theirs. Therefore, I must meet with other groups and organizations or families which either reside under the same roof or elsewhere and freely offer to assist them with the upkeep of the operations by using equipment from my group or organization. Note that small groups or organizations can be created for any common denominator and, thus, can supply different products or services. This is also where outreach ministries come into play as well.

I is for IMPACT (INTIMATELY). The fourth thing I must do is be determined to do something special for at least one other group periodically (daily, weekly, or biweekly, for instance). I may have learned something about myself while I was ministering to my mind that I think would impact another person in a positive way, or I may give a special intimate little gift to someone that I thought of while planning our day. The importance of impact is to be respectful and empathetically give someone something that he or she would actually like to receive, not be judgmental and give something I think he or she ought to have. The other importance of impact is to try not to go over-the-top but give something little and intimate, just enough so someone knows that because I care and I love God and have faith in His love for me, God cares for them as well. For instance, if I see that another small group or organization has been relaying in some fashion that they need to get new carpet for the room they utilize, then when the groups or organizations are out together or in contact, I may take up a collection to buy them some new carpet or donate new carpet that they pick out. The members of the small group or organization utilizes the carpet which directly affects the upkeep of the group or organization (part of the body).

T is for TRUST the Spirit within . The next thing I must do is to take the time to trust the Spirit within me. This is my time to “soak in” the day, have some fun and get my mind off things and let the Spirit within me take over. By allowing faith to take over, I will witness for myself the automatic good deeds compelled by faith alone and commanded by the Spirit and, thus, rediscover my inherent worth. So, now I can enjoy the results of my labor and the body can savor it as well. I may wish to hang banners, or buy something new for fun (like centerpieces) with others in the group. And then I sleep and rest as the body (group or organizational structure, equipment, etc.) does too.

S is for SLEEP so I can rest assured. The final thing I must do is to reflect upon the day, thank God, and then be able to rest with the assurance that I have truly received and now believe what is required of me by my Maker. It is here that, at the end of the day, my physical mind will come to know, unequivocally, that my soul received the message while the powers of the body are restored.

NEIGHBORHOOD OFFERING

Neighborhood Restoration (also used to participate in other family’s neighborhoods)

M is for MINISTER. The first thing I must do is to feed separately that which supports my faith: my mind and the body. In the case of neighborhood restoration, I as a resident am one of the minds. The structure, lot and all equipment associated with it (such as the house, accessories, yard, furniture, car, etc.) is the body.

I nourish my mind by meeting with other residents on a regular basis (daily or weekly, for instance) and apply critical thinking, learning, and/or finding the message God has sent me somewhere in the neighborhood gathering.

I nourish the body through general maintenance, cleaning, and/or upkeep of others residences and the neighborhood common areas.

E is for ENGAGE. The second thing I must do is engage my mind and body simultaneously in some form of useful action. This can be done by putting the message and translated Word into a neighborhood action plan.

R is for RELATE. The third thing I must do is relate to other minds and bodies and in a positive way by utilizing my spiritual gifts. I must be useful in morally promoting good and Godly relations with others periodically (daily or weekly, for instance). I must associate with others for my own well-being, as well as theirs. Therefore, I must meet others in my neighborhood and freely offer to assist them with the upkeep of their homes and yards and equipment by using equipment from my home. The gift of craftsmanship is greatly utilized here. This can be done for neighborhood homes as well as friend's and family's homes and neighborhood common areas.

I is for IMPACT (INTIMATELY). The fourth thing I must do is be determined to do something special for at least one neighbor sometime during the allotted period (daily or weekly or monthly, for instance). I may have learned something about myself while I was ministering to my mind that I think would impact another person in a positive way, or I may give a special intimate little gift to someone that I thought of while planning my day. The importance of impact is to be respectful and empathetically give someone something that he or she would actually like to receive, not be judgmental and give something I think he or she ought to have. The other importance of impact is to try not to go over-the-top but give something little and intimate, just enough so someone knows that because I care and I love God and have faith in His love for me, God cares for them as well. For instance, if I see that my neighbor has been relaying in some fashion that he needs to get a new hose, when we're out together, I may buy him one that he picks out. The residents utilize the hose which directly affects the upkeep of the yard (part of the body).

T is for TRUST the Spirit within . The next thing I must do is to take the time to trust the Spirit within me. This is my time to "soak in" the day, have some fun and get my mind off things and let the Spirit within me take over. By allowing faith to take over, I will witness for myself the automatic good deeds compelled by faith alone and commanded by the Spirit and, thus, rediscover my inherent worth. So, now the I can enjoy the results of my labor and the body can savor it as well. I may wish to watch television (fun programming), or read a book, or have a barbecue with other residents. And then I sleep and rest as the body (neighborhood residences and common areas) does too.

S is for SLEEP so I can rest assured. The final thing I must do is to reflect upon the day, thank God, and then be able to rest with the assurance that I have truly received and now believe what is required of me by my Maker. It is here that, at the end of the day, my physical mind will come to know, unequivocally, that my soul received the message while the powers of the body are restored.

As I repeat the M.E.R.I.T.S. System with each of my neighbors and myself, the neighborhood will be maintained or restored beautifully.

120. Oneness

I realized that I can never become one with God while thinking about becoming one with God. You either do what there is to do or you do not. Either the mind focuses on the now, which is where the body is. And from there you do. The only thing to think about is doing whatever you do in a useful way within God's code of morality and ethics, which if you love God you will strive to do.

I must get off the merry-go-round. Because we are sanctified, we need not worry about becoming one with God. God will take care of that through the spirit within us. Yes, the only way one can become one with God is by understanding how God's morality works and then reenact it. But we must accept just who we are and stop focusing on what God expects of us. If we want to be one with God then we must trust that God will take care of that exercise while we strive to do what is morally right (even though and even when we mess up and will mess up on many and many and many occasions).

When one has a friend in God and God chooses you as His friend, then there is no more trying to meet the expectations of God. My friend will die for me to see me become completely in love. So if it is needed, God will die for me all over again so I can become complete in His Love. So then do not worry, just do. Focus on what needs to be done now.

Will all my ideas in this book come to fruition (Proverbs 19:21)? Possibly some day in some way and in some form or another. All I know is that I have planted a seed for you the reader. But will I be heart-broken if they do not? No, not at all. Ideally these ideas would be good and come to wonderful fruition. But the real world is full of exhausting laws and I'm ready to just do my small part. Let someone else try to save the world. Maybe by writing this book, I enhanced the world and your life just a little bit. And that's good for me. What more can I ask of myself and do for you? Yes, here within these pages is my great contemplation and contribution to society. Maybe, even, its my last ditch effort to reach you who have decided to turn away from Jesus Christ. It's time to enjoy life because life's too short to try to change it all or even figure it out!

As a child you did not worry. As a child you did not even strive to think to meet God's expectations until an adult placed that in your mind, which then got transported to your soul. You trusted that God would take care of it all and all of you, if you even contemplated that at all. You knew somehow that God was there and you subconsciously relied on that fact. The Christian adult consciously contemplates and contemplates and at the end realizes that he did not need to even start contemplating. But he had to convince himself of that.

When you are in the light, there is nothing wrong with you. You are good the way you are. It is unfortunate that so many cannot see that in themselves. If they could, they'd leave us alone and stop trying to change us and themselves. But one must follow the law in order to find the freedom once the law has become part of who he or she is. Then he can surpass and not worry

about the law because he now trusts that what is good within him will come out during his works.

Yes, to be one with God we must stop trying to be like God by thinking how to be like God. We must connect with the Holy Spirit within us, listen, and then just do what is needed to be done (James 1:22-25). Let faith turn into absolute trust. We must totally and unconditionally embrace and accept that God accepts us the way we are. No more contemplating. No more trying to figure things out. Just accept who you are, where you are, and what is given to you and what is around you (no matter what anyone says). Take a chance on the opportunities that come your way, even if they don't fully pan out. And by all means enjoy life. Thus, faith and good deeds has now turned into total and unconditional acceptance which leads to a rich and fulfilled enjoyment of ourselves and whatever life has to offer.

We should have as much fun as possible throughout life in a morally responsible way!

121. I AM The Right Thing

You know what's a sham? The more you *try* to please God, the more shame you can feel when you mess up. We're not here to *try* to please God, we're here to *follow* God. What kind of self-righteous people do we think we are *trying* to please God? What are we doing? Trying to do what is right in the degree to counteract what we did that was bad? What am I doing? Bargaining with God? Trading goods? Haggling until *I* feel ok again?

Find the good balance. Stop concentrating on being moral and trust that you are moral—that you are a good person yourself. Then just do what needs to be done rightly. *That* is what pleases God! And that is the difference between living through law and living and being saved through faith.

Stop trying to please God! Let God take care of you! Stop trying to do the right thing! Just live life and do whatever thing needs to be done. Your needs are now your wants because He has you and you have Him. You will do the right thing.

Stop trying to be an example to everyone! Just live your life! I was not placed on this earth to be an example for you but only to exemplify Him the best I can. And if you see me as an example for you, that's your obstacle, not mine.

When you work for your boss, you are in his time. Be obedient to his wishes. And when you are not working for him, it's your time to do whatever you want. See, I am *not* a saint! I will work overtime sometimes, but I want my time too. This goes for every single relationship I have. And if you work for an unrighteous person, work your 40 hours and go home! That's 35 more than he or she deserves anyway. You've certainly done your share for him or her. Life's just too short! But if you do stay, stay for you in the pleasure of God.

I always thought that I needed to pinpoint the one thing I can do well in life and make a big splash. I was so confused because it so happens I was given a gift of being able to do many

things well. Which one should I choose? But God provided me the uncommon reasoning. Come on? Really, get real. I was given an incredible gift of being able to do so many jobs well so that wherever He sends me, I can just do it! I need not worry about jobs. All jobs are good and all jobs are readily available. It is not which job but doing the job and doing it for Him that is important.

I'm over trying to being self-righteous. Forget that! You know why? Because I'm not self-righteous. I talked earlier about just doing the right thing. Well, you know what?

I AM "The Right Thing"!

And I do what needs to be done!

If you don't like it? If you're angry at that? Oh, well! I am not a dumping ground for your trash or your judging? Go sell trash somewhere else! This buyer

is

CLOSED!

If it sounds like I'm angry, you're damn right I'm angry! You know why?!

John 15:18 through 16:4

I do not hate the earth, I hate that which is in the *world* that so impregnates those who are now as adults so in the *world* too because they now choose it over Him to the point that they pick at me and try to execute me and therefore, pick at God who is in Heaven and who dwells in me as well (1JN 2:15-17). I have had to deal with you ever since I can remember! And your lousy fruit as well (MT 12:33-37, MT 17:7, JN 15:1-17)! Your fruit I can see as ignorant. But you are

arrogant! Who is Jesus to you?! Leave me! You have no reward you're trying for to be sought here. Oh, but you'll get a reward! You'll get the reward I'll provide you from God Himself!. But you may not want it. So be it! Be gone then! Flee me! Move it and move on buster! You've made your choice! See, I'm no saint, buddy boy! I'm only the messenger. Don't even *try* to kill the messenger! Try it and you'll get yours right from the mouth of God Almighty! (JN 13:16)

Luke 6:20-23 and 6:27-36

JN 5:43

JN 16:7-11

122. Good-Bye Decrepit Souls (Choosing Life)

*“A man who strays from the path of understanding
comes to rest in the company of the dead (Prov 21:16)”*

I have accepted that some will go to heaven and some will not. Life is too short and the time has come. Let the dead be dead and let the living dead seek wisdom from their own dead. The saving of everyone is hardly my desire anymore. Keep the low in faith from the temptation of evil when in your presence, but gather up and live with the living. Love the living. Find joy among the living. (1JN 2:18-27)

If you who are dead have now come into some faith by your own reprieve from God Almighty and thus now wish to ask me who is living how to live, then so be it. But I offer you and initiate nothing on my own. You arrogant people and you who have evil in your hearts, I leave you alone to eat from your own decrepit kind. (MT 8:22)

You are worse for it that I am gone from your grasp and your cities because hope was who I was, but you must now pay the price for what you have purchased in the evil death. I am going to live now. Those who sought to exasperate me and still will come after me, crumble at my feet. Beg for scraps of food to sustain your evil desires. But none you will get from me, I have none to offer you. If you are lucky, my Father will send you some food of His own before the Day my Lord appears, which is really very soon. (1Peter 4:17-19, Jude 1-25, Rev 22:20)

All my life, I have cried for you. “Come, people, come!,” I’ve cried (Eph 5:14). And the louder I cried, the fiercer you became and the more indignant. So, now die unto yourselves. I love you because I—a noble and good person—was with you for a while, but it is time for me to go now. You have made your decision and I have accepted your loss.

And now Christ says:

“I am the wedge that comes now between you and them.

Go now and follow my Father.

And Do Not, Never, look back.” (Rev 22:7-11)

Dear Lord, I had left my immediate oppressors long ago in your name to begin my pledge to you. And because I followed you even then, now I see the world for what it is and it is death. It kills itself over and over again and yet still wishes to continue on in its own cog of sickness and decay, enviousness and destruction, abuse and torture, arrogance and denial. I want nothing to do with it. I was a light in its sickness and now I am a light in your light. Darkness is so dark now as I look into it that it is void of any light whatsoever since I have gone. Nothing is there. Its torment is torment, its hell is hell, its void is void. And though I walk through the roads of righteousness in the midst of evil on earth, my life is beautiful to me and I see a silent pain from those that scream but with what they produce no sound, as if they were behind a glass wall of impenetrable strength and fortitude. I see them but I can no longer feel them. I have gone from them. Their choice is their choice and their doom has been delivered to them.

Good-bye decrepit souls. Your scratches from your long and lengthy fingernails on the other side of the glass are the last I see of you as you all keep falling and yelling and falling and yelling into the depths of despair (Rev 21:6-8). "Save me, Tim, save me!", you keep crying. I can see now that I am no savior and could never fill those shoes, but I was denied and I denied myself this freedom. God is your savior now. May He relieve you of your evil desires and likes.

I have come to love you with an open heart and a kind word. If you do not wish to do the same, I leave you to God Almighty. I am through with you. You have your chance and you refuse to take it. So be it! (Rev 22:12-16)

I live in the light. Do you want to live in the light? Then get up and ask Jesus Christ and walk into it! (Rev 22.17) Life is too short to be treated less than what I have and am treating you. (MK 12:29-31)

And I await my home and the day soon when my grief will turn fully to joy, for its journey has already begun (Rev 21,22). "Amen. Come, Lord Jesus." (MK 12:34, Rev 22:20)

Where Our Roads Diverge

{A prayer to a stranger}

May God be with you always and may you find happiness on your own road of life.

And so my grief is done away with. I feel no guilt, no remorse, and no shame to leave that which once hindered me well behind. And so my life begins down an open road.

It's a command from God Himself that I'll never forget!

123. Vows

In all my years, I have seen vow after vow broken. Time and time again. And I have seen vows of men who have thought they were making vows to God, but it was for themselves promulgated to other men. But in any case, I can only speak for me and do the following that is in my own heart. I am speaking to myself in the following.

- A vow to God in baptizing children must stand. But the vow of baptism into a church is disgraceful to the Lord. Those who baptize their children into a church of human will wail with suffering on suffering. Children are to come out from behind the church veil and follow only the Lord who is within them and around them. (1Cor 1:13-17)
- Stay out of the condemnation churches. It is the sickness of disgrace in the name of the Lord Almighty. It has made trade with the world of yesterday and today. Even its traditions are not of our Father in Heaven but of traditions of generations of men in power who have forsaken God. It is the prostitute giving birth and enabling children to stay children of men. (1Tim 4, Rev 17, 18)
- Be careful when considering a church of the grieving leader or prophet. This is a leader whose mother and/or father were unfaithful in supplying the love to them that Christ supplied and supplies and still yet has made no repentance. They give you great words but do not practice them well because they are still concerned with their parents of today and not on their One True Parent. They require to be noticed, to be a great shepherd in the eyes of a hurting flock, but obedience to even others is distant in their hearts and thus they do not even know their own limitations. They become greedy using the Lord as an excuse. If they are married, they do not even obey their spouses and their spouses are a saddened lot because of it. Thus, their own family is in disarray. How can one whose family is in disarray be a good shepherd for the Lord? Be attentive. Find out if the Godly wife is genuinely happy. If the Godly wife is not genuinely happy, how can the leader present the church as a bride? (2Tim 3:1-9, 2Peter 2) I have first-hand knowledge of this from my own earlier experience.
- Leave your mother and father and follow the Lord even if your mother and father have yet left theirs, in body or mind. To those of whom their own parents showed them little love and thus they have made you like parents to them, they have chosen to abandon their sons and daughters in the name of the Lord. Love them but you must leave them and follow God only. This is the command of the Lord Almighty. Some have left you outright and some lean on you like how a mother smothers her own child. Either way, they have abandoned you with their own selfish ploys leaving you with the difficult task of toppling them off the pedestal of sovereignty you have placed them at. The Lord says to you that you are therefore following a false god (Exodus 20:3). Leave at once and follow the Only True God and leave them to their own misery. (Eze 34)
- Leave those who rather see you in their church than with God in Heaven. Follow the One True God and leave the lawless to their own distorted laws. (2Peter 3:14-18)

- The Son is coming soon. Leave all who question the light to their darkness and follow only the One True God. (Rev 22)

Question not one of these vows in mind or heart. Do what is to be done and leave the rest to the Creator of Creations. In the name of Christ Jesus. Amen.

124. Just Being Human

My Father Asked Me

My father sat me down one day when I was young and told me something I'll never forget.

“Tim,” he said, I’m going to give you four scenarios to choose from:

“Number One:

You can cry for others *at the footsteps* of humanity as an observer and never accept that you are human and never take the risk of being happy.”

“Number Two:

You can enter humanity and cry for others while *in their footsteps* and still never accept that you are human and still never take the risk of being happy.”

“Number Three:

You can enter humanity and cry for others while walking *alongside their footsteps* and still never accept that you are human and still never take the risk of being happy.

“Or Number Four:

You can do one, two, or all of the above while accepting that you are human and taking the risk of being happy.”

“First of all, which is better?” he asked.

“Number Four seems better.” I replied.

“Then answer me this. Which is better—at, in, or alongside others?”

Many years later, I went to my father and answered him.

“Father, I have definitely found Number Four to be better. At times I am required to keep to myself, at other times I am required to walk in another’s footsteps, and at other times I am required to just walk alongside others.”

“Yes. And have you accepted that you are human, as well?” replied my father.

“Not really.” I answered. “I feel I must still be perfect.”

“Then answer me this. Which is better—crying for others, being happy yourself, or accepting just being human?” asked my father.

Many more years later, I went to my father and answered him.

“Father,” I said, “it seems to me that you can cry for others, be happy yourself, and accept just being human all at the same time.”

“How do you know this?” he asked me.

“Just the other day I cried because I was so happy just to be human.”

“So now,” my father replied, “are you happy yourself?”

“I am more relieved than happy. But I want to feel happy too.”

“Then answer me this. Whose footsteps have you observed or walked in or walked alongside?”

Many years later, my father came and said to me.

“You seem a lot more happier these days, my son.”

“It’s because I figured out the answer to your last question.” I replied.

“And what is that?” he asked.

“That wherever you decide to step, *first find your own feet and then step*. And, by all means, leave a good imprint.”

Just Bein’ Human

There is nothing you can or will ever do
That will make God ever leave or stop loving you.

Cheat, steal, or borrow,
Love today or hate tomorrow.

If one moment cloudy and the next moment sunny,
Cry because it’s sad, cry because it’s funny,
Or maybe because I’m not working and I ain’t got no money.

Do you think I’m lazy or I’m crazy, to live with all this feelin’?
Yeah, but it ain’t no way to live when you’re either low and on the floor
or just keep hittin’ that high ceilin’.

You gonna keep all that control and keep judgin' you and me?
Or are you gonna give it a go in some sweet and decent ambiguity?

Trip on a stone, Throw me a bone.
Write when ya wanna, Sign it "Love, Santa".
Whatever you do, do it whateva,
Just do it in love and soon you'll feel betta.

But if you don't, that's ok,
He'll still love you either way.

And if you slipped and if you fell,
It's probably because you slipped and probably because you fell.

Who knows the why, the how, the what, and the who?
Just keep on doin' that thing that you do.

Then when you're gone you can look back and say:
"Well, that was nice. I pulled down my pants and slid on the ice."

So, just do your best to love one another,
Show some love to your sister or brother.

Because if God is perfect, then He knew what He was doin'.
How do you give up all you've got?

By Just Bein' Human.

125. Judging for Thyself

There comes a time in a man's (and I assume in a woman's) life when he understands two things. The first is that God loves him so much that He created him human and that he is who he is and who he is *is* just fine for him and God. Thus, he has come to define himself because God accepts him as good just as he is and thus he accepts himself as well. He has now become one with himself and the creation that God created. The second is that, once the man has found who he is, he can judge for himself what is useful and proper for his own life and no one else's.

When the second thing is realized, he does not feel compelled to judge others and try to confine others to his own interpretations or translations because, now that he accepts himself under and with God and he knows that God accepts him fully, he can now accept others unconditionally in the way they are. He can look at others and say, "How you believe and what you do does not fit within my beliefs and that's ok." Previously he continued to look at his own shortcomings and said, "How dare you judge me! Who do you think you are?!" And then he would even contemplate getting even. But all this previous thinking was his own judgment placed on others as well—only because he felt insecure and not right in some form with God.

When we come to take account of ourselves and work with God personally in finding our own true identities, we come to a point in our lives where we need not judge others anymore. And we need not judge whether we are good, bad, right, wrong, insecure, secure, or anything else. We know that God accepts us unconditionally and that we are sanctified and then we can accept ourselves unconditionally. We give up the control because we do not fear anymore. And so the only judging we do is to judge whether something is good for ourselves or not good for ourselves. But that is not necessarily any true indicator of if it is good for others or not. I do not need others on my side now because I know for certain that God is on my side no matter what.

We now come into pure and true faith because we have pure and true faith that God is in control and He knows what He is doing. And then we can take life as it comes and fully trust ourselves to adapt to it in goodness and in a loving heart because our Holy Spirit and us are real loving and inseparable buddies. We do not have to place rules and expectations on others because of our once perceived fear that our own world may crumble if others do not do what we think they should. And we do not have to fear that, if we do bad, we will be responsible for others going bad in the world because of us or that we must sustain being good so others won't fall from grace because of us. And we do not have to fear others judging us because we know that they do not have any power whatsoever to condemn us because they have been given absolutely none by God. And by condemning us they just keep reinforcing their own shortcomings anyway.

We will come to understand that because we are sanctified, others will just have to deal with their own lives and reap their own consequences for not permitting themselves to impel down that road of love and everlasting wealth for their own selves. I am now confident that whatever comes my way, *God and I* can handle it and find a way of producing some form of love out of it.

One should always question themselves in, "How much do I love God and how much do I fear God?" If we do everything because we fear God and fear His judgment upon us, we will wind up blaming or judging ourselves. If we do everything because we love God and still fear His judgment upon us, we will wind up blaming and judging everyone else and try and save them—but the true fact is that we are really just blaming and judging them for our *own* shortcomings. But if we do everything because we love God and we know with out a doubt that we are sanctified and He loves us unconditionally and will never leave us no matter what, we will judge neither ourselves nor others. And we will live a content and peaceful life. The only judging we will do is judging *for* ourselves whether something is good for only us or not.

The other day, a man was telling me about his aunt who happened to be a nun. He wrote to her and asked her if she would be going to heaven. When the aunt replied back, she said that she hoped she would be but was not certain because God was the final judge. When the man read her reply, he was astonished.

"These Catholics! They're not even Christians. They're not even saved. I'll be seeing her over Thanksgiving," he said. "I can't believe a nun doesn't know that she's going to heaven. It says right in the Bible that she is sanctified. It's terrible that my aunt, who is a nun, isn't saved. I'll have to go witness to her so she can be saved."

I replied, “But she’s our sister in Christ. She obviously believes. Will you be going there to save her or enlighten her to what you know in your own heart? It seems to me that you are judging her. Now, you can either go there and place judgment on her or enlighten her to your own understanding and interpretation because God knows what is in her heart and if she believes. That means, even according to what you’ve said earlier, that she is saved even though she doesn’t realize it. But now you say that she must realize what you understand in order for her to be saved. Be careful of whether you are showing love or disrespect.”

“So I’ll ask you again,” I continued, “will you go to her in judgment or enlightenment? In my opinion, going to her in judgment could possibly be worse than she not knowing she is saved when she really is. This is because you judge on purpose and she chooses to be in full submission to the final decision of God Almighty. I suggest you testify to what you know for yourself without expecting her to respond the way you desire. That’s all you can do. Respect her right to believe and act in Christ the way she sees fit. And besides, even if she doesn’t respond to you, will you be satisfied knowing yourself that she is saved? And, like so many even in the many churches, I suggest we stop passing judgment on our Catholic brothers and sisters.

Ask yourself what it is about you that you yourself do not realize, but that God will enlighten you with when you get to heaven.

We must come to understand that the more we interact with people wishing to really understand them, the less judging we will do. The greatest of those who judge are those who judge not by experience but as an excuse not to experience.

126. Temper Tantrums with God

Why is it not happening when I want it to happen? Why is it not happening how I want it to happen? How can I trust that it will happen just as good or better than I want it to? How do I know that I won’t suffer if it doesn’t happen my way?

Everything happens in God’s time and in God’s way. He does answer our prayers, but will you have to go through some suffering along the way? Possibly. But the true question is that will your impatience create more suffering for yourself. One must understand indubitably that:

I am the right thing and I live life knowing full well that God is looking after me all the time through every occasion according to His plan for me to be revealed at sometime.

127. Embracing Change

In our needing to control our surroundings, we come to fear that which we will never be able to control, and that is change. When it comes to environment, the opposite of control is change. Is God controlling change? I assume so, but this is of no matter because our dwelling on the issue is meaningless. We cannot control change because that is how we were designed. Only God can control change. Even when we think we are controlling change, change is a direct effect from the cause of our incessant control. Trying to control change is a form of insanity and it is

rampant. We must come to accept change, embrace change, and delight in change. Then we can delight in God.

A woman wakes up in the morning and sees herself in the mirror to see how many more wrinkles she has that day. She weighs herself to see if she is getting fat. What can she do to have that perfect body? What creams, ointments, pills will she take?

A man wakes up to find that his stomach is a little bigger. Thoughts roll around in his head like, “will she still love me and will she still be attracted to me or will I lose her to someone else?”

All these are sure signs of insecurities. What are insecurities? Insecurity is a feeling that we do not fit in and that we are a piece of some other puzzle—but not the puzzle that everyone else is part of. Insecurity also results when our mind, body, and Spirit appear divided or disconnected from each other in some form. Our body is what it is, but our mind refuses to accept it while our Spirit embraces it. Total and complete well-being is when our mind, body, and Spirit become one.

This is the same with change. Our body must go through changes, every moment of everyday. It must go through its own physical change and must experience changes in our outside environment. Nothing stays the same, though it might appear so. There is only one certainty, apart from God’s love for us, while we live our journey together, and change is that certainty. So, if it is impossible for our bodies to avoid change, then it is impossible for our bodies to avoid the “now”. Our Spirit of God lives in the now but can also know the true future if it is God’s Will. Therefore, our Spirit is with us in the now and can definitely be preparing us for the future (though it is much harder to prepare one for the future when one’s mind is in the past). Our mind can live in the past or in the now but cannot live in any true future. Therefore, the common denominator of time that our minds, bodies, and Spirit can live in together, and thus as one, is the “now”.

The point is that we must come to accept ourselves as we are now and embrace it. If God knows our future and the Holy Spirit is preparing us for it, then we must come to accept that the way we are now is how we are supposed to be. Therefore, God loves us even now and we are always in His puzzle. We are always a piece of His puzzle every moment of every day.

If every year I take out the same artificial Christmas tree and hang the same bulbs in the same place, the tree loses its luster over time. But if I buy a real tree each year and decorate it with the old and the new ornaments, then my lackluster turns to stimulated intrigue and joy. If my wife has a wrinkle she did not have yesterday, I embrace that wrinkle. She is a new woman with the same foundation. She intrigues me and I find joy in her change. If she gains 10 pounds this month, she is a new woman with the same foundation and again, she intrigues me and I find joy in her change. Do I want the same woman I married? Why should I want the same woman I married when I already had that woman when I married her? I enjoyed her then. Who will I enjoy today? A woman only gets more beautiful with age because positive change is a joy to experience and I get to freely reap the benefits.

What is positive change? Positive change is any change that is not a change toward the immorality of oneself. Everything else is a positive change and should be embraced. Gaining 10 pounds, is neither immoral nor moral, but only a physical change within the facts of everyday life. Physical change can neither be moral or immoral. Therefore, it should be embraced as a positive change. Learning not to judge others or oneself is probably the greatest of all moral changes and thus, is definitely a positive change.

The changing operations of our workplace, again, should be seen as a positive change as we trust our employers, and thus, we should adapt and change with it. And again, the change in technology is neither moral or immoral. Our focus should be on our relationships with each other and the technology when questioning morality. Our main question should be how to maximize our moral usefulness when in any relationship.

Remember, the world will shame you into believing that a physical change is immoral because the world desperately fears change, in addition to desiring monetary riches. A physical change is never immoral. What is immoral is to place shame on people for themselves physically changing and the environment around them changing. Can a physical change result from immorality? Yes, but one must understand that physical change and environmental change come about by moral or immoral thoughts and actions just as good “genuine” deeds automatically result from faith in God. One cannot control physical change and one cannot control good “genuine” deeds. Physical change and genuineness are automatic results of our connectedness and well-being. The greatest well-being one can have is when one’s mind and body are intimately one with the Holy Spirit (pure love) within. And since the body has absolutely no choice but to experience the “now”, the only well-being of oneself is when one’s mind can honestly accept and embrace the genuine reality of all that is in the “now”, including one’s own physical body, one’s environment, and the Holy Spirit within.

The past is gone, the now is here, and the future awaits us.

128. Trust

Psalm 113 through 118

This is one of the greatest pieces of advise I can give to you.

First trust others and they will come to trust you.

First serve others with a trusting heart, and they will come to serve you with an equally trusting heart.

Because now we have an intimate relationship with the Holy Spirit and know for certain in full trust that God will be with us through good, bad, and everything in between and we will come out just fine in the long run, we know for certain as well that if others exploit or take our trust for granted that we will still come out just fine because we have God and He has us. Now there is no fear in trusting others. But for our own sakes, we must have faith in others just as God has faith in us that we will come to know Him and exercise His love.

In today's world, the majority have a difficult time trusting. You be the initiator so that others will come to trust a little bit more in their lives. Nothing can be resolved, including God's divine plan for His children, without trust. But be certain that a man will trust his neighbor enormously greater when he knows his neighbor is accountable to God Himself by the neighbor's disposition and sacrifice. Never trust a man for your true direction, timing, and salvation—only our exclusive trust in the Lord will provide such a result (Proverbs 3:5,6 and Jer 17:5-8). But trust a person that he or she will do the right thing.

*I showed a man, trusted and believed,
That he would come, to do the right thing.
And more than which, he first conceived,
He wound up doing, an even better thing.*

But will our own fear in trusting others prevent us from interacting with others even to the point of judging them and throwing the baby out with the bath water by saying that if I have found three bad apples then I should automatically conclude that all apples are bad? (Psalm 116:11) Or if that person has wronged me, then he is all wrong and useless? Not one of us was created to be an island unto ourselves. We all need help. Also, one should ask oneself what sudden disaster does one fear right around the corner if one opens oneself up to trust? (Proverbs 3:25,26)

And what about cynicism? Many of us are cynical over many things and many peoples. Trust counteracts cynicism and, thus, we should strive to be less cynical. And though we should strive not to be cynical, wisdom does dictate caution. Yes, as we acquire wisdom, we find ourselves to be cautious over that which is immoral and harmful to us in mind, body, and soul. And so wisdom provides cautious understanding. Cynicism precludes wisdom and so is useless from one's lips.

So how do we arrive at trust? I am reminded of The Wizard of Oz with the scarecrow wanting a brain and the tin man wanting a heart and the lion wanting courage. A complete person thinks and feels, but it is finding the courage to be able to express, and thus trust, one's thoughts and feelings that yields confidence and a sense of identity. However, it is up to the individual to either express oneself with encouragement and fairness or cynicism and slander. The first creates a moral confidence and loving and gracious identity, the second an immoral confidence and unloving and unforgiving identity. I am in hopes that we all choose the first and so this combination of thinking, feeling, and the courage to go with it prepares us for Truth, wisdom, and a trusting and accepting heart. And then the courage to sustain this Truth, acceptance, wisdom, and trust intact yields integrity and virtue when it is God who we draw our courage from.

129. Viewing One's Life from Above (1JN 5:1-5)

How much do we get bogged down in the world? It is difficult to fully answer this question when you are in the world muddling through. What is it that we fear? How many people will

we listen to for our lives to be in order? How many path's will we take from the advice of others and not God?

It is quite difficult to sustain a belief in our ending place when we are getting bogged down in the world in pursuit of our ending place in heaven. Do we absolutely know what heaven will be like? No, because we haven't been there. But we can imagine the wonder and glory of our home. And this is why when we imagine through various means of being in heaven and experiencing that wonder and glory, we can look back to earth and view our life from afar. And it is then that we can yell to ourselves from there out loud, "Hey, what are you afraid of? Go and get past that. It really is nothing. You will get here. I guarantee you, you'll get here." And once you are here, you will say, "Why did I fear so much? Why did I listen to so many others and never really to myself? All that bumping and grinding was for what? I started right over there and I'm only a few steps further, but I thought I was miles ahead. All because of that incessant bumping and grinding. Some people are actually behind where they started. I see it now. One can do what he wants to do in an assertive manner and without all that enormous empathy in his heart as long as we respect one another along the way." Try not to collect the fears of others along the way.

I am not speaking of deductive or inductive reasoning where either we analyze the pieces that we accumulate and deduce a conclusion or we know the conclusion and try to ascertain its pieces to substantiate it. These come to be meaningless when we are absolutely sure, without doubt, and accept totally that heaven is where we will be. Then neither do we have to qualify to get there nor analyze how we got there. I am speaking of climbing a beautiful mountain and looking down at the world at the foot of that mountain. People bustling about, running into each other with little true direction. One must climb from time to time such a mountain to see where he is in the scheme of things in order to proceed. But once you do, you will realize that everyone else is just as frantic as you are. No one really knows what they are doing in the vast scheme of things. But do they really have to know? Heaven is awaiting all who believe. Do not fear, but enjoy. Do not get mixed up in all that drudgery, but do what your heart compels you to do and work hard at it. This is because now your heart is His Spirit within you.

One must come to the point that he totally believes that he will be in heaven. Then he will overcome his drudgery in the world by way of that exact confidence. And one can know this undoubtedly because he can feel love and imagine heaven by way of the Holy Spirit within him. And then he will come to understand that the Holy Spirit within him is the proof that he will be there. When Jesus said to believe in him and we will overcome the world, he didn't mean that we should not live within the world (in mind or body) among God's children. What he meant was that we will overcome the drudgery and bump and grind of the world that weighs us down to the point of believing heaven only to be a far-off fantasy and not a here-and-now reality (Pr 12:11).

So, what have you got to lose? You have nothing to lose, not even heaven.

131. The Weight of the World

There is a great difference between what is going on in the world and what is going on where you are? That difference is you. Do you feel compelled to go wherever that thing is that is going on? Is it our job to worry about or have great sympathy for what is going on away from us even though we do have empathy? Must we refrain from having fun because we feel too guilty for the sacrifices and sufferings others are going through or have gone through?

There is one answer for all these questions. That answer is that we are not there because we are not supposed to be there. We are not compelled to help by our physical bodies or minds because we have not been placed in a position to do this. We are where we are because we are within God's plan for us. To go against that thinking would make ourselves meddling busybodies. If we wish to do anything, it should be to provide only some assistance in some form, such as monetarily, from afar and only from afar. In the same light, to trust hearsay makes us meddling busybodies as well. There is enough attention to be had by you exactly where you are now.

One must ask oneself if there is room for fun where one is now. If one can have fun because there is no physical responsibility laid upon that person for some serious or dire event, then one should have fun, even though people are dying thousands or even hundreds of miles away. When it is your time to act, you will know it. You will have been placed in the right place and the right time. But until then, one must accept his position and have fun. Go after that dream you had when you were young. Go enjoy life. Because, my friend, your time will come soon enough when the Lord will ask you to do the work at hand and then there may not be much fun to be had.

We should understand that when one risks a change in himself, some suffering will usually come and then a reward from that suffering later on. However, one change that usually reaps glorious rewards very quickly is when we change from self-centeredness to giving or serving others. The former will most likely happen when God calls us to do the work at-hand. The later can happen each and every day.

So then, we see that when God calls us in time of serious or dire need, our fears come into play and some suffering will probably come about but our reward is glorious afterwards. But prior to that calling and also whence we come to accept that calling after that initial suffering, we should have as much joy and fun as we can without the slightest feeling of guilt.

God will place us in that place at that time. Do not worry, your time will come when your usefulness will be more than apparent. If there is any weight at all away from where you are that may weigh on your shoulders, it is at the time of giving to or voting for those with your best intentions and theirs, but from afar. But then it is for you to trust the recipients to do the right thing without your insistent meddling and it is upon the recipients to act accordingly on their own because you are not responsible for them.

One must remember that the weight of the world is not to be on your shoulders, only the weight of that of which is where you are at the time God calls upon you to act. Other than those times, you should be having fun and enjoying life—even if others are not.

131. Accepting Your Parents as Strangers

(Isaiah 29:13-24)

When people we know do not share with us their true intimate feelings and vulnerabilities, then these people eventually become strangers to us. I shared with you in earlier passages measures people take to avoid their own true intimate feelings and their admittance and acceptance of their own vulnerabilities, such as control, caretaking, apathy, blaming, etc. They have difficulty trusting you or most anyone for that matter. And so, a time comes when we must accept “what is” and “what is” is that they are strangers by their own choice. And even though these people may be our parents, we must consider them strangers at this time. And the basic rule must then apply: Don’t accept gifts from a stranger, don’t talk to a stranger, and if he or she approaches you, run away.

Remember the three components to any healthy and intimate relationship, as I’ve stated in earlier passages. One must wish to share or offer something about themselves *to* another, one must wish to find something in common *with* another, and one must be willing to learn something *from* another and, thus accept and respect another as is. A truly viable relationship will suffer in proportion to the deficiency of these three components.

A healthy parent is usually solely in the first component during the child’s infancy, then graduates to the second component (while retaining the first component) when the child becomes a toddler, and then finally graduates to the third component (while retaining the first and second component) when the child becomes a preschooler. Thus, the healthy parent is working all three components with the child by the time he or she is in kindergarten. And as the child matures, the three components should mature in relevance to *present-day* parent-child relationship topics, resulting in a continual formation of an intimate relationship at every age.

The problem is that many parents never graduate past the first or second component. The result is that the child (who typically in their own minds cannot topple the parent from a high pedestal) remains in that developmental stage, even as an adult, wherever the parent left off. For instance, if the parent stopped at the first component, the child will still pretty much act like an infant even in his or her adult ages. If the parent stopped at the second component, the child will still pretty much act like a toddler throughout. If the parent graduated to the third component, the child will be able to assert his or her independence because the parent is continually instilling in the child that the child’s acquired knowledge is substantial and unique and that the parent is vulnerable—which is very difficult for many parents to admit primarily because their own parents didn’t graduate to the second or third component.

As we deduce from the three components above, when a parent only wishes to stay a parent even to someone who is now an adult, a healthy and intimate relationship cannot exist. Therefore, the parent will eventually become a stranger. The more a parent avoids sharing his or her true intimate feelings and vulnerabilities, the quicker the parent will become a stranger to everyone. The child, who is now supposedly an adult, must come to accept this fact if he or she is to be a healthy individual and go off on his or her own in life. And the crucial fact within all of this is that it is the parent’s choice not to pursue a healthy and intimate relationship—not the child’s. In

addition, the child must realize that he or she cannot change another. So, as the parent becomes a stranger, greater and greater will the basic rule apply for the healthy individual child, and then the more secure and confident will the child be on his or her own.

If the parent chooses to develop an intimate relationship with his or her children as an adult by executing all three components above, then the parent will most likely lose his or her role of parent in the child's eyes. This will, again, enable the child who is now an adult, to develop as a healthy individual but without applying the basic rule. Unfortunately, many parents have a difficult time choosing this path and so they wonder why their relationships with their children continue to dwindle. These parents turn into or have always been needy or controlling people toward their children. These type parents are, in fact, doing it to themselves. The children are not doing it to the parents, and thus, the children are not to blame.

It is also very important to realize that familiarity is no substitute for an intimate relationship. Our parents, or *families*, may be very *familiar* to us, but we must ask ourselves if we truly have an intimate relationship with them. If we do not (but not by our choice) then we must accept the fact that they are becoming, if not already, strangers and begin considering applying the basic rule.

132. The Fatherless

“You must not associate with anyone who calls himself a brother but is sexually immoral or greedy, an idolater or a slanderer, a drunkard or a swindler. With such a man do not even eat. Expel the wicked man from among you.” (1Cor 5:11-13)

“The man without the Spirit does not accept the things that come from the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually discerned” (1Cor 2:14).

“For such men are false apostles, deceitful workmen, masquerading as apostles of Christ. And no wonder, for Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light. It is not surprising, then, if his servants masquerade as servants of righteousness. Their end will be what their actions deserve.” (2Cor 11:13-15)

“He who works his (own) land will have abundant food, but he who chases fantasies lacks judgment.” (Pr 12:11)

May God have mercy on their souls.

If a family member who you find ill-bonded to will not seek help, denies his accounts, and just wishes to go on the way things are, do not fall into the trap of going back. You may have changed but not him or her—though you keep wishing he will and creating fantasies of a beautiful and perfect family. The only reason you may find a new environment, at first, if you go back is because *you* changed—but you are still clinging to wickedness though you yourself may be more compassionate. Develop a true sense of reality and fantasy (Pr 12:11). Choose life, not death.

One day, I realized that one of my family members has been and still is a self-regarded “super-apostle” of which Paul warns us (2Cor 11:1-6). His letter to me recently self-proclaiming himself a great holy man, while not accepting things that come from the Spirit of God, is true evidence. His belief, decades ago, that he was the holy man of holy men—even sometimes Jesus Christ himself—is another indication. His refusal to seek help or admit his sickness is yet another indication. His orgies with men as well as women, his abuses, his incessant need to control everything and everyone around him, his deviousness and manipulation and unknown ways of true representation, his suing his own brother, and his delusion that all should do what is right his way so that we may one day gain his “holy” respect are, I believe, sure signs that the devil has an extremely secure hold on him and, of course, he is not aware of it because he has proclaimed himself to be self-righteous and untouchable. (2Cor 10 and 11) He measures himself by himself and compares himself with himself and measures others to himself and compares others to his own delusional righteousness (2Cor 10:12) all in the name of Jesus Christ. It is time to “expel the immoral brother!” (1Cor 5)

I am sure that when God delivered The Ten Commandments to Moses and He said to “honor thy father and mother”, He meant to honor thy father and thy mother on earth who believe and honor Him. And now after the resurrection of His Son this includes His Spirit who also dwells in me, in us. If a father and mother do not honor His Spirit, how can one honor God by honoring them. And this is the rub. Some of my family members have great difficulty in either believing or unconditionally honoring the Spirit of the Almighty God within me and the Spirit to which has come to all of us because of God’s Son, Jesus Christ, in general. One border lines it by knowing true love in her heart but has a difficult time knowing where it is truly coming from due I believe to her past. She, however, sought help for many years which was very brave of her to do. Another breaks the second commandment and pretty much any rule he chooses because in his heart he chooses himself to come before and for all to kneel to for he believes himself to be a great holy man, though his lips say different and his actions are very contrary. And he admits nothing, none of this. A sickness has befallen him from a terrible past, but one in which he denies. And so he has decided to turn into a holy man but unknowingly has turned into what Paul calls a “super-apostle” (2Cor 11:5). He is a demon. One who is demon-possessed and does not fight it with the Will of God has accepted himself as a demon.

Be aware of this. Satan feeds the mind from a lost soul so to trick God’s children. A “super apostle” and a true child of God may seem the same way on the outside, but do not be fooled, the reasons behind such expression are very different. Seek the soul, not the expression. One soul is corrupt and fuels the mind with vengeance, malicious intent, jealousy, control, indignation, and fear. The other is pure fueling the mind with love, compassion, caring, and encouragement. Children are easily fooled. Satan goes after the hearts of children of men and adult-children. God brings darkness into the light by way of His children who become true adults. God’s children expose darkness through embarking knowledge on the ignorant.

In an earlier passage, the Lord said to me by way of His Spirit within me that I will not have anymore contact with one. And I heeded his warning. But now I truly understand the reason behind my Lord’s warning. He is still a child and a childhood bully to boot not wanting to heed God or anyone for that matter. And because he chooses to not face his fearful soul, he is being

lead by the devil, ignorantly or not he is, and it is the devil that used and still tries to use him to block me from knowing and loving and feeling and being intimate with my True Father. And so this one is a stranger to me, an unknown and lost soul, and I now give him to my True Father forever. He is of in the grasp of the devil without heed to any true person who knows and heeds the Spirit of God within him. Whether he has the Spirit of God within him, I do not know. He has done some good, but he has done it with blatant disrespect to even the people he does good for. But I know that the devil has manipulated him so well that he does not know the True Spirit and will not admit to this at all, and I believe will not forever—which I can believe so to absolutely go on with my own life and totally enjoy away from the depraved person he is because whatever is to happen is totally in God’s hands now.

For the devil has tried to use his servant against me with an external glow of righteousness and love to sugarcoat all that is true and use my own rose-colored glasses, and he has lost. I now see with my spiritual eyes given to me by God Almighty and I see the false-righteousness, the false love, and the false apostle and a false servant that is this one.

As explained in Titus, older men must be taught to be “temperate, worthy of respect, self-controlled, and sound in faith, in love and in endurance.” Young men must be shown by their teachers “integrity, seriousness and soundness of speech.” (Ti 2) And if one has not been taught this, then it is up to the one who is now an adult to seek this and be taught this from Christ and those who Christ places in his path. But one who chooses not to seek this in humbleness by both Christ and those common, everyday people who Christ places in his path, chooses his own arrogant path that is not God but a false god.

One who disrespects others has no reverence for God, but only for himself and has no place in the kingdom, caused by his own self-condemnation. And though one speaks reverently of God, his heart is not representative of God but only for his own malicious intent. (JN 8:42-47) This is also true of this one. He is so in denial of all these that he uses the name of God for his own intentions. *You shall not misuse the name of the Lord your God (Ex 20).*

And he who has been warned and asked to stop repeatedly pits people against people, mother against child and friend against friend, for his own personal gain and own personal beliefs, which he uses God as the reason. He is indeed in a delusional state of mind that is far away from the instruction of God Almighty.

“Warn a divisive person once, and then warn him a second time. After that, have nothing to do with him. You may be sure that such a man is warped and sinful; he is self-condemned.” (Ti 3:9-11)

And though I have forgiven you because what you do, you still do not recognize the consequences and also because of how you grew up and who you grew up with, I still cannot have anything to do with you. You have chosen your path, even after others have repeatedly tried to help you. So then, be away, the devil uses you for destruction and ferocity in the world because of your own incredible arrogance. You are a stranger to me so that you are cloaked in the blanket of death and unknowingly do the work of the evil one. May God have mercy on your soul and may you realize your compulsion to do what is wrong for yourself and everyone around

you. And may I never see the sight of you again in the state you are and I fear forever will be. You self-condemn yourself. Dear Lord take him away from me for good either in this world or that of the supernatural one. Amen.

The pure fact is that he has not and does not *truly* love me because he does not know and is not interested in knowing what true love is. And that's ok with me because now I know that I don't want anyone who cannot and will not love me in true love. Delusional love has no place in my life. And so I give myself permission to leave him as a stranger to whom I do not participate with. I forgive him but I do not love him as a child loves his parent but as one has compassion for a lost stranger. I am given permission from God to love him only in this manner. In fact, I am given permission from God to accept the fact that the child produced from his loins has been fatherless, for he knew not God from my birth.

And who are the fatherless? The fatherless are those (male and female) who never knew their father and those who know or knew their father but their father was or is not a Godly man. The fatherless live with their fathers just as they live without them. And any father from divorce or separation that does not still father his child as God intended forfeits all rights as a father. A father who does not show his child love and respect along with the true instructions of God is only a man that contributed his seed. A child has no link nor obligation to such a man. And the decent thing to do is for the man to admit to himself and his child and accept the fact that he is not cut out to be a parent. Then at least he can release his child from such bond. But it is the contemptuous person who will not admit this and continues to stalk his children in his selfish pursuit.

Your Father in Heaven is now your only father—on earth as well as in heaven—as your spiritual and physical father. God has a special place for children as you. “He defends the cause of the fatherless (Dt 10:18).” The fatherless is weak, not by your own hand but by the oppressive, exploiting, and abandoning people of this earth. The fatherless has yet been trained, but is more than trainable by the Holy Spirit. The fatherless yearns for guidance and, if he chooses the True Love of God, he will receive far more than his fair share because he craves it more than others. He will be more because he has had less all his life. And so he will be strong, taking up the sword of His True Father in Heaven, and leading men in battle. His allegiance will be only to his Father in Heaven crying out an oath of absolute and pure devotion, and with the sword, cut the ties that bind him to any natural father and any unGodly person for that matter. He will not be a false leader but will become a true leader—from the inside. And he will have the true intimacy that can only come about by pure love.

The one I speak of has sat on the fence, playing both sides to his advantage as he likes and when he likes. In one's life, out of one's life, in one's life, out of one's life. This is totally selfish of any person, especially a parent, to do. And so because he has not made the choice either way to commit to, it is up to me to make the choice for him. And so:

“These are the words of the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the ruler of God's creation. I know your deeds, that you are neither cold nor hot. I wish you were either one or the other! So, because you are lukewarm—neither hot nor cold—I spit you out of my mouth.” (Rev 3:14-16)

Goodbye to you. And I make a vow to adhere to this until the day I die and beyond. (1Cor 5:9-13)

And it is here that I speak of certain family members that I will have nothing to do with. Instead of placing them in the middle and providing them ultimatums to choose sides, I release them from any of my own delusional grasps to figure it out on their own.

133. Adult-Children

There are two simple rules of fact (that is simple to say but hard to enact) that I know about becoming an adult:

*The first is that if a child has not been brought up in the instruction (education) of the Lord **with love and mercy**, one is still a child to this day, even if he or she has the body of an adult.*

The second is that if a person has not searched his own soul and admitted his soul corrupt before God and then proceeded to do the hard work in schooling himself intimately by and with God The Teacher so to heal, he or she is still a child no matter what age and keeps to childlike ways in his own heart, even though he may disguise it well on the outside.

*“As water reflects a face, so a man’s heart reflects the man.” (Pr 27:19)
As “the Lord says, ‘These people come near me with their mouth and honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me. Their worship of me is made up only of rules taught by men.’” (Isa 29:13)*

What is an adult-child? An adult-child is one who has the body of an adult and the immaturity of a child. In my encounters, I have found many more male adult-children than female adult-children basically because males tend to be more proud and in denial than females.

So how does one discern an adult from a child? I have found by inquiring about the two rules I have stated above. The more one pursues both, the greater the adult he or she becomes. The more one pursues only one, the less the child he or she becomes but, nevertheless, not yet an adult. The more one is defiant to one or the other, the greater the child. From this, it is easy to understand how one who is 20 years old can be a man and one who is 80 years old can still be a boy. It is also easy to understand how your child can be the adult and you the parent the child. And it is easy to understand how one on the pulpit can be a boy and a simple carpenter can be a man. And those who do not and will not do either rule because of proud defiance are delusional and, thus, in denial. And yet those who do not and will not do either rule because they think themselves already fully intimate and knowledgeable (as if they sit right next to God) and call themselves “holy men” are insane—for that position is reserved for Jesus Christ. (MT 23)

And so shall the man instruct the boy or shall the boy instruct the man? True adults associate with and confide in true adults. And so children do with children. Just as water does not mix with oil and light does not mix with darkness, so does reality not mix with fantasy. Adults do not waste their adult confidences of reality on children—but release children to their own games of fantasy. Adults do not ask the advice of children on adult ways and children do not want to associate with adults while in their adult ways. Having little patience, a child at any age wants to be an adult to seek control, but not in soul, and he may bully and belittle other children to make him feel tall—even a child of 90. An adult chooses to search his or her soul to acquire a childlike heart not burdening children with adult ways.

In many cases, a child experiences an abusive parent and, knowing and feeling right and wrong, feels helpless in facing such a physical demon. And so he or she grows up in the same manner—feeling helpless to conquer what is wrong in the world and the demons who possess such unrighteousness. And in anger he lashes out at that around him because he yet has the confidence in himself and courage to face his true demon. So then, in order for one to attain this confidence and then courage, he must first seek Christ to gain them by way of the supernatural force of the Holy Spirit. There is no greater force than true love.

An adult-child finds himself feeling guilty for not facing his foe in childhood—which is delusional because a child is in fact incapable of such physical conquest, but yet that is why he feels helpless. Yet in today's world the myth still exists that a child cannot understand his environment in youth and his rights are still small in comparison to those in an adult body. But when a person entrusts himself to God The Father, he comes to have the courage by way of the Holy Spirit to face these same physical demons and he conquers his adversaries—and without being abusive, but in truth. God and his bond is now unbreakable and eternal.

I have found that a boy (child) wants either his father or wants to father. And impatiently he wants to teach what he has not been taught or refuses to listen to. And he will fall short of goals because, without realizing, he yearns to be bailed-out by his parent. Thus, he winds up keeping himself a child. A man (adult), however, respects the wishes of his children and shares freely with them his testimony of his True Father and him and teachings from his True Teacher. (MT 23) A man is, thus, a library of knowledge in service to others who seek his advice and/or knowledge. Thus, a boy is apathetic or controlling, a man is respectful and caring. A boy craves intimacy with his natural father, a man has intimacy with his True Father. As an aging youth, a boy's heart aches in fear as a child of the world. A man's heart rests in love as a child of God. And this I have found out is similar with daughters to their mothers, though is true of children in general to either parent.

Simply put, a child who was not trained in God's love and mercy, has been abandoned by his natural parents. This child will immensely fear going into the adult world because he has not been trained for it. Upon entering the adult world, the child wants guarantees and exact training in everything he does so he will be able to totally shield himself from adult responsibilities—what he calls slings and arrows. He trusts no one because he has been abandoned. And this is why God has a heart for the fatherless. “He defends the cause of the fatherless (Dt 10:18).” God commands everyone to take up this cause as well, in the same light as the widows and aliens. And as we know, there are no guarantees and exact training by men—only God.

A girl dreams of a boy, even though she thinks she is dreaming of a man. A woman wants a man after experiencing too many boys. And because the fatherless has risen exponentially over the decades, there are truly few men in the world compared to the amount of males in the world. And women, especially in their 30's and 40's, are coming to realize this. So I say it is better for a woman to remain single and find intimacy in the Lord than for her to claim a man who is not a man but still a boy just for the sake of marriage and children. It is better for a woman, on her own, to adopt a son or daughter who has never known his or her father, rather than subject the son or daughter to becoming fatherless twice in one lifetime.

So now I will tell you, the true adult, there are few adults in this world. Realizing this, embrace the fatherless, widow, and alien with mercy and kindness and teach whoever chooses to listen. Forgive their trespasses, for they are children who have not had the proper training. Use your wisdom to associate with other true adults as much as possible—in work and at home. And to those who are still children, inject yourself in and with the instruction of the Lord in a loving and merciful school and search your soul with the help of the Holy Spirit.

134. Relationships and Technology

In an earlier passage, I spoke of entering into the right environment or place and at the right pace of *things* that are happening in that environment in relation to our own way that each of us has been designed. We all have a certain range of comfort and our minds and bodies tell us when we are venturing outside our unique range. Not to say that we cannot learn to extend our range of comfort, but we eventually become aware of our mental and physical limitations as we proceed through life.

So now I will speak about those things, in general, that are happening in different places and at different paces. There are two general concepts or things in every area of our lives (work, home, play, etc.) that are important and if we are successful in achieving a high amount in both, we will go a long way in our lives. The first is relationships and the second is technology (work). In my experience, technology is a lot easier to grasp than relationships because they are much more systematic and less likely to change at the rate people do. But it has been my experience that if we have problems in relationships, then everything else will be harder to attain as well. One usually cannot physically ascertain the technology and/or produce its true usefulness without the aid of others to first help them.

I think the greatest thing I had to realize is that I am not a Christian to please anyone, not even God. I am a Christian and going into God's glory to develop myself as a person and to realize who I am and what I'm made of—thus, automatically developing a greater intimacy with my Father. We figure these things out by working and risking. I suggest taking every opportunity that comes your way, as long as it is not immoral. When you take the risk and challenge yourself, just like the one you're making now in your own Christian journey, you realize more about yourself and what your limitations (boundaries) are, as well.

There are two analogies used to describe relationships and technology. Our spiritual giftings (such as administration, apostleship, craftsmanship, creative communication, discernment,

encouragement, helping, faith, preaching, wisdom, healing, giving, intercession, hospitality, interpretation, knowledge, leadership, mercy, miracles, prophecy, shepherding, teaching, tongues, celibacy, counseling, voluntary poverty, martyrdom, and so forth) are to relationships as our talents are to technical abilities or technology. 1Cor 12:8-10,28; Romans 12:6-8; Eph 4:11; 1Peter 4:9,10; Exodus 31:3; 1Tim 2:1,2; Psalm 150:3-5.

One should understand the difference between one's natural giftings and talents versus self-acquired giftings and talents. The greater one identifies and follows one's natural giftings and talents, the more fulfilled one will be. Therefore, we can conclude that true usefulness equates to the sum of our relationship plus technical where-with-all and productivity—the maximum usefulness achieved from our natural giftings and talents produced with God in mind. And the only way to identify these is by taking a myriad of healthy risks from each opportunity that comes our way throughout our entire lives. This means that we must come to trust greatly in our Father so to take each step in confidence.

135. Planning, Risking, and Seizing the Godly Opportunity

Yes, the only way to identify our natural gifts and talents and put them into usefulness is by taking a myriad of healthy risks from each *Godly* opportunity that comes our way throughout our entire lives within His time. Therefore, we must seize the opportunity when God reveals it's general plan to us. And even though we may understand our own strengths, weaknesses, and outside threats, we should seize the Godly opportunity trusting that God is our strength and that He will expose and turn our weaknesses and fears into more strengths and greater confidences and that we will overcome the world and any outside threat because of His Power.

I have noticed that if it is a Godly opportunity, there will be a certain *general* but systematic plan revealed to us and a certain window-of-opportunity along with it. We should hesitate to just rush in from our emotions at the first sign of relief (Proverbs 21:30 and 28:26), but be patient and attentive to an unfolding of the *general* plan He wishes to reveal to us. Then by all good means seize the good opportunity while its window is open and cherish the wise counsel along the way. One should always ask oneself, “What do I have, what am I doing, and what now Lord?” rather than “What don't I have, what am I not doing, and what if I do this?”. One should focus on the plan God has for him rather than always asking oneself, “What if?”. Most always “what if” will, when acted upon, turn into “oh no, what did I do?”. (Proverbs 19:20,21)

Even in today's child development research, we know that a child successfully anticipating what comes next, or predicting or prophesizing, is an important aspect of building a sense of "I can do it!" And remember, we are children to our Father in heaven. So, when we see the initial beginnings of a possible plan, we can anticipate an unfolding of it in a righteous way if the plan is truly by our Father. If a plan does begin to unfold in this righteous way, we then are confident to jump into our Father's hands and seize the good opportunity.

One must be patient between such opportunities and continue to focus on the *general* plan even greater during these silent periods. I say *general* because one must be flexible and attentive to the various changes in the day-to-day activities, as well as the opportunities, that arise while executing that plan and focusing on its path (Proverbs 19:21). In this way, one will weather the

storms well enroute to the next opportunity that arises. This, again, takes trust that God has planned these opportunities for you but within His time.

I also spoke of the difference of entropy and enthalpy in a previous passage. The natural course of world events or operations is entropic, but with God enthalpy can occur. When we wish to create something, we want to create it with God in mind and in enjoyment and fun. We create a general strategic plan that has been shown to us by God. But in the midst of executing that plan, we usually begin to follow the beat of the world and its more meaningless rewards. This is why every so often we should assess where we are in relation to the initial plan to see if we are indeed now following worldly rewards, which promote entropy, instead of Godly reasons. I am not saying that the plan is not a flexible one—it is a general plan within God’s specific will. Being flexible means that we follow the specific Godly interventions and, therefore, not allow entropy to seep in. But if entropy has seeped in, it is then that we should refocus our attentions back to the basic Godly plan, see where we strayed, and then restore an enthalpic catalyst into this now entropic chain of events. Many people will not like this because they see short-term riches in their sights, but it is imperative for long-term usefulness. We do not begin an operation of any kind to get rich, but to supply Godly long-term usefulness. In the end, we will be rich in the true sense.

And now I’ll speak of seizing opportunities in a different way. When there is an opportunity to help and serve others, I say serve them. But understand that you may find yourself serving others who are disrespectful and manipulative and exploiting your good graces for their own selfish gain. It is a good thing to keep your integrity and finish what you promised, but don’t be a fool (1Peter 2:15-17). Finish what you promised another because you serve God and because you will develop a greater intimacy with God, but once the original commitment is over, divorce yourself from them and leave them to their own disrespectful and ruthless selves.

Don’t give your pearls—your treasures within you, your love, your hard work, your dedication—to pigs, especially those who do not appreciate it and/or who exploit your good nature for their own selfish gain. “Do not give dogs what is sacred; do not throw your pearls to pigs. If you do, they may trample them under their feet, and then turn and tear you to pieces (MT 7:6).” In other words, don’t use your time by giving your heart to jerks—all you will most likely get is a jerked heart. Life’s too short to be jerked around. Live life focused on God and leave dog’s to frolic in their own vomit and sows to wallow in their own mud (Pr 26:11, 2Peter 2:22).

Experience life, my friends. Each day, we can be guaranteed something new if we pick ourselves up and look for it. Therefore, each day:

1. Find an opportunity to search for something new that life has to offer you.
2. Seize that opportunity and find something in common with your new find.
3. Be part of its world for a time and learn something uniquely refreshing from it.

136. Ambition and Greatness

*“He who works his land will have abundant food,
but he who chases fantasies lacks judgment.”*

*“He who works his land will have abundant food,
but the one who chases fantasies will have his fill of poverty.”
(Pr 12:11, 28:19)*

It is dangerous when your ambitions exceed your gifts and talents. I find that as I am planning for greatness, my life is passing me by. As I engage myself in fantasy, I waste the time to embrace life’s essence (good, bad, and in between) where I am now. Glory and fame are fleeting, but perseverance in everyday life is what actually develops greatness.

If one knows that one is glorious to others, one is probably really only glorious to oneself. If one perseveres in everyday life with a loving heart, one will never know the true glory one really has achieved in others—but then again, one won’t have to know.

True greatness is when one’s *spiritual gifts plus natural talents* meet one’s ambition, which is not necessary glory and fame. One must honestly ask oneself what he or she is able to do and then have a realistic ambition proportionate to that ability in the most useful way possible.

One must always realize that, in a normal capitalistic society, that portion of capitalism which provides opportunities for showcasing one’s usefulness in and to the world greatly exceeds any monetary rewards derived from it. Abnormality suggests quite the opposite. Capitalism as a medium for one’s gifts and talents must always exceed monetary purposes. And so capitalism can be a wonderful thing for the human being.

137. Our New Life with God

Rebirth

In early passages, I elaborated on one’s rebirth and our own pentecost associated with it. When we acknowledge our Father and follow His Son and then encounter the intimacy with His Spirit, we feel compelled to live a new life—His Life. At this time, different people experience different feelings. One may feel euphoria and another a sense of drive and yet another a sense of urgency. All are correct and none are wrong. But what they all have in common is a feeling or sense of wanting to attain that which can not yet be defined but, at the same time, that which we know is out there and is far greater than ourselves. What we may not realize at this point is that we have come in touch with His Spirit within us and its urging us on. And this does not make us feel bad for ourselves by reminding us of our insecurities but makes us feel hopeful and excited that our journey has finally begun. And for some mystifying reason, we know we will be better for it if we traverse it. And that is when belief has turned into faith and, for some of us, trust has come into our lives for the first time. And so we take the first step and trust our True Counselor within.

Back to the Basics (Childhood)

What can I say about the Counselor? One cannot escape that which has been avoided but yet still written in our hearts—once we decide to trust. Once we have been reborn, we ask, “What now, Father?”. What now, Father, indeed. Like the next step with any newborn, what now comes Truth. What now is True Education. What now is Back to the Basics. It is those “back to the basics” that we decided at some point to avoid in our early lives for some reason that now are back. But there is no more avoidance and no maybe about it. We are in God 101 now and we

don't sleep in God's class. We are wide awake and ready to go. He is our teacher and there is no escaping His Instruction. Our Father becomes our True Father—teacher and all. And one should not be surprised if the first thing our Father does, before anything else, is take us by the hand to the beginning to begin our basic education, or true basic training, His way (Proverbs 22:6, Proverbs 24:3,4 and Proverbs 24:27 and MT 7:24-27).

Training in Relationship Usefulness (The Rock)

Throughout this book, I have shown you how I have had to clear my own fields with God's hands upon me. And I have shown you His teachings to me in relationship usefulness.

What is clearing the field? In each of our lives, we tried to till our own soil and we came to what is known as deadpan. So eager to build our own foundations upon cheapened soil and our own houses upon the cheapened foundation, we didn't pay nearly enough attention to the Godly quality. And when Christ came into our lives, we saw that our soil was not strong and our fields had overgrown. We found a ground hardened by drought with an almost impenetrable outside mantle created by fear and distrust. And it is this that we tried to build upon. And for many of us, we chose to avoid cultivating in God and chose to desperately move on to laying our own foundation and building our own house. So eager, we left relationship training and went straight into technology training—on our own. We neither had the patience nor the trust to be in God's Time and rely on Him to mold us in His way.

But when Christ does enter into our lives, we find ourselves in one certain reality. That reality is that we are being taught all over again the art of relationships as is useful to God. And this is the rock that all true things are built on. Foundations will crumble on unGodly earth and houses will demolish on unGodly foundations. And so the first thing God does to prepare us for His soil is to chip through that mantle and all that deadpan and begin unearthing our own dirt while replacing it with His good soil and sturdy rock. And the way our new life works with Him is that we must realize that all this work happens in His Time and our patience and steady relationship education is crucial even before we try to go on to building a foundation based on Him. But, whether it be two years or 10 years, the time will come when it is time to begin building His foundation.

What I have realized is that when God runs our lives, things happen much quicker and better. So our training may only take two years with God even though we chose to be ignorant of His teachings for, let's say, 40. This is why one is never too old to be in the glory of God and rebuild their lives on His rock. But it is during this time that we must work hard learning and practicing our relationship education. And it is during this time that others may call you lazy because you are not producing to the likes of the world in business and money or to their satisfaction. Their judgment over you in this way tells us that they have skipped this basic training in their own lives as well. Otherwise, they would have identified your holy and loving wants and needs within themselves. But it is their own loss for not having gone through this amazing and magnificent training that will eventually catch up to them in their old age. Not that we are in competition, but when they get older and realize that their life has not amounted to nearly as much as it could have, we will be building sanctuaries of God. And these sanctuaries will be built for all, including them, who wish to begin again in the right way.

It is essential to understand that we truly define ourselves by this rock in everything we do and everything we will do. And we must choose to give up that which is man-made in our minds and soul to the rock that is God. There almost always comes a time in people's lives when they come to the crossroads and say to themselves that things just aren't working out in relationships and other areas in their lives. It is here that the wise will usually ask themselves what beliefs have they emphatically accepted in the past as truthful and where did these beliefs come from—man or God.

Man-made beliefs work for possibly a little while and for only certain acute situations which may have all already taken place, but the rock of God always works and for all situations throughout our lives. In our ignorance, we conjure up certain man-made beliefs in our past and current lives for some reason—be that these beliefs helped us survive a hurtful past or period in our elementary or adolescent years or whatever the reason. But then we keep these beliefs well into our adulthood. There comes a time, typically in our adulthood, when we choose to reevaluate ourselves and our lifestyles and realize that these beliefs are, first of all, not God's and second of all, not applicable to where and who we are today. And it is then that we determine to give up those man-made beliefs made in the past and further determine to give up any man-made beliefs currently conjured up as well. And we decide to replace all these, what are many times fictional man-made beliefs anyway, with God-breathed instruction.

Training in Technological Usefulness (The Foundation)

Now we understand that God is the root and that relationship usefulness is the stem. Technology usefulness grows from the stem. One will only be great at what one does if he or she has been trained in relationship usefulness through Christ. In fact, when one creates technology, he or she is really creating a relationship whether he knows it or not. This is why anything that is created can always be used as an example of relationships or a philosophy of life. If relationship usefulness is the rock, then technological usefulness is the foundation.

Technology created or worked upon is a direct reflection of the creator's and/or maintainer's true understanding of Godly relationships, and the technology's usefulness is directly proportionate to one's relationship usefulness.

Technology usefulness training is the instruction or schooling for us to do that which is technologically useful for us to learn and then produce later as directed by the Master. It comes down to true talent the our Lord has placed upon us.

The integration of spiritual gifting (relationships) plus God-given talent (technology) by way of God's purpose for us results in Godly usefulness. And the greater we use each, especially in synergetic fashion, the greater our true usefulness will be.

True Man(aging) (Manhood) (The House)

When our childhood teachings are behind us (which can be well into adulthood or even old age if we didn't realize our relationship with Him in childhood), it is time to put into practice that which we have been taught—relationship and technology usefulness. Yes, we will relearn old things and learn some new things along the way, but we have enough preparation to live within

and face the adult-world and be truly useful managers of the world we live in and proponents for even a more loving world. It is time to build our house and create a new life for ourselves and our mate and children. Again, it is a fun time to now practice what we learned in childhood.

Our true rock and foundation have been laid, and it is time to build our house upon them. The time where rock and foundation are sturdy enough to support one's Godly home is different for each person.

A Man Among Men (Patronhood) (The Sanctuary) (Heb 3:1-6 and 1Peter 2:4-6)

And now with our house built, our mate in hand for a long time, our children grown and our wisdoms intact, it is now time to unveil upon the world all that we have learned and all the love we have earned. It is time to make our house a sanctuary. It is time to spend most of our time helping others live a long, healthy, and enjoyable life. Again, the time for patronhood is different for each person, and not necessarily realized in old-age. This is our true legacy to others before we go to heaven.

138. Immorality Under Grace

*One great difference between God and people is that God places you under grace
Even when people are placing you under fire*

I have asked myself this question for a long time—what is grace? And what I have to this point and what I know in my heart and soul from the spirit within me is that, because of grace, each superficial, inadvertent, uneducated and/or ignorant step we make in our lives (which equates to nearly every step a morally conscience person takes through his or her life) should be regarded as an “ok” step, a permissible step, that should never result within our minds as shameful, sacreligious, or a step associated with some omnipotent being ready to bash us for doing it. The step may be useful or it may be wasteful where we can use the time to do useful things instead, but who's to say to what degree. Only God knows. It may be moral or immoral, but who's to say to what degree. Only God knows. We do know that there is a certain gray area where most everyone's moral conscience falls into and that may in fact change for each of us as we progress in age—but then from this it is only logical that this area must be quite vast. I have come to believe that there are really only 10 rules *set in stone* and that is the 10 God deemed for us (Exodus 20:1-17, MT 15:19).

To understand grace, we need to explore this moral/immoral gray area. If not one person knows for certain what is truly right or wrong in this gray area, then how do we live joyfully as a person and community in it? What is the underlying principle or code or tenet within all this gray? What makes one decision for one moral and the same decision for another immoral? Thus, what is truly moral and what is not? I believe that the determining factor in all decisions, especially in this gray area, comes down to one thing—respect. This is the respect for oneself and the respect for others made known to us from God Himself who lives within each one of us. This respect is dictated to us through our own moral conscience and by the moral conscience of others communicated to us—all which come from God Almighty. The communication from others may come by word of mouth or even written law. We may not agree with other's perceptions (a

result of a gray-area issue), but this is beside the point. The point is that we must still respect other's wishes.

The gray area is so incredibly vast because it lies between absolute obedience to all of the 10 rules and the absolute violation of any one of the 10 rules. Therefore, at anytime during the day, the vast majority of us falls within the gray area where we can live wonderfully loving and enjoyable lives. People are so unpredictable, so feeling-reactive—so human—that we need this vastness to not worry about condemnation so to live such wonderful and enjoyable lives in the way God intended for us to live. But all of it, violation and all, and thus all of us falls within God's grace. The question is whether we fall under automatic grace or manual grace. It is my belief that all that is not a violation of any of the 10 rules is under automatic (venial) grace (not to say that we may not wish to apologize for it). That which violates any of the 10 rules is under manual (mortal) grace, where we must make sorrowful and true penance for forgiveness through an honest, earnest, and sometimes lengthy search for God in our hearts.

Ok, so what of grace? What is grace? What does it mean to be under grace? Though we all come from different backgrounds with different thoughts and frames of mind and we each experience grace in our own unique ways, there is a general realization of grace that I have found full of truth and wisdom. And so this is my belief, understanding, and experience of grace.

Let us start with the individual, in general. As human, I have found two driving forces in my life. One is a moral spirit and the other is an immoral desire. But again, the actual degree of acts of morality and immorality, especially in this gray area, is unknown and my own personal belief boundaries or limitations in this area differ from yours. But one thing I know from experience is that if one consciously and continuously pits his morality against his immorality, one will become divided and unhealthy and rebellious most of the time. He will also not live in pleasure and not enjoy life, which contradicts why Jesus died for us. And most likely he will become quite arrogant, self-righteous, and judgmental. Therefore, one comes to this understanding of grace.

A complete human individual is made up of both morality and immorality. One can avoid one's immorality and thus be doomed to bonding with it all his life inside himself or within closed doors, even though one may appear perfectly moral on the outside. It is not wise for one to divide himself. Thus, one must accept both to be complete. He or she must be able to live as a complete individual. This is the reason for grace. And though now we know that everything under the sun is permissible, not everything is good or healthy or useful for us or without consequence (1Cor 10:23). But by experience and learning from each experience will we become wise (Isa 26:10). It is when we *accept* ourselves in full or completion and *allow* ourselves to experience all that makes us full (whether we actually do experience it or not through wisdom) is when we will come into our own. And here I am not just talking about oneself, but people's against people's and nations against nations and the world in general.

And it is when we accept our complete selves under grace that we will come to desire morality greater (though not achieve it perfectly nor always desire it exclusively) than immorality on our own because true love feels better than anything else in our lives—even our mental fantasies of acting out our immoral desires without consequence (Pr 28:19). Once we understand and feel or

felt true love, we do not need to worry ourselves in doing or whether we will be doing immoral things because the Spirit is a greater driver than all else—good or bad. We now are running on automatic, continuously desiring and being able to achieve this true love more frequently over time.

So then, does a Christian do immoral things? Yes, of course. Being Christian does not mean we will not consciously do immoral things. What it does mean is that we have a moral conscience when doing them so to learn from them and become wiser people. Some are wiser than others. Over a period of time and because of first-hand knowledge of the consequences to one's decisions, one gains trust to just take Christ's word as is and not to even venture into the immoral unknown. Knowing this, one should desire to be a Christian and can be by believing in Christ and instilling His words into one's own conscience, but better yet realizing that the Spirit of God resides within him.

One who does immoral acts without moral conscience and thus spiritual intervention creates grave misfortune for himself and the others around him and does so quite quickly and starkly. A fugitive who lingers in starkness and rate shows a hint of moral consciousness though it is gravely overshadowed by his immoral behavior.

So now that we as baptized people have given ourselves permission to be a complete person primarily because God has given us permission through His Son, can we now give others permission to be a complete person, as well? Just because people may do immoral things does not exclude them from Christianity. And it definitely does not mean that they have fallen from grace or they have given in to the enemy. The enemy is not concerned with our acts of immorality under grace (which for the most part is done through ignorance or pride)—especially when we refer back to our morality to learn from them. He is concerned with malicious and covetous reasons behind us doing immoral acts—especially us purposely denying and attacking the Spirit full outright and choosing evil for evil's sake because of our malicious and covetous reasons (Ex 20:17, MT 12:25-37). All that doing ignorant immoral acts under grace truly means is that people will always be children (to God) no matter what age. Even saints do ignorant immoral things from time to time, whether they admit it or not depending if it falls within their perception of the gray area.

If all we are is being good, then it is our own selves that dictate this and we have very little trust that God's grace is sufficient or is even there for our complete selves. In other words, we become not free to do good but become slaves to goodness. We come to spend much of our time in wasteful worry and fear over our own lives and what will happen to us in the afterlife rather than enjoying life now without worry and fear. God's grace expands farther than any good thing or bad thing we do (MT 5:45).

So I may cuss greatly or say something wrong from time to time and I may like it and I may reap consequences from it. The thing is that I own it and own up to it. What matters is that I keep my focus on the big picture and live life to the best intentions and that my actions speak louder than my words. My actions that are obedient and true show an abundance in faith even though my words are something to be desired. Yes, it would be best if my words and actions were that of a saint—but then again, I ain't the saint I thought I was. And that's just ok dandy with me. Like I

said, I'm just an Average Joe engaged in an above average purpose with an Almighty God. And, by golly, I will do what needs to be done for Him with all my heart and all my soul to the sound of His Spirit who lives within me.

Grace is like the ultimate umbrella directly covering us in safety and in every direction, never for us to see its ends. So let us not do good for good's sake but let us do good for love's sake—that is, from the love we know and feel by God. When we understand grace in its true light, we become free to do God's will with no-holds-bar—all out—which means freedom without worry, just the job and a life worth living and whole lotta fun livin' it.

Yes, one must not fear finding oneself in immorality by ignorance, even if one has chosen to do the immoral act. One's actions of this type only reveal a certain lack of wisdom or a certain amount of ignorance and mostly create a wasteful amount of time in one's life. These type of actions, what some may call venial, are usually realized by one later because of one's moral conscience revealing it to him by way of the Spirit within. And they are not outside God's grace. In fact, I would say they are automatically within God's grace. You may pursue them whenever you choose but may find them wasteful as time goes by. (Rev 3:15, 16)

But to do immoral things for malicious and covetous reasons reveals a definite absence of love for another and a mostly premeditated wanting to use one's time for hatred and evil. And if done continuously, these types of acts, what some may call mortal, will apparently reveal a grave lack of moral conscience from within and total lack of respect for God's purposes and judgments on earth. Again, they are not outside God's grace, but I would say that they, whether continuous or not, require full and truly sorrowful repentance for one to be within God's good graces.

So what do I mean by accepting and allowing immorality? Let us take a simple example of immorality by ignorance:

A driver of an automobile wishes to go 50 mph when the speed limit is 40 mph. You are obeying the speed limit and he drives up to you within one foot of your rear bumper without backing off. We have two choices to make in this circumstance—in any circumstance really. One choice is to engage in immorality ourselves and the other is to accept and allow immorality in ourselves and others. If we choose the first, we may communicate to him rude gestures, attack him verbally, play with him by speeding up or slowing down continuously. In essence, we are avoiding immorality in the world, in others, and in ourselves and in doing so, we are even more bonded to immorality (his and ours) in strength and in mileage or time. If we accept the second, we may slow down so that he can pass us and go on with his immorality. If he cannot pass us or will not pass us, then we will pull off to the side and allow him passage through. It is now that we did not engage in immorality ourselves and the bond was quite weak and short. By choosing the second, we accepted immorality in the world and allowed its passage. But in this case, the immorality was of a certain degree of ignorance and not necessarily covetous which definitely afforded us a choice in the matter. Did the driver's moral conscience tell him not to do what he did but he did it anyway? Possibly. But if so, then the driver had a certain degree of ignorance and not full ignorance.

How about ourselves? Do we do things that override our moral conscience telling us not to do them? Yes, of course. But we do them because of a certain degree of ignorance on our part, not because of covetously evil reasons. Most of the time we think that we will gain some fun from them. Sometimes we do and sometimes we do not reap any serious consequences, except for the one. The one is a genuine waste of our useful time in part or in whole revealed to us sometime in the future. And these are all under grace.

But how can we differentiate between covetously immoral acts and ignorant immoral acts?

I believe covetous acts are premeditated malicious acts promulgated by motives such as jealousy or evil. Sometimes covetous acts by others make us involuntarily or accidentally do immoral acts to them, such as by self-defense in a struggle (but not by premeditation on our part to carry a gun in case one such situation comes up). Again, these accidental acts caused by covetous of another are ignorant immoral acts or possibly not even that. In any right, they are automatically under God's grace.

In contrast to covetous acts, I believe ignorant immoral acts are selfish acts promulgated by motives of presumable pleasurable outcomes or expectations that have very little to do with any person(s) that is involuntarily or voluntarily caught up in the act.

For instance, if the speeding driver above saw our car from afar and decided that it was too luxurious for us to have and did what he did, that would be a covetously immoral act. We are the premeditated focus of his immorally grievous act. But if the speeding driver was in a hurry to get to a movie and he saw us as an impediment, then it was an ignorant immoral act. The pleasure of seeing a movie was the focus. We were in his way toward that innocent pleasure. Immoral yes, but not covetous.

Is usefulness always moral and is wastefulness always immoral? No. Moral usefulness and immoral wastefulness come about when one intentionally chooses to respect or disrespect another which is determined by the choosing individual. This choice of whether it is intentional or not falls within one's personal gray area. But we must choose one or the other in order to be productive somehow and get something out of this life we live in. If we choose to just sit idly on the fence between the two, in a lukewarm state, one will not be able to provide moral Godly usefulness. Remember that moral Godly usefulness can even come about through our acts of immoral wastefulness when our moral conscience comes into play. (Rev 3:14-22)

And when is ignorantly immoral absolutely wasteful? It is totally wasteful when one is no longer able to be in loving service to another, especially God, because of it. Remember though that even a person without use of any part of his body can be in loving service to others because of his disposition. But instances of total or at least excessive wastefulness are: drunkenness, drug-induced states, fits of rage, self-absorption or self-ambition (not meaning when we nurture ourselves to enhance our relationship between us and the spirit within or God), idolatry, non-covetous sexual immorality, and jealousy all create a mental and physical state where we are no longer able to be in loving service (Gal 5:19-21) at the time we are engaged in them. In fact, we create a defensive atmosphere for those around us and at times harm or at minimum disrespect those we even love when in the states. However, these are under automatic grace when done in a

temporary, interrupted manner because we listen to and then obey the Spirit within sending messages to us through our moral conscience that life is more useful in other Godly and more loving and serving ways.

Temporary, meaning interrupted, indulgence in these things even if we do them throughout our entire lifetime equates to ignorance on our part. Continuous, meaning uninterrupted, indulgence in these things as a lifestyle, which translates into total and life-consuming idolatry, will logically result in us not knowing our Father because there is no time to get to know Him. Continuous uninterrupted indulgence *by choice* is usually a premeditated rejection of our Father on our part because we'd rather be doing the act instead of having a relationship with our Father.

So then, while the first (temporary indulgence) is ignorant and venial, the second (continuous indulgence) is covetous, mortal, or placing another god before our Father. And here I must say that I believe that, like the first, when we feel forced to do something we really do not want to do and we give in to that force (such as in addictions, mental ailments, and the such), these are venial and may be wasteful but are automatically under the grace of God. In these cases, people are usually ignorant, at least in part, to why and how these forces occur. One may spend a lifetime continuously trying to find out why and not get the answer—all the while not enjoying life and again continuously indulging in the bonding to the venial act by continually focusing on searching for an answer. Grace has been given to us by our Father to override such continuous inquiries and indulgences to answering such questions so that we may continue on with our useful and enjoyable lives.

139. Respecting One's Words Without Justification

“You are the ones who justify yourselves in the eyes of men, but God knows your hearts” (Luke 16:15).

I have mentioned this in an earlier passage and I believe it bears more refined notice. In my experience, I have found it best if one receives the statements or questions of others as fact without an underlying theme or as a manipulative technique. Receive a statement just as that, without a “what do you mean by that?” inquiry. And answer a question matter-of-factly trusting that the words one hears in the question are all the one questioning needs a response to. If a statement or question is a tactic or is manipulative, then the one who gives or asks it has the problem. The job of the one who receives it is not to interpret what is not there or any deceptive meanings or any other hidden meanings that may be between the lines. If there are indeed other hidden objectives, our honesty and respect in this way with others will promote a greater effort in others to become honest in their statements and questioning toward us to get the response they truly desire.

“Simply let your ‘Yes’ be ‘Yes,’ and your ‘No’, ‘No’” (MT 5:37). If I ask you a yes or no question and you respond different than what I like, that is my problem. I will not ask why or why not because everyone has a justifiable reason for their answers. I do not need to know it. The same goes for when others ask me a question. They do not need to know my reasons either. Why waste time deciphering a “Yes” or “No” when the justification has already been attained. There is no useful purpose to inquire further. Make less worry by adjusting to the response and moving on with our enjoyable life. We are all justified by grace (Romans 3:24). Therefore, we

must trust that the person's reasons for saying "Yes" or "No" are good enough for us and important to them under God's grace just as ours are to us.

As an example, let us hypothetically think we know what is better for someone else. Not even that—let's just say that we want to offer them a different way. Maybe we think they are treating themselves like victims and pitying themselves. So, we see them the first time and say, "It's a nice day outside. Would you like to go outside?" The other person responds, "no." Now, here is where your decision to respect is crucial. So then, we respect the other person's answer and say, "ok." Now, if the other person is, indeed, pitying themselves but truly would like to go outside but is testing you, he or she will be stunned at your respect toward them. Most of the time, they probably have been enabled by other people caretaking them and thus enabling their pitying to go on. If they really don't want to go, they'll be happy you respected their wishes. So then, the next time you see them, you may figure you still know better and wish to offer them another chance. They may say yes this time because they know that they may not get another chance to go outside because you may not ask again due to your blatant respect for them. But they may say no because they really don't like to go outside. Either way, we must respect their answer. But now if you decide that you should keep on offering after that, you're not offering anymore. Your offer has turned into blatant disrespect. Now, you must decide whether you are genuinely and directly helping them or indirectly making yourself feel better by living vicariously through them. The first way is selfless, the second selfish.

The more confident one is in oneself within the graces of God Almighty, the less problem one (whether he or she be the transmitter or receiver) will have with this.

140. Respect (God's Provision for Identifying One's True Self)

*One who believes to be revering God and is disrespectful to others
is revering a false god.*

One cannot live in the House of the Lord without reverence to Him and respect for other people. When we choose God as our Father through Jesus Christ, God receives us into His house. We now live in His house on earth. And to understand how to live in His house within His rules, He sets up a house within us where His Spirit lives. And so the same house that lives within us, so do we now live in.

One absolute is that revering God and respecting others leads and leaves each of us to identify our true selves. And if reverence for God and respect for others is a command from God Himself, then it is only logical that identifying our true selves is also a command from God.

We have heard, and it is a command, to respect others, especially our elders. But I tell you that I cannot respect another if the other does not respect others or me of any age; the only thing I can respect is another's *decision* to be disrespectful, and that is all. "Teach the older men to be...worthy of respect...[so to] set them [the young men] an example (Ti 2)." If we respect others who do not respect us, we give our soul over to treachery and lose our true selves. And if identifying our true selves is a command from God, then we cannot do this. We must leave those

who disrespect others and us outside of our home, which is the house we now live in. Those who disrespect cannot live in the House of the Lord and will not pass through the gates or doorway. And their maliciousness will be exposed as they try to deceive God by trying to enter through windows and tunnels and other ways, which will come to no avail. They have wasted their lives as soon as they began to deceive, for God is the God of Holies and the All-Knowing and All-Powerful.

So then, I proclaim this, which I believe is from the Lord our God: When a parent shows a child Godly respect, the child develops his or her true identity given to him or her by God. Respect is the cornerstone of all civilization. One who does not realize this, rejects himself from the civilization of God. And so the Godly civilian is to have no contact or relationship of any kind with disrespectful outsiders. Those who continue to choose disrespect as a way of life, either through ignorance or in a blatant manner, *self*-condemns themselves from the House of the Lord.

And so I believe this to be true fact. Those in authority must first show respect to those under authority for any respect to grow in any person, and thus, in any civilization. And this is how many a civilization and family go awry. In today's world, those in authority demand respect because they think that at a certain age they automatically deserve respect. But they simply don't see that they must first give respect in order to receive it. This is not so true the other way around. Those under authority must be shown. And if those in authority are not willing to show, then it is only right that those under authority seek authority elsewhere. The problem is that if those under authority—such as children or workers—seek authority elsewhere because of this and they do not yet know God, then they will be confused and search for any authority in desperation or become their own authority.

God respects His children. It was first and foremost that God sent His Son to us because He respected his *human* children as humans. And so, God showed His human children the greatest respect one can and that is by sending His Son to die for us so that we shall receive grace—not so much because we were sinners, but because we are human. God not only showed respect for His children as human, but His Son came to serve His children in love and instruction. And because He did this most incredible act of respect for us, we come to love Him, cherish Him, follow Him, and not just respect Him but revere Him.

So then, I also proclaim this, which I believe is from the Lord our God: Anyone who is in authority must *first* show respect and serve those under his authority before expecting anyone under his authority to show him respect. If the one in authority does not adhere to this, he or she will find himself automatically null and void of that authority, possibly forever to those he or she has touched in this disrespectful way. This goes for priests, ministers, employers, managers, parents, teachers, and so on. What has been lost, one may never be able to regain again except through the mercy of our Lord and Savior.

141. Is It Me or Is It Them?

*“But everything exposed by the light becomes visible,
for it is the light that makes everything visible. This is why it is said:
‘Wake up, O sleeper,*

*rise from the dead,
and Christ will shine on you.’’
(Eph 5:13-14)*

Are you in the dark or in the light? Is the abuse, the condescending remarks made at you, the disappointment others may have for you your fault or theirs? Should I blame myself or should I blame them?

In my experiences, I have found that one must change oneself if one is to see changes in a relationship or event or whatever. One cannot force another to change, but through God, we can change. And because each of us is one component in the environment we live in, our own change must and will change the environment we live in.

Sometimes we are confused. Sometimes we do not know whether we did wrong or that others are just exploiting and manipulating us for their own personal gain. And what I know is that our willingness and executing our own change will solve this dilemma for us.

If we emphatically believe and have faith that the God of Pure Love is the way via Jesus Christ, then our lifestyle of living in the light, reading the Word, loving what is right, and accepting God’s grace in full will begin to widen the gap between the morality and immorality in the environments we live in. And as we become more moral, we begin to see clearly that which is immoral.

Yes, if we change through God, then we will come to see if we are becoming more moral in an already moral environment we live in (which will make us feel included) or becoming more moral in an immoral environment we live in (which will make us feel independent in who we are) (Eph 5:8-11). So then, one should strive to begin changing themselves when in doubt in order to test this.

One should understand that the more one turns away or travels away from perfect compassion, the greater power one gives those who deliberately do wrong—no matter if their motivation for doing wrong is for wrong’s sake, money, or whatever. At minimum, the immorality others do will begin to appear more moral and justifiable to us. And though we are not perfect, we should not give permission or enable others to do wrong—even by our silence. “Have nothing to do with the fruitless deeds of darkness, but rather expose them” (Eph 5:11).

In today’s society and the nation I live in, this could pertain simply to American greed and a somewhat imperialistic attitude. One should ask whether America is still a continuation of the British Empire because we ran from them in our minds but didn’t truly allow our soul to change once we *settled* here.

Though we should not judge others, there is the Word which all are judged through. And this is most explicitly provided in The Ten Commandments.

**142. Time to Take a Stand and Choose One Way or the Other
(The Lukewarm Effect)**

*“I know your deeds, that you are neither cold nor hot.
I wish you were either one or the other!
So, because you are lukewarm
—neither hot nor cold—
I am about to spit you out of my mouth.”
(Rev 3:15-16)*

There comes a time in one’s life when he or she must choose morality over immorality, good over evil with the true intention and then absolute perseverance in doing so. And when we do this, we stricken everything which is *wicked* from our lives—things and people.

If we choose to stay in the middle, choosing only as a reaction to the way others are (going with the flow), we may feel safer but the reality is that we don’t get much done in the way of Godly productivity. We may use this middle-ground as a safehaven in our confusion or soul-searching, but then there comes a time when our soul searching delivers us to an important decision in our lives—choosing good over evil.

Yes, we are under grace, but we must choose to do right, to serve others, to respect others. And this must be our first intent, not a convenient subplot or surprise that just so happens to come out of a selfish intent or act. We should not focus on other things first—money, promotion, competition—over serving. And though we may encounter immorality or even slip into it, we are still covered by grace. We do not fall from grace. But if we choose to do immoral things (here I am not speaking of wicked things), “don’t you know that a little yeast works through the whole batch of dough? Get rid of the old yeast that you may be a new batch without yeast—as you really are (1Cor 5:7).”

So then, there comes a time when we make a conscious decision to be a moral citizen rather than an immoral one. And at this time, we also make the decision to be an advocate of morality—a defender of the right—and then act upon this decision in all we do. “Do not put out the Spirit’s fire; do not treat prophecies with contempt. Test everything. Hold on to the good. Avoid every kind of evil (1Thes 5:19-22).”

I must tell you that I have no right to call myself brother and continue to consciously and deliberately do immoral things and justify them in my mind. Again, I may find myself in an immoral situation, but I have a decision on how far I wish to stay in it to the degree of how wasteful I believe it is of my time under God. And if I see an immoral act in my midst, especially a deliberate one, and do nothing about it, I may as well side with immorality. Doing nothing is still sometimes saying something. Yes, have nothing to do with unrighteous acts but we must not be lukewarm in our hearts. We have this dilemma in our heads that say to do something, do nothing, do something, do nothing. At minimum, do this: expose it. Counteract plight—be a light.

143. The Ten Christian Commandments

(Exodus 20:1-17)

“Do to others what you would have them do to you.” (MT 7:12)

“After all, no one ever hated his own body, but he feeds and cares for it, just as Christ does the church—for we are members of his body.” (Eph 5:29, 30)

Now I speak of The Ten Commandments—the actual and undeniable degree of wickedness. And to these I cannot even call myself a Christian if I am deliberately doing them. Yes, I may sincerely repent later and God is full of grace, but deliberately doing these things and justifying doing them creates wickedness in my heart the more and more I do them until I do not respect anyone at all—not even God. And so one has actually expelled himself from the Church through his deliberate acts, especially if he still considers him holy or a brother. The reason being is that he or she is quite delusional. The church he imagines he is in is not at all the true Church of God. (1Cor 5:9-13)

The Ten Commandments all have one common denominator—*maliciously blatant and premeditated* disrespect. Where other immoral acts may lie in the gray area between voluntary and involuntary action, these ten commandments describe blatant and premeditated acts of disrespect done for malicious purposes, and in my opinion should be categorized as such. For instance, should one be considered a thief if one steals food because he is hungry and no one will provide him food or it is in a society’s culture to degrade beggars? In this case, who is worse—the thief or the murderer? Is an adulterer a true adulterer if, because she is so lonely as a wife married to a wife-beater and rapist, she allows herself (not out of spite) to be nurtured by another man who is truthfully caring and respectful to her? In this case, who is worse—the victim or the abuser who lied to God when giving his vows at the church? Which brings up another question—are the two really married?

This brings up an important issue. When St. Paul speaks about the wicked not inheriting the kingdom of God, who is he speaking of (1Cor 6:9-11)? What is wickedness? To me, wickedness is maliciously blatant and premeditated disrespect for another. One must understand that St. Paul is speaking to people in Corinth who serve Aphrodite (a false god), who is the goddess of love and sex. So for instance, when St. Paul speaks about homosexual offenders, is he speaking of those with afflictions of homosexuality who listen to their moral consciences but accept their afflictions so to live a moral and good life as much as possible or is he speaking of those who see another as just a body to reek havoc with for his own self-seeking pleasure or is he speaking of those who became homosexual out of spite? Who am I to judge any person, but being a spiritual person, I do have the right to present into the light people’s maliciously blatant and premeditated acts of disrespect. This is because these types of acts, without doubt, corrupt mind, body, and soul and destroy whole societies—which is reason enough—but they also destroy persons and entire cultures in a quick and effective manner, as well.

It is imperative that we know and understand The Ten Commandments, not just for others sake so to treat them right, but for our sake so that we treat ourselves right. And by ourselves I mean us, members of God’s body and shining spirits—for we strive to be one with His Spirit within us. So then it develops and envelops us as we are developing into it.

You have heard to do unto others as you would have them do unto you. I also agree with our Lord to do unto you to which adds to a loving and complete soul. The love you give will be returned to you through the love that you receive. But the love and reverence you adamantly provide back to the Spirit to which resides and loves you is absolutely imperative for a long and loving life. And in contrast, the hatred, strife, and envy you adamantly provide to the Spirit which resides in and loves you—so then, you counteract your true self and you slowly erode your true identity—will ruin you spiritually, bodily, mentally and soulfully.

So then, when we go over The Ten Commandments, what is told not to do to another do not do to yourself (to your Spirit), for you have felt indivisible many a time and more often with that loving Spirit who resides and loves you within and you are always God's Child—a child of light and goodness. So then, love yourself.

The Ten Commandments are the 10 rules that truly are *set in stone*. Going against them in your heart will result in true misery because you resist and truly devalue that which is loving and good inside you that continuously heals you from the inside out.

So then, because the Spirit has come to us from God via the resurrection of His Son, Jesus Christ, may God grant me permission to use the following as The Ten Christian Commandments—that which will provide us joy in our lives on earth and also an everlasting life with God.

I am the Lord your God. You shall have no other gods before me.

The Lord God of Abraham and Moses is my true God. The Spirit within me is the true Spirit of True God to which there is no need for any other nor is there any other.

You shall not make for yourself an idol in the form of anything in heaven above or on the earth beneath or in the waters below.

God is my focus as is His Spirit with me and within me which is the true Spirit of God that comes from my Father who has given him to me freely. I kneel to no one else.

You shall not misuse the name of the Lord your God.

Honor God's Spirit within me and I will then be honoring myself. Why should I tell myself off and abuse my own soul?

Remember the Sabbath day by keeping it Holy.

Keep holy that one day so to offer zero resistance to and allow myself absolute freedom for God's Spirit within me to comfort me and nurture me and restore me. Remember that Sunday is the first day of the week. So then the Sabbath day, to which I must choose, should be the first day of the week for rest(oration) to set a loving precedence in my mind, body, and soul for the next six days. God comes first in my week.

Honor your father and your mother, so that you may live long in the land the Lord your God is giving you.

Always honor my True Father and His Spirit that is in me via the resurrection of His Son, Jesus Christ. My new land of milk and honey, as of my pentecost, has been given to me by my True Father and I shall now live long in this land.

You shall not murder.

Do not murder the Spirit within me. To murder another is terrible (Mk 3:28). But to murder my own Spirit (meaning the Spirit that God has personally given to reside in me) within me is to end my own life, now and forever (Mk 3:29).

You shall not commit adultery.

Do not cheat or try to deceive the Spirit within me. God knows all. All I would be doing is deceiving myself.

You shall not steal.

Do not take that which God has given me through His Spirit within me as if I've owned it all along and gave it to myself. Appreciate what God has given me, especially His Holy Spirit he has freely given to me. And do not try to take from God (as if I could) as if it were owed me. Know thy source and know thy God.

You shall not give false testimony against your neighbor.

Do not give to yourself nor anyone else false testimony of what God and His Spirit has done for me. Always provide an honest account of that which in my heart—love and gratitude.

You shall not covet your neighbor's house.

Do not covet the house that the Lord has set up in me, where His Spirit lives for eternity. Do not maliciously do evil against God's Spirit within me who truly loves me, nor be jealous because of His all-knowing and genuinely all-loving power. And never maliciously try to hurt my Spirit, and thus myself, out of revenge by reacting to malicious remarks from others. Never go against the teachings and love of God's Spirit within me because of spite towards others. Then all I am doing is spiting myself. And because of my own selfish pride and arrogance of thinking that I know better than God and His Spirit within me or others, never deny that which others say to me that may add more love and joy to myself and add less resistance to the flow of love coming from the Holy Spirit within me to me.

144. Falling From Grace—Who Says?

*If grace is understood through the Holy Spirit's instruction
—from the same Spirit that resides in him—
then how can one rejoice in God's grace
if he is continuously trying to defeat it or destroy it?*

*He who tries to destroy the Spirit that dwells in him—and not through ignorance but in full understanding and knowledge of his adversary—will wind up destroying himself.
Do you not realize that you are attempting to defeat God Himself.*

Falling from grace? Who says? When you accept Christ through baptism, and not just by an act of any mandated law, you are saved and now under grace (Rom 6:14, Gal 5:4, Eph 2:1-10). There is no falling from grace. And this is why Jesus died—so that we can all be forgiven for any sin. There is one sin Jesus speaks of that is unforgivable, but I speak about this in later passages (MT 12:30-32). But realize this, that “if you forgive men when they sin against you, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive men their sins, your Father will not forgive your sins (MT 6:14,15).” What good is it to forgive your sin if all you are going to do is covet, slander, or maliciously do wrong to your brother over and over again (Ex 20:17)?

And so you are blessed to know that whatever sins you may have done, whatever sins you are doing now can be forgiven by your repentance, which can be an act of good will to someone who has wronged you. The key is to listen to your moral conscience that the Holy Spirit, which you now have within you, speaks through. Knowing all this, why would anyone turn down God’s grace which has been established through His Son?

145. The Effects of Authority (Parents) Demanding Respect from Subordinates (Children) Without First Showing Respect to Them

I have found that we acquire addictions or nervous habits because we fear that we will not get what we want or will not survive if we don’t get what we desire when we desire it. So we use something, some idol, to keep us calmed (Ex 20:4). This may be because, as children, we weren’t listened to and respected by our parents and truly never received what we needed, even to this day. Remember that the one greater in authority must first be the greater servant to the ones lesser in authority. As children, what we needed we struggled to take ourselves. This is the same in the workplace and wherever a hierarchy exists.

Faith (trust) plus patience equates to fulfillment and calmness. God asks us to trust Him with patience. It is difficult but necessary to go through this if we are to acquire a content life. In fact, many of our parents used us to get what they always wanted either for them or what they thought best for us. But they never really listened and respected our wishes. We have all heard the old adage to respect your elders. But, like every other Godly quality, if our elders do not show us what true respect looks like, how were we expected to know what true respect is. And then the spanking and thrashing begins because of “elder-ignorance”.

As adults, it is now necessary to replace those bad habits with actions that enlighten our soul by *simultaneously*:

1. Connecting with God’s Holy Spirit within us,
2. Using our spiritual gifts, and
3. Using our natural talents.

For each action you are about to do, prepare by inserting the three above. Even what you believe the most mundane chore is will become more fun. For instance, if I am taking out the garbage,

find a passage in the Bible about chores or work or garbage or something relative (Ecc 5:19, Col 3:23), use your spiritual gifting (such as encouragement or helpfulness) when doing it, and by all means do it in your own unique way (be creative).

When we make a decision to act on something, we first receive communication from the outside and then probe our soul with our minds to pick that which meets the query and then transmit that to our bodies to communicate to the outside. Now, we must ask our Spirit, not probe our own soul, for the answer to the query. When we find out that things work better this way, we will have convinced ourselves to replace the better answer with the one that currently exists in our soul. We may even find that no right thing currently exists in our soul, and thus, we will insert the new right thing provided us by the Holy Spirit into our soul.

As an adult, we do not have the luxury of just dealing with one or two other adults, but hundreds of adults. But because many of these adults were not shown respect and trained in the right way by their parents either, we keep on receiving the same dead attention. Therefore, we are still dealing with children, but in this case, adult-children.

Understand that when one focuses on God, one will become a true adult. But in many cases, all we can do is accept the other and pray for them. And so now you see that those who focus on God will have a difficult time in the world and will face rejection a lot. But we are not in the world, so release yourself from your attachments to its childlike ways. Children will be children. You have a greater purpose.

146. The Courageous and The Cowardly

*“He who overcomes will inherit all this, and I will be his God and he will be my son.
But the cowardly...—their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur.”
(Rev 21:7,8)*

“Do not be misled: ‘Bad company corrupts good character.’” (1Cor 15:33)

*One cannot enjoy his life until he has the courage to turn and face his demons.
But you must first face and conquer your demons within
in order to overcome those in the world.
Not only do you owe it to yourself, but God demands,
that wherever you go not to bring the demons with you in mind, body, or soul.*

Up until now, I have been training you for battle. It is here that self awareness will bring about freedom. It is literally true that one must always “fight for one’s true self” if he or she is to gain any peace. The question is, “With what sword?”

“Put your sword back in its place, for all who draw the [physical] sword will die by the sword [of my Father]. Do you think I cannot call on my Father, and he will at once put at my disposal more than twelve legions of angels?” (MT 26:52, 53) And so, we with the Holy Spirit, allow God to send His legions. It is our job to forgive. God will place the lowly in their places. Worry not, the Spirit of God will fight our battles for us. It is our duty to focus on

and remain strong in Christ.

How do you know who is fake and who is not? If a man or woman fears to search his or her own soul, he or she will try to corrupt yours, whether he or she knows it or not. This goes for all types of spiritual men and women, as well—priests and pastors. If a man has not searched his own soul and admitted his soul corrupt before God and then proceeded to do the hard work in schooling himself intimately by and with God The Teacher so to heal, he only cites rhetoric and conjecture. He is a false spiritual man. A person who has not had pain and agony and searched his soul and conquered his own suffering by way of the Holy Spirit has no business on the pulpit.

There are few true spiritual leaders and certainly much fewer true ones than who are on the pulpit today. It takes no work at all to try to control others. Even the most cowardly can pick up a stick and use it. The coward who will not search his own soul and conquer his demons by doing the hard work in true obedience and faith of The Counselor's teachings is a detriment to society. The spiritual leader who will not do this is a pawn of the devil. "For such men are false apostles, deceitful workmen, masquerading as apostles of Christ. And no wonder, for Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light. It is not surprising, then, if his servants masquerade as servants of righteousness. Their end will be what their actions deserve." (2Cor 11:13-15) These men and women want the glory without doing the hard work. And the glory they will get by deceived men and women, but damnation is what they will receive in death.

These men and women are always trembling in fear, placing you as their shield, but coming off as great interpreters of the Law. They are cowards to the nth degree. They are running from demons within themselves and not confronting their demons in the world. They then use you to avoid their own massacre. The best you can do for them is disconnect yourself from them so that they will have no choice but to search their own souls. Because I tell you, a person who has not conquered his demons within with God cannot conquer his demons still living in the world. A man who has not fought battles in his own soul with God will cow down to the world—and he knows it. He tries to escape this by controlling whoever he can. The person is a coward—and he or she knows this as well. Instead of using his anger to conquer his demons within, he uses it to thrash out at you when you stop doing what he wants. He is a Dr. Jekyll one moment and a Mr. Hyde the next.

Disconnect yourself from such cowardliness. For the courageous come to fight—to fight the demons within by trusting God and then with the true confidence after the inner battles have been fought to face and conquer his adversaries and demons in the physical world. (Romans 8:28-39)

So then, let me reiterate. If you are not willing to be counseled, you have no right counseling others. First accept your own weaknesses and be in counseling for yourself. People always want to tell others what to do without looking in at themselves and without facing their own demons. These people are "bad company" and wind up making everyone around them miserable in the meantime. There comes a time when everyone has to either look at themselves instead of just looking at others. There comes a time when you have to choose to either be courageous or a coward. Courageous people want nothing to do with cowards because cowards bring people

down, and cowards can't stand courageous people because cowards can't stand to look at themselves.

And so I will say this once again, in a different way. You must make the choice. Now that you are no longer ignorant, remain a coward and bind yourself to this earth and so you will be bound to it as far as heaven is concerned or become a courageous conqueror and *loose* yourself from this earth and you will be loosed as far as heaven is concerned. (MT 16:19)

Courageous people obey God and confront their demons. Cowards cow down to demons. And the lukewarm bargain with whoever will abide by their own will and try to make friends even with demons. You cannot make friends with a demon. The courageous embody intimate love, ambition, and freedom; the coward emptiness, drudgery, and slavery; and the lukewarm fear, confusion, and chaos.

Now that one is clear of what constitutes good and what constitutes evil, now comes the time when one picks up his or her sword and swears allegiance to the Lord his Master and fights evil in His name wherever he comes across it.

One cannot enjoy his life until he has the courage to turn and face his demons. But you must first face and conquer your demons within in order to overcome those in the world. Not only do you owe it to yourself, but God demands, that wherever you go not to bring the demons with you in mind, body, or soul. This is why it is best to stay where you are and fight before running off to another place. After the war is won, find out where God wants you and then go there only at that time.

147. Healthy Ego and Unhealthy Ego

First how does one who is ignorant gain knowledge? One gains knowledge by listening (not just hearing) to communication from another. And if one is ignorant of Christ, then one gains knowledge by the communication from other humans.

So then, for us who are not ignorant of our Savior, what is our role as the Holy Spirit educates us? I had stated that the child of man either wants a father or wants to be father. And you see this in many a church and city. The mature in Christ share with others his knowledge that he had gained through his first educators mature, holy, and intimate with the Holy Spirit and that now he gains by listening to the Holy Spirit within himself. The mature in Christ need not a human father nor does he need to be a human father, but a transmitter of knowledge and a library of knowledge in service for others seeking advice. But where does our own ego get in the way?

I have found a line where a disciple's healthy ego ends and unhealthy ego begins and much of it has to do with expectations. One with a healthy ego provides knowledge, planting a seed without expectation. He respects another in the other's own acquisition of belief and enactment to faith. One with an unhealthy ego goes beyond providing knowledge by putting on a believable show to conjure up another's belief. He disrespects, caretakes, and thus, manipulates another through tainted illusion and exterior fantasy. And if that is not bad enough, he proves and provides miracles to conjure up faith in another and a false faith at that—a faith on miracle

and illusion instead of intimacy by His Own True Father. And if that isn't even bad enough, he goes even further and sees his own self having vested himself in the intimate relationship between the Holy Spirit and the other and expects to be paid back through certain results by his convert.

Let us be an example of Jesus Christ. First of all, God is our True Father and the Holy Spirit our True Counselor who arrived by way of the resurrection of our beautiful Christ. For Christ instructed and also showed us as the Holy Spirit now shows us and we know that the Holy Spirit provides us true intimacy with our Lord. "But the seed on good soil stands for those with a noble and good heart, who hear the word, retain it, and by persevering produce a crop (Luke 8:15)." And if anyone is allowed to provide miracles, it was Jesus the Man and Christ in the Spirit because miracles are provided by God and through His Holy Spirit. But Jesus the Man was careful not to allow his disciples to have faith on miracles but only on God who provides such miracles (MT 12:39).

So now, let me be clear on this. It is our part to plant a seed, educate by transmitting knowledge—not through elaboration but through intimate communication with another. It is the receivers job and choice to then acquire belief and gain the Holy Spirit. And it is the intimacy between the Holy Spirit and the receiver for the receiver to grow in faith and for him to invest himself in his own new and ongoing knowledge. The line between a disciple's healthy ego and unhealthy ego in discipling others is at the end of transmitting knowledge. (Eph 3:14-21, Titus 1:1-3)

And this let me also suggest. Be careful who you choose to give knowledge to. The simple minded, the retarded and such have yet eaten from the Tree (Gen 2:9). Do not be cruel and intentionally feed these from the Tree like you would train another for his adulthood, but educate them in the Lord. And do not quarrel with those who oppose you, but gently instruct (2Ti 2:22-26). And "do not give dogs what is sacred; do not throw your pearls to pigs (MT 7:6)."

148. Farewell

Dear brothers and sisters, in the beginning of our journey together, the Lord revealed to me that He is going to teach me what I should have been taught in childhood. He extended His hand to me and we shared our intimate journey together in true faith and produced something useful. And as a result of this, He and I became best friends,—bosom buddies—inseparable to the very end.

I hope you have come to know you are priceless in the eyes of our Lord and are unconditionally loved by Him. In today's world, Jesus' words to "love your neighbor as yourself" must be adhered to even greater (MT 19:19). But realize that, upon meeting anyone throughout our daily journeys, the love one feels for oneself is equal to the love he or she is able to give to others. This, my brothers and sisters, will instill in you a continuously compassionate heart for one another. And teach love to everyone you meet by your faith and hope through serving.

To all God's Children, may you always do good by your faith for the Lord and by the obedience of His Law. May you always be able to discern the voice of our Lord. And may you follow our

Savior Jesus Christ and live by His example by way of the Holy Spirit. And may you always know you are of infinite worth and feel of immense value to God through all you do. “Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. [And] love your neighbor as yourself (MT 22:37-40).”

Adios, brothers and sisters. In the light I will see you when I see you. Love God, Jesus, each other, and yourselves by way of the Holy Spirit.

“The Grace of the Lord Jesus be with God’s people. Amen.” (Rev 22:21)

In Jesus’ name, Amen.
For You, My Father.

The Beatitudes (MT 5:3-10)

Blessed are the poor in spirit,
For theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are those who mourn,
For they will be comforted.

Blessed are the meek,
For they will inherit the earth.

Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for
righteousness,
For they will be filled.

Blessed are the merciful,
For they will be shown mercy.

Blessed are the pure in heart,
For they will see God.

Blessed are the peacemakers,
For they will be called Sons of God.

Blessed are those who are persecuted because of
righteousness,
For theirs is the kingdom in heaven.

149. My Technological Pentecost

During the past two years, the Lord has prepared me through educating me by way of His Spirit within me in the rock of Godly relationship usefulness. He has also provided me material for assessing the foundation of Godly technological usefulness. I have found a system of certain education and training throughout my childhood and adult life and deduced that I must acquire a trade license, in addition to the degrees and military experience I already have. And it is quite revealing that most of what is of importance is that which I acquired from risking for me apart from what others thought was wrong to do. It has been from seizing the opportunities that came my way that I found morally intriguing and fun to do.

When the Lord felt that my education in The Rock was sufficient enough for now so to move up, He made known to me my true career in His purpose as The Foundation. During this time of Foundation Education (my secular college education came many years earlier), I made the effort to listen to His Spirit within me and sought the avenue needed to acquire the trade license. My conscience had been telling me to do this for many years, even when others said to me it was a waste of time. But now that I listen to the Lord and He is my Father, I new it was time to acquire it. And behold, what I thought was going to be three years of schooling for this trade license became only three weeks to acquire it. Within two weeks later, a company called upon me out-of-the-blue to manage in their firm in aerospace engineering and production support of the United States military. I can only anticipate that my new upcoming position is important and strategic for His purpose for me and in support of a greater purpose of His.

150. The M.E.R.I.T.S. Technological System (A Design, Manufacture, and Maintenance Philosophy)

In relation to designing, manufacturing, and maintenance, I discovered by the Good Lord this Godly method, which is a method of any product or any person. I believe we should design, manufacture, and then maintain with all these steps in mind in faith that whatever we are making will work greater with the greater quality provided to it. We must incorporate God in everything we do. This system is designed to help us do just that as we design, manufacture and maintain.

These steps must work in sequence from the top down. If one is skipped or one is without sufficient quality, the rest of the steps after it will not work well or work at all.

Each step must also be a benefit to its focus. For instance, the assembly should be an added benefit to the environment which it works in at the step of introducing. This may be one of the attributes in the immutability portion of the faith testing as mentioned below.

So then, The M.E.R.I.T.S. System for design, manufacture, and maintenance is:

- | | | |
|------------------|-----------------|--|
| Step 1. | Make It | (Make or manufacture each component of the product/assembly through machining, etc. in good faith) |
| Step 2.
works | Erect It | (Erect or assemble the assembly and see how each component works) |

- with one another in good faith)
- Step 3. **Relate It** (Relate or associate the assembly to the other outside assemblies that will be linked to it in good faith)
- Step 4. **Introduce It** (Inject, introduce and subject the assembly, along with all its linked assemblies, into the designed environments in good faith)
- Step 5. **Tweak It** (Tweak to time and regulate the assembly to work most efficiently in its designed environments in good faith)
- Step 6. **Supply It** (Supply or issue the assembly to the user in good faith)

Designing, manufacturing, or maintaining in good faith means testing its true faithfulness by the following faithfulness factors:

Faithfulness Is:

(Unswerving adherence to a person or thing or to the oath or promise by which a tie was contracted)

The Faithfulness Factors are:

Firmness (resoluteness or firm determination to adhere to a cause or purpose)

Allegiance (loyalty or firm resistance to any temptation to desert or betray)

Immutability (perseverance or steady and unwavering course in love, allegiance, or conviction)

Tenacity (staunchness or fortitude and resolution in adherence and imperviousness to influences that would weaken it)

Harmony (consistency or continuing firmness of emotional attachment without necessarily implying strict obedience to promises or vows, thus also showing flexibility and adaptability)

And if it is people we are helping, first reconstruct the mind, body, and soul independently, then engage all three to work together, then help the person relate to others within a healthy

environment, giving the person time to adjust to the new situation. And remember to test each step in faith before going to the next one.

151. Time to Go to Work

I have been called from out-of-the-blue to do a job that fits me to a tee. I am on my way to do a job commanded by the Lord. I must have total confidence that my schooling these past two years by my Father is more than satisfactory to rely on and engage in to do the job. Keep with me what I have written these past two years to remind me of who I am and what I am able to do. Read His Word and this *book of me* to do His will, now and forever. Consistency in who you are, striving to do good and be compassionate, is the key to good health.

Do not sway. What is now instilled in me in a very secure fashion, in my heart, is needed to do the Godly job. Rely on it even when others may reject it. In these previous passages, I have spoken on how my own frame of mind and actions affect myself and others around me. And now I bring all this knowledge and experience into a team concept. I must keep my eye on the true focus—the big picture in which what we do as a team affects our clients and the even bigger picture of how it may affect a broader purpose farther down the line—which is all guided by the Almighty. It may be to support the President of the United States in what is about to happen. But whatever it may be, it is to prepare people for effective and efficient resoluteness and not focus on my own self-gain or self-promotion.

And this is the same with family. My wife and I must focus on the big picture in which what we do as a team affects our children and the even bigger picture of how it may affect our children's children.

It is now time to test my own self in all the areas of true faith, as described in the previous passage, to my Lord who has given to me new life and a new found purpose. And my focus is to be on building the house—that is, on my job and my immediate family (wife and children)—in full trust that what I have learned in my childhood training in the past couple of years is sufficient and will be with me for eternity.

152. The Road of Respect (Respect What is At-Hand)

We can define abusing as "abnormally using".

*"We have wronged no one, we have corrupted no one,
we have exploited no one." (2Cor 7:2-4)*

Stop and look around you. Look what you are doing right now. Look at the tools you are using to get the job done, including your own body as the first and foremost tool. Assess each tool, how each was designed to be used in its optimum environment and at its most efficient pace for the optimum results. This is also true for each component and people that are utilized to achieve the desired result. And when seeking the right tool to be used, choose the one that best fits the work. For instance, is it prudent to buy a pickup truck if one does not intend to ever use the bed?

If one is not certain why a tool was designed and its optimum environment to be used in and proper and most efficient way to use it, one has no business using the tool. Sometimes we can ascertain this information just by sight and mind. In other situations we must be trained. And when managing people or things, one must be trained to accurately be able to respect their individual design.

And so, respecting a tool and any component includes understanding the limitations of their designs as well as the optimum workings of them for a safe and hopefully long-lasting life. Be patient to its demands. Respect the tool and the tool will respect you. I cannot say this about all people, however. But remember that all things were designed by God, even if you were the tool that He wielded in creating them.

We can define abusing as “abnormally using”. Are you using a tool for something else other than what it was designed for? Are you using food to comfort your soul instead of for sustenance? Are you driving a car because of looks instead of for to get you from one place to another? Are you going to church to fit in instead of for getting closer with God? When one only knows control instead of respect, one winds up abnormally using to get what one wants. But when we respect each person (including ourselves), place, and thing, we will find the proper way of getting what we desire or what we think God wants us to do through attrition. And if we still do not get what we desire after attrition, then we need to look at ourselves and accept that what we want is not what God wants for us.

In today’s society, abuse is rampant. Respect is fading into the unknown. We have come to exploit whatever we think we possess. Where is the true and righteous path to heaven? It is on the Road of Respect. When one is on this road via his new soul, one will start giving up swindling (manipulating), scheming, drinking, stealing, and fornicating. One will come out of impoverishment. One will be content with what he has instead of fantasizing about what he doesn’t have. So then, with everything you come in contact with, assess its true designed purpose and only use it for that purpose. And for what you require, assess first what it is that you can find is real and designed for that requirement. I require true love and intimacy—God fits my requirement perfectly. And sometimes I find it hard to even respect Him because of my greed.

I suggest actually writing out an inventory of people, places, and things in your life and honestly answering two questions:

1. Am I respecting the person (including yourself), place, or thing the way it was designed to be used?
2. Does the design of the person (the current make up of the person to include yourself), place, or thing I have chosen to be in my life useful or enhance my Godly journey?

If one answers “no” to any person, place or thing in the first question, one must change oneself in relation to that person (including oneself if it is oneself one is not respecting), place, or thing. If one answers “no” to any person, place or thing in the second question, then one must either change oneself if it is oneself who is not enhancing one’s Godly journey or one must

contemplate ending a relationship with the person, place, or thing if the person, place, or thing will not or can not change.

Remember to first assess, then apply. And with all things, respect all that you come in contact (in this case for achieving a desired outcome), including yourself of which you have instilled the highest integrity. The goal is to achieve the full potential of whatever is useful, including ourselves.

153. Focus In On...

Focusing in on the following can make each day a memorable and fun day in each of our lives. It is a good thing when each new day we

Focus in on:

The Wow

- Focus in on getting to experience the changes that come with each new day.
- Focus in on getting to experience people and your job a little differently.

The Vow

- Focus in on the vows you made to God
- Focus in on the vows you made to your spouse, your loved ones, and your boss.

The Pow

- Focus in on the impact that you can make on someone else's day.
- Focus in on the impact that you can make with the kind of work you do.

The Plow

- Focus in on your specific job at work and at home—continuously educate yourself in what you are doing rather than what you fantasize doing.
- Focus in on the steady work in progress and not just submitting something at the end—the quality of the crafting is what delivers a quality craft and reveals the presence of a true craftsman.

The Now

- Focus in on what is happening now, assess the situation at-hand, and accept the outcome as fact, not fiction—“deal with what is real”.
- Focus in on what is in front of you and find a solution—never mind what could of or should of happened, but what is actually happening.

The How

- Focus in on the “how I am going to do this” by first asking God and His Spirit within you.
- Focus in on the how by developing a plan using the combination of all your gifts, talents, training, and experience *in full trust* and then faithfully execute the plan in complete confidence.

The Dow—not the Cash Cow

- Focus in on managing your money and your time wisely.
- Focus in on honestly and accurately assessing your family’s financial needs.

The Bow

- Focus in on moving forward, not battering down the hatches or watching life pass you by. Remember, the Bow is where the “breaks” are, the Deck is where the “fakes” are, and the Stern is where the “wakes” are.
- Focus in on God as your Captain. With God, all things are possible!

Walk up to the tip of the bow,
And proclaim Him aloud:

“YOU’RE THE KING OF THE WORLD!!!”

154. Pearls of Wisdom for Going to Work

How can you identify a corrupt business?

*A corrupt business divides its workforce into two distinct groups:
stool pigeons and pigeons.
And sooner or later, everyone winds up either
pigeon-holed, crapped on, or holding the stool.*

These are pearls of wisdom I have found that will help ensure continued intimacy with God and integrity in yourself when going to work.

1. *As Jesus said, “Don’t give your pearls to pigs”.* Be cautious of who you are going to work for, even if it is a little job. Do not fall fast because you have little trust that God will come through. Once you’ve committed, you must work hard and diligently. But if you work for people who are disrespectful and selfish, your hard work and diligence are wasted on people who are most likely in the end going to tear down you and whatever work you’ve done. We should not work to please people but to find a greater intimacy with God, who will enlighten us whether we are being abused (exploited) or productive in enhancing the lives of people and the world in general. Your pearls are just that, very special treasures within you and should only be shared with people who appreciate them. If you find yourself giving your pearls to pigs, leave when you feel the other has become rich enough off of your good will (which is actually in a very short amount of time)—believe me, you have paid him in full and have more than satisfied your agreement with him. If more people thought this way and felt themselves valuable, the world (especially the business world) would have to change for the better in order to employ good help. Life is too short to allow ourselves to be managed by people who are not intimate with Christian virtue. “By justice a king gives a country stability, but one who is greedy for bribes tears it down (Prov 29:4).”
2. *Work diligently to reap treasures from heaven, not treasures on earth.* Work diligently towards a good outcome, instead of always craving a certain outcome with little intention of working diligently. We do not know what the future will hold, but it is in our working

diligently within the journey that counts and where we can enjoy the fulfillment of each day's work. This will leave us content, at peace, and fulfilled at the end of our journey. Taking is not right and taking without doing the work winds up keeping us wanting more and we never become satisfied or content with the outcome. It is while we work diligently and do the work will we receive treasures from God and wind up satisfied, fulfilled, and content with the outcome. We all want to go to heaven, but work well in the journey according to Christ's principles and under the understanding of true grace and leave going to heaven to God. Do not work for promotions and far off places, work to be intimate with God and everything else will fall into place. A man who knows he's worth a million bucks will never need a million bucks to prove it.

3. *Realize that an employer's business and how he runs it is a reflection of his soul.* A man who wants to pay you little for a lot has in himself little to offer the lot. An employer who is not willing to share profits with his employees is not worth sharing yourself with him. An employer who does not realize the limitations of his business, has little limitations for himself. An employer who is not content with what he has, will never be content with what you are able to offer him. I suggest to you, as a skilled man, serve before kings not obscure men (Pr 22:29).
4. *Crave to work freely for God, not for employers.* Allow your salary to be your arbitrary equalizer. Money takes no sides; it just waits on people to use it. And people must work to eat. If you have no other means, to an employer who cares little of your worth, make him pay enormously for your value. If he will not, and most likely he will not, consider yourself the more fortunate. In contrast, one will work very hard with less pay and relocate great distances from home for an employer who cares greatly about one's worth. An employer who is not willing to provide a fair pay for a fair day's work, is not a fair and just person. Research and understand the fair market value of your true value (usefulness) in relation to the clear scope of work provided you and along with the disposition of your employer so that you may be a fair minded employee and find a fair minded employer. Leave *pro-bono* work for family, friends, and those who are really in need. Remember that Jesus willingly paid the greatest price for you to set you free (God understands your true worth) and you offer him your value (usefulness) freely in return because of it. In contrast, many employers grudgingly pay a price for you and continuously look over your shoulder to see if they are getting their money's worth while considering little or not considering at all your worth but only assessing your value to them. Therefore, your heart should crave for God much, much more than for your employer.
5. *Be generous, not exploitable.* Be generous, but know its limitations. Do not allow others to exploit you. Those who exploit your goodness are worse than thieves, stealing your goodness provided you by God instead of just goods provided by the earth. And like all goods provided by the earth at birth but manipulated by man, you will eventually be discarded without conscience to return to it by those who exploit you. An exploited person is like the main meal at a dinner table, everyone passes you around without thinking to those who gladly take a helping and even to those who want nothing to do with you—even to the dogs under the table and the scavengers at the landfill—until there is nothing left of you either way. Again, if you find yourself giving your pearls to pigs, leave when you feel the

other has become rich enough off of your good will—believe me, you have paid him in full and have more than satisfied your agreement with him.

6. *Do not play a company or a co-worker against another.* Do not play one company against another. Many do this for their own personal gain. More than one company may see you desirable, but keep each company separate. You would not play one friend against another and we know it is wrong to play one parent against another. And you would not share your friend's secret that he or she entrusted to you. When one plays company against company (or co-worker against co-worker) to increase his wage or whatever, one sends a loud and clear message that "I can not be trusted." Your ignorance will inevitably enslave you because the player you think you are will be played by one more devious than you and without you even knowing it. You will fall into misery and into a miserable position that you may not be able to get out of. Many an executive has fallen this way, along with his integrity.

155. Interpretation of Dreams

When I was in my youth, I had a reoccurring dream that I didn't understand. During my adventure in the woods, I had many different dreams that at the time I could not understand. And near the end of the river, I understood the Book of Revelations, John's dream.

The first dream, in my youth at the age of 4 or 5 and later, I was always outside an office building and I was only a few inches tall. I was in the brush and it was night and I had two beautiful women with me. The beautiful women and I followed a man, that seemed to me like a giant, into the office building. But I could never see his face, only his legs. I wasn't afraid of him. Actually I loved him. And as we followed him in and went to an office, he opened the door and a bright light shown out and I could only see his legs and the really bright light. But as I approached the office, I told the two women to stay behind. Not because I wanted to protect them, but because it would have been a hassle with them. I wanted this all to my self. I heard a little murmuring from the man talking to his colleague inside the office and that was it. He never left the doorway. And then I always woke up.

Interpretation: The two women was my safe sexual fixation. The man was Christ. The person in the office God.

Then, when I was 32 or 33, I had four different dreams of hotels that I always came to. It was dark and in the middle of nowhere. In the woods, I had three really scary hotel dreams and one scary dream of a mountain with caves and wise men in the first cave and also driving up to a railroad crossing and admiring how far they went in both directions. I also had a dream of being in a hospital on a gurny and I was being wheels in a corridor through bright light and I also had some dreams of a restaurant with a beautiful path that lead to the water and banks and other buildings with pathways that lead around the buildings or down to the water. Now all these dreams were at night, except the hospital where I didn't know if it was night or day. But the next one was half night and half day. And in the river I had one absolutely beautiful hotel dream of a huge stairway in the middle of a huge high hotel right on the water and corridors all through it that lead to different café's..

Interpretation: Hotels have corridors. The first three hotels, I was facing my fear and my fears filtered the beauty of the hotels. So they became nightmares. The hotels were the city that contained the river. The corridors in the hotels represent the River of Life. The Cafés the different stages of the journey. The water and world outside, heaven.

The railway, again the River of Life. The path up the mountain, again the River of Life.

Then I had one beautiful dream of a two story semi-circular building in white with different shops and a great pool hall and it was day. And the grounds were immaculate, but at the edge of the grounds was a small man eating bush.

Interpretation: Same as before. The great pool hall was where God lived. The bush was a fear trying to keep me from being there.

Then I had a dream of a beautiful city and people lived in great white buildings shaped like geometric figures on beautiful green grounds alongside a great long beautiful white path. And at the start of the path, was a great Roman looking building, like a temple, with great high pillars and a huge stairway that led up to the great building. I could not see inside the building and I did not know who lived there.

Then I had two or three absolutely beautiful dreams of a city all in white with people all in white robes. And it was so beautiful. And everyone go along beautifully. And I walked through parks and visited people in their beautiful small and quaint homes. And it was a vivid day with blue sky.

Interpretation: In the first dream, the building was the temple or entrance to the River of Life. The path the River and the buildings, the harbors alongside the River at the different stages.

The last dream was the Holy City (the New Jerusalem) and the paths represented the River of Life.

And now I have been able to interpret Revelations. The churches are the stages of healing: feeling incarcerated, going through detox, leaving people behind to face your fears on your own and sort out the good from the bad, but then desperately finding safety in another, going into a program of healing but not of Christ and then receiving the help of a professional who loves God, coming to Christ (the Church), deciding to believe or not to believe. And now we are at the mouth of the River of Life. The first death is the conquering of the first beast (shamefulness, etc.) within from childhood (or sea like the womb) after the stage of courage. The second beast are those within the world. In this case, for John it may have been Nero or his father. This will happen at the stage of self awareness and freedom. Then, I believe, there will a peaceful time in life until we are about to die and are very fearful of it. This is Satan's final move. But then we die and Satan is gone and we live in heaven.

156. The Difference Between Managing and Controlling

*A manager procures the needs of his or her workers
so they can do their jobs effectively and efficiently.
He, therefore, provides support for his or her subordinates
by empowering them toward fulfilling their overall goal.*

All one can do for someone else is:

1. Provide what the overall goal is (general what)
2. Ask those to pursue the goal (general who)
3. Announce the time to start pursuing the goal (general when)
4. Explain why the goal needs pursuing (general why)
5. Give own examples/testimonies in achieving the goals (general how)
6. Provide references of knowledge (literary works, oral works, resources, etc.) toward achieving the goals (general where)

Specifically how a person achieves the goals is up to the individual person. Do not let a deadline drive the person, but only the goals. Deadlines limit the quality of work and focuses more on the quantity of work. Tell people that if they just earnestly and continuously pursue the goal, they will be ahead of schedule. Produce milestones within the project that are worker driven, not deadline-driven. This will drive them at their own unique pace toward something greater than themselves.

A manager continuously reestablishes focus on *what* needs to be done keeping a clear eye and understanding in regards to the bigger picture or overall goal. A manager trusts others skilled in the details on how to each step needs to be done. A manager respects others. A manager understands fulfilling the contract rather than just achieving its objectives. A manager knows that the means justify the end. **A manager procures the needs of his or her workers so they can do their jobs effectively and efficiently. He, therefore, provides support for his or her subordinates by empowering them toward fulfilling their overall goal.**

A controller continuously reestablishes focus on *how* each step needs to be done, which blurs his vision and understanding of the overall goal by distracting himself from it. A controller trusts no one and is not concerned with fully utilizing the skills of others. A controller respects no one (not even himself) and is ignorant of the true meaning of respect. A controller is concerned with achieving objectives rather than fulfilling the contract. A controller is concerned with the end justifying the means. A controller is a dictator and thus dictates orders. Seldom does he or she provide his or her workers with the needs or tools to fulfill their overall goal efficiently or effectively.

An honorable employee works in the task at hand within the limitations given him by his boss. The honorable employee trusts that his boss will give him whatever is needed from outside these limitations to fulfill the contract. The honorable employee is not concerned with whether his boss does his job, but only that he himself fulfills his commitments. An honorable employee has integrity.

A dishonorable employee works in his task given him and other's as well, working within and outside the limitations given him by his boss. He tries to control the actions of everyone involved, not trusting that others know what they are doing nor that his boss will support him. The dishonorable employee is concerned with whether his boss does his job and whether others fill their commitments (most notably to him). A dishonorable employee slanders and promotes scandal.

157. The River of Life

The Temple:

I am a child of God and a person placed here by Him to do His purpose. I am His temple that houses the Holy Spirit of the Almighty. (Eze 43:11, Eze 47) I traverse The River (Rev 22) and visit the following harbors along the way so to realize the true me:

The River:

The Mouth of Knowledge: I seek and acquire knowledge with honor and integrity in noble servant hood.

Harbor of Belief: I ultimately believe that the knowledge I am acquiring comes from God and is uniquely suited for me for God's greater purpose.

Harbor of Hope: I have hope that I am continually getting closer to realizing the bigger picture and God's true purpose for me and be with God in pursuit of that purpose.

Harbor of Faith: I act upon my new found belief of what I am doing in a focused and useful manner committing and trusting that I am doing the work God wants me to do as part of a yet unknown bigger picture.

Harbor of Perseverance: I diligently and earnestly pursue and acquire knowledge and act in faith upon that knowledge from and for God toward a divine purpose.

Harbor of Wisdom: I accept and learn through both achievements and failures so to build my confidence in achieving God's true purpose for me.

Harbor of Humility: Though I may fear, I act on the acquired wisdom to find the intimacy required to see God's true purpose and enter into the bigger picture with God.

Harbor of True Love: I truly love God and what I am doing for Him and I am continually propelled into a greater sense of intimacy with Him and a greater sense of value in doing my job for Him.

Harbor of Allegiance: I faithfully follow God in full allegiance and in the work God is providing me regardless of the outcome because I know that what I am doing is greater than myself.

Harbor of True Intimacy: I am God's son. I have found sonship. I have realized my full adoption intrinsic with my True Father. I walk in true comfort and warmth in my Father's arms as He reveals to me what I need to know and experience. (Romans 8)

Harbor of Grace: I am free from ignorance and misinformation. God reveals to me the bigger picture. I see myself as a small, but very significant part of the bigger picture. As I focus on the River's path, I find that which God asks me to do is so much more significant and detrimental than my own desires for myself. I find that what I thought was so crucial is small in comparison to God's overall goal for my life. I concentrate solely on my unique purpose faithfully within God's way of doing it. I realize that God is driving my life and that whatever is needed for the purpose, God will give me.

Harbor of Freedom: I am free from the outside world. I solely live in the unique path and place I was created to be.

Harbor of Inner Peace: I am truly content.

The Wellspring of True Self (Heaven): I function as my Father's son in the true creation I was predestined to be.

158. Freedom and Patience

Be patient awaiting God's will. Be patient with your boss. Stay on the path. That which you need will be given to you. Remind your boss after a period of time because he is human (he may have forgot or refused to listen to the prompting from God). Expose your enemies, but do not attack them. Your patience will prevail as they will anxiously and desperately come to you. Then, if you must, you can clearly deal with them one at a time. God will bring your (His) enemies to you. Remember that you have everlasting life—you can afford to be virtuously patient indefinitely. Focus in on your technical job and virtuous path, both of which God has given you. Do not stray or veer from either.

Know your station in life and where and what the boundaries of your station are. Understand the purpose and place God has set for you and created you for and focus on and work in it. Keep to the River as you work at your station in life because the River, the station, and keeping within the boundaries God has set for you will keep you from worry and keep you innocent and free.

159. Revenge

I have found that those who are mean and devious to me are their own worst enemies. I, being a child of God and loving and holy, will always add some joy to whomever I touch. So then, it is true that if others are mean-spirited and devious towards me, the best revenge I could take on them is to be gracious to them and leave them to their own ways. What little joy they could have acquired by being with me, for only a minute even, they missed. This opportunity by God for them, at least this one of a possibly potential many that was presented to them, was lost. They will continue to torment themselves just as much or even worse over time because I chose to walk away and leave them to their own misery. It is sad, but one cannot help someone who

doesn't want to be helped. All I can do is provide them knowledge, if they will even allow themselves the fortune to take that.

160. Teach not Argue

Like I've said before, everything we do and everything we create comes from a filter, or paradigm—a belief of what is true, though it may not be Truth—in our soul. Those who do not understand this or Truth or Christ, are not yet at the Temple. They are, more than likely, in a state of fear, codependence, addiction, abandonment, or what have you. And it is our job as leaders in understanding the spiritual nature of Christ to teach, to help, and to empower those that God sends to us. Seize the opportunity to share yourself with them, but do not seize them to share yourself.

When one is frustrated and angry and approaches you with an argument, it is frivolous to argue with him or her about the symptom, or thing that angers him or her. Instead, realize that whatever thing he comes to you with has to do with his soul. If you are filled in Christ and the Holy Spirit, and thus, in virtue, then you know that it is the other's mind that is fighting his own soul to do right because your soul is in tact. It is up to us to help his soul and show him what type of virtue should be in their rather than what half-truth is in their now. There was never a person that wanted to argue that did not want to solve a problem by the time he left.

So, then do not argue about things, but teach on matters that deal with the soul. Find out where he is in the churches (Rev 2, 3) so that you can help him get to the Temple. This will help him see the bigger picture and ease his mind and give him hope. Pride is based on fear. Show him the way to calm his fears so that he may lower his pride.

Therefore, teach not argue. It does the person who comes to you no good if you embrace his argument. The time you choose to argue with him, you could be using to help him find love and happiness in Christ.

161. My Job, My Purpose, My Self (Ezekial Ch. 41-48)

The Temple

The Temple is my home and my Father and I live there.

My Job in the Temple

My job is to gain as much useful knowledge as I can before I venture out. My Father will also take me down the River Himself before I am allowed to go down it myself so that I may know Him fully and intimately. One day I will leave to do that purpose I was born to do. But I can always come home to live and visit with my Father.

The Gate to the River

If my heart is true for what I look for, I will be allowed to enter the River to attain it.
I'll have the blessing of my Father.

The Flow of the River and the Different Lands Along It

Land of Belief: I believe in what I am doing because it impacts the lives of others.

Land of Hope: I have hope that what I am doing is really making a difference in another person's life.

Land of Faith: I fully invest my time and efforts in what I'm doing because, in doing so, I will make a difference in someone else's life. I expect to be tested on this and succeed.

Land of Perseverance: I continue to work hard through thick and thin and through successes and failures because I know that my perseverance will make a huge difference in another's life.

Land of Wisdom: I will gain wisdom to provide the most direct and useful way in helping someone else.

Land of Humility: Though I may fear, I will use the full arsenal of wisdom to face and overcome the fears.

Land of True Love: I truly love what I am doing and why I am doing it.

Land of Allegiance: I am faithful to and focused on that which will help me reach my anointed goal.

Land of True Intimacy: I have found sonship and true acceptance (Ro 8). I walk in true comfort and warmth with those who love me and support me in reaching my anointed goal. Whatever is truly required for the purpose, will be given me because I am fully entrusted with its keys.

Land of Grace: I have been handed my inheritance. I am shown the bigger picture and the true purpose for which I was created to do.

Land of Freedom: I am free from the outside world. I solely live in the unique path and place I was created to be.

Land of Inner Peace: I am truly content with my self, my life, and my true purpose on earth.

The Sea of Jordan

I am one with whom I was predestined to be and with what I was predestined to do in the precise place, pace, and time I was predestined to do it in.

162. Feet on the Path and Aligned with the Goal

Ever since I was very young, about five or six, the things I enjoyed most, and still do to this day, was planning and organizing, fixing things and deep, intimate conversations. Actually, I really didn't know which one I liked better, and I figured that I'd only be able to choose just one as a career. So because I enjoyed fixing things, I studied to become an engineer and then went into the Air Force as a helicopter mechanic. And though I was developing myself technically, I felt I was still missing something. My technical knowledge and skills didn't really fulfill me on any real long-term basis. And then I realized that, although I could talk with people on a deeper level, I didn't have the knowledge and skill on how others perceived what I was saying.

There were several years that I believed others needed to develop *their* skills instead of me developing my own. But what I found out is that whatever I gave to others somehow wound up coming back to kick me in the butt. So, I really searched. I volunteered in different professional groups to understand men/women relationships, I read numerous books, I allowed myself to decipher between true beliefs and erroneous ones, and I faced a lot of fears. And what I came to realize is that it's not about how much of ourselves we need to give up to *control* the family and working environments we live in, but how much of ourselves we need to give up to someone *greater* than ourselves so that we are able to serve and *support* those in our family and working environments.

See, I've discovered that there is one thing that everyone in this world seems to be looking for—and that one thing is a personal, intimate and fulfilling relationship. And within this intimacy is what we come to know as unconditional love and true acceptance of who we are and why we are here.

There are two main deficiencies that I believe cripple people and the society and workplaces we live in. These two main deficiencies are a lack of identity, or worth and a lack of purpose, or value.

I believe these deficiencies come out of a person's sense of abandonment, or lack of true love and intimacy.

And if we as managers, leaders, and co workers can help each other develop this true love and intimacy, we are going to love the families and workplaces we live in. And just like ourselves, if we come to realize the true worth, purpose or mission, and overall goal of our corporate entities, we will not have to worry about growth or success. In fact, as we focus on what really matters, everything that we need will be provided to us.

So in my search, I found something, or should I say someone, who not only provides me this intimacy—this relationship understanding—but also shows me my technical purpose and how both tie in together rather beautifully. And within all this worldly chaos we live in, I've discovered a certain system that keeps me focused on personal and technical relationships—both at the same time.

It's all about a synergetic relationship with who we are and what we do and where and when we do it and, yet, all being driven by a greater power than ourselves. It's about finding an overall goal and then aligning ourselves with that goal.

163. My Personal Path

(Matthew 7:13, 14)

I saw the Truth today as I prayed to the Lord. The road God asks me to go down is a most difficult one. I don't blame anyone for not wanting to take it. "Where are the rewards for all this hard work?" they ask. "Show me? Talk is cheap. What good is it to me if I cannot hold it in my hands and I cannot use it now—as I speak?" And in fact, where they are in their lives, they cannot see how this way will amount to much. Why? Because my road—the way of Jesus—is entirely based on faith, full trust in someone you cannot see. Theirs is based on reason and that which you can see. They fit themselves in the world accepting its rhythms, not truly knowing themselves. I go against the grain (not in an intentional, deliberate, or rebellious way as a result of comparing myself to them—though it may have started out that way when I was a child) because I am faithful to God. That is what you wind up doing anyway—going against the grain. And now I know what is meant to fight the good fight because you are fighting—fighting the temptations, the judgments, the ridicule, and the rejections of the world for the better good.

Yet it is not a lonely path. Quite on the contrary. It is full of love and fulfillment, and if one perseveres long enough, true intimacy. So then, how can I blame those who do not choose it? How can I blame people who are fearful and unsure in their souls? It is most difficult and yet, to the unbeliever, it would seem lazy and not driven on the outside. Reflecting in Christ and searching while working at a job may seem to them wasteful and inexcusable. But it is again quite the contrary. One can do work without expression and fulfillment and be no better off in 70 years than he was when he began. Accomplishments are all he has to show. Anyone can do this. This isn't special and it takes no more hard work. But to do the work in perseverance with Christ is specifically hard because one chooses to use his free will for the good of others, just not himself. And this is not easy. To search oneself in order to serve others is the hard way. Controlling is easy, though a person will encounter a lot of suffering and not by the Will of God and gain nothing by it but more hurt and more pain. Serving is much harder because persevering through the tragedies of those you love is beyond suffering—it nearly chokes every breath out of you—but you are the better in compassion and peace afterwards for persevering through it. Holy patience appears lazy to an unbeliever because impatience is rewarded in the world as a "sense of urgency". But impatience is really only a sign of confusion and misdirection.

Yes, it is true that the road is narrow and there are truly few who will not only want to travel it but actually do. But now I realize and know in mind and heart that it is a personal and my own unique journey provided and created by God apart from anyone else in the world, and especially the corruptive world as a whole. It is my journey and God drives it in me.

164. How Can I Have Fun While Being Fulfilled? (How to Find Intimacy)

...the disciples came to Jesus and asked,

“Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?”

He called a little child and had him stand among them. And he said
“I tell you the truth, unless you change and become like little children, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven. Therefore, whoever humbles himself like this child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And whoever welcomes a little child like this in my name welcomes me. BUT IF ANYONE CAUSES ONE OF THESE LITTLE ONES WHO BELIEVE IN ME TO SIN, IT WOULD BE BETTER FOR HIM TO HAVE A LARGE MILLSTONE HUNG AROUND HIS NECK AND TO BE DROWNED IN THE DEPTHS OF THE SEA. Woe to the world because of the things that cause people to sin! Such things must come, but woe to the man through whom they come!”
(MT 18:1-7)

*People were bringing little children to Jesus to have him touch them,
but the disciples rebuked them.*

When Jesus saw this, he was INDIGNANT.

He said to them,

***“Let the little children come to me,
AND DO NOT HINDER THEM,
for the kingdom of God belongs to such as these.
I tell you the truth, anyone who will not receive
the kingdom of God like a little child
will never enter it.”***

(Mark 10:13-15)

Even while you are being counseled by the Holy Spirit, play like a child having fun. Children have fun without caring what others think of them. In fact, they play in full trust. Fun is stifled from a child when adults or peers condemn, discourage, and/or humiliate them of their uniquely innocent type of play, especially when others humiliate them while they are playing. This traumatizes a child so much that the child is always looking over his/her shoulder when playing to the point that he/she feels guilty for doing so. When a child is free to innocently play, he/she demonstrates his/her imagination and creativity to the fullest. In other words, he/she is demonstrating his/her unique identity to the fullest extent.

Who am I? Watch me play and I'll demonstrate who I am without thinking about it. The adult who is embarrassed to play like a child learned to be embarrassed of playing while a child.

Now that I am an adult, I ask myself who I am. The only way to realize my true identity is by again playing like the child I still am inside, that is without caring what others may think of me and what others say about me. I am on my own personal path created for me by God.

When I was younger, I took others and their opinions and what they said about me—the condemnation, discouragement, and humiliation—more important than my True Father and how He created me. I chose to follow and listen to false idols. But now I am wise to their own fears and miserable character. Today, they are just false and no idol.

The only way to be intimate with our True Father (or anyone else) is to play—trusting that He will encourage and love us while doing so—and not care about what anyone else says or thinks. I only have One True Father. All those who enact their judgment of condemnation, discouragement, and humiliation upon me do not know my Father and I do not want to know them anymore. Logic, rational thinking will only get you so far.

What is a parent but wisdom for a playful child. And now as grown-up children with wisdom, why do we stop playing when we now are the packaged deal? If we grew up without a parent or even a wise one, we stop because we do not trust that our Wisest Parent is looking after *us*. All these years, we grew up looking out after ourselves and got burned many times in the process.

In order to find intimacy, we must shut off logical, rational thinking. I am not speaking of Godly wisdom gained as an adult through the Holy Spirit, but one's logic (what is actually illogic, or what I like to call, ill-logic) from what he/she learned as a child from those who condemned, discouraged and/or humiliated him/her. And the only way I know for a human to truly shut off this ill-logic and be uniquely himself or herself is by childplaying in his/her unique way.

Life is a game. Some games are good and some not so good. But when we understand our small but significant place in the Holy scope of things and also the very small amount of knowledge in comparison, we find that we are children just creating and playing games the way we know how. And this is through the filter at the stage we are in our journeys. And these games we have created and play especially as labor, as corporate structures. Don't you see how companies are only playgrounds and if work is actually play then why are we not having fun at work? This is because, for some escapable reason, we come to believe that childplay is ended once we reach a magical year in our lives. But this circumstance was made by those who loved some false god more than our Lord.

This is why, once we realize that we are playing games, we may as well accept it and formulate the best game we can to have fun. And, of course, because we are adults, having fun means also applying wisdom (responsibility) to that fun so to discover our limitations and enjoy our lots God has granted us. And so, whoever is in allegiance to God, has integrity as well.

165. Playing at Work

How do we appreciate what God gives us? Remember that everything in this world, including any job or working environment, comes from and is a reflection of a person's soul. It is filtered by his or her stage in his or her journey. And, especially if we are employees, we wind up working in the soul of another—just as all of us are working in the soul of God. Thus, we are all part of the body of Christ. Therefore, when we keep looking for that perfect job or place, we are really looking for our own souls.

So, it isn't about searching for that perfect job or perfect place, it's about appreciating the job or place God gives us. It's about finding a way of becoming intimate with our own selves. And how do we become intimate? We become intimate through child play. Therefore, we must restructure our existing working environment (which is really someone else's soul) while respecting it and create an interactive playful environment—thus, finding the unique you. If the

employer is a loving and wise employer, he will realize that the job is a selfless tool provided by his/her soul to help us be intimate with our own souls (selves). A good and kind manager will allow this restructuring as long as the work is getting done and it produces good results. But as we know, when we play with wisdom, this happens even better and we even begin working at our unique pace.

When we find out how to have fun, we find out who we truly are through are inhibitions. And this spreads into our home life as well. Remember that the working world today comes from decades, even centuries, of old way and predominantly male thinking, which much of the time fears and suppresses intimate feelings and playfulness. It, therefore, focuses on achievements—results and the bottom-line—rather than true intimacy.

166. Faith and Grace

*“Come (draw) near to God and
He will come (draw) near to you.” (James 4:8)*

I have trusted in the law of faith I have so God will love me, yet have not known grace. I realize now that faith only introduces myself to God. It is having intimacy with my Father that I will truly know in mind and truly be filled in soul my Father’s grace for me. Therefore, faith only gets me so far. Trusting that my faith will get me what I want counteracts trusting God for what I may desire and for what I need. My faith does not know my heart and my needs. Only God knows my true heart and needs.

How many times have I declared my sensuous wants from this world and asked God to give them to me, only to realize that the path God has placed me on deems these wants superfluous to the true purpose God has for me? God is not concerned with these sensuous wants but with fulfillment in His grace and the path in getting there. Is what I want what God wants? Maybe, but the point is that usually even if my want is what he wants, my timing is awry. “What causes fights and quarrels among you? Don’t they come from your desires that battle within you? You want something but don’t get it. (James 4)”

I keep on being disappointed and conflicted. I tell myself that I know God has placed me here, but for what I ask. And I want this thing in the world and that thing in the world, not realizing that God can hand this thing and that thing to me in a blink of an I for me. These things are only objects. Even I can pick up an object. Those who give you objects without thinking about developing your own self do so to get rid of you because they are bothered by you. This is what you have learned by jokers in your past. So then, you ask, how can I ask God who is infinitely more powerful? Will He not just strike me into oblivion for bothering Him?

First of all, you never bother your true Father. He welcomes you with open arms. Those who have done this to you have made something that which in the world more important than you. Not only is God not in the world but you do not come from the world either. So then, God is always concerned with you infinitely greater than that which is in the world.

I realize now that I must accept what God has given me and come to appreciate it. How do you appreciate it? By not saying to ourselves that this is only a stepping stone to what I really want but by utilizing my true gifts and talents and who I am to mold it and develop it and play within it. When one plays within that which has come from God, one becomes intimate with God and accepts and understands His true grace.

Why do I want what I do not already have? Because others may get it before me. I will never be free of the world with this kind of thinking. What has been given to me that I uniquely have? That which is before me. This will free me of the world. The first is only frustration. The second is fulfillment. Stop running after dreams and illusions and forget what you do not have! Turn and focus on what God has laid before you. Invest yourself in this because God places nothing down outside the path that is true and honest. God gives you nothing that will not place a stronger bond between Him and you.

Do you know what your gifts and talents are? God gives you a spoon and you want the whole meal. First use your gifts and talents to find out why God gave you the spoon, then the meal will be served to you little by little. You may ask for the meal and this may be what God wants for you. If it is not, you will not even get the spoon. So ask—ask for what is good and righteous from your Father. But why do you keep expecting the meal when you haven't even come to appreciate the spoon to eat the meal with? In other words, what will I have learned and, after I have used up this and that right away, when will my wanting more end?

I know you say that the spoon is so basic and dreary. Ah, but you young and ignorant child. You know only the spoon you held in your hand made by man. You do not know the spoon made by God and you certainly do not understand how to use the spoon made by Him. Come to realize how the spoon serves the meal in feeding your soul and your soul will become full. Come to love God for His spoon you have and He will supply you with the meal of His intimacy. Then you will become filled with His Grace.

167. Times of Blessing and the Journey of Christ

- ❖ When it's time for **knowledge**, teach each other
- ❖ When it's time for **belief**, encourage each other
- ❖ When it's time for **hope**, help each other
- ❖ When it's time for **faith**, trust in each other
- ❖ When it's time for **perseverance**, support each other
- ❖ When it's time for **wisdom**, learn from each other
- ❖ When it's time for **humility**, serve each other
- ❖ When it's time for **love**, reach each other
- ❖ When it's time for **devotion**, honor each other
- ❖ When it's time for **intimacy**, accept each other
- ❖ When it's time for **grace**, forgive each other
- ❖ When it's time for **freedom**, release each other
- ❖ When it's time for **peace**, comfort each other
- ❖ When it's time for **heaven**, bless each other

168. The Need to be Needy

I don't need to be your friend. You want to be arrogant and controlling and abusive, but you like me and you want me to be a part of your life? I will try to enlighten you on your arrogance, control, and abuse because I don't need to be your friend. I'd rather our apparent relationship end if that is what it takes for God to enlighten you. Grace allows me this freedom.

169. Unhealthy Fear

Fear which prevents a beneficial and therapeutic result is not from God. That kind of fear is delusional and comes from the antichrist. But that is the rub. Only Truth and trusting in Christ's Truth will show you the difference between what you may think is real fear and what is actually delusional fear.

Talking about what ails you is therapeutic because you begin serving others toward healing from what you have suffered. You begin to feel valuable from your own realization. Serve as you communicate about your own suffering. Serving without others receiving your communication is meaningless and communicating to those who do not want your service is wasteful (Rev 22:11).

170. The Process of Come and Go

People come and go. They come into our lives, we share our souls, and then they go further into their journeys. Remember how fortunate we are to enjoy the time we share together, rather than ponder over the time when we must part.

171. Quality in Life versus Quantity in Life

One must pick and choose what is truly from God and what is not. When you realize that what you have entered into is either not from God or God no longer needs you there because your duty is done there, leave and further await His instructions or next opportunity.

There are very few times in a person's lifetime when he/she should make a true vow. Baptism and marriage are two in only a handful. Do not use vows frivolously.

172. Institutions, Cultures, Customs and Individuals

Grace and free will are what makes up God's culture—that is, by one's own free will to be engrained in God's covenant of grace with us and within us.

There is a great discernment that will free a person within the Holy Spirit and that discernment is whether a person speaks from God or from his own culture. What is the main difference? Cultures change, many times for the better, but a person's view may be outdated because he believes his culture he lives in is God's only culture. God's culture is consistent and His way is always the best for every person. God's culture is a mystery that everyone must accept to have peace. Very few people have peace when they must accept human standard and law or customs from another's culture in the name of God. Paul's writings is a prime example of this. Paul's

laws of church and dress and the such stem from his culture. Grace surpasses Paul's laws or customs, but today many legalistically advocate Paul's law. It is my belief that if Paul (or Peter for that fact) was part of today's culture, he would have amended himself. Go with grace, not culture.

People's personalities become so engrained or part of the greater whole at work, home, or anywhere. Never mind saying that if only he or she would be this way or that. Look around you. If the majority thinks or believes the same way, the institution and person have become synonymous with each other. This is what is known as a culture and is very evident in organized religion. Therefore, decide whether the culture is for you. The problem is that, when you decide to leave, some people within the culture cannot and will not separate themselves from the culture. They cannot discern themselves as individuals and they do not know who they uniquely are. Therefore, they feel personally rejected. However, grace permits all to leave and explore other cultures and customs, and in fact, create customs of our own to worship God. Fear of condemnation makes people stay. The people in the culture may try to make you feel guilty for leaving, but remember that we leave cultures or institutions or situations or environments but remain prayerful for individuals who feel they need to stay in them. Grace and free will are what makes up God's culture—that is, by one's own free will to be engrained in God's covenant of grace with us and within us.

Be a common individual but discern God's culture from human culture so that your works will become wonderfully and divinely uncommon and unique from any other custom. In other words, Be Yourself.

173. Grace and the Pursuit of Freedom

A person is born into grace; He does not need to qualify for it.

Every person is given a noble mission within a mission (lot) to pursue it, but he must first accept his mission (lot) so he can see his mission that he is to pursue.

A champion is not one who conquers virtue but inspires it.

A person is born into grace. He does not need to qualify for it. Grace is permanent—a certainty—because of the new covenant between God and us through His Son, Jesus Christ. Grace is unconditional because God's love for us is unconditional and it is only through conditions does anyone have to qualify for anything.

A boy cannot become a man and a girl cannot become a woman without grace. This is because children react to and are dependent upon others for the way they think and live their lives. Men and women have integrity to which they are obedient to God and this is what creates their character even in the midst of others. Grace links men and women to God. Without Grace, people would continually be children either trying to out-do others or allow themselves to be defeated and humiliated by others.

Furthermore, a person does not bring grace with him. Grace is not something you can handle in your hands or tote around. As a person continually grows to realize his/her connection with Grace, he/she slowly transforms into it until he/she can see little or no difference between it and the character of his/her being. As the Holy Spirit is Pure Grace, you will transform into him, becoming more and more synonymous with him and, thus, grace.

Grace also erases guilt or shame for being who God created us to be. The more we transform into grace, the less we feel guilty and ashamed of who we really are. This means that, as we transform into grace, the real us comes out and we continue to accept and approve of our true selves no matter if anyone else does or not. This leads to a wonderful sense of freedom. (Gal 5:13)

When a leader provides grace to his/her subordinate, either the subordinate will become more productive or less productive per the amount of grace given. At any rate, the subordinate will show the leader whether he/she loves what he/she does or if he/she had been doing the job out of fear of condemnation. This will help the leader guide the subordinate into an area that he/she loves, even if he/she has to eventually leave the company. The leader will then strive to find someone who's calling is to do the type work.

Law and condemnation prevent God's order in the universe and resists a peaceful body—whether that body is physical, a workplace, a state, a nation, or a world as a whole. Furthermore, expectations of a person's performance and subjective judgment is opposite to providing him/her grace and is along the same lines as law and fear of condemnation.

Now there is only one way to gain freedom once a person has become intimate with God and that way is through grace. It is ironic that a person's freedom depends on how much he/she accepts his/her lot in life and abandons trespassing into the lot's of others—mentally and physically. This means that the less a person is critical of another's actions, the more freedom he will have himself. This means that the less a person meddles into another's affairs, the more freedom he will be enjoying himself.

A "lot" is literally property or land with boundaries where a person resides in. A person shouldn't cross his own property line into another's property without having been invited. What we must understand is that God grants us our own unique lot in life, just as he does others. He grants us our specific job, our specific home life, and our specific selves. This means that our boss, as well as our subordinate, is placed there by God as well. The problem is that most people believe God has only given us a small room to live in, when in fact he has given us a great land to live in and explore (Ezekial 13-23). When we can be happy within our own lot of land and continue to explore the vast riches and beauty of it, relying on God to give to us whatever we need from outside the property lines without us pursuing what we "think" we need, we will come to realize freedom.

This is the same with grace. Because of the new covenant God has made with us, grace is our permanent lot. If we do not accept the gift, live in and explore it, and respect it's boundaries, we will not find freedom. That is if we do not accept the Holy Spirit within us, live within him and explore his offerings to us and love and respect him, we will not find true freedom. If we do not

accept the work we do, live within its boundaries and explore its nobility in service to humanity and God, we will not find freedom. If we do not accept our spouses and children and live intimately with them and explore all that they have to offer us and respect them, we will not find freedom. (Gal 5:13-15)

And in work, accept your lot God has given you. Find the noble mission He gave you to pursue. This is your purpose in life—within the noble mission (goal) and within the mission (chapel) He set up for you to live in. This is your calling, your vocation, your lifework. This is where you will elevate people to higher integrity and serve them to better their lives and be more and more fulfilled yourself. And all that is outside your lot that tries to oppose you, be gracious and let fall away. Do not pursue past the boundary lines because then you will fall off focus of your true aim. Do not take up responsibility for other's missions within their own mission. Do not reprimand other's where you have not been given the power to do so and, even if you have, provide grace so that they will be elevated to do their mission without fear of condemnation.

Remember to continually pursue that which God has given you. This is your noble and divine purpose God has for you on earth. If you have not realized this yet, ask God what is your noble mission in the mission you live and work in.

So now, how does a person live within the law but also surpass the law? Grace surpasses the law by ending any fear of condemnation. Live within the boundaries of the law of the authority over you, but pursue God's noble mission for you within the specific mission (chapel) you reside in within the company you work in without fear of condemnation by any authority. In other words, obey the company's by-laws (which should be all moral and ethical), but pay no attention to the company if they try to suspend, humiliate, or squash the noble mission you are pursuing within the company. God must be more important than any person and the noble mission must continue. Focus on the noble mission and trust that God will defeat those around you who oppose you in it. You will come under a lot of fire. Do not argue with the ignorant but keep your integrity and fight the good fight. Leave no imprint so that there is a valid claim that you are an outlaw, but violate no law while you pursue what is noble and just. And if a law is not holy or just, do what needs to be done to fulfill the mission even if your holy and just ways counteract the law. You may be ripped to shreds by others, but your integrity will stay intact and you will become victorious as these others will fall in waste by the Wayside. God will take care of those who oppose His Ways, possibly for many just as He has taken care of us once upon a time. And if it is time for you to leave your position or company because you have now surpassed where you are within the noble mission, await God giving you the next opportunity. Be patient, be perseverant, be a champion for God.

174. Grace Exceeds Human Rules and, thus, Fear of Condemnation

There is one absolute in order to know true peace in our lives and that is our absolute acceptance of the gift of God's unconditional grace He gave us. If a person does not feel totally absolved in his heart, he cannot overcome his fear of condemnation and, thus, he cannot overcome the world. What is the "world" that Christ speaks of? The world is the incessant reproach of each other and all that is good, for we are good. A person lives by the rules of man and in fear of him if he

deems himself unworthy to receive and imbed himself in the free gift of absolution given to us by God Himself and staged inside us by the Holy Spirit. A person need not be absolved by men but to only follow God and His Spirit to one day realize his own absolution directly within the wonderful Grace of God Almighty. To need the absolution by men keeps a person in fear of man's condemnation of him and, thus, keeps him slave to the world. But to follow God and His Spirit will one day free the person in following righteousness as it exceeds the less righteous rule and law of men.

Because sin is covered by grace, there is no longer sin. What human logic dictates as right and wrong, grace dictates as fulfilling and wasteful. In grace there is no right and there is no wrong. There is no praise and there is no condemnation. There is only the freedom to realize what is fulfilling to the soul and what is wasteful to which the soul cannot use.

In grace, a person must deem the decision of man (whether his boss or whoever) either noble enough or not by comparing the decision to the perfect nobility and Truth of Christ. It is then the person's duty to surpass any law or rule that restricts a more noble and righteous way, no matter what man-made penalty may exist for it. A person either follows God or follows man. Sometimes it is good enough to follow a noble man out of respect for a time, but many a time a person must surpass man and his ways when he has realized that God's righteousness surpasses it. And then the time has come whether a person will follow God apart from man.

Now, this I know. If a person surpasses a man's law or rule and is angered at the man after it, the person is only a self-righteous person. And if the person is angered at the man because the person feels slave to the man's law or rule, the person is low in self-esteem. Either way, the person does not know and has not accepted God's grace bestowed upon him. A person who lives in grace because he has fully accepted God's grace and begins to walk in true freedom maintains compassion for other's who are ignorant of it. He becomes less critical of others because he finds that, in grace, God is less critical of him. And a person who accepts God's grace can only do so if his humility of the great omnipotence of God has greatly surpassed his embarrassment for what he has done.

Use the faith Christ has given you to persevere in exceeding man's laws and rules because you realize in mind and soul a more noble way. And here I am speaking about culture and religion as well. You will begin realizing your destiny of being a man among men or a woman among women. Those who were once leaders will become destroyers. Those who were once followers will be deserters. You will know the leader and the servant who are full of Truth and those who are unfulfilled. But you will be untouchable because God will be your sword. Your true purpose will be truly revealed to you in grace. And remember that fame cares not about righteousness and righteousness cares not about fame.

It is not a matter of deserving grace. The mere matter that grace is upon us and in us makes fact that we have been deemed deserved and worthwhile by God to have it. If we feel that we do not deserve grace, we will not take grace in its full capacity given to us by our Father. We will, therefore, stay disconnected to our Father. And this is not what our Father wants. But if we are humbled to God in receiving it by revering our Father, we see ourselves worthwhile to have it in

hopes that it will continually bring us closer to being in love and being intimate with our Father and finding peace within ourselves.

To fully accept grace means that, if we anger someone because we follow the righteous way of God Almighty, we do not worry whether we have done them wrong or not. Our compassion falls on the man who cannot see righteousness in greater glory because he will not fully accept Christ—and Christ is grace.

Do you now see the wonderful and enormous freedom that comes with fully and totally accepting grace? A person not only overcomes the world but he leaves it behind to its own destruction as he now walks towards peace. (Gal 5:15)

175. Grace is Automatic for Children

What is a child's one duty? Some say it is to learn and gain knowledge. But more importantly, it is to gain wisdom. And this means that a child will make mistakes and also do bad things on purpose because they do not realize the consequences of their actions. But then they must learn and gain the wisdom—not because they fear your hand upon them but because they feel sad or crippled due to their true compassion which comes out after.

So then grace is given children in order to exude their compassion. Fear of condemnation only stifles true wisdom revealed and of God Almighty. Grace turns the child inward towards the Holy Spirit. Fear turns the child outward towards other people. A parent who does not rely on grace to discipline his/her child deprives a child of becoming a true compassionate adult for God.

And so, are we not God's children? So then, there must come a time when we as children come to realize that we swim in grace. We are given grace automatically. God will not take grace back as He chooses whenever He chooses because He has made a pact with His children through His Son. And if you will not trust God to keep His promises then who can you trust?

Accept grace as an automatic God-given gift and find the freedom you have been searching for.

176. Stay to the Path

In anything we do, there is a goal. However, this goal many times is lost. Why? It is lost because those pursuing the goal get wrapped up in their own agendas. Then the goal is to get what you want rather than what God wants. If you stay to the course and focus on the noble goal ahead, that which you need to attain it will be supplied to you by God in His time. And this is true for a group of people wanting to meet a single objective.

People's personal agendas are usually quite specific. They are actually too specific for others to meet halfway with. True goals are more general, thus allowing many ways to reach it if only people would give up their own agendas and focus on agreeing for the good of the common and noble goal.

Have you ever felt like the team came together and attained the true goal but you just don't know how? All you know is that you had fun while attaining it. This is because people were able to give up their own personal agendas for the good of the common and noble goal. They each allowed themselves to trust in the Holy Spirit to provide them what was needed as they concentrated on serving each other. Each other's happiness was more important than their own personal agendas. Each, in fact, died to their own self for the sake of the happiness of each member of the team and for the team as a whole. And that is the greatest anyone can do for another.

Realize that people argue over logical ways to attain goals. However, when you introduce the way of the Holy Spirit pronouncing integrity, trust, love, compassion, empathy and intimacy as key ingredients of the goal, you give the goal life. The goal no longer is a thing or object(ive) to be conquered. It becomes a living entity to be respected and cherished. We humans think it and the Holy Spirit gives the goal life—a life that will provide others life and greater happiness. The goal becomes your concept and credited to God Almighty for its breath. And, just like children, the more you respect and cherish and love that which is created, the truer it will go into the world providing hope, love, and happiness to the world.

People who are in the Lord can rarely keep arguing about such things as these. Logical arguing is pointless because everyone has a valid point within their ideas of how something should be done. The point is to align everyone toward the common goal by using the ways of the Holy Spirit as a common denominator. Then people will listen, seek out, and agree on the most valid logical points of all those involved and integrate them to attain the greatest result possible.

Let the Holy Spirit draw you to the goal. Do not let your own personal agendas disconnect you from God in making a difference for so many people who will benefit during the process of attaining the goal and then also once the goal is attained. Remember that how you attain the goal is just as, if not more, important than attaining the goal because the truer the path, the clearer the aim. Stay to the path. Our job is to concentrate on becoming intimate with the Holy Spirit. God will provide the rest.

177. Be a Disciple of Grace

Believe it or not, the less a person truly realizes and feels grace, the more he unrealistically expects out of himself. The more he forces himself to meet ideal, unrealistic goals, the more he feels he falls short of them, and the more he becomes ashamed of himself. But our Father who is of Pure Grace does not expect nearly as much out of His children as His children who do not realize such grace expect out of themselves.

Why did God find us deserving to have grace? It was not because He had pity on us. It was because most of us really were trying to love Him and do for Him. We were trying so hard to meet the ideal expectations that we thought God demanded from us. And God, in all His wisdom, decided that our trying was deserved enough for Him to send His ideal grace to us instead. God never said we had to be as He. He just said that He would like to see us try and persevere the way He created us to be. That's why Christ didn't say that you must become One with the Father to get to heaven, but first only believe in His Son.

You see, people say that trying just isn't good enough. That you must achieve and achieve perfection at that and that the ends justify the means. But that is not what God says. God never said you had to reach perfect compassion, He said you must try and, then once you try, keep persevering because the rewards of realizing true hope, love, intimacy, and grace outweigh anything else you can ever attain.

Now let us take our work. If I am a leader, I have employees who seem to believe in our company's cause and they seem to persevere in it. But what can I do as a leader to help people love what they do? Draw them closer to the Holy Spirit, who is Pure Love. The bottom line is that no matter what people invest their time into (marriage, careers, volunteering, or whatever) they want to know that they are making a difference. They want to know that what they do really and truly makes a difference in people's lives now and into the future. But the rub is that most people do not realize that this making a difference in other's lives is why they are here on earth. If they did, they would make it their sole mission above everything else.

Whether because of hopelessness or arrogance or some other reason, many wind up believing that they just do the work to get paid and go home. Then again, many refuse to take their faith to the next level and take the next step because they fear rejection or condemnation due to the true lack of loving leadership in the company or their perception of true loving and appreciative people in the world. But the point is that, from where they remain, they want to see what they are doing is really impacting someone else but they need leaders to show them rather than going it alone. They may believe that where they are is their lot in life to do great and wonderful things, which is why they persevere so diligently, but they are afraid to take that next step. And though some may have a lot of faith, most people need to see their works' impacts for themselves to take the next step. But they are to afraid of initiating that move.

Let's take Christ, for example. Christ's purpose was to provide us true grace through the Holy Spirit. But in order for the Holy Spirit to come, Christ had to die and ascend to heaven. He was not going to be here physically on earth to see it. He knew that he would see it from heaven. That is why Christ is the essence of true faith. But most people must see the effects of their work while on earth in order to love their work. Christ loved us in spite of knowing full well that he was not going to be here on earth, in physical form anyway, to see the effects of his work.

So, as leaders of Christ, we must teach and show others just as Christ taught and showed us. We must take others by the hand and show them how their work effects the lives of so many others. We must offer testimony from the victims who have now become the victors because of the employees' work. They will now see the miracles that come from their work. And do not be distraught if you must keep showing them until they truly believe that what they are doing affects the lives of others in a great way. Children can be skeptical to a great extent, especially from the way they were brought up.

But seeing is believing. Showing the workers the effects of their work will provide the workers wisdom once they become humble enough to acknowledge it so that they will see their mission greater than themselves and greater than their fears. They will come to see that what they do is as important as life itself. But it is not shame (from the world's perspective) that we must want

from our employee's due to their ignorance, but humility from God's perspective. And through passing on our grace to them, we hope for them to realize that ignorance is just that—ignorance. And that children are ignorant until they incur wisdom. And that this is only part of the journey of life. And from this beautiful and wonderful humility full of grace and newfound wisdom, they will come to love what they once only worked hard at. And it will now be their new found connectedness to the Holy Spirit that they will be allegiant in their own work and then become intimate in the workings of the company.

The key to all this is, as you teach and show, always exude grace and more grace. Never exude condemnation during their journey. This way they too will come to know and feel and swim in the true grace of God Almighty. Otherwise, you will deprive them from knowing and feeling God's true grace and absolution, which leads to freedom which leads to wonderful peace. And, my friends, not knowing and feeling the true grace of God Almighty is heartbreaking. Do not prevent others from fully realizing this blessing and true miracle from our True Father in heaven. By preventing other's this, you may be preventing hundreds more in the future.

178. Following False Gods

The worse feeling anyone can have is feeling ashamed of themselves for who they are. Believing that we disappointed God or our parents or whoever we look up to and think that what we did should never be forgiven by them—is the greatest problem in the world today. God always loves you and will always forgive you. People are another story. If a person won't forgive you, he or she has chosen to stay in the craziness we call the world. You and I are here, today, not so much to unite, but to divide these people from our lives and overcome the world.

There is a lot of trickery in the world. No one can take away the love God has for us but they can make great headway in making us believe we aren't worthwhile of God's love and try to keep us in shame. Some even place themselves between our True Father and us, all the while making us believe that if we don't show them perfect love, God will not love us. These are wicked people. People who truly love us want us to find the purest love we can and not cheapen ourselves by having to go through them first. Even today, many of us still think that we have to be responsible for and bear the labor, grief, guilt and shame that our parents went through and we don't realize that Jesus died to release us even from that.

When we do wrong on purpose, sometimes we don't think we deserve such perfect love ever again. But God continues to love us unconditionally even while we do bad things to others and ourselves. He forgives us with the unrelenting hope that we will realize what we did wrong by asking Him. See, He wants us to ask Him, not just to figure it out some other way. When others are successful in creating any belief within us that we are not worthwhile to receive our True Father's Love, these others know they have a greater chance that we will rely on them for everything. And that's a bad thing they do to us. If we keep this shame locked up inside us, we'll follow anyone we think loves us—even if they really don't but just look like they do.

So why do we do what we do not want to do? When we were first born, what "false god" did we see as the perfect God (Gal 5:7-10)? It was our parents, our guardians, or someone else we mistakenly saw as the perfect God. Maybe even today you see others more perfect than yourself.

We become all mixed up if our parents won't admit to us, right from the beginning, that God is our True Father and that they are imperfect people entrusted by God to raise us the way God's Son, Jesus, showed everyone how to. God made His Son human and guided him through life (from birth to manhood) so he would understand our human ways and sufferings too and help us all heal. When Jesus reached the end of his journey, what we call the Righteous Journey or Path, he started going out to people to show them how to live well and heal from all their different afflictions by going down the same path. This is the path God wants you to go on. He wants you to following His Son.

In the womb and until our age of around five years old or so, we take in everything we hear pretty much as true—whether it's Christ's Truth or not—by who we think are perfect. But if our false god was emotionally, physically, or sexually abusing (what I call, “abnormally using”) us during this time, we are crushed that God, not only would but could do this to us. And reality is a nightmare right from the start because we immediately internalize that we did something wrong because we know it is impossible for our True Father to not love us. So we place shame in our soul instead of true love. In other words, we become ashamed of ourselves. We feel like we have been left abandoned and dumped at a very early age into the middle of nowhere to survive on our own. But the Truth is that none of that was our fault.

But God doesn't abandon His children. See, just in case our parents or whoever our guardians were choose to turn away from Him after we are born, God creates us to always remember in our minds Him and the true love He has for us. So as a survival instinct, our minds avoid the shame because we fear, as children do, that the shame will overpower us and take us away from our Father for good. So, for us to survive, our minds also avoid the outside world that reminds us of any of this shame. We can't even see that this “false god” of ours is really a false god because that would remind us of our shame too. And ever since then, we have been trying to gain forgiveness from our false god for what happened when we born or when we were children because we think only he or she can make the shame go away and clean out our souls. But Christ came to let all of us know that just isn't true.

God planted this sort of transmitter in us that is strong enough to cut through the thickest fog or the densest dirt. It's to let us know He's still with us. It sends out messages of our true and holy worth and to keep going. It's always there even if we've convinced ourselves it's not. You being here right now is a result of that transmitter.

But there is a reason we are here on earth and not in heaven. Eventually we have to deal with reality and there is no getting around getting some of its knowledge. Some choose to escape reality by abnormally using chemicals, sex, prescriptions, pot, hard drugs, food, other people or whatever as their drug to avoid knowledge from creeping in. What was your first comfort-substance that you found to relieve the pain—food, drugs, sex, alcohol? This is known as denial, or denying that anything is hurting us when it really is. But for many of you, reading this book is the first step of you overcoming that denial.

Now, sometimes the parent refuses to step down off that pedestal for us, even when we are older children and we still see them as perfect and we are not being instructed in Christ anytime during that period. So, when abuse does strike, we are highly surprised and can start avoiding reality

even at that time. This could happen to us in our infancy, childhood, or any age. We can even see our husbands or wives as perfect gods. This happens to a lot of children, especially when their parents get divorced. This is why the Truth must be taught to us from a very early age.

We're born innocent by God and are meant to know and feel that we are innocent all our lives. But right at the moment of receiving abuse or being abandoned from our first "false god", our innocence stopped. Our age of innocence was interrupted. So we could have been holding onto this stored shame in our souls even since a year old or even younger—even possibly since we were in our mother's womb. And we can never physically or mentally go backward into our past age of innocence once we acquired some knowledge of what is good and what is bad and what is innocent and what isn't. But though we can't go back, God has given us His grace so we can go forward and heal and find innocence again.

This is why Jesus came here—to help the poor in spirit, the destitute, and the hurting clean out the shame from their souls. And we must follow Christ to again realize that we are pure in heart and come to really know in our souls our True Father again and those false gods for who they really are. God always gives His children an infinite number of chances in their lifetime to realize themselves for who they really are—His innocent and loving children.

And if we read the Bible, we'll know that the Apostles, like Peter, Paul, and John, all were truly suffering and destitute people when Christ called them. They were where you are right now when Jesus came to them. They were, most likely, sexually, physically, or emotionally abused or abandoned or even all four as children too. In addition, one or more may have been abusing substances to get by. Something tells me Peter was probably the worst abused. Jesus knew this and that is why he chose these people to disciple. He wanted to liberate them from their shame and pain and help all of us realize that we too can overcome just like those average Joe's of yesteryear.

So then, now that we know a little bit of the Truth, how were your parents when you were young? Because I tell you, the way they were when you were five is the way they were when you were born, when you were one years old, when you were two years old and so on. Who remembers being born, or being one, two, or even three years old? So then who stopped your age of innocence? Your false god did.

All we may know is that if our minds drop that shield that's been protecting us all this time, our minds start connecting with a shame that we may not even remember how it got there. And we get really fearful again. But the thing is that what was very fearful to us as a child, isn't really as fearful to us now that we are more grown up. I mean we might get scared, but it'll usually pass pretty quickly. But we just have to convince ourselves that now we have the power to kill this monster that we thought could kill us when we were children. It's just our imagination that keeps building up this monster more and more than what it really is.

A person who has been sexually, physically, or emotionally abused so much or abandoned so much by either his or her mother or father or "false god" in their infancy, lives in fantasy and fears reality so much. Why do some people live in a fantasy world? Why does love equal sex in a lot of people's minds? Why are so many people so angry when they grow up? So then, when

our minds only believe fantasy to be true, everything in the world needs to be ideal to us too because, first of all, we got to live here too and we don't want to be reminded of the shame that is in our soul. An ideal world must be reality to us, even though Truth is the real reality. And what is not ideal in the world, we get very angry about and try to either control it to make it stop or run away from it thinking it'll go away too. But it doesn't.

So, right now the world has the power over us when we do this. If it snaps its fingers, we react. But you are not alone because most people don't want to deal with their shame or afflictions either. But we must learn how to overcome the world if we are going to be truly free.

If we choose to believe in Christ and follow him, He will lead us to "the promise land" so we will overcome the world. We will find Truth, true love and peace and yes, innocence again. We will understand that everything in the world has good and bad in it and we will understand Truth so that we can retain only the good and let the bad pass through. We will then be less angry as we accept what is within the world and we will heal. We will get less and less angry and more and more forgiving. And all this under our True Father's Mercy and Grace because He knows what we have been through.

Our parents made a choice. That choice was to receive a child from heaven. God, in His infinite wisdom, gave to them what they asked. I believe some of us were born into awful households as predestined for a reason. Not for God to purposefully hurt us, but for us to be a shining light for another. Are we all predestined? Possibly and possibly not. The important thing is that we follow Christ and go through the righteous journey of life and then we will know who we truly are and what our true purpose on earth is.

But I can tell you that if our parents do not do what is right by God, they will reap vengeance through their children. Not by physical force really, but by their children reminding them of their own greatest fears. It's not "what comes around goes around (from *our* vantage point toward someone else)" but "what goes around, comes back around to us (from the vantage point of ourselves)". This works both ways. The same love, as well as the same hate, we give comes back around to us to impact us. We do not need to be physically vengeful. Follow Christ and Christ takes care of revenge on our abusers automatically. That is the truth. Remember he didn't come here to unite the good and the bad, he came here to divide the good from the bad. And because He chose you, now you know your one of the good.

Christ did not come to unite but to divide the good from the bad with Truth. So, if you are really hurting and you just can't see any other way but to physically get revenge on someone, I'm offering you another way. Follow Christ and it will be done. I guarantee it whether we wind up seeing it or not for ourselves. Remember the worst hurt is what happens to someone on the inside, not the outside—as you may already know. Right now, you're on the inside trying to get out.

Why will we turn to Christ? Why will we choose to believe in him? It doesn't matter. That's the beauty about the righteous journey, what is also known as the River of Life. The reasons for approaching it doesn't matter, what matters is that we admit our problem, pursue Christ, go down

the River and find out who we truly are once again. Because everybody will achieve the similar results—true love, forgiveness, compassion, their own true self—as they paddle down the River.

So anybody, whether they are seeking revenge on others, hurting, fearful, angry at God, or whatever, can turn to Christ. We do not need to be perfect or loving first to start the journey—that is not why Christ came. And yes, you can be angry at God. He’s a big boy, He can take it. He knows why you hurt and if it takes you yelling at Him to come to Him, he’ll take it. And He’ll hold you and comfort you and show you what happened and who you really are.

Truth be told, God just got fed up with all these people turning on Him and hurting His children. So a long time ago He sent His Son down to instruct His children on the Truth and to let them know who was coming. Then after Jesus left to go to His Father, God sent down the Holy Spirit to clean house. I mean, that really is the simple truth. And if you want him and his power in you, ask and you shall receive.

179. Taking Grace for Granted

*It is not that we are given carte-blanche to sin,
but that we are free from remaining in the guilt and shame that comes from sin.*

If the gift of grace covers all our sins as believers of Christ, then may we use it as permission to be disobedient to God and do whatever we wish? Can we now succumb to all our earthly desires still knowing that Grace is with us forever?

What I have found is that you can do whatever you wish, whatever you desire. To have everlasting grace and be born into it (whether we are ignorant of it or not) means that we can resist virtue and succumb to all that our bodies desire. But the bottom line is what is beneficial for us. It is not that we are given carte-blanche to sin, but that we are free from remaining in the guilt and shame that comes from sin.

Once we have felt fulfilled and supernaturally loved by God through His Spirit within us, we realize that there is no better feeling. No past feeling compares. We cannot surmise that any future feeling could ever surpass it either. But what I know is that as we take Grace and use it as an excuse to take the fix of temptation, we come to feel disconnected with ourselves (the Holy Spirit) and find that the earthly desires get in the way of our inner fulfillment. Our obsessions increase, our “wanting to” manifests back into “having to” in order to survive. Some succumb to drugs once again. Some find that the testosterone levels begin to peak again asking for more sex and then more controlling sex. Some succumb to overeating or overdrinking. The sinful nature is what some call this. I find that the sinful nature may be more modernly defined as addiction or obsession.

Though we do not ever fall from grace, it feels as if we are falling when, in fact, we are disconnecting ourselves from the purity of God. And it is not that God is punishing you because then the definition of God’s grace would be meaningless. But the truth is that we are walking out of intimacy with Him.

Remember the supernatural steps or building blocks of healing—knowledge, belief, faith, hope, perseverance, humility, wisdom, love, allegiance, intimacy, grace, freedom, peace. By using grace as an excuse to succumb to bodily desires (that is, taking grace for granted), we use grace as permission to disobey virtue and purity that is God. Therefore, we turn from our allegiance to God and begin to walk back down the steps. As we know, a person cannot truly feel grace in his heart without first being allegiant in his heart to God. So then, turn and become allegiant again. Open up your arms and say, “Take me Lord and pull me up to you.” And you will have learned your lesson.

What I know is that a person can think of something and gain knowledge, but until he believes it and then acts on it in faith, he cannot get it from his head to his heart. So then, find that which shows allegiance and then take the courageous step in doing it. You will then come to know and find intimacy in your heart again and continue on your journey understanding grace. You see, you have been forgiven. Thus, grace has made a lesson of itself for you. This is all a lesson for you to realize what grace really is and why it has been given, so that it may enter your heart in the near future. Then you will come to know freedom so that you may overcome that which feels to disconnect you from your Father. And then you will be set free.

180. Afraid of Grace

This may be hard to realize for some. For others, you may be very aware. In focusing on the path that is righteous and filled with virtue and great fulfillment, we may discover (especially at the point of realizing true grace) that things that are quite noble and of rather high responsibility are being provided us by God. Once as children we sought control and power and fame. Some attained it, not per the glory of God, but cheaply without fulfillment. And fulfillment only comes by enduring the journey. But now, for some of us, we find God setting in motion that which will place us in true power that only comes by a serving heart and a more deepened and fulfilled soul. Some may say it is a reward for our obedience. But we do not do good works for rewards but by faith for a greater intimacy with God. What I am talking about here, my friends, is part of the journey. It happens because God deems you ready for it. He trained you for it and now it is time to put that training to work.

And some of us find great fear of such things—perhaps because we had been so deprived as children. And it is not so much that we are ashamed to deserve it, but it is because we fear getting what we always wanted. We fear that what is being given us may be too massive for us to handle and that we aren’t ready for it. That which we prayed for is becoming a reality. And we see that we will soon have to make good on our asking. And so we begin stressing, being filled with anxiety. And this triggers our sinful nature to take over—our bodily desires to alleviate the stress and anxiety (and perhaps some shame and sense of undeservedness that still exist within us). We run from what we are afraid of.

But realize that, first of all, our Father gives to us these situations or positions in life only when He feels we are ready for them. If we see something coming from Him in the horizon, don’t worry. Continue with the Father and you will be logically and emotionally ready for it by the time it gets here. Now is the time to use your faith that He has given you to be confident with and in the Spirit that His timing is perfect.

Remember, like any one of God's virtues, it takes a lot of hard work through prayer and faith and good works to come to fully embrace them in your heart. Grace is no different. And one significant part of grace is to accept in true faith that which our Father gives us for His divine purpose and His divine time. Though you did not have to work to be given grace, you must now work hard to receive it into your heart. And receive it you must in order to persevere in His true purpose(s) of you. If the law and thus your fear of condemnation are the ship's tie-downs, grace is the engine. You did not know that once you understood enough of the ship, the engine would start. Soon the propeller will engage and the lines released.

181. Women and Grace

Find a woman and settle down. Pray for a woman who is noble, grounded, trustworthy, and strict to her morals. Find a woman who says "no" more than once and you will come to respect her. Find a woman for your emotional stability. Whatever God gives us, he gives by grace. So then, a Godly woman is given us men by His grace. And like I have said before, appreciate grace, accept grace, but never take grace for granted. A woman is there for you. Therefore, become humble to God because of Him handing her over to you. And from this humility will grow cherishing devotion for the woman given you for life.

Learn from her teachings. Step back and watch her motions. See how inquisitive, how thoughtful, how sometimes steady her thoughts, her sorrows, her neediness and yet her convictions, her rebellion and yet her submissions. And yet with a shrug of her shoulders, a droop of her head, and a glare into your eyes, you can do nothing but melt at her command. Encircle her as the earth encircles the sun and soak in her radiance. And then drop to your knees and thank God for her. She is a woman of God and she is wonderful. Be there for her, love her because she is her, and hold her forever. A sincere woman to a man is like snow which falls upon a wintry tree. Her purity awakens him with only a touch.

182. The River of Revelation

Now I will show you who are lost and who have been reborn in Christ the supernatural way of healing people and nations. It has been there all the while—in the Book of Revelation.

Lost in the Woods:

Matthew 18:10-14 tells us that "your Father in heaven is not willing that any of [you] be lost".

The Guide:

So He sent us His Son. "I am the light of the world. Whoever follows me will never walk in darkness, but will have the light of life. Do not be afraid. I am the First and the Last. I am the Living One; I was dead, and behold, I am alive forever and ever! And I hold the keys of death and Hades." (John 8:12, Rev 1:17-18)

The Path Through the Woods:

1. I have been given permission by God to believe that I am a good person who has strayed and am using artificial substances to comfort me in avoiding my problems and weaknesses. We must look for our Perfect God and ask Him to help us figure out who we are, accept us, and love us unconditionally (Rev 2:1-7), thus we must admit to ourselves and God our weaknesses, not just as our strengths.
2. We must then go through detoxification with Him of our addictive desires and dependencies (Rev 2:8-11)
3. We must come to believe that God, who is pure love, is with us and begin separating from people and things that do not support us in healing (Rev 2:12-17)
4. We must ask God to help us with the temptations to cling to or depend on any new or old people or things that we believe will ease our pain (Rev 2:18-29)
5. We must pray in finding true caring people and a loving Godly therapist to help us in our healing (Rev 3:1-6)
6. We must find a comforting church with small healing groups and compassionate counselors (Rev 3:7-13)
7. We must choose to learn about Christ and God's unconditional love for us (Rev 3:14-22) and, thus choose to begin focusing on the solution rather than the problem.

The Temple:

And then we choose to enter the Temple of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. It is here that God will begin to show us Truth and teach us our true and uniquely created way of living. It is here that we will gain the true knowledge of the True Solution. (Rev 4:1-2, Eze 40:4, JN 14:16-20, JN 15:12-14, JN 16:25,33, JN 3:16,21)

The River and the Covenant of Sanctuary Along The River:

“Then the angel showed me the river of the water of life...” (Eze 47:1-12, Rev 22)

“This land will become your inheritance...” (Eze 47:13-23)

The Harbors (Lands) Along the River:

And these I have found to be the Stepping Blocks in healing by way of Christ. Think, pray, apply, and then feel each step. Remember that whoever asks, will be given. Whoever searches, will find. And whoever knocks, the door will be opened for you. Embrace the journey in God's time. Be patient and courageous.

In order to kill the first beast of the sea (fear of unearthing the shame which currently lies within you), begin with: Belief, then comes Hope, then Faith, Perseverance, Humility, Wisdom, and True Love.

In order to kill the second beast of the land (fear of condemnation by others), continue with: Allegiance, then Intimacy, Grace, Freedom, and eventually Peace.

Though fear will strike again for a short time just before you die, remember that heaven is on the other side. Once in heaven, the fear will be gone forever.

And those whose minds are further along than their hearts are deemed arrogant. And those whose hearts are further along than their minds are deemed of low self-esteem. If a person claims to be allegiant and kills in the name of God, then he has yet to find love in his heart. But if a person exudes mercy but thinks himself not deserving, he has yet to find hope in his own mind. Discover each harbor so that your mind and heart can be one before searching for the next.

So how long does it take to go through the journey? It's up to you how much control you want to give up to our True Father, how much hard work you want to put into it, and how much time you give to it. You can even stop anywhere along the journey and go no further because you've already been saved once you started it and been sealed in His grace at baptism. But let me just suggest reading Revelations 22:2. Substitute the words "crops of fruit" with "levels in the journey". Once you step into the River and begin surrendering yourself to God, one can make great headway in healing in as little as one year's time.

Remember that what you reap in one year from the Holy Spirit may take you a thousands years to learn by yourself on earth. So, be patient and live in God's Time. Don't worry about being perfect. You will find that God's grace is sufficient for your imperfections. Do not worry about the end, just enjoy your new journey.

183. Actions Speak Louder Than Words

People want a better life but they either don't believe one exists or they are too afraid to go it alone. God gives us a better life and, through His grace, alleviates our fear of condemnation from others. So then, it is no surprise that people react little to what another says rather than how another acts.

We've heard the saying, "Less is more." It is true. As you stay focused to the virtues of God, there is someone observing you saying to themselves, "I want what he has." And then that someone comes to you or is drawn to you.

Just like those who have only knowledge talk a lot yet say little where those who are wise talk little yet say a lot, a true holy person is not one who evangelizes for the sake of you hearing his words. A true holy person is someone who says little if anything at all and others come to seek his advice. He is the proof that the Holy Spirit exists, not a person full of words and haughty expression. Why? Simply because it is much harder not to exploit God so you can be heard, especially after you realize the Truth you have been given. Again, the knowledgeable speak a lot but say little; the wise speak little but say a lot.

Words, words, words. The Holy Spirit himself will teach you in your unique way everything these “holy roller” evangelists try to and so incredibly much more but only that which is really true. The more a person preaches, the less faith he really has. The more a person listens, the more faith he gains. Preaching is like throwing crumbs to a crowd in hopes that someone may find a taste, but yet that someone always goes away hungry. Listening is like serving up the meal that someone was hungry for as he goes away filled.

The expression, “Leave ‘em wanting more,” is distasteful to God. Feed them until they are filled. But realize that an evangelist feeds his own sinful nature while a prophet feeds the soul of the one who comes to him. An evangelist prays for a following while a prophet prays to follow. An evangelist sets his own time to preach while a prophet awaits God’s perfect timing to impact the person in what he says from the Spirit of God.

184. Grace Takes Care of Arguing

Arguing is pointless. It neither solves nor edifies. Discussing can be meaningful when two people realize that discussion is needed to reach a valuable solution, especially if the discussion is focused within the boundaries of its topic. And, in the meantime, if each person is receptive and respectful to the other, discussing can edify and enlighten one another.

But arguing is pointless. This is why when having arguments, either in physical company or in your imagination, let your reply to others always be in grace. Then you will surrender the fight over to God and the dread will fall away. It is best not to get wrapped up with an argumentative person. He takes away your focus on Christ and places focus on himself.

Yes, surrender your part of the debate over to God so that the reply will always be of grace. This is best because the words of grace come from the Holy Spirit, who is always ready to teach Christ.

185. Grace Only for the Elite?

Do I just follow a man because he says God talks to him? I say I follow God, but he says how do you follow God if you do not know what God is truly saying. I say that even if I am mistaken, God allows me grace through His son. But he says that because you do not obey the church, you willfully do not obey God. He says that because he is the authority God gave the world and only he knows the true heart of the Spirit then not obeying him is not obeying God. And in this light, he says that you then purposely turn your back on God. I say that God will forgive me if I am wrong because Christ died for all of us and all our sins. He says that because you turn your back

on the church and thus on God, you have excommunicated yourself from any grace God could place on you. I say that God's grace extends past the church for He is truly omnipotent. He says God is the church and thus you are no longer with God but in your own dream world. He says that since you are now out of God's grace, the church cannot be responsible for you not going to heaven. He says that if you want to be back in God's grace, you then must be a member of the church. I say we are all the Body. He says that you are not the right kind of body. I say God shows no favoritism. He says that is right, God does show no favoritism—among His people that is. I say who is His people. He says those with the Holy Spirit. I ask what is the Holy Spirit? He says it's a mystery. I say then, if it is a mystery then your opinion is as good as mine. He says you think you have him when you really don't. I say I was baptized under your law when I was an infant, thus I had Him when I didn't even know I had Him. Now you say I don't have Him anymore. You have just made yourself a hypocrite. I say if the Spirit is a mystery, we then cannot define it but just experience his love—which makes us all equal. He says how can you experience what you don't have? I say I hope He is in you as you say. Ah, now who is damning and who is gracious? The difference is that I trust in love through faith with the Spirit inside while you are still trying to reason and define Him and lay down scripture and law.

Who now is truly closer to Christ?

186. Faith Transcends Law

If I want to do something good because of my faith and love, then why impose a law on me that says I must do that thing I want to do or be condemned for not doing it? It is then that I will come to hate the very thing I once loved. If you do not trust in me to do good then I will come to hate doing good for your sake.

Who says you have to “take the good with the bad”?

In any man-made law, there is a percentage of gradations of good and a percentage of gradations of bad. The Holy Spirit is pure righteousness and one advantage of being in Christ is that we become educated by the Spirit in Truth—that is what is right from wrong, what is truth and what is false, what is good and what is bad. And though we are human, there is definitely a line that separates good from bad within the mixture.

So then, if I obey the good that is in the law and disobey the bad that is in it, what am I considered? The world would consider me an outlaw because disobeying any of the law would be disobeying the law, period. God considers me righteous because my reliance on the counsel of the Holy Spirit allows me the integrity to transcend the law. If I take the good with the bad, I corrupt myself and no longer have faith in the Spirit. This is the difference between obeying the letter-of-the-law (judgment and condemnation) and the Spirit-of-the-law (love). The Spirit-of-the-law is the righteousness by which the law was set to protect—its truly noble intention—not because of fear but because of compassion.

How can a person condemn another for only taking what is righteous from the law? Am I not then more righteous in my actions and soul than if I took the whole law? Why were laws made to be broken? They were made to be broken because God's Righteousness transcends man's law.

It is best to observe what is in front of you and around you and then to discern that which is good and that which is bad. Discern the good qualities of others from the bad qualities. Discern the good qualities of your parents from the bad qualities. This I was able to do at a young age and incorporate them in myself, though I did not have the wisdom at the time to be able to forgive my parents for their bad qualities. If I had, I would have dismissed these qualities for weaknesses rather than imposing strengths against my good nature. This would have allowed me to overcome the imposition.

Grace is what allows us to overcome weakness in the world so we can focus on each others' strengths and become fully intimate with each other through our devotions to each other in spite of our weaknesses (trespasses). So then, take the good and forgive the bad!

187. The Greatest Wisdom

The greatest wisdom is to realize that someone else may be wiser in at least one area than you. This brings about humility so that you may listen and heed another's wisdom in the area you are weaker in. It is then that you will find life less of a struggle and come to love it and the One who gave you life.

188. Empathy

How can a person forgive if he is too arrogant to empathize with the one he needs to forgive? Know yourself and you will begin to empathize with others. This is the beginning of true intimacy that then leads to true forgiveness, deemed as grace.

189. All Roads Lead to Heaven

I have found that it is better to find a longer route that is calm and free for worship than to force yourself to accept the shortest route that is ridden with fear and constant misery. There is no guarantee that the shortest route will get you there quicker, but both the longer route and the shorter route lead to the same place. Do not be ashamed to take the alternate one, instead embrace what it has to offer along the way and Enjoy The Ride.

We are meant to enjoy life, not force ourselves to suffer for the sanctity of perfection. If that were so, we would not need grace nor be given it so unconditionally by God through His Own Son. Accept your weaknesses by accepting God's grace. Weakness is not bad, they are just weaknesses (vulnerabilities). And strengths are not good, they are just strengths. Use your strengths to help others and use other's strengths to help yourself. By accepting both, you allow yourself to offer compassion to others and also allow yourself to accept compassion from others, which will in-turn make you even more compassionate.

It is best to admit and then accept our weaknesses if we are going to make any true headway in finding peace with ourselves via God. This is another advantage of having God's grace within us and upon us. God forgives us for our shortcomings. A man who is embarrassed of his own weaknesses will pay out a lot of money, time and wasted effort in hiding them from others.

So then, what path are you on in search for God and His Righteousness? What road leads to heaven? What religion, what faith? Lutheran, Catholic, Methodist, Baptist and the like are religions. Jewish, Hindu, Buddhism, Christian and the like are faiths. When it comes to searching for the righteousness of God, accept and enjoy the path you are on and let grace take care of the rest. How can a person truly and totally accept the path he/she is on, along with all its strengths and weaknesses and opportunities and threats, and still unite with God in heavenly peace without fully accepting grace?

Like I said, all roads lead to heaven, but only those that are filled with grace will anyone be able to achieve much headway.

Ah, yes then—but how does one come to acquire, know, and accept Grace so to fulfill his or her journey?

Through Christ Jesus.

190. Faith Supersedes Law

What is it to surpass the law? Surpass means to transcend the reach or exceed the law. This I have described in an early passage. The Holy Spirit's righteousness surpasses the law because man's law is made up of gradations of both good and bad. Therefore, righteousness is pure good and not corrupted by bad. God's Righteousness is purely virtuous where law has a percentage of non-virtuous or immoral intent. So then, that which is virtuous within a person (the Holy Spirit) compels a person do what is righteous.

But now what is it to supersede the law? Supersede means to displace (remove from the usual or traditional place) in favor of another. Virtue supersedes the law. Virtue supersedes it not because the law was not of any good. Quite the contrary. Virtue supersedes the law because we now are in Christ and have now faith which is now in us via the Holy Spirit. Because of the Holy Spirit, we do what is right and righteous. The Holy Spirit compels us to do so rather than any law mandating us to do it. We do right because we love to do right rather than doing right out of fear of doing wrong.

I believe that if a person even possesses one type of virtue, it proves the existence of the Holy Spirit in him. If it is love, let it be love. If it is compassion, compassion. Patience, then so it is. If it is respect, then so be it. It is for those that truly abhor even the existence of virtue that there is no heaven. And this is the pinnacle reason laws have to be created.

But what is virtue? Patience, justice, integrity, love, respect, honesty are just some examples of true virtue. But a person cannot totally comprehend virtue, but it exists nonetheless. And so people have a hard time accepting it as a vehicle for our true betterment. They know that a fix

provides instant gratification but they cannot see the long term damaging effects. And they know that virtue means hard and sometime laboring work and they cannot see its long term beneficial effects. So, they rather have the instantaneous fix that brings no fulfillment rather than do the hard work of virtue that does bring fulfillment. Because the Holy Spirit is a mystery that we cannot truly define, so is virtue. Virtue is not law. There is no law that mandates you to be patient, to be just, to love, to have integrity, to respect another, or to be truthful with another in a person's heart. Yes, there are laws that mandate a person's actions toward another, but not how a person feels toward another. Even God, because of His magnificent grace, does not mandate such feelings. If so, then most would fear Him (in the truest sense of the word) rather than love Him. But because we have grace, we not only love our Father but we revere Him as well.

So then, why do we do right when we cannot even totally comprehend that which compels us to do right? We do right because we have within us true faith and only a faith that can be demonstrated by that of the Holy Spirit. Yes, we do right because we have gained much wisdom from doing wrong. But our faith attracts us toward doing right because of love rather than us doing right because we are running from doing wrong.

You can comprehend law. Break any part of it and you have broken it. It is impossible for a human not to break the law. Humans can never fully obey the law in totality just as humans cannot fully meet the expectations of others or themselves. So then, we are all guilty of breaking the law everyday in some severity. So why are we all not in prison, even the judge? Because we are all in prison and just do not realize it. We have placed ourselves in prison subconsciously ashamed of breaking the law while thinking that we can achieve perfection one day so to escape it.

But who man condemns by the law, God exonerates by grace. And a person can only be free by first finding grace, which can only be found by first having faith. So then, to be free, faith must first supersede law. Does this mean that if we have faith then we can do what is immoral as if the law never existed? No because faith and grace are virtues and, like I stated before, that which is virtuous within a person (the Holy Spirit) compels a person do what is righteous. So then, if a person has true faith, he is compelled to do right. And possessing this true faith is the only way to be set free from imprisonment. If a person is set free by man and still he continues to do immoral things, the person may have knowledge of faith but he has yet to have true faith. He continues to imprison himself even before he commits the immoral thing that sends him back to prison.

Let me explain:

Small towns have speed limits. As you drive through a small town, you have some choices. You can outright disobey the speed limit because out of true arrogance you believe to be above the law and have declared yourself justified in doing so and thinking so. You can obey the speed limit because you fear the traffic police may catch you and punish (condemn) you if you do not obey. You can simply obey the speed limit (even if you know for sure that there are no traffic police to catch you) because you respect those who live there and the guidelines they've declared for themselves within the town. Or you can slow down out of respect and compassion for the lives of the people who live there (even if the town had no speed limit and thus no traffic police).

From the last choice, you now see that where there is faith that leads to respect (which is the same faith that leads to grace) there is not even a need for a declared law. Yet, the action of the person in the last choice still does what is right and obedient to God. And this is the same in any place (town, city, church, religion) where laws exist. Thus, the law guides those who do not have the Spirit but the Spirit supersedes the law. If you have respect, you have no fear of being condemned. If you take action from integrity, you have no fear of condemnation from those with less integrity. You are free. And the more you grow in God's virtue, like integrity, the more free you are.

191. Men Among Men

It is like the typist who now has the skill and also understands the philosophy of typing, he is now the authority over only the skilled typist. When you are empowered by the Greatest Authority and placed in authority by Him, you have the skill and philosophy of what God has trained you in. If you are patient because you are fulfilled in God from accepting His virtue of patience, you are given authority over those with less patience. The same goes for belief, hope, faith, perseverance, wisdom, humility, love, allegiance, intimacy, grace, freedom, and peace and all that these encompass.

Greater knowledge than another is not enough to be in authority over another. This is because knowledge is not virtue. A person can have enormous knowledge and be very corrupt. This person is like the law and will become his own law. And true faith not only supersedes but surpasses the man-made law because faith compels righteousness where law may even condemn righteousness.

The true authority is the person who is within the realm of virtue. He/she is full of compassion, wisdom, and grace rather than condemnation and deviant omnipotence. And it is the greatest authority on earth who comes to find freedom and peace in God. It is because of your new found freedom in Christ that you realize condemning others only prevents them in sharing the same freedom. And we are compelled by the Holy Spirit to serve in love and share with others that which has bettered ourselves.

192. The Ruler and The Prophet

As a ruler tries to control, he leads himself away from virtue. A ruler may believe himself close to God as he tries to contain such power within himself. He self-indulges himself with such power that it becomes a man-made aphrodisiac. This containment promotes great stress and anxiety rather than true confidence and courage and, thus, triggers addictive enzymes (i.e. sexual hormones, adrenaline rushes, etc.) to execute actions (drug intakes, compulsiveness, self-indulgence, etc.) to counteract the stress. This is when God's power within oneself becomes that of destruction on others. If a person tries to harness righteousness for oneself without relinquishing it to others, the person destroys himself in the process. This is because God's power given to those in authority is to be used to garnish righteousness on mankind and for mankind. This kind of power—to move mountains—cannot be contained in one individual. He will wind up exploding into a thousand different pieces. First will go his body, then his mind,

and then his soul. The ruler also requires followers in order to rule because he is fixated on the reactions of his followers. In other words, the ruler gains power from people. Take away the people and the ruler's power withers away.

But a prophet knows that he is empowered by God to exude the power given him by God. He surrenders all his own bodily power to God even though he is in a powerful position of authority. He, thus, maintains and furthers virtue (righteousness), such as humility, patience, and grace. The prophet knows that he is a vehicle for spreading the righteousness of God. He trusts God fully for his well-being in the process of spreading insight, vision, and empowering others. The prophet requires no followers because he acts in relation to his Father. In other words, the prophet is empowered by God Himself. Take away the people and the prophet is still empowered surrendering any excess power to God.

193. Using the Bible as a Law or Crutch

If we use the Bible itself as law—as a crutch—we will not be able to totally rely on the Holy Spirit. In other words, we will not allow our faith to supersede or surpass it. The Bible is an affirmation tool and a divine reference. But Christ said it himself that the Spirit of Truth will tell you everything He told his disciples and even more than that (John 16:12). So then let us not make the Bible sole law because we wind up limiting ourselves in faith.

Can we trust that God is in us? Can we trust that our soul now belongs to Him and is of Him? If so, then we can live by faith and we can rely on the Holy Spirit alone so to do good and be good and righteous. This is what is known as true freedom. Can we now accept God's full grace and accept that we are human so we can go "yeah, yeah, that's our human selves in action. What do *you* say Spirit about this and that?"

Do we need the Bible to be the law as a crutch in order not to lose God? We keep the crutch because we fear death. No longer is it condemnation we may fear because condemnation from the world with all its ridiculous judgment will always be there. No, we keep the crutch because we fear the vast unknown. Once we conquer that, we will have true peace.

So use the Bible as your safety blanket until the time that your faith lends you to rely on the Spirit alone for your acts of righteousness in unwavering confidence and courage.

194. Being Dragged in Many Directions

First of all, I am not speaking about doing immoral things but sound and moral things within and outside my path. Understanding this, I'll continue.

In life and in the business world, I keep hearing that people feel as if they are being dragged one way and then the other, constantly. Their boss dictates this and then that and then this again. And those of low self-esteem who see others in life as bosses say the same thing.

But one who is dragged in many directions allows himself to be dragged. If I vow to a specific scope of work (a path with boundaries on either side like a road) given by my boss or by me, I

have agreed to only a certain amount of empowerment, wage, and flexibility within that scope. If I am being dragged in other directions, I am allowing myself to be pulled outside these boundaries where I did not vow my services. Therefore, I am choosing to dishonor my own vow. If my boss wants this and that which is outside my originally vowed scope of work, it is time to renegotiate. I must be given a broader path that these changes fall within the boundaries of it. I must be given a broader (greater) wage. I must be given greater empowerment because I cannot do all that my boss asks by myself. In other words, I must be able to hire generals at every place where my boss veers from the straight and narrow. A boss who is less focused on the goal uses up more money in material and manpower.

This is the same for our own vows placed upon ourselves. If we ask ourselves to veer outside the boundaries of our original path, we too should decide whether our path needs to be broadened. If we take actions which dictate a responsibility to broaden our path (like marriage, children, etc.), then we must renegotiate with ourselves and our bosses.

For instance, if a boss asks you to be somewhere in two hours and using your regular single lane highway would take you three hours to get there, then you would try to find at least a double lane highway. If you usually work on one path in the garden but your boss asks you to work on the flowers on another path in the garden, you would then enter the garden with a broader view in mind that incorporates both paths. The garden's physical boundaries would not change, but your perspective of the garden would. But with more responsibility comes more wages and more empowerment to maintain the high quality of the flowers on both paths.

So then yes, walk the straight and narrow but realize that there are many straight and narrow paths within the boundaries of righteousness. In other words, just as there are many types of virtues, a virtuous path contains many beautiful trails. Do not limit yourself to just one, but be empowered and given the wage to discover many.

195. Some Wisdom to Help Set You Free

A man who must coax to get what he wants is not much of a man;
He respects others like a flea respects a dog;
His smile lures you in as he's stabbing you in the back.

A man who keeps forcing himself on you and then asks you for forgiveness,
Exploits virtue to get what he wants. He reveres no one, not even God.

A man who doesn't see the importance of acquiring virtue,
Will make it important enough to try to use it against you.

The more a man invests his heart in the world,
The less room he leaves in his heart to trust God.

A man who invests his heart in the world will discount virtue;
But a man who trusts God gives freely.

A man who gives into manipulation and intimidation makes himself a slave;
His own vow entraps him.

Those who trust not in God, especially the rich, serve with an ulterior motive;
They deposit their treasure in others expecting to receive it back with interest.

A man who needs others will follow them through calamity in hopes of gaining wealth;
But a man who relies on God continues to increase his wealth.

The more others try to make a man feel guilty,
The more important is the man to the others;
And the more the man will be remembered later for his integrity.

The world does not understand integrity and respect;
This is why the meek will inherit the earth.

Salaries do not come because of impious people,
But because pious people are still present within the workplace.

The impious businessman sees a pious man's integrity and devotion to God as insubordinate or not ambitious (lazy);
He will either try coaxing the pious man or wind up having nothing to do with him.

A captain who takes little interest in his own ship has little faith in God;
He does not commit to his own ship relying on the fact that he can quickly jump to another when his sinks,
As many of his crew who were foolishly devoted to him go down and perish along the way.
Such a man's past is full of sinking ships though he denies having ever been on one.

196. Love of Money

Sometimes others can say something better than you, even though you are experiencing or have experienced it yourself. This is true with me and thank God that, through prayer, I have chosen contentment over the "rat race".

And so, Paul says to Timothy (1Tim 6:3-10):

"If anyone teaches false doctrines and does not agree to the sound instruction of our Lord Jesus Christ and to godly teaching, he is conceited and understands nothing. He has an unhealthy interest in controversies and quarrels about words that result in envy, strife, malicious talk, evil suspicions and constant friction between men of corrupt mind, who have been robbed of the truth and WHO THINK THAT GODLINESS IS A MEANS TO FINANCIAL GAIN."

"BUT GODLINESS WITH CONTENTMENT IS GREAT GAIN. For we brought nothing into the world, and we can take nothing out of it. But if we have food and clothing, we will be content with that. People who want to get rich fall into temptation and a trap and into many

foolish and harmful desires that plunge men into ruin and destruction. For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil. Some people, eager for money, have wandered from the faith and pierced themselves with many griefs.”

197. Being Tested or Embracing Opportunity?

As you grow in the intimacy with the Lord, situations will appear that will test your faith. Some say that God tests you to see if you are faithful. But if God knows whether you will pass the test or not from the beginning, this seems wasteful and illogical. Some say the enemy comes after you to pull you back, but then again because God controls all, this would certainly be a test from Him as well. Both of these fall within the fear of condemnation and because we have grace we must find in our hearts to accept this gift so to overcome this fear and find freedom and peace (contentment).

God loves us unconditionally. And no loving person would place a test on us to see if we failed or not. This is the same concept as someone throwing you into a lake to see if you can swim or not. And if not, he rushes in to save you. This is contemptible.

In my life, I have found neither a test nor a deceit by God Almighty. Instead, as you grow in the Lord, opportunities come our way that help instill our undoubtedly belief and faith within us that the Lord’s way IS the way. Where ever we are on our journey and whatever virtue we are working on at the time, an opportunity comes to instill that virtue in our hearts. As I have said, we focus on the path that is God, and whatever we need will be given to us. It is an opportunity to act upon and practice our newly discovered virtue—be it grace, patience, perseverance, faith, love, intimacy, freedom or whatever the virtue. Opportunities come that provide us with a choice of God or money, of God or fame, of our contentment in God or misery. These opportunities refresh and instill the peace of God within us sending no doubt in our minds that God is our Lord through Christ.

But do not seek or create these opportunities yourself as a game to see if you will win or not. Why place yourself into undue temptation? But instead apply the wisdom you have gained from each opportunity so that you will know when to say yes and when to say no so that your peace will increase or endure. Remember to focus on the path and peace will remain yours.

198. Who Does God Help?

How many times must I hear, “God helps those who help themselves”? Who misconstrued this saying. I tell you that this was not the original saying of the Holy Spirit. This is a man-made saying exploiting God and another to get what that person wanted. If God helps those who help themselves then God helps no person and Christ is but a myth. Who of us truly know how to help ourselves? Who of us truly know what righteousness was before we had the Holy Spirit? A loving Father does not hold back himself to see if his children will fail or not without him. That is abandonment and that is wicked.

God does not wait in the wings watching to see if his children are worthy enough to receive him. He does not wait to see if there is enough righteousness in our own selves to be worthy of his

love. He does not wait to see if we are good or do righteous things to qualify for his love. God does not even wait for us to ask Him for help before He is already with us.

No. God continually prompts us to ask. God continually sends angels, whether we are good, bad, or somewhere in between. If He did not, what would be the good of sending us His grace? What would be the good in sending us His son?

This is the sickness in the world today. So many false teachers of the Church teach that we are alone until we ask God for His help. And then they say that God only responds if He wants to or has deemed us worthy enough to respond to. That, my friends, is a man-made philosophy by those who have been abandoned by their parents. That is the evil that has cursed mankind for eternity. And man has been manipulated to think that what has happened to him and what is in his own mind is, indeed, that of God Almighty.

God, my friends, is there with you no matter what. The truth is that it is only when you begin to admit your faults and ask Him for help that the Spirit is able to begin healing you in a manner that you are very aware of. Again, His Spirit that is within you is continually prompting you to receive God's love and grace. Therefore, His Spirit is in you and His angels with you whether you've been bad or good. That my friends is called grace.

What do you think? What is your definition of grace? I tell you, no matter the greatness of your own definition, God's definition is by far incredibly greater. Do not say He will forgive me for this but not that. The "not that" is precisely the important thing that He is concentrating on and forgives you for.

You so-called Holy people. Leave your pulpit! Be in the cellars and the dungeons so that you may find enough humility to apologize to all those you have condemned! Pick up the load and serve the lowliest so that you may truly know the Spirit within you!

GRACE IS FOR EVERYONE AND IN EVERYONE! And not just for those who help themselves first.

199. Abandonment

I have found in my lifetime that the more a person avoids the hard work in finding intimacy with himself and the ones he loves now, the greater he will suffer for it later. Though there are no guarantees, the more a person avoids the hard work in finding intimacy with himself and the ones he loves now, the same absence of intimacy will he get back later by them. And in this way, I have found children to be the great equalizers in a parent's life.

I have known divorced fathers who traveled long distances to see their mothers and yet only stop by for a little while on the way to see their children—never traveling the long distance just for their children.

I have known fathers who have traveled around the world in search for greatness and still search for something even better today, yet not be there when their children were born. And during this

time of the fathers still striving to achieve greatness, I have seen wives miserable and lonely and their sons and daughters in and out of prisons, taking drugs, drinking, and subjecting themselves to near death situations just to get a fix of love or intimacy. And still today do the fathers blame their wives and children in slowing down the father's rise to greatness because he has to take time to deal with all his "so-called" failed children. He has condemned his children and does not have grace in his heart, yet he expects those he loves to love him. And these fathers go to church regularly but cannot fathom why their children do not obey them—though they were never there to provide them intimacy in the first place.

And I have known mothers who coddle their children so much that their children fear leaving the nest for fear of condemnation and rejection by others and their mothers. And I have known both mothers and fathers who hoard money from one another and yet always say they do not have any or enough, thus relying on money to be their savior just in case their spouses or children leave them.

And I have known parents who do not have faith in grace but in the hand and in the stick and in putrid and condemning words in disciplining their children. And yet I have known parents who will not discipline their children for fear of their children leaving them one day if they do.

These are all forms of abandonment. And the truth is that someone who feels abandoned, abandons others in the process. They too were most likely abandoned in their youth. But God never abandons any of His children. The first step in any healing is to admit that you have a problem—like abandoning your children—and have the courage to take the steps in gaining knowledge about your problem. But believing that there is a loving Father who will stay with you unconditionally and provide you grace is the first step in supernatural healing. **THIS IS WHERE YOU START BEING FOCUSED ON THE SOLUTION AND STOP BEING SO FOCUSED ON THE PROBLEM.** Because we know that a person cannot heal unless he looks ahead toward a solution and trusts that the solution will heal him.

So then, it is true that you can either pay for it now or pay for it later. Do the hard work in finding Christ now and pursuing his path of supernatural healing, which has to do with belief, hope, faith, perseverance, wisdom, humility, love, devotion, intimacy, grace, freedom, and peace. And you will find an enjoyable life ahead with Him and others who you truly love.

200. Few Belong on the Pulpit

It is my experience that actually very few people belong on the pulpit. If indeed faith transcends law, then the majority of those on the pulpit today are not there by faith but by law. If a person must have a college degree in divinity to be on the pulpit, then there is a chance that he was not sent by God to be there. Following the law of a type church to be justified in being on the pulpit is worse than if they had not begun school but took the path of God on their own. There comes a time when faith must overcome law. But when a person's faith and ecclesiastical philosophy is evident by the person's character and continuous disposition, the Bible will indeed affirm him—whether he went to school or not. Divinity is his gift. Schools of divinity are not viable for ministers of the Faith, except as vocational schools providing knowledge of factual events or known ways of assisting others. But to teach faith is like you teaching the Holy Spirit.

Christians cannot accept those on the pulpit who follow and dictate law. They are to be taught by those of faith being taught themselves by the Holy Spirit and affirmed by the Bible. And as a person grows in faith, does the Bible reveal more than he knew before—even in the same passages as before. So then, a person can still be affirmed by the Bible though those of less faith think he is an outlaw.

A person who belongs on the pulpit is a person whose faith ALREADY transcends any church law(s). And any person graduating from a school belongs in the deaconate, not in the priesthood. The priesthood is only for those who have developed their faith and shown their continual disposition. This is why a person can be a priest and not ever have gone to a school of divinity because the Temple of God via the Holy Spirit IS the true School of Divinity. This is why there are truly only very few priests who belong on the pulpit and an even less percentage of Bishops. By the time a person becomes a Bishop, the Holy Spirit and he are very intimate together. The man and the Spirit within him have constant communication and he reveres the Spirit with incredible love as being with him.

It is absolutely the Holy Spirit within himself that a person should be communicating to. Who is St. Jude and who is St. Paul and who is St. Peter but disciples of Christ with whom they to had the same Spirit, as does all of us? Why do we call to them when He is right within us? Where is the intimacy with God in that? “Protect us”, you say. “Help us”, you say. To whom do you refer to? They cannot help you greater than the One who resides within you. You say you are not worthy, yet you have been baptized. Why be baptized if it is law that you are not worthy to receive His Spirit?

Do not spit in the eye of God, but accept all that He gives us. Accept His Son, accept His Spirit, accept His Grace. You may believe you are not worthy enough, but God certainly believes you are. Now who is truly arrogant rather than truly humble?

201. A Church By Any Other Name

This church and that church. Your laws and their laws. I have found it quite heretic to open a place of worship and call it a church. Today there is no true church that is physically visible. There is only One Church and One Church Only. Churches here and churches there! The church of the Catholic, the Protestant, the Methodist, the Lutheran, and on and on and on. Heretics all of you!

No, a “so-called” church today is only a place of popular opinion. One believes a little differently and makes a church. Those on the pulpit are not prophets but rulers. The ego of man builds churches who need followers. But the Spirit works within each person to unite and solidify the One Church. The ego of man dictates law, but the Spirit provides faith that transcends law. The ego of man cannot believe that which is not stated in the law, but Christ said himself that the Spirit will tell of the Will of God that is still not written.

Open a place of worship, fine. I believe that God Almighty wants you to open as many as possible. He wants each of us to open up a place of worship so that no one will remain lost, but

where the lost go they will find the way of Christ. But do not spill rhetoric and laws upon any congregation but find fellowship and worship as the Holy Spirit speaks to each one of us. Speak to each other as if you are speaking to Christ. But do not open a “church”, rather just call it a place of public opinion if you are going to spill rhetoric and try to fix people and shout out why you do not agree with another. Where is the worship in that? Where is the Spirit in that?

Congregate to speak from the heart so that all of you can tear down the walls of fear and shame and hopelessness so that you will accept the Holy Spirit in all His glory. What you will realize is the blessings of God in an even greater understanding than ever before.

202. Defining Peace

The true definition of Peace is:

Dreaming for what is realistic and then living the dream of reality.

The boundaries in living a peaceful life are:

1. Not wearing out your gift beyond its usefulness but using your gift enough to wear.
2. Accepting your lot and finding enough serenity with it so to become useful within it.
3. Living with God within the boundaries of true and caring and unconditional love.
4. Living between that which I know I am not empowered by God to change and that which I am empowered by God to change.
5. Loving what you do in your unique God-given place and pace within God’s righteousness.
6. Living within God’s grace in His time.

203. Work as a Hobby

What is it to start a business or to work at a company? If what and how a person does or creates is a reflection of his/her soul, then why must a person sell his soul to another before he can start living it? But that is what you do when you start a business or work at a company. You must sell your soul to another in hopes that the other will buy into it. And so you sell your soul to another in hopes that you can make money off of it or begin to feel useful. You sell your soul into slavery being dependent on others buying into it for your confidence that your soul is worthy enough to even exist.

Instead, I find more peace and happiness when I can feel what I do as a hobby. And, of course, it should be a healthy hobby. When a person has a hobby, he wants to do it rather than having to do it. He enjoys his work in it and at it. He doesn’t care whether other people like it or not

because it provides him happiness. He's not out to sell anything and he doesn't need anyone to buy into it. Instead, he does it for pure pleasure of the heart. He enjoys do the hobby with his best friend, the Holy Spirit, within him. He usually does it independently of others, which supplies a confidence from within. He is focused on it for a short while but then doesn't mind leaving it for a time to be with the ones he loves.

In my case, the technical aspect of my work feels like a hobby. I am fortunate I listened to God. My true work, which I enjoy but that I feel is most important in my life, is interacting with people and helping each person I am in contact with enjoy a better life. And I do this by noticing those who God sends me in my journeys with Him. I do this by imparting my wisdom to help others in their own journey. I do this by imparting compassion, love, and most importantly grace to those I meet. It is most fulfilling when you provide grace to another and see how free they begin to express themselves. Nobody wants condemnation, but that is what most Christians impart on others, thinking that they are helping them instead of hurting them.

Do you truly want to help someone? Impart grace upon them. If you cannot, then learn how to impart grace upon yourself first.

Yes, for me the number one thing in my life is working for God Almighty. Everything else is just an enjoyable hobby.

204. Boundaries

When I was young, before I knew Christ, I thought of myself in a blank box and on the outside was freedom. I was surrounded by four walls and the walls jailed me in. The whole world was outside my box and they were free. They did not want to come into my box and I couldn't get out.

But as I became desperate for comfort and nurturing, I realized that there was only one way left for escape. If I could not get out, I would go within. And this is where I found God. And overtime I came to understand that, because I did not realize Christ and the Holy Spirit to be with me all the while, it was righteousness and peace of mind that was inside the box and the chaotic world was outside the box. In other words, I realized that true freedom was not from with out but from within and the walls were walls of virtue not gates entrapping me in a hell (a jail cell).

If I had accepted my lot from the beginning and searched within, I would have come to notice a beautiful land. It is not good to be overprotected and afraid of the world and of the unknown either. This fear enslaves you and your desire to go over the wall and into the world that shames you. And now I realize that Christ was like an overprotective parent from the Sermon on the Mount (MT 5:17-7:29).

The thing is that if we did not sin, how could we truly know in our hearts the blessings of virtue. This is why grace was given us—so we would not have to wallow in the guilt and shame of sin but escape it and come to live in true virtue. We come to know where those boundaries are between the land of virtue and the land of sin. From experience, we know that “out there” is not

a fun place to be—quite the opposite. But when you have yet to find Christ within, you believe that “out there” is the only place where there is peace and fun.

So then, is it better to stay in virtue because you fear condemnation from God and others on the outside? I say no because then you stay within the walls of hell instead of within the walls of heaven. This is why we have been given grace. When we go out and sin, thinking that is a better way, we find out through experience that it’s consequences are miserable. And now you want to go back in and stay there and live there and see what the land has to offer. You do not fear condemnation from “out there” anymore, but actual relief that you don’t have to go “out there” anymore. You come to realize that it is much more enjoyable and fulfilling to find out who you are by searching within (though it may be a lot of hard work and scary) rather than being taken by the chaotic whirlwind of the world outside and possibly never finding yourself.

Then there is boredom. Some say that they get bored if they stay within the walls. But, I have found, that you only get bored when you only traverse the surface and not dig deeper to investigate the true you and the true intimacy which come by doing so. For example, if I live on a homestead, I may have traversed the land a thousand times. I know where my boundaries of the land are but I chose to stay on my land because of its beauty. However, after a thousand times of traversing and researching the surface of the land, I begin to get bored. I want to see new lands. Yet I have not done the hard work in finding out what soils are on my land that will benefit myself and others. I have not noticed underground reservoirs and natural springs. I have not noticed beautiful species of wildlife and plant life specific to my land. I have not looked for hidden passageways that lead to beautiful treasures. I have always thought that the mountain range was my boundary and never bothered to climb the mountains. If I had climbed the mountain I would have notice a beautiful lake on the other side that was still within my boundaries of the land.

Does all this sound boring? The thing is that most of us only traverse the surface of who we are and what we can do. But if we don’t worry about what’s out there, we can focus on investigating the deeper regions and broader expanses of ourselves without going outside our own healthy boundaries.

And what is “healthy boundaries”? Well, the walls of fear that I was speaking of earlier are like laws that jail us in. If we accept God’s grace, we know that if we journey “out there” we will come to know that it is not good to sin but from grace we are free from remaining in the guilt and shame that comes from sin. We have a “sin amnesty” where we can always come back. Once we come back, we have faith that those boundaries still exist, but instead of laws that keep us in, they are now boundaries that protect us from outside. The same laws that enslaved us are now boundaries (like in territories or states) that we can go through but our wisdom tells us that it is not a good idea.

Now we have Christ and the Holy Spirit within us. When we get close to these boundaries, we start feeling stressed and our conscience tells us to move away. You see, wisdom through experience shows us the boundaries but we still are always looking at the fence line and over the fence because we fear the outside. But when we have faith, we come to realize that our conscience is being fed by the Holy Spirit and that we can rely on our mind’s conscience and our

heart's stressful feelings to tell us when we are getting close to the fence line. What this does is give us peace of mind. No longer are we focusing on the fence line or what's over the fence, but we get to solely focus on our land within the fence line as we trust in the Spirit that He will keep us within the fence line (boundaries). We do not fear the outside because the fence line that the Lord set up for us so we may enjoy life within it is the same fence line that the Lord set up for us to keep the immoral and depraved out.

Focus on your own land and trust that the Lord will provide you everything you need. If there is something "out there" you require, do not go searching for it but trust that God will extract it and provide it to you. For instance, money is a good example. Those beyond the fence line worship money. Money in itself is not evil but the perception of what money can do can lead people to do evil things. This perception is rampant "out there". So then, if you require money as God sees it (because truly only God knows what you truly require), then money will come to you. It is not good to go searching for money but to stay true to yourself trusting that, if you do so, the amount of money truly required will come.

I personally was asked to temporarily manage a project within a program that was outside of my peaceful job. I accepted for the good of the company and what I realized was that the program was in a chaotic state. I am a type of person that my mind runs wild to organize things and the less structure (boundaries) there are, the more rampant my mind runs to organize it in the shortest time possible. So I limited myself to the project (which was not organized either) and in a very short time, through God, I had it very organized but I ran myself rampant during this short time. I was stressed and I couldn't sleep well. I then told the President of the firm that I could not continue to manage the project further than the temporary time I promised and certainly could not entertain offers to manage further into the program. He understood, but the manager of the program and others (after I was offered a promotion within the program) could not understand how I could turn down more money and a higher position in the company. I received threats, coercion, blackmail, manipulated ultimatums and other forms of abuse by the manager of the program and other managers as well. But I stood my ground and am happier for it.

I am now back in my peaceful, structured yet flexible job enjoying life. I realized where the fence line was and by going over the fence, God granted me His grace to be able to get back to the peaceful land He gave me as an inheritance. I didn't truly know what I had until I nearly lost it. But that is God and that is grace. We learn our lessons from being "out there" and God's grace brings us back. One of the fortunate things that came from this, other than this wisdom, is that through my integrity and devotion that comes from our [the Spirit and me] loving companionship, God lead me to new people in the program and they were impacted by His wisdom. This is why there seems to always come opportunities to impact others even if sometimes you find yourself on the other side of the fence. And sometimes I think that if someone is truly a disciple of God, they are temporarily sent to the other side to bring back one of His lost children.

The thing is to be always true to God wherever you are, even under immense opposition. And enjoy life to the fullest and have fun while you are in the comfort of your own land. And when you are sent to retrieve another, do it diligently and efficiently. Focus on getting the job done and always grab the opportunities that God sends you on His mission. He will supply you the

opportunities to get the job done very well and very efficiently in the exact time you require them. Remember your job is to focus on what needs to be done with the skills He has already supplied you; trust God that He will place before you all else you need to get the job done at the exact time in the exact place along the way. Do not wallow and do not worry—get in, go to it, grab His opportunities (favor, help, aid, support) along the way, get the goods, and get out! They won't know what hit 'em. It is like in the movie, "Last of the Mohicans" when the runner had to trust Hawkeye and his friends at the fort while running through a band of opposition.

It is like the Sun. You live within the Son, at the center and full of light and at peace there. And when it is time to travel from home in one of the Son's shining rays, travel within it. His ray is swift, directly focused, emanating from the greatest source of power, going through the great expanse of darkness, and yet hitting its target every time providing it powerful and beautiful Son-light. You have been given the opportunity, you know its window from Son-up to Son-set. Follow God wherever He is and wherever He goes, staying in the light. When your time is done, it is done. Don't lose sight of the Son. Do not be one who finds himself waiting in the dark for the Son to come up the next day to get back into the light. Like I said, "Do not wallow and do not worry—get in, get it, and get out!"

To speak more plainly, come to know who you are. Do not give the treasures you find within yourself just "willy-nilly" to the world. Always be able to return to yourself because yourself is where you will find all the virtues of God Himself, all the intimacy, all the freedom, and all the peace. If you must venture into the world, do so with a focused mind and a straight path. Know who you are and do not lose sight of it—do not lose sight of the River.

Therefore, in everything, establish guidelines or boundaries along the lines of virtue and righteousness. And the land we live in, leave everything to faith. Watch for the opportunities and have fun going with them. Be one with the land rather than digging it up piece by piece trying to control and measure everything in it. Because before you know it, there will be no more land to enjoy. Only when you have realized this will you start appreciating what you had and begin taking the steps in healing and restoring it. For each harbor you come to is another piece of land—another piece of you.

205. In Your Pursuit of Reasons Why

In your pursuit of reasons why, may you come across the path that is God's...

From this **knowledge**, may you believe that you are good in the eyes of your Father and that He loves you unconditionally. And from this **belief**, may you find **hope** that He will guide you beautifully to a place of peace and comfort. And from this hope, may you find **faith** in Him and commit to discover the Land He has given you in the way He has made you. And from this faith, may you persevere through trial and error between successes and failures and between joy and suffering. May you climb each mountain and swim each stream and enjoy the sunsets and bright days ahead. And from this **perseverance**, may you acquire the **wisdom** that He knows all that you need and all who you are far greater than yourself. Not to worry and that whatever you need will be handed to you. And from this wisdom, may you have a new found **humility** that your Perfect Father still loves you, His imperfect child, so much and so unconditionally that you can

now call this land home. And from this humility, may you then come to **love** Him for the love He has for you. And from this love, may you then surrender to Him and be devoted to Him and His way for you to know a most beautiful life you have now and the most beautiful life ahead. And from this **devotion**, may you find a wonderful and intimate relationship with your Father as He shows you all that is beautiful in His world. May you cultivate and enrich your inheritance, your homeland, anticipating His visits. And from this **intimacy**, may you then truly feel **grace** and be totally absolved in your heart and soul by your Father in Heaven. And from this grace, may you feel free to walk in absolute faith with Him who lives in you and with you and around you and be truly confident and courageous in the righteousness that is His. May you come to rely on the Spirit within you to keep you safe and happy. And from this **freedom**, may you find **peace** where He and you are in a pure and most genuine state of love and happiness together with the Son on your face and a smile in your heart.

*And once in heaven,
will you find eternal joy in His presence
forever and ever.*

206. Time to Enjoy Life or Trusting That You've Searched Enough

In the land that you've inherited, you know through great faith that your boundaries are intact. You've dug and searched in great depth what make you tick. The time has come to enjoy the land. You've traveled over it a thousand times. You've journeyed and explored the land. You've gained enough knowledge. You know it very well now, inside (in depth) and out. No more books needed, no more soul searching needed, no more this and no more that. No more needing others as your sign of inspiration. So what is left?

What is left is living in peace. All your life you have made the effort in exploring. You have made the effort in searching. You have made the effort in jumping the fence and putting yourself "out" there. You, you, you, you, you. You know all now, don't you? No, you don't. You know only a fragment of what you think you know. I can travel the land again and again and what comes up each time is an accumulation of my past memories of the exact same land.

Want to enjoy life? Now is the time to stop searching because all your searching brought you to one conclusion—you were okay to begin with. Your morals were intact. Your faith was intact. You were intact. You were always loved for just being you. You just were never conscious of it. Now is the time that you trust those gifts you found that came from God. Now is the time you trust that searching will only result in the same conclusion over and over again. Now is the time that you anticipate life. Now is the time you enjoy your land and breathe the air above it and enjoy watching the sky as it changes it.

Why do this? Do this because as you concern yourself with cultivating the land you've inherited in life and in work and in play, God delivers to you new ways of using your given gifts to do His work. You don't have to search for them. Concentrate on enjoying your life and enriching it by adding intimacy and warmth onto it. Continue to do the quaint job God has given you and the quaint life He has formed for you. He will deliver to you a new day, and new formation of sky, a

new climate for the land to which you will say, “I’ve never seen this land in this kind of light before.” He will then ask you to gaze upon it and see the incredible beauty in it and then live it. And He will then at times offer you a new task that will utilize your gracious gift.

You have a new land. You have a new life. Enjoy loving it. Sooner or later God will come and say, “My child, I have a mission for you that fits you perfectly. Come gather your things and follow me to another area in your land. Where you are and what you are doing will keep. Come and do this because your gift I gave you will deliver it beautifully for me. And then when you are done doing it, go back home to your house because that is where you belong and be peaceful and live it and grow old with it, with Me.”

And if others say, “Stop that! Do this and do that and do it now or then or later or whatever!” You just say, “I’m sorry but that’s just not who I am.” Don’t get crazy or uncouth. Just simply tell them that, “That’s not who I am.” And go about your own business.

207. The End of Knowledge and The Time to Believe

The Lord God has given me the Holy Spirit who has guided me through the harbors along the River. He has taken me along to show me what must come. In my time of true knowledge and understanding, I walked with him like a baby clinging to his mother. But now the time has come to truly trust that, as I walk, he walks with me. It is time to truly trust that God will not fail me. It is truly time to be my own man and know that my leadership is part of His righteousness. It is time to believe all that I have been trained on. It is time to begin my walk with God. It is time to walk and thus then be committed to him who is inside me. I have walked by the law, by the Bible, by the training and the teaching. But now it is time. I have crossed that line, rounded that curve, and found a true dedication—a true cause. My step into the real world will be sure and I will face that which will come up to me. I have God and I will always have God. I am His man. And I am a HAPPY MAN. I am an engine, I am an insistent truths-man. I am a lover of light and a kinsman in the Redeemer, of the Redeemer, and by the Redeemer. I am a man who lights the way for others and a man who gathers the longing.

208. Leaving You “So-called” Christians

I am fed up with all you Christians who say you love Christ. I am fed up with all you people who go to church because you are afraid not to. I am fed up with all you fake happy people who put on a mask to hide all your sicknesses to only tell us how to live. I have yet seen a Christian live up to the graces of Christ. What I see in Christianity all over is laws and pretense and sickening forms of pompous happiness. But I do not see real people coming out with real problems. I see people running around pretending they are happy or they are full of grace. You are full of nothing. Why don’t you just come out and admit it? You may then come to know the true Christ, but how scared all of you really are.

You “so-called” Christians! Better to leave now and save yourselves then pretend for the sake of others. God knows your real hearts. How long are you going to hide behind Him? How long are you going to continue to convince yourselves how saved you are? One day God is going to say, “Ok, its time to let you go and do what you claim you’ve learned all these years. I’m

sending you out in the trenches to relate to the real people. I want you to be a real person just like them. I got your back. Stop holding on to my coat tails. Cross the street yourself. If you die, I'll see you here in heaven. But, my goodness, live a life will you? I didn't create you to be smothered to death by me. Be free. Go be free. You are no longer a baby. Go, I release you. Go."

On that day, will you be able to go? Because I tell you, if on that day you cannot go, you will have lied to God, to me, and to yourself all those years you said you were learning. You learned nothing but to place Him in front of you. You scared thing! Admit it! Admit that you are just a scared little boy or girl! Admit it and maybe you'll start living a life of love and a life of living.

209. Afraid of Freedom (Separation Anxiety)

When God said to me that I have graduated from His Temple, I was scared. We all know that we still gain knowledge all our years, but it was as if I was going out into the real world now—though this time I am going with true skills, wisdom, and true power.

He says to enjoy the life He now gives me. But what I am going through is separation anxiety. I am not separate from the Holy Spirit, but I am no longer holding on to God's hand in fear of getting hurt.

See, we never really grow up. We are the same now as when we were four or five or eleven. But in our adulthood, we can be free. We have that choice. So that same fear of abandonment in my childhood cropped up when God said to "go and He will visit me personally from time to time." How can I trust that God will be there if I need Him? How can I trust that He will still accept me when I visit Him or that He will come visit me simply because He loves me?

His Spirit and I are companions. And this is how I know I can trust Him because I fully know and feel His Spirit within me. This is what will propel me to leave home and build my own new home full of love, life, and intimacy.

And so it is time to leave the laws and religious rule and the world's fear behind. It is now my time for life and love. It is now time to become free.

This I do know though. If God says to now go out on my own, then no matter what mistakes I make, every one of them is under grace and now forgiven. How else can God say go? If He is not there to hold my hand, then grace is there to absolve my foul-ups. If God was right their holding my hand, I would not need grace because I have Him as instantaneous grace and discipline. But because all I can do now is live by faith, grace and I must go hand-in-hand. If I am to live in faith and be free to live my own life as well, then grace must be the one thing that holds it all together. And this is what I have been studying for all these past years.

I get scared to be alone without Him. But this time I know I have a Father I can trust. God replaces my natural father, my natural mother, and all those others who claimed to have loved me but never truly showed it.

So, I thought all the time. I dreamed all the time. I did things all the time to avoid my fear of abandonment. Some say I have obsessive/compulsive tendencies and some say even a disorder. But is it OCD or is it really just avoidance, which I believe is truly 90% of all reasons for mental illness? But now I can trust and I will begin living in that faith and committing to it. I realize that focusing on the path is the only way to freedom. I will begin to commit to the freedom God says I really do have. I will begin resting and enjoying life instead of doing everything just to avoid this fear of once again being abandoned. This is why God gave us grace and this is why God gave to us the Holy Spirit. I am now proof that Christ's way is the way.

Feel free to leave when it is time to leave and let grace hold your hand within your heart.

210. Grace and Perfection and Permission

When it comes to perfection, God will never be as hard on you as you are on yourself. Therefore, you should never be as hard on others as they are on themselves. Do you have a guilty conscience? To whom or what are you enslaved by? Who do you need permission first from to be free from other people and other things? It is God. And how can you truly realize God is giving you permission without connecting with the Holy Spirit within you? God's power exceeds all other power. If you connect with the Holy Spirit, you'll understand exactly this. God exceeds all guilt and shame, all hurt and anger.

211. Take Stock in Your Life

Take stock of and in your life. Don't let others own any portion of your stock. Just like partnership in business should be avoided, do not be partners with anyone in you as your own business. One must remember that showing up is the first step of belief. Show up and be counted!

212. Free the Slaves

Did you really think that God was going to sit idly by while His Children were enslaved? Have you learned nothing from history? The Black American was certain to be freed from unholy Christians. What about women, what about all who appear minorities. If it is sin that you detest, what God hates more than sin is having His Children enslaved. So much that a black woman has some of the greatest power of righteousness on earth.

213. Let Not the Church be Exploited

In MT 18:15-17, we find that if a person will not listen to the Church, you should treat him like a pagan. This means to give him over to the government authorities and their justice system. Possibly he will want to listen afterwards. Do not sanctuary a person who knows he did wrong but exploits the Church to prevent himself from admitting his guilt and doing the hard work in the healing journey.

214. Needs

Stay true to God and stay on the path. Eventually your true gift will shine brighter and brighter until those off the path see you. Those who need what you have will come to you by God because of your authenticity, and those who need it more will come quicker. The disciples dropped their nets immediately to follow Christ. They obviously needed Christ and what He had to offer desperately. The thing was that Christ knew that they were ready to go. And this was the difference. Like Christ says, “Don’t offer your pearls to pigs.”

215. Accepting and Testing Freedom

Someone can say you are free but you really don’t know if you are truly free until you accept their offer. Test virtue wherever you go.

With God, true freedom, like all virtues, is a permanent thing that will be there month after month and will not go away (Rev 22:2). But within a nation like America, secular freedom is a temporary thing unless continuously used and accepted by its citizens. Test America in its declaration of freedoms. If it is the freedom of speech, speak. But speak in virtue—a healthy rebellion that entails forgiveness and compassion. You cannot test true freedom out of anger and reap its rewards. Do not be afraid. Test your nation on its virtues.

True freedom means giving each person the right to choose to stay in the good or resort to the bad. Forcing them to stay, whether because you think you are protecting them or you fear giving them permission to go the other way, rescinds grace and brings back fear and guilt. And a person cannot get to freedom without first finding grace.

Realize that if you truly knew what freedom is, you’d be using it more freely.

216. Freedom and The Christian

What is freedom to the secular community and freedom to the Christian? The secular depends on laws for their freedom, but the Christian depends on faith via the Holy Spirit for his. So then, why do the majority of Christians appear to choose the secular way?

We understand that true freedom will not come until grace is first granted. How can I not forgive my neighbor so to give him his freedom and, at the same time, demand my own freedom? If I will not forgive first, I will not be forgiven. I remain enslaved by the law myself, but am worse because I believe but will not accept Christ in my heart. Christ did not come to condemn, he came to forgive. But you condemn while still demanding to be free. That is of the world, that is secular.

Today, a vote is upon us for same sex marriage. And though we do not condone this, can we forgive so that those who advocate it will have a choice to obey God or not? But by keeping it a law, you keep them from their own free will and worse than that. Worse than that is, because they can only but to continue to break this law, you keep them in shame. Provide them the freedom to choose instead of enslaving them.

Jesus Christ came to destroy the laws of oppression and suppression so that we can enjoy the freedom through His grace and not wallow in shame. You invent and maintain these laws as if you are above it all. But hypocrites you are, one and all, who condemn because of the law yet you are above the law. The Judge will judge. Who are you to judge others by inserting a law rather than freeing others and having faith in God and His Work.

Then, again, you say it's too much like giving them permission to sin. Only arrogance and not humility would ever give itself the power to give anyone permission or see himself as a permission-giver in the eyes of others. How self-absorbed such thinking is.

Realize that the freedom you give others today will begin the healing of tomorrow. If you must judge other's sins, then I tell you that the one thing God hates more than sin is His Children imprisoned—even because of self-righteous people.

Free others as God has freed you! By refusing others their freedom, you condemn yourselves. What goes around will indeed come back around, especially by those and their lineage you have condemned in and from your own minds.

217. Absolution

“Love keeps no records of wrongs.”

Does God care about you sinning? Does He condemn you for it? By no means does God condemn you for it. You are forgiven. That is what you must understand. You grow in understanding and grow as a whole person. If you sin along the way, it is more like wastefulness than anything. When will you come back around once you've realized it is getting you nowhere. Then God and you start up again where you left off like the sin had been forgotten totally, never to return again. God wants you to focus on the growing not the sin. That is known as true absolution. He absolves you. This is why when you focus on righteousness, the wastefulness that happens along the way does not need to be wallowed and worried upon. The shame and guilt manifests itself. That is not overcoming the world—that is the world.

If you have small children, you'll understand. But a grown-up is not a child—only to God. No man or woman should ever see a grown-up as their child. Act like a child—yes they may—but children they are not. Christian parents cannot help but extend grace to their small children because they love them so unconditionally. To not extend grace would be to corrupt them. You want nothing in them or for them that is not pure. This is why you let them do—even if it is wasteful or not wise—and absolve them. If not, we enable sin to remain in them and that is not an option for us. Remember that love keeps no records of wrongs. And so this is as God is with us.

218. I Am Here For You

I am your Father in heaven and I am not willing that you be lost from me. Tell me what hurts and we will go through it together. Rely on me to rescue you from your suffering. Welcome those I give to you to help you. And when you are ready, seek my son to heal you. He is the

light of the world. Whoever follows him will never walk in darkness, but will have the light of life. Do not be afraid. He holds the keys. Because of him, I will give you my spirit so you will know me and feel me in you. I will teach you all that is true and all that is good. And you will know that there is nothing you ever did or will ever do that will make Me stop loving you. My spirit is my gift of unconditional love to you. Believe in him and he will give you hope. Walk with him and he will help you persevere. Learn from him and he will reveal who you truly are. Give yourself over to him and he will show you where you belong. Praise him and he will set you free. Adore him and he will be your peace forever. I am here for you, my child. I am not willing to lose you.

219. The Revelatory Healing Power of Jesus Christ

Why is the Faith of Jesus Christ the faith you need?

Three main reasons why people fear exposing their guilt and hurt and shame and anger are:

1. They believe they don't have an identity; they feel they have no worth or substance to themselves.
2. They believe they do not have a purpose or meaning to their existence; they feel they don't belong and have nothing to offer.
3. They believe there is no one to support and love them; they feel abandoned and not deserved or justified to be supported and loved.

It just so happens that the Faith of Jesus Christ is based on three unique principles: The Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. If we think about it, we find that this unique combination takes care of all the three main reasons why people hurt.

Your True Father, our God in Heaven, created you. You were made in His image. By getting to know your Father, you come to understand who you are. Your True Father takes care of your worth.

God sent us His Son to show us the way to true happiness. By following the way of Jesus Christ, we come to understand our meaning in life and our purpose in helping others and ourselves. Jesus takes care of your purpose and meaning.

From above, you now know that God has not abandoned you. But God has gone one step further for you. He doesn't just want you to know He is there; He wants you to feel He is there with you. This is why through His Son, God gave you the gift of the Holy Spirit to feel His inspiration and connection to you and you to Him. He wants you to accept His gift freely because He loves you and He wants you to feel His unconditional love for you. He wants you to know that there is nothing you could do that will make Him stop loving you. The Holy Spirit simultaneously takes care of your senses of abandonment and unjustifiable love.

People can be very hard on us sometimes. But it is we who are the hardest on ourselves. When it comes to perfection, did you know that God will never be as hard on you as you are on yourself? God doesn't need you to be perfect; He needs you to be human. But He does want you to be happy and that means you have to do the hard work in getting rid of that guilt and hurt

and shame and anger inside you. Many people won't understand what you are about to embark on, but there is a real difference between angry rebellion and healthy rebellion. (JN 15, 16) Angry rebellion is all about those three reasons we talked about in the beginning. Healthy rebellion is about finding your identity but with a forgiving and compassionate heart. Healthy rebellion is the only way to have true freedom and peace in our lives.

What do you need so that you will be free from the guilt and hurt and shame and anger inside you? If you have a guilty conscience, which most of us have, you are under the power of someone or something. Therefore, you need permission to move on in your life. You need to feel like you have permission from whomever or whatever you believe is controlling you. The thing is that you will always feel as if you are being controlled by someone or something unless you have God's permission to move on first. This is done through Grace.

By understanding God as the final authority and greatest power, you need no other person's permission once you have His. This is what He wants to do for you. He wants to empower you to live freely and peacefully. He'll take you and show you how to do this and you'll find more confidence and fulfillment by His Spirit who will live inside you. And then He'll let you go and find your own way with what He has instilled in you. You'll learn how to live by faith and grace instead of by fear and guilt. You'll also have structure in your life and the Holy Spirit will help you understand how to live healthily within that structure. He'll help you live within your own boundaries of a truly happy and peaceful life.

The greatest question people ask is, "How do I find peace and happiness?" Would you ever have thought in the Book of Revelation? Most people think that the Book of Revelation is a book about doom and gloom. But really the Book of Revelation is the Holy Spirit, through the Apostle John, showing us how to heal. Let's take a look at this Book of healing through faith.

People are so afraid of what will become of them if they admit their guilt and hurt and shame and anger. But God wants you to admit it. God wants you to know that Christ holds the keys to you finding a happier life. Because He holds the keys, the guilt and shame won't overpower you. Matthew 18:10-14 tells us that "your Father in heaven is not willing that any of [you] be lost". So He sent us His Son. "I am the light of the world. Whoever follows me will never walk in darkness, but will have the light of life. Do not be afraid. I am the First and the Last. I am the Living One; I was dead, and behold, I am alive forever and ever! And I hold the keys of death and Hades." (Rev 1:1-20, JN 8:12)

From Revelation, God gives us our first seven steps to finding an intimate relationship with Him:

1. We have been given permission by God to believe that each of us is a good person who is truly trying to be happy but just doesn't know how. We are using artificial means to comfort us in avoiding our pain and suffering until we are ready to be shown. The first step is to expose or admit to God, others, and ourselves our guilt, hurt, shame, and anger. (Rev 2:1-7)
8. We need to then go through detoxification with Him from our harmful desires and dependencies (Rev 2:8-11)
9. We need to come to believe that God, who is pure love, is with us and begin separating from people and things that do not support us in healing (Rev 2:12-17)

10. We need to ask God to help us with temptations that provoke us to cling to or depend on any new or old harmful people or things that we still believe will ease our pain (Rev 2:18-29)
11. We need to pray to find true caring people and a loving therapist to help us in our healing (Rev 3:1-6)
12. We need to find a comforting place of worship with small healing groups and compassionate lay people and counselors (Rev 3:7-13)
13. We need to choose to learn Christ's way and God's unconditional love for us and begin focusing on Him. (Rev 3:14-22)

When we choose the way of Christ, we enter the Temple of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. It is here that we find the Holy Spirit and God begins to show us all that is true and good. (Rev 4:1-11, Eze 40:4, JN 14:16-20, JN 15:12-14, JN 16:25,33, JN 3:16,21)

We then are shown a path or river to live by. And the Holy Spirit that has been given to us by God through His Son's resurrection becomes our guide along this river (Rev 22, Eze 47:1-12, JN 14:15-31) Along the river, we'll find the harbors of belief, hope, faith, perseverance, wisdom, humility, love, allegiance, intimacy, grace, freedom, and peace. (Rev 22, Eze 47:13-23, JN 3:16) When we focus our life's journey on this river and enter its harbors, we begin to truly heal.

The first six harbors help us overcome our own internal fears. The seventh harbor is our proof. (Rev 5:1 through 13:10) The eighth through tenth harbors help us overcome our fear of a condemning world and the ties that bind us to it. The eleventh harbor is our proof. (Rev 13:11 through 20:6) And, of course, the last thing to overcome is our fear of dying or the unknown. But when we truly believe and know in our hearts that we will actually be with our Father in heaven, that fear will die as well. The twelfth harbor is our proof. (Rev 20:7-15) Then soon we will feel that we've entered Heaven on Earth. (Rev 21, JN 14, Eze 47:8).

This may sound like a long and arduous journey, but each step you take is very fulfilling. The hard work is worth it. You are worth it.

How long does it take? In just a short period of time, you can go a long way in healing. (Rev 22:2).

220. Grace Covers Disobedience

You must accept that people are disobedient. Then you will come to truly love them as you extend to them grace and mercy with your new found compassion for them (Ro 11:32). One must focus on the person rather than on his disobedience. God knows that we are of Him but cannot be just like Him just as we all must accept this fact of our own children. Expectations of perfection slowly kills the soul of a child rather than freeing him for God's purpose. If I do not have grace, then I have nothing because I continue to do for those who could care less about me. Thus, I am slave to man though I do good deeds.

221. The System of Realizing God's Wisdom

The three steps to any relationship must be: 1) Have something to offer, 2) Share that something with others, and 3) Learn from and respect their feedback.

What is the system of healing? God provides us what we need in His Kingdom within us via His Spirit. It is we who must choose to accept all that he provides. If it is hope, then hope. If it is love, then love. If it is grace, then grace. But we cannot stop there. It is not enough that we have a personal relationship with God in our minds and hearts. If it were, we would be useless on earth. We may as well be in heaven. The thing we have within us to offer, we must share with others what we have freely chosen to accept. It is here that we come to understand in our hearts the wisdom of God. By sharing with others, we come to receive back from others in a new found way (i.e. learn from others as well). We then share this new found experience with God via the Holy Spirit and come to understand fuller the wisdom of that virtue. (1Cor 2:6-16) And then God provides us the next thing. And so on. This is how we venture farther into our relationship with our Father.

Every risk (perceived as a good or bad venture) is for revelation (wisdom). Believe in what others want to do rather than protecting yourself from life's messes. For life is a mess and being human is messy. It is only when you understand this can you then continue in the straight path of righteousness by delivering grace upon everyone—concerning yourself less and less of any person's sin and more and more of their own true selves—in their own souls where their spirit of love dwells. For intimacy can only be awarded where there is a connection of at least two—and that two can be you and God within you.

222. Learning Grace from Your Children

Christ says to forgive and you will be forgiven. This is true with all virtues. First we develop our relationship with our Father as we accept what he freely gives us and then we act on it. By acting on it, we ourselves find ourselves having been given permission to accept the same virtue truly in our hearts.

Though I do not have any direct children, my child is my nephew. He is my adopted son and it is he who has captured my heart with the virtues I provide him. The grace I received by God through His Spirit I show my nephew because I love him so. And it is this same extension of grace to him that I have realized that the same grace should have been extended to me when I was growing up—and even today. A question I must ask all of you is, “Do you forgive your one-year old and were you forgiven like that growing up?” Did you and do you feel as if you didn't deserve that much forgiveness? But now you know you did and still do deserve it. It was never your fault that you didn't receive the love and grace from others that God asked and asks them to provide to you automatically. The grace that God has provided all of us is to be accepted by all us freely without vain. But we were not shown it by others who never felt the right to accept it. And that is not our fault but the fault of those who needed to search their souls to gain such grace, so to extend it to their children, but decided against it. Now you know that grace is what belongs in you and not shame.

223. Happiness

Unhappiness is when your life does not meet up with your expectations. Happiness is surrendering yourself over to God's whim while accepting what you currently have. It is here that you find a new journey of anticipation, living freely in ambiguity. When you can truly accept and appreciate what you have and what comes your way, then you will be happy.

224. The Twelve Steps of Christ (From the Mind to the Heart and into the Spirit)

God Initiates the Mind

Believe in one another. It's risky to ask someone to be with you. It can be down right unbelievable when they ask you to be with them. Take a leap of faith and begin something new together. And believe you were meant to be. Begin looking to God for all things. For just as the mind is above your sight, look up to your Father in Heaven. (Baptism)

Hope for one another. It's scary when reality hits and you realize that you've actually stepped into something new and unfamiliar. It's tempting to turn and run. But hold onto each other tight as you both go through it together.

Trust one another. Trust that whatever happens, you'll both be there for each other. Trust that you both are always looking out for each other's best interest. In fact, trust that you both have each other's best interest at heart. Through the test of struggle victorious by the hope you have for one another, you now have discovered each other's integrity—the honesty, the fairness and justification, and the dedication. (Confirmation)

Discipline one another. Discipline is like starting a new puzzle. It locks in a beautiful relationship. You're less frustrated when you first find the edge pieces and then put them all together. The sooner the both of you know what puts the other on edge, the less puzzled you both will be for the rest of your life together. Remember you are each other's disciple.

Understand one another. When the other goes past the edge, understand why instead of trying to put them in their place. Rather than stand over, understand first instead. When you reveal yourselves to each other, both of you will discover the truth of how human you both really are. And you'll find great relief in it. (Eucharist)

Christ Heals the Heart

Respect one another. Respecting someone is an awesome responsibility. It can be the difference between restoring someone or binding them to guilt or shame forever. In other words, it can be the difference between loosing or losing them forever. When someone feels ashamed, help raise their dignity. Forgive to the point of allowing them to stand tall by you choosing to stand down. Forgive each other's trespasses. Lower yourself privately to raise the other publicly. Find the humility necessary to lower yourself to your knees. For just as your heart is below what you can see, so will you fall to your knees in true humility and walk with Christ on earth.

Love one another. Love is showing one another that, "I'll always believe in you. I'll always be there with you through good times and bad. I'll always trust you. I'll always protect you. I'll always listen to you and be kind and gentle; I'll always see you human and never perfect. I'll always respect you and be grateful that you're in my life. And I'll always forgive you." When you give the other your heart, you also give him or her a loving home to go to forever. For Love heals all wounds. Love is belief from the heart and a heart's hope for a healed and joyful soul. (Anointing of the Sick)

Accept one another. When you can accept each other as you are, you find the patience within to stay together forever. What you saw early on is quite different than what was intended for both of you now. You see clearly who you're sharing your life with. You acknowledge your own weaknesses as belonging to you. There is a lot in the lot of you.

Accept one another and begin unlocking the secret to being content. For acceptance is trust from the heart in the justification of another.

Obey one another. When you both love each other, you wind up doing what the other asks even if you don't recognize the importance of it to him or her. Serve each other with devotion and show how important he or she really is to you. Obedience of the heart is not perfection of the person but sacrifice in lieu of their imperfections. Obedience to the other lets you get close to the heart and to the truth of whether the heart is truly involved or not. It helps you recognize a hurt soul and takes you past the hurting soul and into the true goodness of the other. For grace takes care of that which emanates from a hurt soul, but one must be sure of the presence of a connection with the Spirit before continuing on. For the next step is independence from the world and the start of a sole dependence on God. Obedience is discipline from heart.

The Spirit Communes the Soul

Be Intimate with one another. When the heart is true and the spirit is free, intimacy can be obtained. If you were not free as Christ says, you could go no further and never reach this knowing before you now. When you begin to know each other intimately, you engage one another in a whole new light. You focus on each other's idiosyncrasies and nuances and what they're all about because these are what truly make each of you who you are. You start picking up on the other's subtle hints because sometimes just a glance can melt both your hearts. Intimacy is when each of you allows the other to enter into the deepest recesses of your hearts. You understand their hidden secrets and their sufferings. You become so incredibly passionate and compassionate of one another that all you want is for the other to be happy. You're so passionate about the happiness of one another that you want each other's sufferings to be your own. You share your most intimate details and leave nothing out and start mating your hearts forever. Knowing is the understanding from the soul. (Reconciliation)

Free one another. Surrender is when you accept the fact that no one else on earth will ever know you better than the other. Surrender is when you give up trying to show everyone who you are. It is when you die to the world and the delusion of grandeur (to be greater than who you are now in the world) seen through the eyes of the world. Instead, you mind and heart take orders from He who is in you. So, surrender means that if people do not know (understand) you, then they do not understand He who lives in you either. For "I am in Him and He is in me" means I am intimate with you. And I have nothing more to prove to you and you have nothing more to prove to me. We're good. I do not fear judgment for my conscience is clear and, therefore, I need not judge. I only do what I am told to do with the deepest love. Freedom is reverence from the soul. (Holy Orders)

Complete one another. When both of you love each other so much that you can't imagine being apart, your souls are in permanent communion with one another and you live as one. You find peace and absolute grace in your love and in each other. And even death cannot separate you because you both dwell in the same place in joy and peace forever. Unity is love from the soul. (Matrimony)

225. Life's A Mess

Life is a mess and grace cuts right through it to the soul. Grace takes care of the chaos and perceived sins of humanity. The key is to focus on what's inside. Grace takes care of the pretense surrounding what everyone does to try to conceal the real (true) them. The job of people and the job of grace do not mix. Pity stems from one's preoccupation with sins of mankind. Grace stems from one's preoccupation with the true person, leaving their sinful pretense to God himself. Man who concerns himself with sin is a hypocrite. Man who concerns himself with grace becomes a better person and becomes the epitome of empathetic grace. For it is the greatest who can see God in others even when they cannot see Him in themselves.

The road narrows further and further as one finds the love of his life to be devoted to. He loves those as he loves himself. Let me explain:

Freedom is the ability of a person to focus on the true internal beauty of another while surrendering distraction (all else surrounding this beauty) to grace. All that surrounds this beauty is pretense in the form of defense mechanisms. All sin is given over to grace. One who focuses on another's sin is not focusing on God and has lost his own way. But one who surrenders all sins of others over to grace continues on the right path to true beauty and is able to one day reach the soul of another. So then, isn't this the same with ourselves. One will not reach his or her own true beauty that is his or her own soul if he or she will not surrender all his past, present, and future sins over to the grace of God. Not so much by confession to another, but automatically by the crucifixion of Christ. For God wants us not to concern ourselves with sin because Christ has conquered sin. Instead He wants us to keep our eye on the ball—focused upon the beauty that is Him within our own now revived souls through the Spirit. For what we asked of the Spirit to come and cleanse our souls so does he then reveal the spirit within us that we had kept hidden. For our spirit is borne of the Holy Spirit so then we can say in the same breath that we were borne of our Father in Heaven. And what is that spirit but pure love. So then, if we can forgive in grace, we can become grace, and then we can become completed in pure love known as intimacy in the end. For intimacy is where we belong because it is our place of belonging that we've longed for so long.

If one does not have true faith in Christ, one will not allow grace to perform its job solely by itself—which is what it is supposed to do. Our job is to forgive everyone of their defenses that they put up to protect them from their spirit of pure love. Protection, indeed, because the greatest perceived weakness of a human being is the showing of true and utter compassion in pure love toward others and of himself. But as God is Love, we who know better know that the greatest strength is pure love. Yes, our job is to forgive others and ourselves in all our humanity by leaving it all to the grace of God as we dig deeper and focus on the truth of why people do what they do. A man who focuses to forgive that which he labels as “sin” is a man who does not live in grace, but is one who remains in sin. He has shown his own ignorance by showing all that he has indeed identified the same sin in himself. That is why he judges in haste and anger because he cannot stand himself in the same sin. The saying is true that the person who points his finger at another has his three other fingers pointed back at him.

If we enter life realizing the mess and chaos and that everyone (every human) is a part of the mess and chaos, we can leave the mess and chaos to the grace of Christ as we focus in one's underlying truth. The “world” is one's defenses that he uses to conceal his deep underlying truth—that great “weakness” of all—which is pure love. If we leave the “world” to the grace of God, then we become that grace that frees up the shame of others within and unleashes their spirit. One cannot overcome the world if one does not surrender it over to God and leave it in His most capable hands. No, one cannot overcome the world unless he surrenders his flesh-driven humanity over to the crucifixion and refocus so to continue in a direct and steadfast path right on to one's own true soul where his spirit (wellspring) of love lives.

Sin should not concern man, only truth. One who says he loves God but concerns himself with sin does not know true love and, therefore, does not truly and fully know God. One who concerns himself with his sins or the sins of others in judgment is a hypocrite trying to fix himself and others, and is his own defense mechanism that he chooses to protect himself against

carrying his own self into his soul and the soul of another where true and deeply rewarding intimacy is obtained. For if one has love and not intimacy, he has not a complete love.

226. Giving the “Benefit of the Doubt”

To those we have a hard time forgiving, especially in times we do not know them and time eludes us in getting to truly know them and why they do what they do, give them the benefit of the doubt. Search your own heart for a scenario to which they did what they did. Though you don’t know them, they are human just like you. Search your heart for a scenario that touches you and apply it to them. Though you don’t know them, one heartfelt scenario will allow you to forgive them instead of continuing to judge them in your head. And in turn, you will feel better about yourself, which is a sure indication that God forgives you too.

227. God is in Everything and in Everybody

The believer grows through three stages of maturity with God—first in connection with the mind (conscience), then the heart, and then the soul. One is apart from God when one sees another as simply an object to do with at will. This is known as an unbeliever—one without a conscience. God is in everything and everybody, but refusing to connect with Him who is in you keeps you disconnected from Him.

When one enters another’s house, he is entering his soul in the physical form. For someone to invite us in to their soul is a humbling experience—one that evokes thankfulness. And so is with every environment we approach. The grass in the park, the grain in the field, the couch in the room, the person in the house, the soul in the person. When one opens itself to you, you are seen as a blessing to them. Because everything is temporary and visits are fleeting, make the most of time you are there. Strive for intimacy everywhere you are welcome, and if possible, strive to set another free from their woes in the time you have. Then you will live on in them and everyone they touch because of you and everyone everyone else touches because of you—on and on forever.

For to wherever you go, that which you find there is a welcoming sight. What you do in the time you are there is up to you. And so . . .

SUCCESS

Dream of it. Dream it and go for it— for there’s God in everything and everybody.

Pray for it.

Patiently pursue it.

When you find it, ask it if you can get to know it.

Thank it for welcoming you in.

Get to truly know it. Get at the root of it, cultivate it, and watch it blossom— for where there's love, there's God. And everything has love within it at the root yearning to produce.

Allow yourself to feel for it.

Accept it with all your heart.

Devote yourself to it.

Connect with it where it is.

Set it free. Set it free— for success is delivering onto others a successor of the love you deliver today. The love you give away today will be the same love you'll be a part of tomorrow

And be a part of it forever.

228. God's Favor (God Clears the Way) for Those Who Follow (And the Meek Shall Inherit the Earth)

The most fundamental sin is to doubt God. Doubting God is the beginning of waywardness. Obeying (being faithful or devoted to) God is the basis of favor. For those who seek Him, He clears their paths with His mercy. And, therefore, we have nothing more to fear (refer to 1JN 21-24 and 1JN 4:7-21). One's ignorance on how to follow God and in what to obey is sanctified through God's mercy. For a willing heart in one's love for God leads to God's mercy. His mercy can be in the form of those who say "no" to your requests. It can be in the form of angels who guide you back to the path. Mercy takes on many forms. And it is for those who are devoted from deep within, even though their minds may confuse themselves from time to time, that God's grace is abundant.

A person who shuns God does not realize that God uses that person in the development of God's children who are obedient. Those with great egos whose hearts are hardened and believe that they control their own destiny are the same ones who God makes as footstools for those who follow Him. One may say that it is not right to "use" people. But God "uses" people all the time. No, He does not abuse or exploit people, but He uses those who shun Him for such purposes as to advance those who do follow Him in getting closer to Him. We may have compassion for everyone because we see with our hearts and souls and not just our minds. But we must understand that those who rather not feel and those who shun God are made footstools for those who do follow Him. For if you are not for me, you are against me. And I will use (manipulate meaning move) you in whatever way I see fit.

For nothing and no opportunity is wasted for the betterment of God and advancement of His faithful children. All are useful by the intimacy of friends or from the egos of enemies. So do we use (exploit) others for our own gain? No. But we extract what is hidden so to make useful.

Others are used by God for us in our gain toward Him and then, of course, for His gain as we continue towards completion (self-realization) in Him and Him in us. Though we would like to become friends, we (in humility) use the alms that others throw at us to advance ourselves. For if others do not provide us relationship, we will gladly absorb their technical expertise and move on so that we may use more of what we know to better mankind. We are the ambassadors of goodwill which means we may have to extract from the will of others what they will not use to better the common good. We do not go in with false intentions in becoming friends and peacemakers, but we will go away with all we can get—either love and intimacy, technical expertise, but hopefully a friend. Those who see the meek as footstools to them become footstools themselves to those that are meek. For the meek are wise, as well as patient. And the wise use greater knowledge to become even wiser in silence when within the den of wolves. And so, the meek shall inherit the earth.

God has a purpose for each one of us and He opens the doors toward that purpose. As we graduate to the next level in our closeness with God and His Son, there is the door that opens that no person can shut (refer to Revelation 3:7). For there is seldom that another is permanent in our lives. Most are temporary as we continue through our harbors in life. Some are friends and some are footstools. The choice is theirs. But all are for our own advancement. All are used by God as players in a “play of opportunity” for another. But will the other listen and follow through? For if we devote ourselves to He who is within us, then we will become intimate with Him and then claim our own independence from the world (from those who do not follow God from within). It can only be from our independence that we are then made complete. Yes, for those that follow, we become intimate friends with Him. And by this, God gives us favor by clearing the path in front of us on the way to completion (self-realization) with Him.

It is in this understanding that we must realize that what is said in the Bible about Christ is now also said about us. For we may too sit at the right hand of the Father and our enemies made footstools under us. So then, to those who will not accept us, be devoted to us, and do not intend to empathize with us, do not be surprised if God asks us to accept them, be devoted to them, and empathize with them for a short time in order for us to learn through them and leave them to move on. For our willingness to love our enemies makes us innocent (clears our consciences) in the eyes of the Lord. So, that when it is time to move on past them and their hardened hearts, they are made our footstools. They are then inconsequential to God’s purpose for us. It is for our own good so that we may overcome the world by going through them rather than avoid or run away from them. They are for our benefit served to us by God so that we may become free and independent from the likes of them, even though they believe we are for their benefit in servitude (slavery) to them. For a person that does not set another free does not know love and, thus, does not know God. And in either case, friend or footstool, one does not feel compelled to attack. One you are with, the other you are over and done with. And in either case, independence or freedom (as defined by self-recognition combined with self-tolerance) is the favor given you by God leading you to what is defined as self-realizationism and peace.

229. Jurisdiction and Freedom

From one’s devotion comes the realm of jurisdiction or being a part of something, being adopted into, being given the inheritance to a realm, system, or environment. To what God devotes His

spirit to in and through a person, there is what he shall inherit. If you come to be devoted to your personal family, you shall inherit the jurisdiction of your family. If you come to be devoted to your corporate family, you shall inherit the jurisdiction of your corporate family. And so, God sent His spirit to devote Himself to you, so then shall the spirit inherit the jurisdiction of you. For whoever devotes himself will receive surrender by those he devotes himself to. And to those that come into authority within the jurisdiction, if he is of God, will sacrifice to set others free for the sanctity of peace.

And what jurisdiction? From the depths of its soul to the full capacity of its heart to the extremities of its mind and body. There is no hindrance to how far one can go within the boundaries of one's jurisdiction, except by the authority of Godspace and Godtime. Jurisdiction is "the limits or territory within which authority may be exercised." And so, my friends, if the spirit within inherits jurisdiction of our territory, then who has the right to tell us how to think, how to feel, how to act? There is none of this world but only God Himself through us and within us. And now we begin to realize that in jurisdiction comes freedom.

Freedom is the power given by God to set others free (Acts 1:8). Jurisdiction is also defined as "the power, right, or authority to interpret and apply the law. The authority of a sovereign power to govern or legislate." One must look up the definitions of "power" and "right" to understand this greater. The jurisdiction granted us by God for God is of God just as we are granted to the spirit within us by God for God and of God. We are not our own, but belong to Him.

And to this, if we exercise our role in this jurisdiction given us by God, for God, and of God, we will become masters of this jurisdiction. And so, just as the devil is dead as a source of evil through the death and conquering of Jesus Christ, so the demons are lost, tormented souls looking for places to hide from God. They no longer have any source of power. Now we can see that one without a master will follow anyone who steps up to the plate. And if the spirit has jurisdiction over us, he will free us. To some demons he will flush out and to others he will convert for our own good. And because the ultimate goal of every priest is to set free others so that they may realize their own place in the royal priesthood, the spirit will provide us the power to free others within the jurisdiction God has placed us.

In this time of 2004, we have two people wanting to be President of the United States, but both exercise cowardness. Each chooses to exercise their power to hunt and kill and destroy. But neither will place his own life on the line for peace. Instead, each will use his power to send others to place their own lives on the line for peace. This is because neither knows real freedom. To each evil act is an underlying reason most likely due to hurt. So then it is the duty of those in power to come to understand this reason in order to become peacemakers, not murderers. If each will commit an Executive Order that when he who does evil meets with the President that if any person loyal in their heart to the President takes captive or murders the one who does evil, then the President's life is to be handed over to those under the one who does evil and enslaved or murdered the same, peace can begin. For when they meet, the President must go there with the intention of getting at the truth deep inside of why one does what he does. This is courage, not cowardness. Both, at this time, take it upon themselves to send others to destroy in vengeance. And, by doing so, they will be destroyed. For what one sends out will swoop around to enter in. If one send out demons to do his dirty work then these same demons will do the

work and pick up more demons on the way and swoop back around toward home. We are in the midst of destruction. But if our sole purpose is to liberate, then blessed are the peacemakers.

230. Assimilation

We have come a long way, my son. Because God believed in you, you believed in yourself and showed up ready for the journey ahead of you. And He guided you through hope in the struggle of uncertainty because you hoped He would. You came to see Him and committed yourself in greater clarity asking Him to commit to you. You came under His discipline and realized the difference between right and wrong, good and bad, honest and deception because you sought Him. And you saw how much good and honesty felt compared to bad and deceiving. And by Him and because you followed Him and you came to see that following Him led to no folly, you came to respect yourself. It was then that you desired Him as a permanent companion and found love and self-esteem. You chose to accept yourself, though you are human and vulnerable, because you realized that is how He made you. You chose to pursue who you really are even though you knew you could not be perfect. So, then you devoted yourself because the Relationship became the most important thing of all in your life.

And now, because you devoted yourself to Him, you have found yourself in a place where you belong—even if that which is dead and that which is negative, deceiving, and destructive is around you. Why is it here you belong? Because it is here that you will find yourself in the midst of it. It is here that you will form an alliance within of righteousness, compassion, kindness, encouragement. And it is here that you will mentor others along the journey as God mentored you. It is here that you will cut through the “b.s.” with a knife—the sword of truth. It is here that you know yourself to be adopted by God Himself. It is the City, the New Jerusalem. And in this city, you will form an alliance with those who are good and giving—an alliance known as true family. Let the deadwood remain dead. Let the negative people remain jealous of you and spend all their waking moments strategizing their attack. Keep your own focus on God and you shall inherit the kingdom. And you will be a man who leads among men who follow.

If your aim is true and narrow, your church righteous and steadfast, you will be the center to which all deception revolves. You will be the straight and narrow and the true power among false powers. It is here that you will create your family and lead them free and be the truth of who you really are. For there can be God’s church in everything that God has created. So then, there can be as many churches as there are people because every person lives within some form of God’s creation. And where you are devoted because of God, there you will build God’s church.

And so this is what we deem “assimilation”—to take in and appropriate as nourishment—taking in all who wish to hear who are outside and feeding truth to all within, all for the glory and goal of God.

231. The Art of Deception (Playing Games or Playing the Game)

Plainly said, the winner of “the game” is the one who stops playing it. The Holy Spirit takes you on lessons to be learned through life. These lessons all have one thing in common—to educate you on that which is part of “the game”. “The game” is anything and everything that has to do with deceiving someone from the real truth. These things come in the form of control, manipulation and distraction (focusing attention away from the real culprit). This is the “art of deception” and is played by most everyone. Some are greater masters at it than others. But all who play are losers, e.g., lost or have already lost.

The Holy Spirit’s job is to wise people up to the game so that, eventually, the student will realize it and stop playing it. These are “the games of the world.” They are most greatly abundant in all institutions: family, religion, business. Wising up to this will destroy families, religions, and businesses to the glory of God. In each of these, power and control is exceedingly prevalent to which the people manipulate and abuse one another to buck for the position of idol. When any one person chooses not to play the game anymore, the person is excommunicated and condemned one way or the other by man. And this is how one knows that he is for God. If the excommunicated person wants to go back, it is because he feels guilty and he will never have peace because of it. But it is the righteous who stays away without guilt. For God lives not in the church in the world, nor in the family in the world, nor in the business in the world. God lives in the person. And if the person is excommunicated for his righteousness (even if it is nonconforming to any church, family, or business), he brings God with him. For man’s power and control brings about divisiveness, especially if it appears whole on the outside. All church, but I say especially the Catholic Church, is the church of the devil—for I have yet seen any church member, leader, or person claim to give it up, even to the dissolving of it, for the glory of God himself. And to this, every single church is to the shame of God Almighty. All institutionalized church is prideful, all organized church is egotistical, all man-managed church is degrading to the sight of God. For the church is each and every person and to organize each person underneath the confines and shelter of man is an abomination to God himself. For the Spirit cannot be defined or confined—and every church is absolutely guilty of both at the same time and continually.

I play no games within the places of family, business, or religion. Each person must work very hard at his own righteousness. I have no room for those who’d rather play at the art of deception. You have no place in my heart or soul and you are dead to me. I am the truth. I am the good. I am the life that freedom is bestowed upon. I am given the peace because I have won—I have stopped playing the game—and you are of hell and going to hell.

233. Faith and Free-Will

My son, faith is freedom. “Neediness” stems from insecurity and insecurity stems from relating yourself to others in order to define your worth and your value. You will never find your worth and value this way. You must leave all others and direct everything you have and all you are in-line with God Himself. By believing in Jesus, you will then believe in the Spirit that God Himself has given you within you to guide you to Him. And by me saying “guiding you”, this is exactly what I mean—without the reliance upon anyone else on earth. Just you and the Spirit. The Spirit will give you help from others in heaven and on earth who have your best interest at heart. And most, if not all, of these people will be temporary but bountiful in your life. When it

is time to say goodbye, say goodbye and when it is time to say hello, say hello. And to all others who would have you do this and that their way and are apathetic or controlling and usually emotional one way or the other if you don't, just pass on by. These do not know (are not intimate with) God. For no person who is intimate with God, needs you to validate their own selves.

See, Jesus, himself, would not wish to be idolized. He showed the path and gave you the freedom to choose to follow it—follow the path that I have shown you. But do not idolize me—do not be Christ-like. Be “whoever-you-are-like”. Jesus showed us how to find our way to our Father by accepting our guide, the Holy Spirit. He left when his disciples finally believed. He had to leave, not just so the Spirit would come, but so he would not get in the way of the Spirit in each one of us. So then, now you know that by trying to “save” others by bringing them into your family, your church, your group, you are meddling. But to introduce someone to the Spirit, to Jesus, you aid in freeing them from whatever binds once they believe. But if you go further and try to bring them into a place of discipline, a group of similar instruction, you are what winds up binding them. This is the difference between faith and fear. Faith releases, fear restrains. And Christ came to release, not restrain.

Let me tell you. Before anyone can be free, they must meet God. Jesus may intercede and the Holy Spirit will guide, but ultimately both their goal is to help you meet up with God. This is known as intimacy with the love and power within yourself. This is why Jesus said that you too can sit at the right side of the Father just like him. The consensus of the majority on earth is that you will meet God once you get to heaven. Not absolutely true. You can meet God while living on earth too. And it is here that you will find out that which one truly needs apart from what one chooses freely to want.

Physically, one only needs food, clothing, and shelter. Relationally, one only needs God. Everything else along the way poses as needs because of a person's insecurities. When you get to the point of realizing and being at peace with what you really need, you then have the power to overcome the unrighteousness of the world by realizing that God has given you the freedom to choose what you want without guilt or shame—be it physically or relationally. Human nature is to group things together in a hierarchy. Be cautious. Jesus never wanted to be idolized—he never wanted the crucifix on some church wall. All he wanted is for people to spread the word that you don't **have to** become part of an institutionalized system. You are free to be whomever you want to be and be wherever you want to be and say whatever you want to say and do whatever you want to do. There are no rules, but you will find out that there are just unwise things to do.

But human nature is that when someone is willing to lead, followers tend to take them in the form of an idol. And the more insecure a person is, the more he or she idolizes that person. So then, Jesus wanted to show you how to meet up with God, so that you would forevermore feel secure within yourself to be who you are without feeling guilty about it. And that “not feeling guilty about it” is the definition of freedom. So then, freedom comes from meeting up and hugging your Father who so unconditionally loves you that the Spirit provides you the essence of His love in the spiritual from within yourself. Now you'll realize that you **need** no other person, but you are free to chose who you **want** to be in your life. This is the definition of free-will.

Free-will is not just choosing between good and bad—whatever that may be. Free-will is a gift of grace by God (absolution) giving you the power to choose who you want to be and who you want to share it with without guilt and repercussion. See, we have been ingrained to think that we have free-will to choose between good and bad, family or others, the religion we group up with or some other, but that we'd better choose right. Does this sound free to you or does it sound more like slavery? This is humanistic thinking by those who do not know (are not intimate with) God.

And now you see that those in an institution, family, church, group that make you feel guilty for not remaining in it, do not know God. They are an illusion (a deception) trying to make you think and feel that you must need them, when all along it is they who need you so that they can feel worthy within themselves. There is little or no faith in this. Those who have an abundance of faith, need not meddle in your life and need not you a part of theirs. Jesus is the Truth that leads you to your Father and when you meet up with your Father, you then feel worthy within yourself because now you know that your Father finds you worthy to be called, to be given to you a guide to him, and then to kiss and hug you. And He wants you to experience this now—not struggle all your life only to always fall short of the glory in your lifetime and so only to experience it once you get to heaven. Now, in heaven, yes by all means, will you experience it in even greater glory. But, my son, there is heaven on earth—there is. And you are part of it.

Did you know that God Himself is a relatively hands-off God? He is. People ask why there is so much suffering. People ask how a tsunami can kill hundreds of thousands of people in India, Sri Lanka, Indonesia, Thailand all in a matter of moments. Where is God in all this? God is a hands-off God. He delves into personal relationship—intimacy with his children. But all he places in motion, he relatively leaves in motion. There is no reason why—there is no answer. But there is grace for all—whether one believes in His son or not. Will you feel it if you don't believe in His son? More than likely you won't. This is the real suffering, the real disaster, the real sadness. Life happens and it keeps on happening. All that God creates is alive, including the earth, and we can no more control that which is alive than we can control the Father who created it. But the question is “Are you alive? Do you feel alive? Do you have life within you?” This is why there is no benefit in getting so upset with that which you cannot control. It is frivolous to even worry about such things. How much more would you worry over such things if you knew for certain you were to remain alive after death? You wouldn't worry anymore at all. Natural disasters would only be a part of life. Yes, you would feel compassion for those who are **lost** in the grief and confusion and you would go to them to help them find their way back to the love and security of God Himself. But nature is as nature does and human is as human does. Intimacy by unconditional love for each other is what overcomes all disaster, is what separates the human from the inhuman, is what really matters.

And so once we meet up with God via the Holy Spirit, we find ourselves absolved in exercising our free-will without repercussion. Why? Because intimacy is too great to discount, too great to leave, too wonderful to part from. And so we feel we belong to God. We feel part of Him. We are home, secure. And when one feels intimacy and is free to express him or herself in the way he or she wishes, the one sins no more and Satan is truly dead. And even if he did sin, he would never be condemned for it. He'd be free via grace.

234. Be Mediocre and Be Blessed

My son, to be mediocre is to be blessed. Be mediocre and find yourself doing non-mediocre things. For it is those that try their best not to be mediocre that find themselves doing petty, frivolous, and uncaring things. But it is the mediocre that do wonderful, loving, subtle and compassionate things frequently and usually unnoticed. Now, do you see who keeps life alive, who sustains the earth and the communities who live upon it? Yes, those who go unnoticed. They are the meek, the mediocre, the core of society. Forget about championing mediocrity. Be mediocre and be a champion. For one who is even-keeled will not sink and does not worry about the waves (making waves or not making waves). He or she does not displace love with anything else for he or she is love and loved.

235. Being Independent in a Relationship

My son, we must always strive to be free to be who we are while in a relationship and allow others to be free to be who they are. How do we do this? We can only do this by first being secure (intimate) within ourselves via the Spirit of God within us. Then we can let others go. Then we can be who we are while not defining or confining anyone we are with. Instead we choose to **want** to be with that person instead of feeling that we **have** to be with that person. We can say “go and come back when you want to, not because you feel you have to” when they say to us that they need time alone to do whatever they need to do. Love permits us the unselfishness to free the other for their sake rather than feel abandoned and confine them for our sake. And love permits us the unselfishness to cherish others just as they are and whoever they wish to be rather than define others to whom we think they should be in relation to us or the world. Quite the opposite because being secure within ourselves means that we need never to feel abandoned ever again and, thus, we don’t need others to save us from our insecurities via defining or confining them.

Yes, because of our intimacy with God and His Spirit within us, we need never to define or confine anyone, but instead complete those who we love and who we want to be a part of in their lives. We don’t mind taking the back seat so that another may take the wheel. In fact, you may find that taking the back seat provides you an opportunity to explore other enjoyable facets of life—if you choose to see it that way.

St. Paul, St. Peter and some of the others derived much of their defining and confining upon others (especially women) from their Jewish upbringing—their culture—just like most religions of the world (including Christianity) do today. This is why I have found it not good for me to treat the Bible as absolute law but instead use it as a vehicle (as a muse or inspiration) for divine intervention into who I am. I use it to imagine and to be creative in my own empathetic soul so that I may discover who I am—who God created me to be.

This is why art is so important. Art (especially when done in free association) shows us who we really are. Trying to just figure this out by our own intellect does not work well. We must first be inspired, then we can figure out (learn and understand) what the Spirit is telling us. The world sees things as either profit driven or non-profit driven monetarily and so not much money goes to the arts these days. But like anything (technical or relational), the more you invest in it,

the more rewards will come from it. Thus, the more you invest in yourself, the more of yourself will be revealed to you. And the more of you that is revealed to you, the more you can invest yourself in the world around you in the most direct and profitable way imaginable. And then, the world will profit so much greater than ever before humanity-wise and money-wise as well. Much of the world can not see this, but this is truth. And so they are not only poor in spirit, but much poorer in money than they ever will know. Yes, the more freedom one is given, the more wealth derived.

236. The Point From Child to Adult

The point of transition from a child to an adult is when we come to accept what is real and then devote ourselves to the reality of the situation. The greatest rewards come from this—intimacy and our true identity because of our truth, our honesty embracing the reality of now. Not “what if”, not “if only”, not “one day”, but “the truth is, “the reality of the situation is”. Yes, dealing with the day of today.

237. Meddling

Besides going through embarrassment, I have found that stopping oneself from meddling in the affairs of another is the hardest thing in life to do. And yet these two are tied together. It is usually when one is uncomfortable or embarrassed by another will he or she try to fix the other so that the discomfort will go away. Yet who is uncomfortable and who is not? Who needs acceptance and who has already accepted? Many a person’s life has been messed up by a meddler.

It is very tempting to want to express your opinion on how to fix another when you feel that you know and have the wisdom to help someone get through something. Though it was never intended to be as such, Christian “witnessing” and “proselytizing” is meddling. Witnessing and proselytizing saves no person, though it may seem like it at first. Instead, it basically says to another that they are just wrong in who they are. And acceptance of another means they are neither right or wrong, but fine the way they are. If they need to change, let it be their decision. Let your decision to accept them just the way they are. By doing so, grace will come upon them if they need grace and Christ will come upon them if they need Christ.

And saying that they asked you first is no excuse as permission to express your opinion or beliefs so to fix them. We must be exceedingly careful not to place ourselves in an idol position. All we can say when asked is that this helped me in my similar situation. Then it is their choice to decide whether it may be helpful to them.

Encouraging, or even worse forcing, your opinions based on the actions or situations of another is meddling. And meddling is only selfishly for the meddler, who plants a delusion within himself or herself that it is for the other’s own good. If we can always remember that our goal is that another may be independent and free, then we will realize that planting our opinion in someone else restrains them from being exactly ok with who they are. Instead of meddling, we must come to hold our tongue and just accept them for who they are. Yes, if they hurt others

physically or emotionally, we must step in and expose the violence. This is not meddling. But other than that, we must (pardon the French), “Shut up!” and find our own security in God.

238. On How to Become Free

In order for me to understand how to become free, I revisit the concept of Freud’s id, ego, and superego. Id is the man’s desires of the flesh, also known as sin. Superego is over heightened sense of morality, also known as self-righteousness. Ego is the rational, restful state of mind where all our worth and value lie, also known as self. So it is only right to love ourselves. Ninety-nine per cent of time when you hear someone say about another that “he is in love with himself” in a derogatory fashion, that someone is actually unknowingly talking about the other’s superego, not ego. It is because it is in the superego where people believe themselves greater than others, until one day they come to believe themselves infallible. But one must remember that the more self-righteous one is, the more sinful he is that is hidden in the dark. Therefore, the superego and id are connected with irrational thinking and behavior, whereas, the ego is rational thinking and behavior.

So, one who claims himself morally infallible is actually Satan’s right-hand man in disguise. And now we can see that going to church and other places was in fact us actually going to hell if those we hang around with and those places we go on Sundays use the law to condemn and guilt and make us perform acts of contrition. For it is not the law that is bad, it is using the law to condemn via self-righteousness rather than aid others via compassion and forgiveness that is bad. There is still God’s law, but it was never intended to be used to make people think and feel inferior—in other words, exploit another for one’s personal satisfaction. Thus, comes Christ. So now you know that the greater someone is self-righteous that much less is his true faith. And one who claims himself to be morally infallible actually has no true faith at all, and is thus really an unbeliever terrified of being exposed for what he really is or perceives himself to be because of his enormous guilt and shame. Be careful of all unbelievers and self-righteousness because they not know what true love really is—though they may think they do.

Ego is like the Garden of Eden. It is the Kingdom of Heaven and it is all we have when we are born. There is no Id, there is no Superego when we are born. There is only ego—a balanced, restful state. Sometime in your childhood, a serpent disguised as love entered your ego and tried to control it by condemning you to a state that was less than yourself. They condemned you for being you. That person split your ego, your Kingdom, in two lesser and lower but equally warring states—known as the Id and Superego. The more aggressive and persistent this person was, the less worthy you thought and felt of yourself. And, in fact, you lost your ego and was, in a sense, kicked out of your-self. And the other became the person you idolized and who you strove to become. You hated him for what he did, but, at the same time, thanked him because you believed he was true love (truth). This person had such an over-inflated superego that you, as an ignorant and innocent child, fell into his trap of thinking himself knowing and being superior in morality to God himself. And all this time, you have been trying to get back your ego, trying to find yourself.

So you were sent down into this hell made up of a vicious cycle of id and superego. Sin and high morality co-exist and the war begins. The more you sin, the more high morality comes into play

in the form of guilt and shame. Thus, the more you sin, the more self-righteous you become. And the more self-righteous you become, the more you condemn your sin. Self-righteousness is addictive in that once a person gets a taste of it, he wants more and more and more. Thus, the only way to gain more and more and more self-righteousness is to sin more and more and more, until you just can't stand yourself anymore, and you claim yourself as morally infallible.

This is a distraction of who you idolize in your ego by being afraid to war against him to regain your ego back. And if you believe that God is a god of condemnation, then you really are idolizing Satan not God. God is a god of pure and true love. This is why you must follow Christ in order to be familiar with what true love is and see the deceptive love for what it really is—the devil in disguise. For whomever you believe to be love is whom you are slave to. You see, by being deceived into what we may think true love is (because every person is born as true love so whoever we see taking care of us, we idolize and see as true love), we continue to wind up with people in our relationships just like those we believe are true love. So, if we had an abusive father and we don't have Christ, we will continue to believe that true love is abuse. We will deny any other—thinking that anything else really isn't true love, but a ruse. But if we have Christ, we will learn what true love is—not from man, but from the Spirit. For the Spirit is the Counselor of Truth, the Guide to what True Love really is. So then, it is important for all parents not to discipline and condemn but to allow children to grow up as they are by loving them the way Christ loves us.

So then, the first thing is to come to Christ so that you will realize what true love is and that God is true love. Then you can replace the real God with who you thought God is in your ego. You will receive the Holy Spirit who will begin forcing out Satan in your ego. And the Spirit will begin handing your ego back over to you a little at a time as your ego is being cleaned. Satan fights and fights, but to no avail. This devilish person continues to try to manipulate you and bring down high morality on your head to regain your ego. But now that you know his strategy, you won't be tricked. Now that you know the difference between righteousness of God and self-righteousness, you won't be tricked. And this will continue, until one day God himself comes in and secures your ego forever and ever.

But how to you receive or accept this truly loving ego of once you were in from the Spirit when you continue to have this huge superego? By believing in Jesus Christ and his dying on the cross for all your past, present, and future sins. If somehow we can reduce and reduce self-righteousness, then sin will be reduced and reduced automatically in proportion. And if our self-righteousness is dead, then sin is dead. And the way to do this is to replace Christ and Christ dying on the cross for us with that of the superego. In other words, no longer feed into the superego but feed into Christ and our forgiveness of all past, present, and future sins. The more we do this, the more we will accept forgiveness for our sins, the less high morality we need to counteract our sin, until one day we know and feel automatically forgiven for our past, present, and future sins because of Christ. And then sin is dead and we will sin no more.

And as we sin less and less, we are able to accept the love of God given us by way of our egos. No longer is our superego waging war against our sin, but Christ becomes our intercessor killing off the guilt and shame produced by sin so not to interfere with our personal relationship with God—in other words, us in our superego relating with the Spirit of God in our egos. Once this

happens, we grow more rapidly towards being free from sin because our self-righteousness is more rapidly decreased. This is what is meant by Christ went down and conquered hell and then rose to heaven sitting at the right hand of the Father. For the Kingdom of Heaven is secure via God and we live in what is now known as the New Jerusalem because our old self (superego) has died. We are reborn never to enter hell, never to be divided again. And it all starts with John 3:16.

So then, we must believe that Christ is God's son. And we must know what true love is via Christ. Then we must choose to receive God's Spirit in our egos. Then we must replace our superego (self-righteousness) with Christ and his death and our full forgiveness of all past, present, and future sins, and rid our lives of self-righteousness. And then, finally, concentrate on God and His Spirit within our selves (egos) and accept the training and love He offers us so that we too can become intimate with Him and be fully once again in His Kingdom. And then sin will truly be dead.

Freedom is equivalent to stop being self-righteous and just receiving and giving God's love. Yes, freedom only comes when you face your fear of dying (to your self-*righteousness*). Then you will know what true independence and freedom are because you will have forgiven yourself for being a child and forgiven others for their ignorance in what they did to you.

No one I know, have seen, have met, or have heard seems to understand what I have just told you. I believe that in what they did to us, they did not truly understand the implications of what they were doing. In fact, they believed they were doing it because they loved us—not knowing what true love really was. And so the cycle continues for generation after generation who will not listen and come to understand Christ and his love for us. For Christ is the truth—the true love—and he saw the deception that we could not see. Now you see those who judge and morally-condemn are self-righteous and, thus, sinful themselves. And the more self-righteous, the more sin they feel and are trying to hide from you and themselves. Thus, the more self-righteous, the more ashamed of their own selves they really are and the more they try to take over your ego because they're afraid to face their own.

You see, if the Spirit of God lives in your ego and God is love and you are made in God's image, then what are you from the beginning? What is your true self? Who are you really? Yes, that's right. You are love! And thus your ego, your true self, is love. And that is why the entirety of God's Law bound in your ego is summed up in a single command: "Love your neighbor as yourself." And by becoming more and more intimate with the Spirit, allowing Christ to replace your superego and thus at the same time destroy sin via forgiveness, you continue to reach more and more your original state. You come to love yourself more and more, and this love you have for yourself you give to others in the same or equal amount. The same love you receive is the same love you wind up giving.

The law of the superego is not God's Law. The law of the superego was created by God through Moses to counteract the sin within the id to which the two cannot survive without the other. Put in another way: the law of the superego was made because of the id (law was made because of sin). But now God's Law (via the New Covenant) in the ego supercedes that law (of the Old Covenant) in the superego because we have been given a way back into our egos. So now you

need not judge your actions or anyone else's. Christ has done that for you and continues to do that automatically through forgiveness of all past, present, and future sins. Instead, our job now is to concentrate and focus on the path that links God of Pure Love to us—a path that the Spirit mentors and guides us through so that we may enter back through the gates of Eden (known today as the New Jerusalem) and meet (concile) with our true Father in his Kingdom within us (our self, our ego) so that we may be free from the law (superego) and sin (Id) and be once again united into one (ego).

And what is that path that the Spirit guides you through to meet God, who frees you and brings you peace? Belief (faith, baptize), conversion (hope, sufferance, intercession, cleansing, detox), commitment (trust, embark, clarity), learning (discipline, getting to know), understanding (deep truth, secret wisdom), humility (respect, honor), love (life, deep affection, desire), acceptance (fully welcome), devotion (heartfelt obedience), intimacy (security, inheritance, conciliation with God, adoption), freedom (independence), peace (joy, true righteousness, unity, completion).

And so, how do you destroy your self-righteousness? You do so by going through the steps leading up to freedom with the Spirit in you and providing it towards others.

239. Watching the Wheels

There is a great difference between being centered and trying to be the center of attention. A person who tries to be the center of attention is always comparing himself with others, is always trying to conquer his fears to try to get ahead, is always trying to climb the ladder, is always running a race, is always judging, is always trying to gain control of every situation, he's fine with himself but never fine where he is. And the grand illusion is that he thinks that once he's conquered all these, he will have peace in his life. But he just finds out that there's infinitely more people ahead of him, there's always another fear that crops up, there's a lot more rungs on the ladder than he ever thought, there's a lot more to judge and try to control than he ever thought, he's more lost than ever and starts doubting himself and who he really is. And because of all this, his position may be number one but how he feels about himself is zero and who he finds himself from within is empty (nothing). This, My son, is the difference between living for the world and living for Me. It's like the song from John Lennon, "Watching the Wheels." Once you get off the center of the merry-go-round where you have placed yourself at the center of everyone revolving around you, you will start knowing Me and you'll start knowing your true self. You'll find the freedom and the peace you've always been looking for. And it is in the peace that you'll find the true Me and the true you.

So, how do you do it?

You do it by accepting it, by stop being ashamed of it. And, if you love Me, you'll accept just being a normal and average sorta kid. Accept you just being the average you then you will be direct alignment with Me. Stop trying to conquer all your fears and phobias and just accept them as a part of you. Don't be ashamed of them. I wasn't ashamed of Jesus because he was afraid to die. And he was really afraid—he was very terrified. When the time comes, you'll be able to handle it. Everyone has fears, all sorts of fears, and a whole lot more than just one. Work hard on only the debilitating ones, the ones that prevent you from functioning normally, because the

greatest fears produce the greatest sins. And then stop wasting your time by trying to rid all the others. Hand them all over to Me. Surrender them to me and we'll tackle them together in My time because they are all automatically under My incredible grace and My command.

Stop worrying what other people think. Remember they're all under My command, and those who judge, are not under Me and My merciful hand. Climb down the ladder and, just before you get to the ground (grounded), jump in excitement. And then put the ladder back in the garage. Enjoy the land I offer you and everything it has to offer. If someone wants to run a race, leave yourself in *their* dust. The farther they run away from you, the better. You might find that they keep judging you a whole lot. And now who really has all the power? You're fine who you are and where you are.

I'm here and you know and knew I was here because I showed you what Step 10 was all about. Now it's time to take yourself out of the center of attention and surrender the position over to me, where I will take my rightful place forever and ever. And now we can start over just like My son John's song, "Starting Over." Now you know where I am and will always be. Focus on me at your center and there I will be. For I am at the center of you and your universe—the universe I created just for you that you haven't even explored yet because you've been to business trying to control it. I control the merry-go-round and I'll stop it when I wish. For there is a time for everything and I control the time. And I control when you die and when you live. All you control is jumping off or jumping back on, for I am here and not out there. That is your choice.

You have done well, My Son. Yes, what is out there, off the merry-go-round, is vast and does not move. It is all dead. The merry-go-round moves and there is much there, more than you realize right now. From above it appears so small, but once you're on it and moving with it, it is so much. And I am at the center of it all. I am what keeps everything in motion. Yes, you have done well. You were never dead, always alive. But you have been trying to keep it all moving and under control—keeping up the righteousness of it all. But it is now time for you to go, for I am here and I am here to relieve you. The time has come for you to be free yourself to have fun, to enjoy, to not worry. It is your time. Your time has come. And when I stop the merry-go-round, you will know it is time for you to get off and enter into a land of great beauty. For when the merry-go-round stops, everything outside moves and when the merry-go-round moves, everything around it stops. And everything that moves lives and everything that stops dies. This is how you know you will live forever. And I am at the center of it all controlling destiny. I am the guide post. I am the engine. I control its movement, its direction, its speed. Everything attaches itself to me and I control its life itself. For I go fast and up and down and so which way and sling off those who are weak (evil) and keep on those who are strong (meek). I am the Alpha. I am the Omega. Nothing is born not by Me and nothing dies not by Me. You are the strong, My son. You are the life I so dearly love. You are My son and you are My endearing joy.

And that's how.

240. Good vs. Evil

Don't worry. Live in the moment. There is a lot to see in the moment. Do you dream of traveling to far off lands? You've been missing the traveling while you have been dreaming and

planning it all your life. What lands have you been missing in each moment of your life? The Africans have a saying, “Keep it real.” It means find the wonder in the where you are in the time you’re there because the only reality is in the moment. Those who can’t face themselves, can’t face being in the moment.

God is in control of keep everything in motion. You are only along for the ride. The ride stops when God commands it to stop, not before and not after. And the ride never goes backward, only forward and only at the speed and flow that God commands it to go. If you live in the past, you live in illusion trying to put the ride in reverse. If you dream of the future, you live in illusion trying to speed the ride up and control how it flows. If you go with the speed and flow of the ride, you live in the moment. And then freedom and peace is yours.

Putting it another way, if you are always feeling guilty for what you did wrong having to confess, you always live in the past fearing the future chasing self-righteousness. If you care less and go do whatever you want to do chasing dreams (chasing emotional desires), you always live in the future. But if you go with the flow of God, living in the moment, you neither worry about righteousness or chase frivolous dreams. Instead, your dream is in the righteousness of the moment.

Man is split (divided) in disharmony between what the world calls good and evil. Even if you read the Bible, you will continue to read of good and evil only because man interpreted God and Christ that way. Only the Holy Spirit delivers to you the underlying meaning beyond the written word. Yes, man is divided in disharmony between dream (emotional desire or flesh) and conscience (self-righteousness or law). Here, the world defines this as darkness versus light, as sin versus holiness, as outside-the-church versus inside-the-church, as secular versus religious. But this is the world’s interpretation, not Christ’s.

Would it amaze you to know that God is in neither? Would it amaze you to know that the Apostles had not ridden themselves of Jewish law and tradition by the time most of them died? And that those who did never made it into the Bible, most likely because it started sounding too much like Eastern philosophy? Which is quite remarkable because they were at the center between western and eastern philosophy so it would only be natural that they would have both influences in their cultures.

So, if God is neither in the dream (fantasy) or church (self-righteousness), where is God? The world cannot fathom this, but what you see here is the schism of the Kingdom—a schism that took place because of the abuses (abandonment and condemnation) of and on people. What this schism produces is a person who wants what he wants but, at the exact same time, fears getting it. It produces a person who keeps doing what he does not want to do. It produces a person that find evil everywhere righteousness is. But what we must understand is that the righteousness one is talking about is actually self-righteousness. For both must co-exist. Self-righteousness cannot exist without evil and evil cannot exist without self-righteousness. Yes, the righteousness the world sees as truth or good is actually unrighteousness known as self-righteousness. God is not in either.

Most people live in this state of duality in what is known by the world's standard as normal. When a person lives too much dream or too much in self-righteousness, he is in what is known by the world's standard as abnormal or mental illness. But normal is only when the vast majority is believing the same way. But I am telling you that normal does not necessarily mean healthy. In fact, neither of the two components of good and evil are healthy. The world's definition of good is not healthy. And the world's definition of evil is not healthy. Organized religion is the world's interpretation of what good or holy is and that which opposes the church is evil in the world's eyes. This duality is not ourselves because a self cannot be so when divided because the true definition of self is one single and complete entity (identity) distinctive and yet uniform and solid through and through.

Rather, healthy is in the form of oneness. Oneness means one's true self, one's true individuality, a single and whole identity living in harmony, in union, independent of the world's measures. Oneness is where God lives in His indivisible Kingdom.

And so how does a person attain this oneness, this harmony, this completeness, this joy? By living in the moment, by immersing oneself in the details of the moment of who he is where he is when he is there. For God lives in the moment. That which you have lived in great interest in the details of is where you belong and is where you will be happy. It is in the moment that one knows not where good begins and evil ends because the self finds both utterly ridiculous in the world's definition but sanctified through the eyes of God Himself.

And so, yes, my friend, the terms good and evil in the worldly sense are sterilized, inhuman, words that prevent you from realizing your true self and from realizing your True God. They are terms created by the egos of man to fit within the paradigms of religious and unfeeling thinkers to depict God and Christ himself. For good and evil do not exist but only love and human inhibitions—a beautiful pairing that is full of holiness and the greatest of sanctifying and fully-intimate unions. For God so loved the world that He gave His one and only son so that we may feel and be free to be our own human uninhibited selves without any shame, guilt, or condemnation. So, all this time battling good against evil you found was a delusion of self-righteousness and egotistical behavior where all along righteousness or holiness was the essence of our love mixed with our absolutely uninhibited human desires—where we forget ourselves in the moment by surrendering ourselves to our uninhibited curiosities and devotions in deeply exploring that which we absolutely **love and yearn for**. And once you find this, you find yourself and your ultimate purpose for living. For God is in whatever you love and, so, when you come to love yourself, in yourself is where you'll find God and then you'll know that you are that purpose for living—you are worth living for. And so love (and live for) one another as you love (and live for) yourself.

241. Duality vs. Individuality

You are the meaning of life. The world is in constant duality (dueling) needing a protagonist and antagonist, good versus evil, mono-y-mono, man versus nature, man versus himself, right versus wrong. And then there is heaven where there is only Love and one's yearning to live in it each and every moment and then always living in it. This is happiness and joy. It is our free-will, our free choice, our freedom given us by God to choose either the world or the Kingdom. The path

leads us from the world to the Kingdom. This path is of belief (faith), hope (conversion), trust (commitment), learning (structuring), understanding (wisdom), respect (honor), love (heartfelt desire or esteem), acceptance (of all that another is), devotion (obedient love unconditional, loving servitude), intimacy (secure and deeply loving friendship and soulful sharing), freedom (surrender, deliverance), and peace (happiness and joy, oneness). It leads us from darkness into pure light, getting brighter and brighter the farther we travel on it. For the transformation is from our duality to our individuality. Good or doing good (by the world's standard) transforms into love, and evil or fleshly desires (by the world's standard) transforms into yearning desire to be and live in each moment of that love. When one lives in love, individuality is all he is and duality is gone. He cares less whether he is judged by others and doesn't even judge himself. He does not worry. He is in love and it is if the world disappears and all that is left is love and those he loves and loves him back all in the absolute realm of light known as the Kingdom of God. For one can do no wrong when he is in love, truly knowing God and seeing God. It is not the kind of love the world sees or the selfish kind of love that is just from the heart without any wisdom of the mind. It is a mature love that only comes with the teachings of Christ and the guidance of the Holy Spirit culminating in the Kingdom with God.

One must only ask, listen, and do.

So then, now you realize that God has no prejudice among His children. He sees no divisiveness among His children. God is blind to denomination. Denomination is seen through the eyes of the world and not God. Church that sees itself separate from other believers (even the church of oneself who sees him or herself separate) is a church not truly seeing but deceiving. For demon is in the word denomination. Do not be fooled. A denomination who claims others to be living in sin, especially in mortal sin, and but not only because they don't belong to their church is self-righteous. They are of the world. They live in duality rather than one love in individuality of oneness. We know, don't we, that you who claim others living in mortal sin is really you. Forgive them their ignorance and God will forgive you.

Allow God to send you wherever He needs you to go among all His children to help them. Do not box the Spirit in by seeing denomination. See only the child of God and the denomination goes away. Jesus Christ always spoke from the Spirit of Love and not from the religion of God because he was, indeed, the Spirit in flesh.

So then, remember this, my son, if you remember nothing else:

Where there is love, there is God and so too is His Kingdom.

Say this 100 times a day to yourself and "I love you" a hundred more. And let no man on the face of this earth tell you that you live in sin when, in fact, you have love in your heart. For this accusation, no matter how strongly believed, comes not from God but from those who do not know true love itself and so don't know God Himself and, therefore, are self-righteous. Do not believe any church that says here is His Kingdom and this is where Christ dwells. They may believe that God is everywhere but Christ is only with them so you must go through them to be absolved of your sins rather than Christ having done it once and for all for each one of us on the cross. They are lost and don't realize His Kingdom is in each one of us who is willing to believe

John 3:16 and John and Luke 17:20, 21 in and outside their church domain. There are many churches like this big and small but the Roman Catholic Church is the greatest of these. They are infants in adult clothing and are really only the remnants of what was once known as the Holy Roman Empire. But in their grave ignorance, they too are loved by God the Father, the Son, and Holy Spirit.

This is the lesson of God Almighty upon His children.

242. Looking for Love in All the Wrong Places

If a person is abandoned or abused, he or she looks to derive love from the person who abandoned or abused. In adulthood, the disbelief is still prominent that someone he or she idolized or trusted (and should have been able to trust) should have fed him or her love rather than abuse, abandonment, condemnation, shame, and guilt. Therefore, he or she displaces this disbelief and yearning onto another who looks, acts, or is in similar positions of authority as the abuser or abandoner.

The disbelief that someone is incapable of providing such love is the true problem. The fact is that there are people (many people), as you may have already found out, that are incapable of providing true love because of their self-righteousness (superego) is so pronounced that they claim themselves nearly if not totally infallible. This is what is known as a character disorder. And one cannot derive true love from a character disorder because the one who has the disorder truly believes that the love they display is true love. This delusional or distorted love usually comes by way of control and manipulation. But you must understand that to most of us, control and manipulation, are not good things. To the character disorder, control and manipulation are two of the main ingredients that make up true love. They just don't see control and manipulation the way we see it, even to the point of emphatically saying they don't control or manipulate. Character disorders, depending on the severity, blame everyone but themselves because usually they cannot face their demons. And so they parade as holy vessels, infallible, when all along it is a huge defense mechanism. You cannot find true love here. These people are incapable of displaying true love. It's not condemnation, it's real truth. I'm not saying this from a judging (prejudice, jealousy) standpoint. I'm telling you this from a judging (wisdom, experience, knowledge and training) standpoint.

Jesus Christ is true love. God is true love. You can be freed from looking for love in all the wrong places if you will believe that there are people (including the one or ones you idolized in authority) who are incapable of giving you the love you desire. In fact, these people will tell you that you are delusional and that the type love you seek is infantile and does not really exist. But you know differently because you are an example of such true love. You must believe that you cannot change their minds. Their beliefs are so ingrained in their psyche (soul, self, identity) that it will not and never change by you. Only God has that kind of power. You cannot derive the true love you've yearned for all your life from these people and these places because it just isn't there. You'll search forever saying "it's over there, it's over here" but then you'll find out it never was. In fact, those with this character disorder will read all I have written and find it frivolous, trivial, infantile, babyish because they are exceedingly superego. But we know better don't we. This is mature love I've been sharing with you, not infantile love. In fact, because of

God I have grown down and greatly out of my over-inflated ego to speak like this to you today. Those with great superegos cannot even face God because they are terrified to. Instead they place intercessors, as many as they can get ahold of, in between them and God because unconsciously they are afraid of God and what He will do when He finds out their guilt and shame. They feel unloved, unworthy because those they idolize gave them little or no love.

It is sad but it is true. Forgive them for their own ignorance. They are infants themselves and don't even realize it. They are quite sad. But for your own wellbeing, believe emphatically that there are people who are incapable of giving you the true love that Christ delivers. The more you believe, [going along the path of belief, risk separating yourself (hope, cleansing, separation, and conversion), commitment to that conversion (trust), learning (knowing and setting up real boundaries), then being able to understand the true difference, and then being able to respect those on both sides, empathizing with them, accepting them for who they are, turning and devoting yourself to God rather than trying to derive love from them, becoming intimate with true love (with God) to which all delusional else is gone from your mind, and then being free, and then living in peace] the healthier and better off you will become.

Do not let your own neurosis fool you into believing their deception. Your neurotic state will allow you to take what they tell you as truth. The more you are aware of your neurosis, what some may call weaknesses or vulnerabilities, the less you will fall into their deception. These neurosis or vulnerabilities are what they seek out and manipulate or exploit you with to come into them. Neurotic and Character Disorder are lie on opposite sides and are very attractive to each other just like the id to the superego and vis-à-vis. But when one believes it cannot derive love from the other and really believes it, the person of Christ will turn to God for love.

As an example, I went to a certain church who condemned me in mortal sin because I would not come back to them. They, however, said that I condemned myself and that they had no hand in it and no hand in me leaving. This is character disorder. Then they said if I truly had a spiritual awakening, God would tell me to go to church (their church they believed), I believe, through observation for many centuries. You know by my earlier testimonies that God did tell me to go to the church where my wife was going to (even though it was not their church) right after my Pentecost. They said it was not God but something else. This is character disorder.

My father is a character disorder unable to love me in the true love that I so yearned for. And all my life I kept on trying to find someone like my father, people in authority, people I idolized to supply me this love. These are the men I have been attracted to for my love and self-esteem. And it was to no avail because you will never find true love from those you displace from the idol you never got true love by in the first place. It is unending. This church I speak about was the same thing. My father is even part of this church but in a different state. By seeking (not once but three times) this church, even though I never found any true love anywhere in it, I kept on suspending my belief that there are people and places that are just incapable of providing true love, period. And I got more angry, and more angry, and more angry trying to get something from people who just were incapable of doing it. This process is known as insanity and the more you do it, the more you will drive yourself insane.

Instead, we must believe in true love, in the true Christ, in the true God and absolutely come to believe that there are people who are incapable of providing us true love. You will never become your own individual if you continue to look for love in all the wrong places. And the Spirit's greatest joy is to mentor you and then release you when you are ready as an individual in love. It makes a parent so proud and God is your parent.

Now I am neurotic. Neurotic people tend to always internalize what they perceive as wrongdoing. They are vulnerable to character disorders. The neurotic is food for the character disorder (superego) by always trying to do right and the character disorder must eat the food to stay alive by trying to always save the neurotic (id) because of the character disorder's illusion of believing he is always right(ous). Once you realize this, you can relax. You can now stop feeding bits and pieces of yourselves to those that need to devour it.

It is my belief that God within (the Counselor of Truth) takes you on this journey to reveal to you the honest truth of who you are. And once you find out the root of how you are human (the neurosis involved), you can be secure in the fact that you are really faultless. It is no use being ashamed of your neurosis. The character disorder shames you for your neurosis because he needs you to live on. It really is that simple. You are being played by those who are being fooled into thinking that they love you, when all along it they are very attracted to you because you are their food for life. When you recognize your truth, your root, you can become intimate with yourself and others like you. You can forgive others their not understanding this. And you can look only to God and away from them who are of character disorders. And this is when you become free and overcome the world. You see character disorders need what they call the devil. The devil is that which makes you sin to them. But really what makes you sin is your neurosis, something you can't really do anything about but just accept them as part of you.

So, you see, the character disorder needs to deceive the neurotic into thinking the devil has him when all along there was no real physical or supernatural devil. It was all a deception so that the character disorder could continue to play and prey on you. You pray and they prey. This is the vicious cycle. They feed your neurosis so that you will continue to sin because they can't live without you sinning. They need the devil. They need you to keep on sinning for their survival. You see if all the demons go away, the root has no power. What was Jesus' root? I believe it was the concept of Hell itself. I believe it was his fear of dying and dying miserably that was his greatest demon. And to overcome it, he had to die that way. But it was a self-fulfilling prophecy designed by God. He used to judge people and hated himself for it. He used to think of women as objects and he hated himself for it. He used to do all the things that he tells us not to do and hated himself for it. He didn't realize it was all this neurosis created in his childhood from all the condemnation of authority figures and those he idolized. So Jesus created for him a defense mechanism that made him more righteous than the self-righteous because he really couldn't deal with it directly in life.

Something incredibly traumatic must have happened in his life to fear death so much. I believe it was a religion (character disorder or superego) that beat the concept of Hell into him so much and terrified him so immensely that his number one goal in life became the complete annihilation of his demons (neurosis) that lived within him and the devil itself (the root of his neurosis). And he knew that with God and only intimately with God, he could do it. And he did. And so must

we. If the apostles had not been asleep, who knows if he would have been talked out of it. And so he went through his greatest fear, fought the devil and Hell and won and he was free and finally had peace in his life.

Once we become intimate with God and recognize ourselves as neurotic with various neuroses, we can conquer it as well. Whatever it is, if you look for it, it will become your self-fulfilling prophecy to. And by turning solely to God, we overcome the world and no longer feed us to the character disorders of the world. Then we can deal directly with the demons within us and conquer the root of these demons. And then we will be free too and live in peace. What Jesus did was get everyone to believe that they too have the Spirit of God within them to find the truth and overcome their own demons and root of these demons.

When it comes to the Catholic Church and other organized religions, we must understand that they run by law. People's devotions can be greater to the church, then to the people. We must also understand that these places (which I define as cults to a greater or lesser degree) create neuroses in people, usually from their early childhood. On purpose? No, I don't believe so. But ignorantly? Yes, by all means. And the problem is that with all the rules and laws and condemnations, they create in people these neuroses. And the greater the neuroses, the greater people sin. And the greater people sin, the greater the rules, laws, and condemnations come into effect by the church on these people, which in turn create even greater neuroses. You may not see them after awhile because the person has internalized the shame and guilt so much. But one day it will come out in the form of suicide, pedophilia, murder, madness, infallibility (Jesus complex), etc. And then comes more condemnation. If there is a devil, the devil is the Catholic Church and the demons are the other organized religions that follow in some Roman Empire/Jewish Church organizational structure. For it is the devil who creates neuroses in others and, then when they sin, makes them believe they are condemning and doing it to their own selves. This way the church can remain unblemished and infallible and pure. The church is the chameleon, the charlatan.

God Bless, my child, and peace and happiness all your life through.

243. I AM EGO and I AM STRONG!

I AM EGO and I AM STRONG! When a little boy or little girl grows up, he/she sees two forms in the parents. One is more of a pushover than the other. One is the apathetic one (id) and one is the law enforcer (superego). Self does not play into the picture yet. This is not entirely bad until apathy and law enforcer starts getting into the fanatical state. And that really is what the id and superego are. They are the fanatical and opposing dimensions of the ego. If the ego is weak (low esteem), it is controlled collectively and placed in the middle of the id and superego. The superego cannot exist without the id and the id cannot exist without the superego. And so they won't kill each other, they use the ego as mediator and dumping ground. As the ego gets strong because it looks to God and follows Him, the ego achieves esteem (which is like par) an then journey to get a strong self-esteem. When the ego gets strong enough, it says to both the id and superego "STOP!" And God gives you, the ego, permission to say literally "Fuck Off" to each one of them if they try to abnormally use (abuse) you in this way again. You become the all powerful and you tell them where to go, when to go, and how far. If they refuse to listen to you,

you say “Fuck Off” or in Jesus’ words, “Get behind me Satan!”. Now you realize that you were the powerful one all along because they need you, you don’t need them. This is what John 16:29-33 is all about. The School Marm (superego) and the rascalion (id) stop fighting and obey you, the ego. They are actually terrified that you would go away and leave them all alone and they then start displacing their fears for you. But the ego is just fine because it has God. And eventually the ego will have to go away for good and be free to go live in peace.

See we must understand, especially in divorced household of which I came from, the id seeks to destroy the superego and the superego seeks to destroy the id to vie for getting custody of you. Once we acknowledge God, we acknowledge our self. However, we must go through the path [of belief in God (self), hope to receive God (self), trusting God (self) to getting us there, learning about God (self), understanding God (self), respecting God (self), esteeming God (self), accepting God (self) for who we are, devoting to God (self) for our own wellbeing even through opposition, being intimate with (loving and being good to) God (self), freeing God (self) from the id and superego, and have peace by redefining our relationship with God (self)] to gain strength to overcome the id and superego and have peace in our lives.

So then, anyone in the world who tries to tell you how to live is playing the role of the superego and you must tell him/her to “Fuck Off”. And anyone who tries to get you to be devious and be a rascalion is playing the role of the id and you must tell him/her to “Fuck Off.” Turn yourself to God as you know Him and continue growing in and with Him. This is how you will become free. For as you turn solely to God, you sacrifice parts of yourself for the sanctity of love by dismembering (pruning) the id and superego from within you mentally and their apparitions without you physically. They are dead. So leave the dead be buried (disposed of) all for the sanctity of love. **For where there is love, there is God and so too is His Kingdom.**

244. What is Normal?

Plainly, it is normal for a person, from birth to death, to grow in direct intimacy with God. It is abnormal to have an intercessor or indirect contact with God. To clarify, God sent Jesus and then the Spirit because we were lost from our True Father to the point of not being able to even recognize His True Being. In this case, though intercessory is abnormal, it was absolutely necessary for our wellbeing because our normalcy was interrupted. And the Holy Spirit as Christ guides us (directs us) to regain our intimacy with God.

It is good to remember that Jesus was the Spirit in the Flesh and Christ is again Spirit in us. And so, what is the mortal person’s duty but to only lead the lost to Christ. Everyone in heaven and on earth has a specific job, and no person’s job on earth is to do the job of Christ the Intercessor to God. The person leads another to the River, but the River is all about direct contact between Christ and the person taking the journey together to God Himself. Perhaps, besides leading one to the River, the only other job of another person is to live in the different lands along the banks of the River to help the person maintain focus on the River that is Love and provide his/her own wisdom along the way. This is known as sustainment or sustained sustenance.

If one places rules and laws, even of faith, for others to follow, then that one has taken the place of Christ. This is why Christ is The Church, and not the other way around. This telling another

how to live, especially in ultimatums, is abnormal (also known as abusing normal or abnormally using normal). A church cannot lead you to God. Only Christ can lead you to God. A church's job is to help a person focus on Christ, on the River, on Love, delivering wisdom on each stage of the journey that Christ and the person are at in the journey, and comforting the person in his/her time of need. This is why it is imperative that you as a person and the church itself truthfully recognize what stage in the journey you and it are in yourself and itself. Be humble, not pompous. When one is already in the River, help this one when asked, but do not control this one. Only support by supplying wisdom one asks for and comfort the person in his/her time of need by way of love.

245. The Road of a Valuable and Mature Relationship

Did you know that by not being ashamed of your neurosis, accepting them, and then sharing them, you free yourself? These neurosis are what makes us human and we must not be ashamed of our humanity. When we confront our neurosis, we wind up owning them, and then we are able to share them. These are the pearls Jesus was speaking of. They are pearls because you can use each one to gain true intimacy. In fact, we cannot gain intimacy unless we accept them and share them with others. But Jesus warns not to give your pearls to pigs because you will not gain intimacy but be exploited and manipulated by those who swoop in at your most vulnerable moments. This is why God trains you in understanding (wisdom) and who and who not to respect and then who you can love and who you can't.

We must believe that God is True Love. If we believe this, there is no need to test Him and His genuineness in loving us. We know love exists and so it must come from somewhere. That somewhere is God who is love and is the wellspring and essence of True Love. But the spirits are another thing. There are many spirits, some good some not so good. So, test the spirits. This is Stage 2. First believe in people's good nature and introduce yourself to them. Then test if they are sincere and genuine. The test is to risk sharing with them a part of yourself a little at a time until you share a neurosis of your own and see if they will tell you something deeper (some fear, some deep personal thing) about themselves and sense their sincerity via your spirit. Do not be surprised if they fail the test. Pick up your self, turn away, and say goodbye. For you can only be cleansed by immersing yourself in the deep end rather than remain shallow. But if they pass the test, commit to them. Then learn as much as you can about them and about healthy relationships. Then apply yourself, do things with them, all along gaining true understanding and discernment of them. For a person cannot hide their true selves very long if they are doing things. A person reveals his true nature when his mind is not thinking of himself and his relationship with you. Beware of no spontaneity (fun) because then he is continually trying to control his true nature from coming out. Beware of his neediness for you, for then he does not rely on God for his own wellbeing. And discern if both of you are healthy and the relationship is healthy from what you learned earlier. After you come to understand his true nature, then you can have or not have respect for them. If you do have respect for them, continue. If you don't, say goodbye. But if you do have respect for them, you will then enter into love with them by first having true affection for them which is the beginning of true love. And then you will accept them totally with all their neurosis and all. Then devote yourself to them in spite of their neurosis. Then you will come to have true friendship, true intimacy. Then both of you will feel free and you will not feel or be alone. For where there is two or more, there is the Spirit. And

where there is true love, there is God and so too His Kingdom. And let no person put asunder. You are absolutely free to say “go away all you naysayers” for your intimacy is what has joined you forever. And your freedom together will bring you peace and harmony as one.

246. Where there is love, there I Am and so too is My Kingdom.

Always remember that where there is true love, there is God and so too His Kingdom. If you continually tell yourself this, you will forgive anyone. You will keep your mind wide open to each person from all walks of life. And you will not be afraid because you know God and so you know what true love looks like. If there is not true love coming from there, one’s connection with God is not there. God may be calling them and it may be that they choose not to listen. And you may share with them the Good News so that they are able to transcend their walls of isolation and come to hear God’s loving voice. And what is the Good News but the conquering of hell and the destruction of such barriers by way of Jesus’ death that rid sin in it’s connection with law. In psychological terms, this would be the world which is the continually warring relationship of the id with the superego. Ridding this relationship and understanding that hell before Christ’s death is not hell anymore allows the ego (one’s self) to focus on and be intimate only with God, who is Love. One is “lost” or disconnected if his ego is only connected to the world. One is in hell if he hasn’t even an ego (sense of self) but in constant misery deriving everything from the constant torment of the war between id and superego. If we believe that the Law of Love transcends all law, then our choice is made clear. But if they will not listen, pray for them rather than stay with them.

Always remember that where there is true love, there is God and so too His Kingdom.

247. Acceptance and Devotion

When you accept a person, it means that when they lower their defenses and show you their vulnerabilities, you then have the choice to run away or be devoted to them at that moment in time. **These are the moments that define who we are because that choice of devotion is what leads to intimacy.** Yes, without revealing your vulnerability, you will never become intimate with another. And the only way to become intimate with another is when the other devotes himself or herself to you when those vulnerabilities are exposed.

Intimacy is a result of one’s humanity, not of one’s spirituality. We are to be human to God, not be the righteousness of God. How can God reveal His true nature to us if we don’t expose our weaknesses to Him. And so be it with each of us to and for each other.

This is what I’ve been searching for all my life—vulnerability from others, people who show their vulnerabilities so that I may show my true nature, my true self. But I don’t get to do that very much. It has been very hard to find this, and of my 38 years, I have only found maybe a handful. Perhaps I should intentionally place myself in a position where people are lost and definitely vulnerable? We all yearn for intimacy. Perhaps I must be a person that must provide it for others?

248. Where is Intimacy?

After I was confirmed in the Catholic Church, I searched for true intimacy in it, but I could not find it. Was it an illusion or just illusive to me? For some reason, I knew what it looked like and I was determined to find it. If I could find it or become it, it would no longer be an illusion. It only takes one person to become something and then it no longer becomes an illusion for or illusive to anyone.

I believe that those who've yearned for love and intimacy while growing up and did not receive it are the greatest in the ability to identify it truthfully. I searched many other churches and denominations and could not find it. I kept relying more and more on sex to ease the pain until I almost ended my marriage. I speak of what happened afterwards in previous passages. And what woke me up was when I read that God is Love in Joyce Meyer's "Reduce Me to Love." I also believe that because all these churches were headed by men, and women were to be submissive or not truly empowered, there was very much a lack of intimacy there.

But when I found out that God is Love, I turned to God because I knew what love was so well, just not mature love. And this is when I found love, in the institution of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, and only in that institution. And so I came to be very intimate with the Bible, not to mention that the Catholic Church assembled the original Bible. And it was in those pages that I found God.

Much later during my journey, God became a part of me and me a part of Him. We became more and more intimate. And I still looked in church after church trying to find such intimacy. I so convinced myself that the Catholic Church must be masters at such intimacy because they went all the way back to the Apostles that I continued to go back especially there searching for it. And when I never found it, I got very angry and it reminded me of my own family and what I yearned so much for and never received. And I finally came to the realization with God as my teacher that intimacy does not exist anymore in the institution, in the walls, of the church nor in the leadership positions when people put on their hats of parent, leader, pastor, pope, preacher, reverend, minister, etc. where laws are like fences of the heart that prevent one from achieving true intimacy. These are all barriers, divisions of the One Kingdom, that actually prevent intimacy.

Intimacy is a higher form of love. The way I understand it, there first comes the basis of love known as esteem, then a higher level known as absolute acceptance, then an even higher level known as devotion or obedient love without conditions, and then an even higher level than that known as intimacy or the condition when one allows the fullness of another's being to enter into his or her soul and vis-à-vis. This then leads to an even higher level known as surrender or freedom where one trusts another so emphatically to help free his or her soul by way of devotion to him or her and devotions to each other. And then the highest form of love from that is joyful bliss in the conjoining of each other's souls into one complete and beautiful soul. This is when you find yourself in the Garden.

I say this because churches, and especially the Catholic Church, claim that they are the Kingdom of God on earth. But no. If this were so, they would understand what I am talking about. Intimacy in the institution started to leave once Christ left. Instead, intimacy resides in the

personable person when each individual takes off his or her hat and just reveals his or herself to you openly and freely without thinking that they have to put on airs while wearing their hats. It is like the movie Easy Rider where probably one of the most patriotic people from the heart goes searching for the true intimate America, where in reality he had certain stereotypes of people and places that he had to break up and get rid of. Stereotypes isn't reality, though on the outside it might seem true. It isn't truth but only perception (perceived illusion). Once you begin breaking up these in your superego, you start breaking all kinds of barriers and you rid yourself of critical (judgmental) thinking. Your superego turns less critical and your anxiety lessens as well. Your phobias decrease and you become freer. Yes, intimacy doesn't exist in the "rules and laws" (walls) of the institution. Intimacy only exists within each of us who choose to reside within the walls of our own perceived institution.

So then, my advice to you is to stop looking for love and intimacy in an institution and from religion. Instead, wherever you go and wherever you are, let go of the institution and concentrate only on the individual person. Let go of labels. See Pastor Dave as Dave. See Pope John Paul as John Paul. See Daddy Jack as Jack. See Mommy Jane as Jane. See Child Tim as Tim. See Brother Chris as Chris. See Wife Kathy as Kathy. For that is where you'll find intimacy.

Dissolve these walls that divide and you'll find out that you've been in God's One and Only Church all the while and all your brethren have been too. My love, don't you realize that you've been in Eden all the while riding down the River with God the Spirit on the way to the Garden? Dissolve the barriers by knowing this: **Where there is love, there is God and so too is His Kingdom.** This is the end of illusion and the beginning of mature reality. Intimacy is what Christ meant when he said that if you obey me (devote yourself to me), you will come to find that I am in my Father and He is in me and you are in me.

We are all members of Christ who believe in him and he will take us to our Father in the time only known to him because he knows the way and we will travel there in him and, thus, within the Spirit of God himself.

249. I Saw God

January 11, 2005. I had a dream and I saw God. He was a shadowy figure in a doorway and He said to me, "Tim, you are scared and making yourself sick and in knots. Focus on me and relax yourself and you will be better." And so I did release all my stress over to Him and relaxed and I began feeling better and I was almost all-the-way healed by morning. I said to myself that I must commit to God in this and God then said, "Now you know. You will commit to flying."

In my previous job, I devoted myself to God even though my boss was abusive. Devotion is what I had to learn even with a person of the world tugging at me from the other side. When my boss became abusive the third time, after me being in the position for a year, this time calling my actions stupid three times in a row to my face, I knew it was time to leave. I went to his boss who was my supervisor and within one week, I was in another position I believe provided me by God. And in this position I found that I had to fly a lot and I had a fear of flying. So I faced my fear of abusive people and won. Of abusive religions and won. And now I face my fear of

closed places. I was honest with my new boss and my supervisor of my fear and they were kind and considerate about it. I prayed and prayed about it and tried to control my own destiny in it, using excuses, blaming, rationalizing, etc. so I wouldn't have to go through it—like Jesus in the garden.

See, I went on a business trip in a car and I felt like I got the stomach flu. But it was primarily stress in traveling knowing subconsciously that I was getting closer to flying. This is when I had my dream and God was in it. And I admitted my dream to my wife and with the help of her and Joyce Meyer's "Running from Your Fears", I knew that God was taking out of my desert of Stage 2 and into Stage 3 of surrender (full trust and commitment) to Him completely in my primary goal of Stage 11 (freedom).

This one I have to fully rely on God to be released from the fear. Was I to fly now? Not necessarily. I realized that this is not what God said. He said to commit to being free by fully trusting and committing myself to Him. Yes, my intimacy with him is really showing and now leading me to tackle my greatest fears—fears of losing control, losing myself, and dying—all wrapped up into a fear of flying.

So, God will take me into Stage 4 of learning onto Stage 5 of focused discipline (applying). This will be my time to fly. How appropriate the words "to fly" denoting "to be free."

And only two days later have I found a website of clarity on God and energy that also talks about duality as I have spoken of. I am indeed learning.

250. How Do I Know Who I Am?

How do I know who I am? Let's first understand interrupted versus uninterrupted normal childhood development. Jesus knew who he was right away growing up. He was the son of God in his own right with his own unique purpose. Jesus' normal childhood development was uninterrupted because, when others came along to claim him and tried to (most likely ignorantly) steer him toward the normal moral discipline of the day and away from himself and his own normal childhood development, he knew better. He stood his ground. Jesus never lost sight of himself or who he was and his purpose. And it was his choice, his free-will, to obey the way of his elders. It was of little importance to do so as the Law of His Father superceded any law of moral behavior impinged upon him by man. He knew truth and saw with great clarity the lies and deception in the moral establishments built by man. He spoke his mind and when the church could no longer control him, they excommunicated him. And when he still became a threat, they tried to ruin him. And when they began losing church members to him, they plotted to exterminate him. And when the eyes of the church members began to open, the church exterminated him. But because they failed at all the above, for he still lives to this day in each one of us, we now have proof that it is Jesus who was and is correct. True Love is what manifests and survives eternally.

It is no different today. Today, there are plots of churches to suppress or exterminate prophets of today. That is against those that refused to allow their normal childhood development, their own self, to be interrupted in the name of conformity to a system that impinges rules and laws on

people in order to control them—although they believe they do it in the name of love. So, can you fault them or forgive them? Forgive them because they know not what they do and they can't see true love from deceptive or illusionary love.

What is normal behavior and abnormal behavior? Normal behavior is one's own practice of self in conjunction with God uninterrupted. Abnormal behavior is one's own practice of self in conjunction with God interrupted, which is the same thing as being taken out of practice in conjunction with God. And when I mean God, I mean our Father who is also Love. As I have said before, intercessory is abnormal. The only intercessory that is ever required is when love must be interjected in order for someone to get back to his or her true self because that is love's purpose—to transform someone into to his or her true self.

Most people do not know what normal behavioral development looks like and, thus, are not themselves intimate with God. Religious doctrine, in it's truest essence, promotes abnormal behavior although those in each of their respective religions would beg to disagree. But it is true. Religious doctrine is counterproductive to faith and intimacy with God. If a person is intimate with God, his or her faith replaces religious doctrine with guiding truth via love—providing the boundaries of healthy and normal behavior. Those who cannot solely rely on faith to become intimate with God fear the hammer of God. And this fear interrupts normal childhood development by instilling shame and guilt, which in themselves disconnects a person from God and, thus, one's true self.

So then, this is why one must grow to know God his or her Father. There is no sin in normal childhood behavior or development. If a child is encouraged to be him or herself in the love of his or her True Father, he or she will grow up fine because the Spirit via his or her faith will guide him or her. And there is no better guide than the Spirit.

251. Am I A Deliverer, A Peacemaker?

I always loved delivering myself in helping people reach an overall goal. What is the difference between being the center of attention and being in the center to attend for God? Being the center of attention is delving into the world demanding and controlling so that one may be idolized. Being in the center to attend for God means being the central hub of light and wellbeing emanating to others (parts of the whole). This is the opportunity of a deliverer and the amazing opportunity to practice continually loving and pouring out positive energy to many individuals all at once from many different cultures and using my spiritual gift of creative communication to help bring them together (unifying them) in a certain harmony. All this while delivering to them the light and love of God and peace on earth. Peacemaking is the deliverance of love to hopefully promote harmonious functioning of parts for most effective results. Deliverance means to bring into a common action, movement, or condition; harmonize. It does this through attachment (through intimate relations) so as to form a coordination complex, to be or become coordinate especially so as to act together in a smooth concerted [synergetic] way, to combine by means of a coordinate bond. And coordinated means to be able to use more than one set of muscle movements to a single end.

252. What (Whose) Family Do I Belong To?

What family should I belong to? The problem, as I see it with most families (nuclear, religious, business, etc.), is that they are for the most part fake (fictitious)—an illusion of virtue. They talk a good talk keeping up appearances, but none that I have seen in the world really works so hard to be in virtue. So there are the families of the world and then there is the family of heaven to which your own family can be part of—the family of the Father, Son, Holy Spirit, the angels, and all the constituents of true and intimate love.

And what does a virtuous family look like? It is not virtuous because it obeys whatever laws are placed before them. A family is virtuous because it does not fear transcending law in the name of intimate and unconditional love. A virtuous family understands that a new creation evolves over time in a process of faith and grace to which a loving, gentle, and compassionate person comes forth—not through demands, not through intimidation, not through anything instantaneous nor correction of any kind, but through a process of faith accompanied by mercy and in working hard with God in such faith. Yes, a virtuous family is one who works hard at their love with God's constant and unconditional love and merciful grace.

I find virtuous any family and any person who works hard at developing themselves in these twelve principles that I believe make up the evolutionary process of virtuous family and personal development. I wish I had a father like this. Now I do.

MY FATHER . . .

CHOSE ME

- Those who choose you because they believe you to be a beautiful part of Love (which is your Father's Image). Those who decide to keep you and that you are worth keeping. This will help you feel worth in who you are.

SACRIFICED FOR ME

- Those who hope you to have faith in and follow (choose the way of) your Love you now see in yourself. Those who care so much about you to restructure their own lives in a way that is meaningful to you so that you can further develop your own. This will help you find hope in who you are.

TRUSTED ME

- Those who trust in you that you will not forsake them that they honestly commit themselves to you and your Love. This will help you trust in and honestly commit to who you are.

TOOK THE TIME TO TEACH ME

- Those who also open themselves to you so that you will learn something about life. This will help you listen patiently and be open to who you are.

TOOK THE TIME TO UNDERSTAND ME

- Those who listen patiently to (hear plus believe) you in your connection (conversations) with your Love and you. Those who always searched for the truth in me and empathized with my

pain and my joys and everything in between I was going through. This will help you understand who you are.

HONORED ME

- Those who honor and respect you and your Love for your courage and integrity. This will help you honor and respect who you are.

LOVED ME

- Those who treasure (love) you and your Love and the bond you have together. Those who treasure your actions commanded by your Love that, in-turn, demonstrates your uniqueness and unique relationship of your Love and you. Those who value you for who and how you are, however unique. This will help you love and be bonded with who you are giving you self-esteem.

FORGAVE ME

- Those who accept you in all your humanness and uniqueness despite any human frailties you may have and have shown (forgive you) realizing your connection with and already acceptance of you by your Love just the way you are. This will help you fully accept who you are just the way you are.

DEVOTED HIMSELF TO ME

- Those who devote their hearts to you because you and your Love is so powerfully beautiful and radiant together that it outweighs all else. This will help you be absolutely devoted to who you are.

GAVE ME MY HOME

- Those who fully and deeply share their hearts and home (be intimate) with you because they feel so secure through knowing the sanctity of you and your Love. This will help you be intimate and secure with who you are.

SET ME FREE

- Those who recognize your True Soul Mate (your Love of whom you belong to) and, thus, your God-given right to choose your unique place within your new home because of your Love. This will help you recognize who you really are and Who you belong to.

GAVE ME PEACE

- Those who take you as true (a spirit of love that is true) and let you and your Love live in a place of peace, harmony, and joy together forever more. Then you will not worry because you live in love in your new home. You will just be. This will help you be and live in peace, harmony, and joy in who you are and in unity with Whom you are with forever more.

253. Commit To and Trust That Freedom is Yours in Christ Jesus

The Kingdom is like a sphere (body) of pure light, and love is it's life's blood. Before we enter the Kingdom, there is the flesh (fears, baggage, hang ups) that adheres to the outside of the body and covers the light. Now you don't have the true appreciation of the light, but when given the

passage into the Kingdom, all the flesh is vanquished away into nothingness, never to be remembered and never for you to be able to hide behind ever again. It is then that you will realize that nothing else ever mattered but this love and that you are the light of all the world. And it is here that you will realize how happy and free you are and how unhappy you were when you kept hold of the flesh. And only then will you choose God forever and ever. For the light is Truth (the true you) and the flesh is just an illusion. And then there are the pressures (the forces trying to penetrate the body to force it to succumb to their ways) to which the energy of the light immobilizes, zaps, and vanquishes as well. This has to do with the Sword I speak about in the next. So then, my son, commit to and trust that freedom is yours in Christ Jesus. Only then will you discover and come to appreciate that which you really are. And remember: **Where there is love, there is God and so too is His Kingdom.** You are of the Kingdom of God.

254. My Sword of Christ

There are the pressures of the world (the forces trying to penetrate the body to force it to succumb to their ways) to which the energy of the light zaps, immobilizes, and vanquishes by way of the Sword of Christ, the Sword of Truth, the Sword of God's Secret Wisdom and Understanding. And this sword's name is Fuck You and its purpose of striking dead, detaching and vanquishing the evil forces of the world is known as Fuck Off. Jesus says this in the politest way: "Let your no be no. Don't give your pearls to pigs." It is the highest point of confidence in oneself in knowing who one is in Christ Jesus, in the Spirit of God Almighty. Let "No!" be your sword of the almighty. No need to justify because you know exactly who you are—you are the righteousness of God the Almighty in and through Christ Jesus.

Let no person tell you that you are wrong in what you do and how you do it. Let no person tell you that you must do this or do that to be saved, to be right, to be righteous, to be good, to be bad, to be this and to be that. You are not to be proved. You are proof. The world will not like you, it will try to meddle into you, it will offer its hand to save you. It will wind up destroying you, banishing you because you will not succumb to it. It will unleash forces after forces against you. But no matter what or how many forces, you are the light and the forces of darkness are flustered once they approach the light and are zapped and immobilized once they touch the light. They are immobilized, awaiting their fate in the hands of God Almighty and in the hands of you to which God and Christ transfer all power to take and vanquish all their evil. You are the F. U. and they be the F. O.s. They know not what they do, but they do it just the same. They have been deceived and will not listen to you either, though your wisdom and knowledge of the world surpasses even theirs living in the world. And when you know who you are—that is, the light—no one will be able to destroy you and no one will overcome you.

And let no person—no woman and no man—analyze you. For one cannot end their analyzing without resulting some form of judgment on you. So then, why even analyze yourself? If you truly wish to commit to and trust in the freedom that is yours in Christ Jesus, analyze no one, not even yourself, and rely on the Spirit that is Christ Jesus. Spreading wisdom in helping you find the Spirit who is the answer within yourself? Yes. But analyzing, no. It only goes to feed their own ego and yours yourself.

There is a saying that one must find their own ego so that they can then choose to surrender it. The problem with most and many is that they truly do not know who to surrender their ego to. God shows you your own ego so that you can choose its fate and, thus, your own. Is your own ego Spirit or not? Is it focused and walking within the Kingdom of God or in the World of Fate in Earth? God made you. Will you give yourself up to Him so that your Spirit may be reborn again in others? This is the meaning of the Alpha and the Omega and of everlasting life.

255. My Religion is In, Of, For, and By God in Heaven

God heals and guides us in our own unique way. But He will heal you and He will provide you love. What I write here is written in love from the Holy Spirit within me.

For Christian leaders in the community, much of what I write is from studying natural surroundings independent of special revelation, known as natural theology, and much is indeed from special revelation. I am not saying I am as the Apostles, but much of what you read today I believe has been given me by way of Christ (Gal 1:11-12). Much of this you know and some of it I believe will inspire you even more. But in any right, it is an affirmation of the words of our Christ (JN 16:25-28).

For all kinds of psyche theorists, philosophers, and scientists, I'll speak to you in your own language. The theories of id (moral lawlessness based on fear of keeping and facing it, i.e. fear of the superego or sin or apathy or evil or sacrilegious), natural ego (indivisibility or self or caring or God's child), and natural superego (moral law based on fear of losing it, i.e. fear of the id or self-righteous or control or good or religious) are described but in less explicit ways. The ego always strives for peace and, thus, chooses by free-will to either be the peacemaker between the superego and id delusionally providing itself quick fixes of peace or gives up, faces God, and leaves the id and superego to kill each other off in order to gain real sustaining peace. The thing is that when one chooses God, he or she gets immersed in His training through the Spirit and finds love and compassion for the innocent and for the ignorant in the world in confusion and in pain. This is when, after he or she has been brought up (parented) and is mature, trained, wise, and immersed in the Spirit, goes into the world to free those who are innocently and ignorantly involved in the war of the world and brings them to love, to the Spirit, to God. These are what Jesus calls the peacemakers, and they are the children (sons and daughters) of God. It is not the duty of the child of God to keep the id and the superego apart from warring. It is the duty of the child of God to bring those from the darkness into the light.

The realm of the id versus the superego is what is known as the darkness within oneself or in the world and is also known as the dynamics of hell or the depths of hell or hell or the place where the devil lives. The opposite realm of bliss, joy, harmony, peace, unity is known as heaven or the light within oneself and in the world (heaven-on-earth) where God lives. The ego is in the middle of these two realms known as limbo or purgatory or alone. If the ego wishes to be useful, not alone, included, and get out of limbo it must choose either the dysfunctional world (darkness) or functional world (heaven or light) after it is born. Most of the time it has no choice but to choose early because of the dysfunction of the world placed upon it and it chooses the world because it's easily visible and immediate and apparently immediately gratifying. And 99 per cent of the time, the child is involuntarily forced into some form of religion with moral law

imposed upon it known as dysfunctionality right away rather than being given the chance to believe, hope, and trust (have faith) in the light when only introduced to it known as functionality. This is because of the superego's fear that the child will be immediately choose the darkness when, in fact, it is being introduced to the darkness through them.

Very, very few children get introduced to the light (unconditional love, heaven-on-earth) right away and be allowed to live in it. Instead, they are disrupted by the world almost right away. A child born into the world rings a bell in the world's ear almost instantaneously that they in the war between the id and the superego rush to grab before the other, like vultures swooping down on its prey. Neither is of the light. It is better off to take the child from the world and immerse him or her in love away from the judges of moral law and those of moral lawlessness. But the first thing most of us do is place him or her in a religion (and place a sign on them giving them a fake identity of a good little boy or girl of so and so) to protect (actually hide) them from the sacrilegious moral lawlessness of the world. But behold, you have just introduced them to the moral lawlessness of the world through religion's war of good versus evil because they both must coexist together. This coexistence is a universal law and, thus you can try to hide the child on the outside but you'll never be able to hide the child from him or herself on the inside. Good trying to defeat evil and vis-à-vis is insane and leads to insanity. Rather, immerse them in the religion of Love letting them live their lives in the realm of heaven-on-earth and away from the realm of the world's endless addiction of good versus evil.

There is not one sermon in religion where the war of good versus evil does not come up. Love is the only religion designed by God and illustrated to the world through His son, Jesus Christ. And during that time, it (this religion) was in the world but it is no longer in the world. I know. I've searched everywhere. It doesn't exist in the world. It only exists within the church in each of us because of the Spirit spearheaded by God in the greatest church of all known as the Kingdom of Heaven. We are no longer of this world but all belong to a single church that is of heaven itself. Do not let anyone tell you otherwise. Do not let anyone use Matthew 16:13-20 against you. For without the understanding of independence (freedom and autonomy of one self delivered unto each of us by God through the Spirit) in the words of Christ in Matthew 16:21-28, Matthew 16:13-20 is meaningless.

We will find that one cannot truly find love without allowing a Spirit greater than the superego to replace it and that Spirit is the Holy Spirit. Once this begins, the dirt from the superego is pushed out into the ego, which is then pushed out through communication and given up via a personal relationship with the Father, Son and Holy Spirit. Because of this, the id begins to die as well, which I think most of you will not dispute. Moral lawlessness cannot survive without moral law and vis-à-vis. This is why wars are forms of insanity, and religion (those that produce/make/provide moral law and continue to instill the framework of good against evil on others) is, in reality, a sin factory. Don't they realize that they are propagating (feeding into) the thing they wish to destroy? But when one's self is drawn into love (which is God), both id and superego die and, thus, wars die with it. Id and Superego are the divisiveness (schism, splitting) of self because self somehow got the idea that it was not worthy enough to be completely whole of itself when in fact it was because it was in love with God while in the womb. This is why everyone wants to get back to the womb. Self is indivisible and Love is the only thing that will make complete oneself again. And since God is Love, God is the only thing. Self (will-power)

cannot do it by itself because it is already split. It requires a supernatural power to re-complete itself. And once you believe God is Love and that He created you before the womb (Jeremiah 1), you've began your "self" relationship with God and this becomes possible.

What we do dispute is whether there is a supernatural force at work. I believe Freud's theory of the three were mostly correct. Skinner's theory of reward and punishment were again mostly correct in the communication and behavioral (disposition) field. However, , a type of rewards-and-punishment thinking counteracts faith in and acceptance of the love of our Lord. Rogers' theories on empathy and behavioral therapy through counseling, I believe, are mostly correct. However, the essence of what I have written are closer to existential psychology as depicted through Kierkegaard, Heidegger, and Satre. But then, you may see traces of empiricist philosophy, or rationalist, or romanticist, or utilitarian, or analytical.

In fact, I will go as far to say that all notable psyche theorists or philosophers are mostly correct because what each is trying to define, understand, and seek is pure love. In other words, after all is said and done and we compile all the theories, we will find out that the result is God. You may see what you believe are some of my own theories, but like the psyche theorist drawing theories from sitting in the empathetic chair within their own source of their own perspectives, I sit in the chair within the source of my own perspective of the Holy Spirit. The scientific community must come to accept the supernatural phenomena of the Holy Spirit as fact and not persist in trying to explain it as anything else. Yes, my own perception of the Holy Spirit may be a unique perspective translated from the mysterious transmission of the Holy Spirit in general, which is definitely defined as a mystery where no one person can understand it or translate it exactly—or to put it another way, understanding it by how the Spirit speaks plainly to and uniquely for each of us.

But in contrast, most or all of the scientific theories above define the supernatural world as only one's own imaginative perception from within one's own world. But the Holy Spirit is indeed fact as a unified general understanding and feeling of its being are affirmed through many people in the present, who can relate to the people who have lived even in the past through their traditionally oral and written conversations. Therefore, we never have to reinvent the wheel because the legacy that the Holy Spirit left us from the past (which we came to have faith that it was always with us) allows us to progressively create intimately with it in the present in hopes for us to experience a more loving future.

The greatest problem in philosophizing is that many philosophers categorize themselves, or box themselves in to one theory. No person is wrong in their theories, but then again, each theory is only one piece of the never-ending puzzle or mystery. But each is a part of the mystery, which is known as the Holy Spirit. When we ask God's will to become our own, the Godly person appears to communicate or identify with various philosophical theories wrapped into one body. This is because God is all these theories and so much more. Therefore, all righteous theories are respected because each is of God. The question is whether the theory is righteous (in whole or in part)? In other words, there are only two cruxes to any theory that really matter and are the basis of our everlasting life or impending doom. They are either practices of light or darkness. And the Holy Spirit is Counselor of pure and true light (JN 14:16-17).

Yes, life is not just black and white, but shades of gray and all can be perceived of a myriad of beautiful colors. But there is a defining fence line between light and darkness and that light is Christ the Gatekeeper. If we choose to depend upon other people, we would be continuously jumping back and forth across this line. We would find ourselves on one side in some people's views and, at the exact same time, on the other side in other people's views. We would be jumping back and forth so much just to appease people, we would never figure out our own views and our own identities. This is why we cannot rely on our identities from others, but give all up to a supernatural being who is not of this world. When we do this, then we can focus on ourselves and find our own true identity. And the more we give up, the more of our identities we come to find. But we must choose our own identities in two ways: either as part of the light (heaven) or as part of the darkness (world). The more we follow our God, the more pure in heart (but not worldly perfect) we will become. The worldly definition of perfection is in deeds, in thing. The heavenly definition of perfection is in the purity of the heart. And so the pure of heart shall see God, but still not need to be perfect in the worldly sense. If we see God as pure and nurturing love, then we will become continually closer to pure and nurturing love. This is why we must have one pure view, which obviously cannot be human. That view can only come from the Holy Spirit and is a common denominator in every one of us who wishes to receive it. And that is the Religion of Love, what Paul calls the Law (of Love).

Who is right and who is wrong? The Ten Commandments are the governing law provided by God. They are the "have-to" laws when we are not in touch with the Holy Spirit. Jesus Christ shows us how to be in touch with the Holy Spirit within us. This, I believe, was Christ's main objective on earth. His life, death, and resurrection were for this sole purpose—for us to be in personal contact with God's Will. When we now come in contact with the Holy Spirit, "have-to" turns into "want-to". And with "want to" comes His Amazing Grace, because God knows that we will still make mistakes. But without them, without our vulnerabilities, we could never become intimate with Him and will never become intimate with each other. Without the ability to forgive, there can be no intimacy. Thus, through His grace, we are purified when our "want to" is put into action. We can "want to" all we want, but it must be put into action. We do not have to worry about stepping out because we have been sanctified and, at the immediate moment we step, we also step into grace. Even if we falter, we falter in grace. So then, there is no reason not to pick ourselves up and continue on our righteous path to God. This was all planned by God in the beginning.

There is only one form of philosophy that is unrefutable and can be identified by everyone. That form is true love. People can try to philosophize true love all they want, but the truth of the matter is that you will never completely understand it because it cannot be described by reason or feeling. It is most apparent when both reason and feeling are in equilibrium (balance), but it still remains a mystery. There is the feeling of love and then there is love, which is not just a feeling but a knowing as well of intimacy, security, freedom, devotion, acceptance, desire. This is the mature (unconditional) love. The immature (conditional) love is the feeling of it at the beginning of relationship where we are compelled to sacrifice ourselves blindly and then commit where knowledge and wisdom and respect have not come yet. And mature love cannot come if we sacrifice ourselves to the idolatry of another who is not God. The compulsion of immature love is due to the fear of losing that which was found. And, of course, losing another who is not God is a true reality. God never abandons, so we can calm down and become rational. He is not

going anywhere. When we idolize another who is not God, we tend to try to control (set conditions on), which sets us up for huge disappointment. I am not saying to enter into relationship with another, but place all your hopes in God, not in another and your relationship with the other who is not God will most likely last for all eternity, as well.

Some revelations I share with you may appear oversimplified or simplified solutions to very complex problems. This I understand, but I'm not here to delve into intricate and complex psychology and therapy. First of all, I am not a professional psychologist and I don't claim to be. But I am an empathetic and astute person. I also pray that my words don't sound like some psychobabble mambo-jambo. My desire is to enlighten people so that they may begin their own journey or find a way back to the true journey they began long ago but got diverted somehow. I'm not here to hold people's hands or take them through some general psychological therapy session. Each person is unique and has unique problems and unique ways of dealing with those problems. And I'm not saying that you should agree with everything I say either. You have an intelligent mind of your own. So if you read something you don't agree with, I only ask that you don't let that something keep you from finding other things somewhere else that may prove useful or valuable to you. My hope is that there is something I've said that will give you hope and inspire you and empower you to take the journey of love and healing.

256. I Am the Truth, the Life, and the Way

My son, now I will reveal to you My truth. You are born into the world but not born of the world. I Am your Father. There is no other. I bore you here, no one else—not your mother, not your father, not any church. I raised you—Me and Me only—not your father, not your mother, not any church. In the world, people claim to bear and raise other people, but because they are in the world, they expect you to conform to the world's ways. Your mother expects you to conform her way; your father expects you to conform his way; the church expects you to conform their way. And when you don't conform, they don't want anything to do with you. This is the way of the world. They believe they are not in the world and that you are. They are under deception and believe you to be lost—a lost child, a lost soul. They cannot come out of their own self because they are actually terrified of Me and more terrified of the devil. This is because they define themselves in the struggle of good versus evil. Have you ever noticed that when you put these two words together it spells goodevil (good devil)? They are being deceived in their own strife.

But, My son, how can someone claim to bear you and raise you and then disown you, abandon you? Who does this? And when I told you it was ok to go back to the priest and tell him why you are so sad that the church didn't love you and that your life was filled with a lot of addictions, obsessions, and strife, what did the priest tell you? “Well, have you confessed that the catholic church is the right and only church? Come back and profess through a sacrament of reconciliation because, you being raised catholic, are living in mortal sin and cannot go to heaven. And also, because you were not married catholic, you and your wife are not married and any love you share for one another is not the right kind of love but the wrong kind of love. She must sign a paper releasing you or her into the church. Then all will be right.”

But is that what I told you? I told you to go seek help. I told you I will be with you. I told you that you were the sweetest little boy, and still are to Me, and that I am so proud of you. I told you to go start your training with Me. And you did all these things. Not only are you My son, but you are my obedient, my devoted son. You are My reason that I made man, you are the reason I died, you are the reason I AM. Yes, my child, there was never any of this by the world: “Oh, my child, I am so sorry. Oh, how I love you. Come. Forget these rules and forget these laws. You’ve always been forgiven. I’ve accepted you when you were born. Oh, how I love you. And come, bring your wife so I may show how much I accept her. My son has returned. It is a joyous day.” Instead, all you received was a “stay-in-hell until you sign here in your blood.” They talk of faith and interfaith, but it is all lies so that you may one day see their way and come into it. To the world, interfaith is only a ruse to promote themselves more upfront so to entice you greater to their side. They see you as evil or gone to the darkside. According to them, you must be reinitiated and then conform. And, indeed, they blamed you, didn’t they? They never apologized and they never will. They passed you by. It’s because, My son, they are of the world. And it’s not just them. Many claim they know Me and are of Me.

Here is what I truly and only command of you:

“On one occasion an expert in the law stood up to test Jesus. “Teacher, “ he asked, “what must I do to inherit eternal life?”

“What is written in the Law?”, he replied. “How do you read it?”

He answered: “‘Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your strength and with all your mind’; and, ‘Love your neighbor as yourself.’”

“You have answered correctly,” Jesus replied. “Do this and you will live.”

But he wanted to justify himself, so he asked Jesus. “And who is my neighbor?”

In reply Jesus said: “A man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho, when he fell into the hands of robbers. They stripped him of his clothes, beat him and went away, leaving him half dead. A priest happened to be going down the same road, and when he saw the man, he passed by on the other side. So too, a Levite, when he came to the place and saw him, passed by on the other side. But a Samaritan [as you know was considered the lowest of the lowest scum to trample the earth], as he traveled, came where the man was, and when he saw him, he took pity on [empathized with] him. He went to him and bandaged his wounds, pouring on oil and wine. Then he put the man on his own donkey, took him to an inn and took care of him. The next day he took out two silver coins and gave them to the innkeeper. ‘Look after him,’ he said, ‘and when I return, I will reimburse you for any extra expense you may have.’

“Which of these three do you think was a neighbor to the man who fell into the hands of robbers?”

The expert in the law replied, “The one who had mercy on him.”

Jesus told him, “Go and do likewise.”

You will find this and more in Luke 10:25-41. See My son, this is what I did for you. And you replied. I didn't distract you. I didn't make you sign this, do this, and do that before I chose you, before I chose to accept you, before we began our life together. They don't see Me for what I really am. They see Me as this larger-than-life-itself being that would in one stroke, have nothing to do with them and in another maybe come around to say hello, but more than likely, send one of My lesser beings to do that work. When in truth, I Am life. I Am Life. How is it that I can teach you humility and have none myself? And because you listened, I gave you the Way. I could easily give them the Way, but they don't want it. They want to play.

257. I am in the Kingdom

I realized today that I am in the Kingdom of God. And that once I believed in Jesus' life, death, and resurrection, I was in the Kingdom. However, I did not know it until now—until I came to the stage of intimacy in my life through my devotion to God. And perhaps I started to realize little by little a while ago when I saw the Spirit take me over the next mountain and there was a tent and the Spirit said to me: “Now go and speak with your Father and confess what you have done and why you have done it.” And so I did and He loved me as He spoke to me and then said, “Now go into the City and be free and have fun finding your way and your self. But STAY IN THE CITY.” Here I made my home with my Father and in my Father and my Father made his home in me.

I was fortunate because up until this time, the Spirit lead me to my Father and I followed him. And in my stage of acceptance, I accepted Jesus as my Lord in my heart (I was no longer ashamed). Romans 10:10,11. And during my stage of devotion (obedience) to him, I saw my angels along my path guarding the ways out. I hadn't heard so many “No's” in all my life. These were my guardian angels, spirits sending messages to those in my life who had the power to say “yes” to my request that would have led me astray of the path.” It was then that I knew that God had sent the Spirit to retrieve me and the Spirit took with him many of God's angels so that I may not lose my way as I was coming home to see my Dad.

I am in the Kingdom and the process from Belief to Peace (Coexistence) is the process of the Kingdom. God teaches His children from within the Kingdom. Once I thought that the process was how to get to the Kingdom and now I realize that the process is the Way of the Kingdom. I was so lost, I couldn't tell where the world ended and the Kingdom began. I am in the Kingdom. I am protected. It is my choice whether I want to fool around with the slings and arrows from evil and its ways. Like when I rested in the bubble as a child with God protecting me as I slept, it does not need to be time to go to bed for this. I may now rest without worry anytime all my days. I am in the Kingdom. I am safe, I am free to roam and make friendships. I no longer need to father anyone and no one needs to father me. I no longer need to be looking for a father. I am in the Kingdom. All there is now are friends. My Father is my father. I walk on earth in the Kingdom of my Father. And one day I will be blissful and happy when the Kingdom is then in Heaven itself after I die. My body may leave me but I will remain in the Kingdom of my Father. For the Kingdom is my inheritance not because of my hard work but simply because God is my

Father—because I belong there, I’ve always belonged there—and I love Him with all my heart and soul. God has unwavering love and mercy for all His children.
Thank you, my Father.

258. So Then, What of the Catholic Church?

Brothers and sisters, allow Paul, my brother and mentor in Christ Jesus, to help us one and all of the future of the Catholic Church (and all who concentrate so much on works and laws for salvation) as it pertains to the Kingdom of God and our guilt, anger, and sorrow on seeing it how it is today. Guilt because how its laws and works for salvation have been taught us since such a young age, and we choose to let them strike us even today. Anger because you want to be part of her and get her to wake up, but yet you know you cannot because your salvation is indeed by faith as given to your conscience through the Holy Spirit. And this they still do not understand, they still do not see. Is it because there is a certain dichotomy between Peter and Paul. I cannot say and it may not be this at all. I speak of Peter in early passages. Peter is one person and Paul another, but sharing the same Spirit. Following men takes people in all different directions, but following the Spirit takes people in the same direction. So, perhaps there has been too much following man in one. Only God knows and has done what God has decided to do for the good of all mankind. And yes, sorrow *because* they do not understand the salvation we have by faith and that this allows us to directly experience in our hearts and souls God’s unconditional love provided directly from Him. For He lives in us and we in Him to those who believe with their hearts and confess with their mouths that Jesus is Lord. This is from the direction of the Holy Spirit given by Paul in Romans 10:1-13.

To the following I refer to the Catholic Church, but especially the Roman Catholic Church. Read Romans 9, 10, 11, and 12 and substitute the Catholic Church (and all who concentrate so much on works and laws for salvation) for Israel, and substitute the rest of the Faith who grow in Christ by faith and are saved by faith for the Gentiles.

For all who feel guilty for leaving the churches to follow their hearts and consciences being lead by the faith and love through Christ Jesus, this is important. Do not fret, but be free. Paul felt as you felt and he went through what you are going through. And this is what he says: “I speak the truth in Christ—I am not lying, my conscience confirms it in the Holy Spirit—I have great sorrow and unceasing anguish in my heart.” Romans 9:1,2. Continue to read all of Romans 9, 10, 11, 12 and take special notice of the following from Romans 11:22-36 so that your guilt will be gone forever.

“Consider therefore the kindness and sternness of God: sternness to those who fell, but his kindness to you, provided that you continue in his kindness. Otherwise you also will be cut off. And if they do not persist in [there ways of laws and works for salvation], they will be grafted in, for God is able to graft them in again. After all, if you were cut out of an olive tree that is wild by nature, and contrary to nature were grafted into a cultivated olive tree [religious institution of law and works], how much more readily will these, the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree! I do not want you to be ignorant of this mystery, brothers, so that you may not be conceited: [The Catholic Church and others who concentrate on law and works for salvation] has experienced a hardening in part until the full number of [those who grow in Christ by faith

and are saved by faith] has come in. And so all [the Catholic Church and others who concentrate on law and works for salvation] will be saved [when Christ comes again].”

“As far as the gospel is concerned, they are enemies on your account; but as far as election is concerned, they are loved on account of the patriarchs, for God’s gifts and his call are irrevocable. Just as you who were at one time disobedient to God have now received mercy as a result of their [the church’s] disobedience, so they too have now become disobedient in order that they may now receive mercy as a result of God’s mercy to you. For God has bound all men over to disobedience so that he may have mercy on them all.”

This is done for the humility of all men and women in Christ Jesus so that we may continue to have compassion for all our brothers and sisters. May the love of God grow through us all more and more everyday through our Lord and may we accept one another equally in Christ Jesus. Amen.

259. So Where is Home?

A most common theme has come up these days in my life and that theme is Home. Where is my home? I tried a religion as my home. I even went back to the Catholic Church to try them as my home. I found them not to be my home. I then decided that my workplace would be my home. I was in one department that was too rigid. That was not my home. Then I was in another department that was apathetic (spiritless or “whatever” attitude). That was not my home. And now I will try a department that seems to be in the middle, to which they asked me to come and lay my head there. And then I realized, as I said before, that I am in the Kingdom. That the world is my home. You see, like a little child, I have been scared to leave home and to venture too far off from home. Was it my upbringing or my feelings of abandonment? I don’t know. All I do know is to beware of those that will not let you leave home (smother you like mother hens or don’t see you as credible enough to take care of yourself) and those who could care less (apathetic) if you do or not leave. The meek shall inherit the earth and I suppose I am of the meek. For wherever I am in the world, I am home. And to wherever I am allowed to rest my head, there I belong.

After Jesus Christ died, the purity of the Faith was bastardized—so much more bastardized today that Christians don’t even know what Christianity is anymore. The Catholic Church just became a bastard—abusive and non-feeling. And the Reformation Churches just became “pissed off” emotional little children who broke off because of this abuse. Believe me what I tell you, my son. Place yourself in either and you will be placing yourself into such a deep spiral and in the midst of such deep denial. They all claim to be devout, but on the inside they are just trying to get back what they both feel were stolen from them in the past. There is no church in existence that is even close to being pure. And there is none that I have seen that is free—you must always pay a hefty sum in guilt.

Ask yourself this question? Can a church stay in business if everyone was fine? No. They feed themselves and blame it on the devil. They need the devil. You are either good or bad, right or wrong, a little off and never right on. It is absolute denial, my son—denial that who they are cannot be really who they are but what they appear to be to one another. You will never be able

to rest your head there. In other words, you will never have peace there to just be you. For you are either a little too complacent or you work a little too hard. You are never just right. Jesus is just right and aren't we all supposed to become like Jesus? But to whose interpretation? What Jesus was really trying to tell everyone is to be who you were created to be—be yourself—and don't let anyone tell you that who you are is not "just right".

So, let me help you understand. The Spirit's job commanded by God is to bring out the best in us—not change us into something we are not and certainly not brainwash us. Brainwashing is religion's job via laden guilt—heavy and burdened. We enter the journey in the Kingdom to bring out the best of who we are and to present our true (and truest) selves. Who we are does not change. But that which prevents us from being the best human of the unique person we are is what needs to be taken away. Take me for example. I don't think like a "typical" Christian. I never did. I am not a typical Christian. And now I have followed Christ for years and Christ has lead me on this journey—a journey that culminates in giving me His home to which I can be free to be who I always was and am. But I had a very big ego and didn't even respect the woman I am married to. That is gone and what is left is my intimate love of her and with her. And yet I don't belong to any church, to any religion. Is the love I've described all this time not real? Some say it is unreal because I don't belong to their church? Unreal to them perhaps but real just the same. Who is right and who is wrong? I'm no judge but what I do know is that I love and am in love. Are they? Yes, perhaps. I am not saying no, but at the same time I have seen the neurosis come out in the people within because of the guilt and shame, the unworthiness and the blame, the hypocrisy while playing the game.

The journey is not of being a Christian to become as Christ but one that helps bring out the love of Christ in each one of us. Don't ask yourself "What Would Jesus Do?" Instead, ask Him within yourself, "God, help me love here." For if it doesn't come from deep within, it isn't genuine when done on the outside. This is the only way I will then have peace in my life. Christ says to me, "You don't have to join a church. You don't even need a church. I did not create you that way. I created you another way. I created you as you." This is what St. Thomas tried to tell people too. The Catholic Church excommunicated the idea as heresy. So then to them, the way I think must be heresy. Isn't it just simply sad?

So then, wherever I am, I am home. But I only know one language—my native country's. How may I communicate then if I am not in my native country? I communicate by the one and only true language—that of love. Deliver love to those you see and if they allow you to rest there (be yourself in peace), then enter and rest. If they are too rigid (abusive or opinionated or caring excessively) or apathetic (caring less), leave. It is quite that simple. You only belong with those that know love and how to love. For those who know love, know Christ. This is why all may be Christians, even those who don't go to Christian churches. For where Love is so AM I and so to is My Kingdom.

Everyone has an opinion. Stop listening to their opinion and focus within yourself for the truth. Those with opinions on how you should live are dead in places within themselves that they need to face and revive in the Spirit. This was why Jesus chastised Peter.

You are alive. Stop listening to the dead! Live your own life! Let the dead bury the dead! And this is why I haven't released this for publication, or make a church of my own. If one day you should ask for advice about this, perhaps this is what I will give to you.

The moral of the story? Be who you are, for Christ would have it no other way. Do not give who you are up but give up that which deters and stops you from being the true and truest you through the Spirit of Christ. And if others don't like it, put out the hand and say, "See ya!"

260. I Am Already Bought and Am Living in Consciousness

First I must say that to rest your head is equivalent to having peace of mind. I have already been bought by God. I have found for me, as I am a creation of God Himself, that there is little of no peace of mind for me in religion. I have been bought by God which means I do as God says. Every religion, every religious institution I have come across begs to differ with me because who I am somehow confronts or opposes their own belief system, their own rules, their own regulations. According to them, I am either too aggressive or not aggressive enough. I am either too much this or too little that. I am either sometimes worthy but usually not worthy enough or never worthy. But I know different, for I am worthy. I follow no man, no priest, no minister, no man. I have been bought by God and God only. No man owns me and ever will.

Now that we got that out of the way, I will speak of the relationship between God Within and true freedom (Autonomy with the Spirit). Man cannot be free unless he is intimate first with God Within—His Spirit. And it goes to show then that man cannot be free if he tries to do for himself in the way only he knows. This is the true definition of religion because if you "belong" (am bought by) a religion, you follow the principles and procedures of the religion. But don't they know that all paths lead to God? No they don't. They only believe their way does. And if you do not fit within their walls, you do not get to see God, according to them. But (as I sigh in tiring exasperation) they see so little.

So let's talk of intimacy. Is friendship where I ask someone what I need (what I feel I lack) and then take him or her by the hand and tell him or her what to do and how to do it to get what I need? Or is friendship where I share with someone what I need within in hopes that they will find a way to give it to me? Or instead is friendship where I share all the love I have with someone so that they may be free? Well, let us see. In the first case, if I knew how to do it and what to do, I wouldn't be lacking it. I would have already done it myself. In fact, I would be testing my friend and abusing my friendship. In the second case, I'm idolizing someone and replacing the Spirit within me with them. The Spirit's job is to provide me with what I need inside, not anyone else. That too is abusing my friendship. But in the last case, I love. I just love. And love is like a secure shelter (kingdom) to which whoever enters it can feel safe to spend time with his or her Spirit and find that which they require within. I have done little from my perspective, but enormous from theirs just by supplying the sanctuary of love while with them and lasting when they leave (a form of life after death still living in the sanctuary of love called heaven).

Yes, love allows people to live and leave unconditionally because love stays with them when they are here and goes with them when they leave as well. Love is the Spirit, it is spiritual. This

coming and going, or communicating and excommunicating, or being a devout this or a heretical that is not spiritual; it is worldly. For if you chose intimate love, you would realize that all this talk of coming and going, or communicating and excommunicating, or being a devout this or a heretical that is absolutely meaningless.

Ah! So what is intimate friendship? Intimate friendship is when love is offered up just because one needs it. And we all need it because we are all human. It is not offering sanctuary and then meddling into the affairs of those requiring sanctuary. It is not offering love so that you may save someone or minister to them. That is all delusional love—a love that is really more about you than them and one that exists to satisfy your curiosity and affirm within yourself your own worthiness or justification that God loves you. In other words, it is selfishness disguised as love and what is called conditional love. This kind of love has nothing to do with faith but continual justification of your own self.

Actually, intimate friends shelter each other and leave each other in peace. An intimate friend is there when you need their advice or assistance, but they do not meddle. And one who is intimate with God is secure within themselves not to meddle in your affairs when not asked by either offering up their opinion to you or being opinionated about it to others. Intimate friendship consists of unconditional love. Intimate friendship is not abusive, but respectful; not imposing, but securing; not judging, but trusting (cleared of any conscience). For conscience is what man uses to decide good from evil (that of the world). Trust in the Spirit is not dependent upon conscience but dependent upon consciousness (awareness of Him being there). Condemnation is part of conscience. Awakening is part of consciousness. Religion is all about conscience (conditional love). Spirit is all about consciousness (unconditional love).

And so intimate friendship is where I share all the love I have with someone so that they may be free? Freedom is following that which is supplied by your conscious. It is an awakening from within that makes a profound imprint onto your belief, convicting you to proceed in one way or another. You have learned perhaps only one way and have used your conscience to pursue that way in most anything and everything. The Spirit knows an infinite amount of ways and chooses the best way or even parts of ways bound together so to answer that which you have asked for. Your conscience says that this way may seem not right and finds it hard to believe that this way will work out. But the way came through your conscious convicting you to proceed. No religion (no religious or person for that fact) can prove consciousness, but only conscience. This is why religious people always tell you to consult your Bible for what is right and wrong. The Bible connects the worldly realm to the Spirit's realm, it is a manual of conscience. But the Spirit's realm cannot be proved nor defined or confined by another. And what other's cannot prove, define or confine, they cannot control. And so, what man cannot control, he gets rid of. One cannot prove the way of the Spirit and so religion wants nothing to do with those who follow consciousness, who follow the way of the Spirit. They can't categorize, confine, subject, reason, or feel you into some concrete kind of norm. They discount, turn away, or excommunicate you instead.

Let me elaborate a little more. Once we were ignorant before coming to Christ. When we came to Christ, the Spirit used your conscience to help guide you through the journey. Your conscience is a baby's (a child's) way of being led. You have heard, "Let your conscience be

your guide.” But who is your guide—Christ or religion? So many times the church takes the place of your own conscience, nearly to the point of you not being able to choose on your own. And, thus, when they say “of course you can choose”, but choose wrong and your shamed, babied, condemned. So, did you ever really have a choice to begin with? Of course not. The church is not Christ, but Christ is the church. In other words, stop looking to the church for answers and start looking to Christ for the answers!

The Spirit does not dwell in your conscience, only in consciousness. The Spirit uses your conscience at first because you have yet matured enough to have the intimacy with Him in your consciousness. In other words, because you only know good versus evil to which man (religion) has taught you, the Spirit uses this first with you so that you will be able to relate to Him. But as you grow with the Spirit, you grow out of conscience (religion, religious law, holy warring) and into consciousness (where peace and rest reside). Thus, your conscience is of the world; it is the law and made up of laws. It places conditions on you, thus being conditional. It has distinct boundaries or barriers; rules not to be broken and, in the world’s sense, love only exists within those walls. It, therefore, is love made conditional known as conditional love. It is the library of your worldly learning. It contains opposition based on fear. It is where your good versus evil lies, your right versus wrong, your righteousness versus sin, your fight between you fearing God and you fearing the devil. It is the devil on one side and God on the other. But it is not the real God on the other. It is your own version of God on the other—the condemning, punishing illusion of God—also known as delusional love.

When Christ came, he replaced the illusion of God you had on one side of your conscience given to you by religion and conquered the devil on the opposing side. Now, all that is left is Christ. For before Christ, it was your conscience as your guide and now it is Christ. And while you were maturing, you were really going through conscience. But you now come to a point where you, through Christ, overcome conscience. You’ve overcome your fear of God and, thus, the devil. And you begin entering into a level farther and greater known as consciousness. But very few people achieve the level of consciousness, or should I say true intimacy. Most people shun away from it and nearly all men (including priests, popes, preachers, ministers, rabbi, etc.) are absolutely afraid of it. And to them, rightly so because it is where God lives. And religion has a certain fear of God, some so much and some just enough, to prevent them from entering into the Tent—into the Holy of Holies. And this is why you will never find freedom in religion. For freedom cannot be attained unless one is intimate with God Himself (the Spirit within). But, alas! Christ has conquered the devil and hell and, thus, one not need to fear God nor the devil anymore, but begin being intimate with God.

So, is religion bad? By no means. Without religion, I would not have been “pissed off” to have searched farther for the real Truth. And without religion, I would not have grown a conscience. But religion was never intended to be an end-all. It was only intended to be a gate through which one has to pass through to get to God and be intimate with His Spirit. But it was never intended to stop him there until you died. But it was there to progress you through (to be transcended) and hand you off to God. In other words, it is only supposed to help you find God within yourself and release you to Him. There intimacy would prevail and you would be freed (released) into the City. Religion is only supposed to be a transitional medium between the worldly and spiritual realms. Thus, the Spirit guides you out of the world (whims of the flesh—babiness),

through religion (conscience—childhood), and into spirituality (conscious or unconscious—adulthood or maturity). And what is religion but conscience. So then, even though you were never part of any common or well-known religion, did you not go through a period of conscience? Did you not develop conscience with Christ? You too, then, went through your own religion with Christ—with the Spirit. Now, you understand even greater that all religions that develop conscience with Christ take you to God Within and that your religion was just as good as any other well-known or not-so-well-known religion of the world in Christ no matter what anyone says. You and your religion is just as good as that of the Catholic Church or any other church, for the Spirit is the same spirit and shows no favoritism.

Everywhere people are searching for freedom. To be free from what ails them. To be free from the mental and emotional pain and anguish. To be free from their neurosis. They run and run and run. But the only way to be free is by coming to Christ and allowing yourself to accept the Grace of God in following the Holy Spirit. At first, the Spirit will seem not in you but around you. And eventually, you will come closer and closer to Him within you. This is why I say this is the way: Belief, Hope, Trust, Learning, Understanding, Respect, Affection (Desire), Acceptance (Unashamedness), Devotion, Intimacy (Friendship with the Spirit), Freedom (Autonomy with the Spirit), and Peace (Rest with the Spirit). And, as we know, Christ was the Spirit in the flesh and so the Spirit is Christ too. And so who do we follow—Christ or man?

Who understands these things? What religion understands these things?

261. Proof That Religion is the World

My son, listen. A person who is not wise in how to help his flock is false. He dictates and preaches. The common thread between a dictator and a preacher is that they never become intimate with their flock. Any way you look at it, the Catholic Church is a dictatorship born out of the Jewish Church. Any way you look at it, the Reformation churches are preaching churches born out of the Catholic Churches. This is why I cannot find true intimacy within any one of these churches. Neither are true churches.

So, how do you know a real minister and have an intimate church. When the minister asks each person in his congregation if he may enter through the gate within him or her, that is how. In other words, a true minister asks each of his flock what he or she personally needs within spiritually at the time and then has the spiritual wisdom (insight) to be able to understand and provide it uniquely and plainly without the usual old cliches of the religious world. This is how the minister truly serves the needs of the people. When a minister does this, the people in the congregation will find him genuine, come to trust him, and flock to him because, although they may see him as the world sees him (the boss, etc.), they now know he is not of the world. He has courage and it allows the flock to be courageous within themselves too. The minister becomes their shepherd, for the shepherd sacrificed (laid down his own life) first for the sheep. Does this sound like any church you know? This is what Jesus meant in John 10:1-21.

This is exactly opposite of the church of today. The church of today is, in fact, just a spin on the Jewish Church of Jesus' day. Why? Because ego breeds ego, pride breeds pride. Instead of asking, they think they already know what you need and so much better than you. They think they know you so much better than you know yourself. This is hugely predominant in the

Catholic Church (in fact it is almost a dogma) and is greatly wide spread in the Reformation Churches as well. But, like Jesus said, the first shall be the last and the last shall be the first. The church of today looks like the companies of today with its hierarchy and “boss is boss” attitude. The preachers, priests, and ministers are scared that they will lose control or be exposed as charlatans. Most don’t even allow women to preach or be priests because, deep down, they are afraid of women and their ease into true intimacy. They don’t want to be embarrassed or shown their own weaknesses to themselves and to others who they have been preaching to all this time. They are, in fact, the greatest cowards and babies of them all. But he or she who is the real deal will do this.

262. The Road to Freedom: To Be Naïve and Wise at the Same Time

What would the world call us who change our perception from what they see as reality to what we care to see as bright, loving, and carefree? They would call us naïve. Naïve is define by the world as deficient in worldly wisdom and marked by unaffected simplicity. Ah, yes, this by the world’s definition. But Christ takes us out of illusion, out of deception and hands us our own human weakness (vulnerabilities) to give up and no longer hide or be ashamed of. These are the same vulnerabilities that the world tries to exploit and get us to do what they want us to do through them.

So, by understanding this, are we deficient in world wisdom? By no means. In fact, we are very wise to the world. Indeed, our wisdom is evident by us no longer being ashamed of ourselves, by us accepting ourselves as good. Because we are no longer ashamed of ourselves, we can be persevere in obedience (devote ourselves) to being intimate with God Within who will set us free by giving us the power to live our lives out however we want, in whatever perception (reality) in love and of love we want. The world sees things in black and white, as their perceptions being the right and only one. God sees things in beautiful color all part of the whole. To the world, we are being naïve, silly, lazy, and irresponsible. But, in fact, we are in a higher level, higher form of consciousness, higher plane, no longer living in the world. So you see, we have overcome the world. Do you now see that a person cannot accept him or herself if not by the grace of God—if not by His son’s death and resurrection that allowed grace to befall on us?

Now you may understand what Jesus was saying when he said that unless you are like children, you will not see the kingdom. He was saying that you will not see the kingdom unless you are perceived by the world as naïve—that is unless you attain the level of consciousness that seems silly to the world. Some pretend or digress into childhood because they believe this is what Jesus meant. But we are past childhood, we are now mature and this pretending or digression is a thing still of the world and in the world. And did you know that the most mature are the most naïve by the world’s standards?

How much do you really care if you get promoted or demoted? How much do you really care how others perceive you? How long do you really want to continue playing into the game of the world—secretly wishing for war on the inside but crying out for peace on the outside or calling for interfaith on the outside while secretly hoping to get close enough to convert others over to your side.

Beware, for the Pope of today will be gone soon and it is rumored that the next one will be big on interfaith. I come from the Catholic Church. They don't intend to make peace with anyone, but get close enough to raise your conscience (via guilt and shame) to convert you over to their side. Beware, my son. Beware!

Beware, for it is commonly know in that church that whatever sins you make, do not confess them to your wife, but only to a priest instead. I can understand not wanting to hurt your wife, but if you are one flesh, don't you think your wife will know anyway? Of course, I am married and I can attest to it. Do you really disrespect your wife that much—thinking that she is incapable of figuring it out on her own? Confess to your wife too with a genuinely sorrowful heart. You and your relationship is as sick as your secrets. So, is it my curse to secretly know of the sin I have done and continue to be scared that my wife will come to find out my weakness sometime in the future? To keep the shame and guilt in and to continue to suffer needlessly for it and to disrespect women is the Catholic way and many other religious ways as well. How perfect must I remain on the outside and still never reach heaven? Beware, my son. Beware!

And beware not to be romantically fooled by the symbolism, the events, the beauty of the pageantry, or the show within these churches. I have been enticed and intrigued myself in the Catholic and Reformation churches. These things are coverings of the deep hidden truths within their walls—like cotton candy to a child. They will give you it at first but then tell you that they never promised any of it when you ask for it again once in, when actually it was inferred by them. They know what they are doing—promising without promising—playing the political game. It is entrapment and most all of them do it one way or another. They exploit your vulnerabilities. This is the true crime. And for this, they shall be judged and remain in death. The Good News was never to go save others and bring them into your churches. It was to go love and share your testimony of how you have been freed. These churches I speak of know absolutely nothing of love, intimacy, or how to attain them. They speak with their mouths but know not with their hearts. Beware, my son. Beware!

Do I sound naïve? Yet, I am in the midst of using the power God gave me to be free as I change my perception to live in the love I always dreamed of. So I have become a child in love and freedom and worriessness and peace in the Kingdom—a New Jerusalem. The Catholic Church has already claimed that title in their Catechism. You choose the New Jerusalem you wish to live in.

So, am I a naïve child of God and living in my own perception of love via the Spirit within the Kingdom of God? Yes. Am I a naïve child of the world and living in the perception of the world via man within the world? No longer.

263. The Road to Freedom: Believe in Your Dream

My son, be what you dream. Believe in what you dream and you will become that dream. For me and what I always dreamed, read this and you will see.

What Little Boys Dream

I know that little boys dream of soaring through space,
In a rocket ship to a far off place.
And I know that little boys dream of making a dunk right at the buzzer,
Or making a bunt and scoring in the winning runner.
And I know that little boys dream of commanding a ship or going to battle,
Or taking a trip atop a saddle.
And I even know that little boys dream of racing a car or being a king or being a star.
And these are all dreams that little boys dream,
But they weren't the dreams that I dreamed for me.
When I was a boy, I just dreamed, over and over, one perfect and amazing dream,
And that dream was to love someone and that someone love me—just specially me.

I cannot say I'm perfect, but what I can say is that I dreamed of always wanting love. And when I found out that God is Love, I believed and then I began living my dream. I dreamed of love so much growing up, and now from whence I believed, I no longer followed a man, and that was when I realized that the love I dreamed was really me. May you follow God and, through his love and mercy, no longer allow yourself to be part of the sickness and the mental egotistical people of the world.

264. The Road to Freedom: Revelation on Expelling Demons and Setting Yourself Free

The truth forces demons out of you. Getting at the honest, underlying, and root cause (or honest truth behind it) is what forces out demons. What keeps the demons out? Not saying your sorry for doing it.

If we are so engrained in good versus bad, righteousness and sin, we will doubt our attitudes that come out when we finally get at the truth—which usually comes in the form of anger or rage. Our minds resort back into religious thinking and we feel guilty or ashamed of our behavior. This is what invites demons and more demons back in because, not only does the one demon come back, but we swing the pendulum so far over to righteousness (try to overcompensate for our “bad” behavior) that more Demons of Guilt and Shame (Condemnation) follow with him.

And this is why we must all now really know what it means by Christ dying on the cross for us—setting us free from the demons, from the religious, from the deception of conscience by automatic grace placed within us. The Spirit is who you confess to—the Spirit. He gives you grace, my son. He gives you grace, just as he continues with you on your journey no matter what you do. The Spirit, the Spirit, the Spirit, my son. No man, no thing. The Spirit. And without Christ's death, there would be no Spirit in us. The Spirit replaces all religious and all religion—all of it.

Where does God live? Where does Christ live? Where does the Spirit live? They do not live in the realm of conscience (religion), they live in consciousness (honest-to-God-truth). And when that truth comes out, it erupts out like a volcano. For so long it has been building and building up pressure and your conscience has been the dam wall keeping it in. But when we realize that

your conscience is your culprit, the dam starts breaking and the truth starts pouring out until finally it busts the dam wide open and erupts out. Then comes the beautiful river.

See, in front of this Dam of Conscience, this Dam of Damnation, this flaming-sword guarding Eden, is arid desert and the demons feel safe there. They are protectors of the dam, but so are the religious. How can this be, you ask? The self-righteous need it to keep the demons at bay (as if God needs protecting) for they are the cherubim, but the demons trick the self-righteous by attacking the dam to keep it strong so that they won't have to face God. The demons are cowards and they never have any intention whatsoever in overrunning the dam, but the religious don't know this. They don't realize that Christ's blood gave permission to lift the floodgates of the dam already, for Christ is the gate and replaced the flaming-sword and cherubim (the dam) to Eden. They just keep fortifying the dam and, sometimes when the demons attack in droves, the religious will even bargain with them to get them to back off (what we also call "hypocritical"). Only the self-righteous (priests, pastors, holy-men-of-the-day) see themselves allowable to do this within the sight of God for the protection of the common good. But when you venture with the Spirit, the Spirit takes you through the desert and shows you the truth about the dam and God on the other side.

Acceptance is ownership of what may seem to be your own weaknesses and vulnerabilities (your truthful feelings), but are actually your tools in breaking through the dam. These truths or instruments of truth are what the demons steal away from you and exploit you with and deceive you by to prevent you from finding and breaking through the dam. But the Spirit of Christ has conquered the Devil and Hell and knows the truth, so when you come to this stage in your journey, He takes them all away from the demons and hands them back over to you to own in preparation for you breaking through the dam. Now, the demons are powerless to prevent you from finding the dam and breaking through. And they quiver at the sight of the Spirit. Their doom is only a matter of time now.

Devotion is persevering to the dam with the tools of "vulnerability and weakness" or instruments-of-truth (your truthful feeling) you now possess and using them by keep puncturing and puncturing and stabbing and stabbing at the dam for you to get through to God—be intimate. And the closer you get to God, the greater the waters in the kingdom fill and pressurize to meet you. The religious fight you, try to kill you, or try to assimilate you to keep you from breaking through so that the demons won't follow you through. But they'll never follow you through because then they'd have to face God, and besides, they're terrified of the Spirit. This is the deception of the Devil and the demons.

And so, like I said before, Christ is the gate and replaced the flaming-sword and cherubim (the dam) to Eden. So, then when we accept (or own) our true feelings (the keys to heaven) for something handed to us by the Spirit, we devote ourselves by taking them to Christ (to the gate) and handing them over (confessing or telling them) to him. If they are genuine and truthful, he opens the gate and says go see your Father. You see your Father, confess or talk with Him, and become free to go live freely again in the City. Then a portion of the river flows to that portion of land in the desert and becomes green and living.

And Jesus as the gate, for he is the truth, and only God's honest truth can identify God's honest truth. So then, the job of the gatekeeper is to judge whether one's confession is genuine, coming from a deep and honest truth, but not to judge in or by their conscience. A priest or pastor who judges with his or her own conscience, judges as the world judges. He or she tries to fix, judges by what he himself firmly believes (by the law) and, thus, winds up condemning. This is not Jesus. No, it is the duty of the priest or pastor to listen (listen, listen, listen) not only to the truth but listen for the truth. If truth is told, the gate has already opened, for the person has met up with Christ, and the person is then able to enter into love and forgiveness of others and then be freed by God's mercy to go live in peace. If a person is close to his or her own truth, then perhaps the minister can guide him a little further, a little deeper to the truth. But it is the truth that will set a person free, not the law. The law comes by conscience and the truth by consciousness. One who lives in and by conscience should not interpret the truth. Conscience is perception. Consciousness is truth. So then judge (by conscience) no one, but when someone comes to confess, only listen for consciousness and for the truth. Only Truth opens the gate and truth by way of the Spirit. A man may confess because of his conscience but still not understand the truth that underlies his actions. A man who confesses only by conscience is blind to the truth. It is the minister's job to bring the man into consciousness and out of conscience.

Intimacy is love-truthful or true love. And intimacy is what you find once you break through the dam, and go meet up with God. Then God demolishes the dam with His floodwaters and gives you the power to demolish everything in His river's path along with it—the dam, thus the religious, and the demons to boot—flushing them all away into the never-never after. Thus, the path that took you to God now becomes a great and wonderful and vibrant river that continues to flow from God and irrigates all the once-arid land. And it all becomes the Kingdom forever and ever for you to dwell in happiness and peace.

Remember, my son, your conscience constructs the dam and, the greater your conscience, the stronger the dam. Live within God, not within your conscience. Conscience is illusion (delusional perception—deception). Consciousness is Truth forever and ever. Always live in the most God's-honest truth within yourself and the Kingdom will be yours to live in forever and ever as well.

265. The Road to Freedom: The Art of Forgiveness

Now, my son, I will illustrate plainly from what I said above. To strive to forgive someone means that you must be willing to be intimate (truly love) them. They may be your enemies now, but we must be willing to be intimate (truly love) them regardless. This doesn't just happen overnight. It must come from the heart. So, just saying I forgive you is not enough. You will not be freed or have real peace this way. Like everything else, my son, forgiveness is a process that takes us through many stages. These are the stages:

First, we must believe them worthy of being forgiven. Then

Second, we must sacrifice (not succumb to) our own fleshy desires to separate or have nothing to do with them. We must enter into the process of forgiving them. We do this by having hope that the process of forgiveness will pay off for us and them. Thus,

Third, we must commit to (trust) the process of forgiveness and not entertain any doubt. Then

Fourth, we must learn as much as we can about them. From this, we can and

Fifth, we must come to understand them by seeking out the underlying truth behind why they did what they did. Then

Sixth, we must respect (honor) the person by revealing (exposing and not suppressing or repressing) the truth through speaking about it and telling others what we see in a respectful manner. From this, we are able to and

Seventh, we must recognize or see the kind of spirit of that truth that has a hold on them by them showing us their behavior. This is where the truth comes out. This will enable us and them to grasp the underlying source of the behavior and

Eighth, either accept that truth in them or not accept that spirit of the truth in them. Then we are able to accept whatever choice they make to keep it or get rid of it. Either way, we are able to forgive them because the spirit is what has a hold on them. Our anger is with that spirit and not with them as human. And then

Ninth, we devote ourselves to either getting closer to the spirit or getting rid of the spirit.

Tenth, we become intimate with the spirit or cleared of the spirit.

Eleventh, it is here that we are free with God

Twelfth, our peace is restored.

Now, my son, this is declared through Jesus anointed by a sinful woman in Luke 7:36-50. Notice that forgiveness doesn't have anything to do with setting out to change anyone or changing their minds or converting them. Perhaps it will change them by awakening them to what love really is, but forgiveness is neither egocentric nor apathetic. It is done to restore yourself to peace in the Kingdom of God. Luke 7:47-50 is very important in forgiveness. By achieving the tenth step, we truly forgive because we touched that who we needed to forgive in a way that showed them we still love them. And from this, God forgives us all our sins and sends us in peace. This is that which is behind Luke 7:47-50 when Jesus said, "Therefore, I tell you, her many sins have been forgiven—for she loved much. But he who has been forgiven little loves little." Then Jesus said to her, "Your sins are forgiven." The other guests began to say among themselves, "Who is this who even forgives sins?" Jesus said to the woman, "Your faith has saved you; go in peace."

Now you understand that, the farther one takes the journey of forgiveness, the farther he is forgiven. And that this is the same path where we come to God and forgive Him as well and make peace with Him. For when I found out that God is Love is when I believed Him worthy to

be forgiven by me. In other words, I think I've blamed God all this time for being abandoned by my father, the church, and everyone else. And God still called me to be and eat with Him and forgive me. This, my son, is what is known as unconditional love.

266. The Road to Freedom: Discovering Your Purpose in Life

My son, why does changing by relying on the law (religious, man-made, by-your-will) not allow you to change, but God's grace does? We must come to understand that willpower is really "won't power". And it simply means that unless you go through the process of change for someone you love more than you love yourself, your change will not be as effective. Just like Jesus said that if one has little love, he forgives little or if one genuinely loves himself (knows that God loves him so much for who he is) and another much, he is forgiven or forgives much. This is the same with change.

Before Christ, people relied on the law to supply them grace and forgiveness, but people still did not change and, in fact, most of the time got worse. Why? Because they came to resent the law and resent the law makers, who were usually harsh and hypocritical. Why do I have to obey the law if you don't, which is the same as the adage, "do as I say, not as I do." But how do you resent that which you love greater than yourself because they love us greater than we love ourselves? So, Christ went through with his sacrifice for us because he loved us greater than we loved ourselves and, at the same time, did it for God because he felt God loving him greater than he loved *himself*. When Christ died, our sins died with him, the law died with him.

When we mess up during our process of change, we can either feel bad about ourselves by comparing ourselves with the law of the process or accept the grace of God through His son instead of the law. If we choose the law, we usually do these things: We go into a mentally-ill state (depression, hate, resentment) and attack ourselves, isolate, and come to feel absolutely unworthy. Or we blame others who live and condemn by way of the law and go into rage and attack them, thus, try to control the law. Or we say, "Well, I messed up. I may as well just go for the gusto. What does it really matter now." And of course this apathy of ourselves because we compare ourselves to the law also continues to hurt us. Either way, we continue not to change because we make the law greater than Christ and God's mercy.

But when we replace the law with grace, we realize that we are forgiven when we mess up. And we continue on the journey (path) of change (transformation) because we know that God still loves us. By accepting grace, we (our minds) instantly come back into contact with our Father and then we are reminded of how much we are still loved unconditionally. This will make us want to keep persevering for Him. And so, it is by our faith that we accept grace and it is by accepting grace that we come into contact with our Father and, thus, are saved. If we love our children, our wife, or whomever more than we love ourselves, we will change for them, which will be good for us as well. But how can we love if we do not feel loved first by God, who is Love? And so, we may love others in the same degree of how much we feel God loves us, which is always more than we think He does as we go through the process. And yet, we can love in this degree others, which may be greater than how much others love *themselves*. This will help them in their journey of change.

Will we change if we love others just as much as we love ourselves? We may not change for others, but we will still change for God if it is what God wants. In any instance, we will not devalue ourselves. And so, does the command by Jesus say to love others more than you love yourself? No. The command says to love others as much as you love yourself. But in the Spirit, there will come a time when you will love another more than you love yourself—and who will that be? And at that time, you will know why you've been given life. That will be the ultimate human experience. It is then that you will appreciate the completeness of life, so much that you are willing to sacrifice it for another. For God is who you live for in heaven and why you live as spirit. The one(s) you find on earth that you come to love greater than you love yourself will become the purpose of why you live on earth. He, she, or they will be your purpose designated to you by God before you were even born.

And, again, please listen! Your purpose is not to whom you want to change or wish will change; your purpose is to whom you love greater than you love yourself. When you love someone greater than yourself, you don't mind changing yourself (sacrificing) so that you can be in the right position to be there for them in whatever way they need your help. To want to save others, to want to change others, to pray for others to change is as the world thinks and is not your God-given purpose. In fact, we only wish to change those that we feel God loves more than us—denoting our own low self-esteem. We wish to change (sacrifice) ourselves for those who believe that God loves them little or not at all—denoting our own high self-esteem. You will know your God-given purpose when you find yourself willing to change for them to help further their own wants and needs, and not the other way around. But to go out and try to save others just for the purpose of thinking they need to be saved is not love but actually judgmental selfishness and comes not from the heart and more from obligation to the one that saved us. Obligation comes from the world. Appreciation comes from God.

Understand this: most likely your purpose (ministry) is to those that you can identify with. If you were a boy who desired someone to love you more than they loved themselves (like your father, your mother, the church ministers or congregation) and you did not find it or receive it, you will later in life come to have a heart for those boys (and/or girls) now in that same predicament. But you will only have the heart and do something about it, when you become intimate with God (Stage 10). Then you will know how to become intimate with them without being selfish yourself. Then you will be set free. Who came to help me? Be kind, my child. For who really heeds the call of God in their lives so much that they evolve into the later stage of true love, which is also known as intimacy? There are not so many, not so many at all. It is not that they passed you by, but it is that there just wasn't and isn't enough to go around. You be one that will be there for some of the boys and girls today so they too won't feel passed by either tomorrow. In other words, from the one who sacrificed yesterday comes the bountiful harvest of so many who need it tomorrow. Does this help you make sense of your own suffering and that none of it went in vain? Does God place us through this suffering? Yes, to those who He created to handle it and one day shell out a great harvest for a great number of His children. Now do you see how from one can come one-thousand, one-million who are healed. This is the story of Christ and is also the story of you.

And so, when we love someone greater than we love ourselves, we will even die for them. And when others feel that they have been loved greater than they love themselves, they will follow

and die for us as well. And where there is no setting another free, there is no true and unconditional love. So, be wise to who truly loves you and who doesn't. If one is willing to risk his or her life so that you may be set free, this is love. But if one stipulates conditions to that (just as long as you don't leave the church, just as long as you do this or do that), then this isn't true love. This is evil disguised as love.

After we die and go to heaven, you will feel more of how much God loves you than in our time spent on earth because, as we live on earth, other things will cover this love up in us here and there and from time to time. If this weren't the case, there would be no need for grace. But in heaven, there is nothing to cover up the love God has for us. So, He loves us even more than we can ever imagine as we are here on earth.

267. The Road to Freedom: Beware of Who Calls Themselves Father

Beware, my son, of who calls themselves father. Those who sign up to be father to raise his son in the way he sees fit, in the way he believes to, in order to feel good about himself, in order to take them by the hand each step of the way, has no business being a father. This is how the world thinks and reacts. They self-prophecy themselves into being fathers. They even call themselves father and demand you call them father or dad or something similar. They can never go by their own name when it comes to you. They psychologically place themselves on the pedestal. They do not hand you over to The Father and serve you. Instead, they serve themselves through you. They are known as demons and you their minions. And they live in the realm of dominion. They are abundantly within: the Catholic priesthood, the Reformation pastorship (for here every man is asked to be a pastor of some kind, but not the women), homes, corporations, and all various kinds of institutions.

If a man does not sacrifice his own fathership so that you and the Father may grow in bond together, he is not a father. He is an imposter. You will go through much trouble, my son, much suffering. But also know this. Direct yourself to your true Father and your suffering shall not be in vain. For they will die, but you shall be passed over to die in this manner. Break the cycle with you, my son, and you shall have life, not death. For they are dead and you are not to go back to them—priest or pastor, father or boss.

Now let me explain this to you.

268. The Road to Freedom: The True Meaning of Passover and Infant Baptism

If you see the events of Passover and Infant Baptism the way the world sees them, they will become forms of entrapment for you, my son. For Passover to the world is connected to the start of obedience to law through circumcision. This is the same with Infant Baptism for the water is the same as circumcision of old and is the start of obedience to the law through baptism. It is all the same thing. And the law, my son, is the church and Christ is the lamb and the lamb's blood is the blood of Christ and the eating of the lamb is the receiving of the Spirit. Eating of yeast is digesting anything sinful (inviting sin into your life).

But the way it is seen by the eyes of God and Christ are different. Passover and Infant Baptism are to be the times that the child is surrendered by the parent to God as God's—not the church's, not the parents', not anyone else's. In other words, the parents have absolutely no say in raising the child, but only the Spirit. For Passover and Infant Baptism asks to bring on the Spirit and it is the Spirit who raises the child. A father who continues to father after this in church law, as the way the world sees it, is spiting God and is detrimental to the spiritual growth and wellbeing of the child. The child has been given into the world through you, but is not yours to raise. You are there to serve God by helping the child see and understand the Spirit within from his or her questions of you. Listen! Don't speak so much. A father of God listens and answers questions. A father of himself speaks and directs and seldom listens. This is wisdom I am sharing with you. It is not by your many words that the child feels secure but by you being there to share your love and wisdom.

So now, let me illustrate the true meaning of Passover. This is the exact same thing in Infant Baptism. We shall refer to the Book of Exodus (Exodus 12 and 13), fitting because Exodus means to set free. If you truly love your son or daughter, you will set them free now and of whence they are born. Destroying the firstborn in Exodus is the same as breaking the cycle of destruction for further generations. “. . . you are to give over to the Lord the first offspring of every womb. . . . When Pharoah [self-proclaimed father] stubbornly refused to let us go, the Lord killed every firstborn in Egypt.” (Exodus 13:12, 15). This does not mean to give over the child to the church to raise as they see fit. It means to give over the child to the Spirit to raise as he sees fit. And the Spirit is not the church, but Christ loved the church. So then, it is not the church to raise the child as they see fit, but that the church succumb to the Spirit in how he sees fit to raise the child. The church is not to interfere between the Spirit and the child but only to help the Spirit raise the child. The Spirit raises the child (as the Spirit raised me in my grown-up years). The church is to listen to the spirit of the child in how to help raise the child. Most churches cannot hear or see the spirit of the child. And this is why we have so many abandoning parents of today—because they too were abandoned. Who will listen to the spirit of the child and who will squash the child's spirit?

269. The Road to Freedom: Parenting Styles and The Revolution of a Child's Developmental Rights

Now, I will make this more clear for you in what is known today as common parenting styles. These styles are commonly used to ascertain adolescent behavior. But, as you will see, I believe they really should be used as a healthy process of parenting stages throughout childhood. And when I mean childhood, I could be meaning until the age of possibly in the 30's. Depending on the child and his or her unique psychological maturation rate, the stages could begin much earlier or end much later.

We really should understand that 18 years old is only the legal age of adulthood. But seldom is 18 psychologically adulthood when, in fact, it is only a year that is part of the adolescent-adult transition. Most people do not begin to come into there own (in America anyway) until well into their 30's.

There appear to be seven parental styles (printed in *The Developing Person Through Childhood and Adolescence* (Third Edition) by Kathleen Stassen Berger, copyright 1991). They are:

Autocratic. Children are not allowed to express opinions or make decisions about any aspect of their own lives. This is an obvious stage in the first years of being born.

Authoritarian. Children can contribute opinions, parents always make the final decision according to their own judgment. This is a stage from possibly between kindergarten and age 7 to puberty (age 12 or 13).

Democratic. Children contribute freely to the discussion of issues relevant to their behavior and make some of their own decisions, but final decisions are often formulated by the parents and always are subject to their approval. This is a stage possibly throughout adolescence (puberty to perhaps 17 or 18).

Equalitarian. Parents and children play essentially similar roles, participating equally in making decisions. This is a stage possibly from later adolescence through perhaps the later college years (17 or 18 to age 21 or 22).

Permissive. The child assumes a more active, independent, and influential position in formulating decisions, considering, but not always abiding by, parental opinions. This is a stage possibly from around age 21 to 24 or 25.

Laissez-faire. Parents leave it to their children to decide to consider or ignore parental wishes in making their own decisions. This is a stage possibly from age 24 or 25 to when the child is ready to let go (possibly in their 30's).

Ignoring. The parents take no role, nor evidence any interest, in directing the child's behavior. This is a stage that perhaps starts in his or her 30's and remains throughout his or her life. It is also a stage that I like to call "coming into one's own".

Many therapists say that a man's mid-life crisis is now more and more in his 30's than when it was in his 50's. But, it is my belief, that this so-called "mid-life crisis" in a man's 30's is actually a "coming into his own" or an actual start of life. I believe we can attribute this to the fact that more and more people are "seeing the light" and rejecting the more autocratic and authoritarian churches and families earlier in life. Churches and parents who stay in the autocratic and authoritarian mode through a child's development are, what I call, controlling or smothering and stifle a child's healthy and normal development. A person's mid-life crisis in his fifties may have perhaps been attributed to the fact that the parents were just too old to wield anymore power over the child in the child's mind. Those churches and parents who started out in the permissive, laissez-faire, or ignoring stages are, what I call, apathetic and do not give a child much structure. This is indicative of society today, perhaps due to the desire running away as far as they can from the autocratic and authoritarian churches, which were very predominant in America of the recent past.

At any right, when the parent weighs heavy on the child by deciding what style to place on the child and when to place that style without regard for the child's natural development (without listening to and revering the spirit of the child), the child feels abandoned because he or she actually really is being abandoned. But when the parent listens to the spirit of the child throughout his or her development, the parent will realize the style to use throughout as dictated by the spirit and, thus, the child remains feeling very connected. Thus, the parent is slave to the Spirit and serves the child, rather than the child being slave to the parent. This is the whole basis behind what I like to call "the revolution of a child's developmental rights". And, thus, if the parent cannot identify the spirit of the child, he or she doesn't identify with the Spirit within him or her (the Spirit of Love). It is then crucial that the parent work hard at identifying the Spirit within him or her (break the cycle), for if not, he or she has no right to discipline (disciple) a child.

270. The Road to Freedom: Affections and Emotions

My son, we humans bond with one another through feelings. In fact, I will go so far to say that humans bond with one another's feelings. Some may deny their feelings to themselves and others, but they come out in them just the same whether you can see them or not. This you may know about yourself. You may have similar appreciations of the mind, but until the mind gives way to affection of the heart, there simply really isn't any true and lasting bond between the people in the relationship. God sees all feelings, even when not shown outwardly. As you develop your relationship with God through the Spirit, you will be able to see them in you and others too, even if not shown outwardly.

Now, feelings come pronounced by way of predominantly two kinds—emotions and affections. We can define an emotion as an overcoming feeling and an affection as a shared and well-balanced feeling. We find ourselves not that fond of emotions because they take us into places and behaviors that we wind up usually not liking and regret (feel guilt and shame or have a heavy heart about) later. We find ourselves fond of affections because we are able to stay within the boundaries of fun and loving behavior. We feel empowered in affection but overpowered by emotion. Emotions come because of our own wants, desires, or lack of getting our own wants and desires met. Affections are about serving or helping another get their own needs and wants met. And, thus, affection is actually the beginning of true and mature love. Though intimacy is the culmination of this love, affection is the beginning of it.

So then, both emotions and affections bond us since they develop from feelings. But emotions usually flare up in an instant because of assumptions (delusional expectations) made of another or ourselves. Affection comes after a time discovering ourselves and another. If a person thinks he or she has an instant affection for someone, it is usually a deep-rooted emotion. These emotions can come prior to knowing if we can trust someone, without us knowing anything about another. Emotions can come without understanding another or the underlying truth why someone does something. And emotions can come before any real respect. So then, emotions can fool us into thinking we are in true and mature love when we really aren't. We are either in true or deceptive immature love.

So then, what is true and mature love but the symbiosis of deep understanding truth and affection. What is true or deceptive and immature love but the symbiosis of expectation and “eye-candy”. True and immature love goes deceptive when it is not allowed to mature with the Spirit.

In the world, many feel that love is an emotion. But true and mature love isn't an emotion; true and mature love is pronounced by affection, which is warm and fluid. Immature love is an emotion, which usually peaks high and strikes low. All anyone needs to do is believe one way or the other about themselves or another to evoke an emotion. Emotions usually result from our reaction to something making us quite defensive or excessively proactive. Affections usually result from a process that we choose to go through in developing a relationship. This process as I know it is:

1. Believing that a relationship with another is worth having. (It's best to keep an open mind here.)
2. Hoping that the relationship can sustain through trial or conflict or differences of opinion. (This usually brings about emotion (internally building up pressure (stress and anxiety) or externally showing excessive enthusiasm). This is due to assumptions or expectations usually compared to past experiences.)
3. Committing to (trusting) another enough to continue the relationship in a deeper way.
4. Studying (getting to learn more about) each other in a deeper way.
5. Understanding (becoming wise to) one another by revealing underlying truths to one another through shared action and communication.
6. Respecting these truths and, thus, respecting one another.
7. Having an affection toward (connecting with) one another.

Stage One is where you believe (have faith) that God is calling you to come home. You feel inspired (the Spirit) from within to go. In actuality, the Spirit has actually come upon you to take you home. You now need to choose whether to follow him or not. He is commanded to stay with you whatever you choose (at any of the stages). He will not leave you, but he won't be complacent either. He will keep prodding you to move.

Stage Two is the World (of Shame and Guilt) or the Desert of Conscience or the Valley of Fear or the Land of Confusion or the State of Opposition or the Test of Faith or the “Let Your Conscience Be Your Guide” place or the “Place of Cleansing” or the “Trial-By-Fire” or the Gate Leading to the Other Side with your hope that you can get through it and continue on with the Spirit because God is calling you home. It is where yours and others superego (beliefs religious or otherwise) wages war with your id (emotions) and vis-à-vis. Ninety-nine per cent of people (religious or otherwise) remain in this stage. It is the stage of good versus evil, right versus

wrong, highs versus lows. You need to experience this stage to understand boundaries in your life, but you are not supposed to remain here in the world. You see, God has called (inspired) you to come, which transcends any law or reasoning by the world. The world can't see it, only you can. If you don't understand this stage, you may become deceived and most likely remain in it because you believe this is where you are supposed to be until you die. You don't realize the long road home still ahead to God. If you don't allow yourself to fall into suppressive emotion (guilt and shame) or overly excessive enthusiasm and keep yourself focused ahead, you will be "rocked" or swayed little by this stage and not succumb to it. In other words, if you believe that Jesus the Gate is here and has conquered the Devil who used to rule here, you will persevere through with the Spirit and commit to moving on in spite of the temptations and condemnations by others. By the way, this is the stage where religions are supposed to help you go through, not keep you in and not "detox" (cleanse) you as a member into their church. This is why Jesus called Peter, which means rock, to build his church and build it here because God called Peter into unswerving belief (faith). And it is why Jesus said that evil shall not overcome it because the church was created by God to reside in this stage of where this evil lurks. This stage is why Jesus died—so that you would not feel guilt and shame and succumb to it, but be free to move on. Instead, religion doesn't understand this and has made their home "in the world" here instead of keeping their home in the Kingdom where it belongs but just working here in the world. They were never supposed to do that, but they don't understand. They don't realize it and realizing is the difference between truth and deception. When the last peoples have gone through, Jesus will come and judge (even those in the church) those who have made their home in the world at this stage and who are living in the Kingdom at this stage. Those who live in the Kingdom will be lifted out and this stage will be closed off forever—thus, the first shall truly be the last to go home. And if you understand that people are very ignorant of what this stage is really about, you can pretty much forgive them because you now know the real Truth. And you can now move on.

Let me help you understand about high and low emotion through my own experience. I, like so many people who are in Christ at first, have this huge feeling that they just want to go out and share it with as many people as they can and convert them. But the way you know it is an emotion and not an affection is when they find out that these others that the Christian is trying to save just don't share their enthusiasm. Then the Christian feels upset and rejected or disappointed in themselves or for others. You see that the Christian didn't even get to know the person before sharing. And so, it is quite a selfish sharing expecting or assuming that the other person would come to see the light based on your own enthusiasm. If they did, it usually wouldn't last anyway because they'd be looking to you and others like you to hand-carry them through the process—when you don't even understand the process. This doesn't mean the Christian is selfish. It means that the Christian is immature (yet wise about these feelings). He is very reactive to things that come up by either overly proactively expressing (overly externalizing) them or overly suppressing (overly internalizing) them.

Allow yourself to feel but not succumb to emotion. Calm down from the highs and lows so that you can then rationally continue to commit into studying this feeling. This, my son, is the secret to trusting yourself and others. Become wise in using it and how to react to it. Is it a feeling that can overtake you or one that can take you? Then you will come to respect yourself and others

when it approaches. Then you will have allowed the feeling to grow into affection rather than just ending in rejection.

I'm speaking about emotions and affections because going into any relationship with affection—be it a meeting with another or a potential long-term relationship—is always worth it. If we first develop such a relationship with our Father through His Spirit within us, we can then go into any relationship with affection rather than emotion. When we learn to truly love by way of the Spirit, we can find supernatural affection for others quickly once we surrender up our unnatural emotions and apply natural (normal) feelings.

So, when emotions come upon us, it is neither good to allow them to overtake us nor is it good to suppress them. The first takes us into places we do not want to be slowly sooner and the later takes us to the same place quickly later. Rather, what is good is to deal with the emotion by first calming down through prayer and meditation and then going through the rest of the process until we get to affection. When we can turn our emotions into affections, we can then do the work of God by seeing God in others and others of and in God.

271. The Road to Freedom: Checks and Balances

My son, in Stage Two of the journey, we come across the world of good versus evil, right versus wrong, black versus white, strength versus weakness by the world's standards. This is the State of Opposition to which is an opportunity for conversion from darkness to light. There is only light (Spirit) and darkness (World). Light is neither good nor evil by the world's standards. Light is righteous. By the world's standard, good is righteous but really it is self-righteousness and evil is unrighteousness but really it is self-unrighteousness. This is the deception.

In the Old Testament, the slaves followed Moses and Moses' mind was on God, as he was intimate with God. The slaves followed Moses because they believed. They got to the Red Sea and Pharaoh was right behind. God divided the Red Sea into opposite sides (left and right) with a narrow path through the middle. This was the entrance to the desert. Moses led God's chosen people through the path fearing neither right or left, although the people were terrified of both sides. But Moses had his eye on God. When they passed, God allowed Pharaoh's troops through the Sea and then placed judgment and destroyed them because they were not part of the Kingdom. When the people got into the desert, one of the first things they did was to see and do as the world sees and does and build a golden calf. Then Moses brought down the Ten Commandments from God. This all symbolizes good versus evil and lawful versus unlawful within the desert. In the desert there was belief and disbelief. Moses still had his eye on God until he disobeyed God with the staff. Moses was becoming self-righteous and seeing as the world sees, so he could not continue into the Land of Milk and Honey.

I will make this more clear to you. In your head, there is a warring of good and bad (evil). There is no warring between God and the Devil, for God is all-powerful and Christ has already defeated the Devil on earth. Let us call the good "Janet" and the bad "John". In the world, we associate ourselves with Janet in defeating John. But Janet can't live without John and John can't live without Janet. They are like Siamese twins at war with each other each wanting to go in opposing directions. But we give all authority to Janet because we think that is where God is. That is not God. That is Moses in his time of self-righteousness. In order for the two to stop

warring each other, we tell them each that if they continue, they are going to Hell. But there is no Hell for the believer who has faith in the Spirit. This doesn't work anyway because either John and Janet are so ridden with anxiety that they are in a constant state of terror or John and Janet make a game of illusion that justifies their good and bad actions. Either way, it is very unhealthy.

So, let me make this a little more clearer. There are only three things the Devil in this desert can do to you. One is to focus on the way the world sees things and not rely on the Spirit to take you out of the desert. The second is to become self-righteous, and the third is to side with un-self-righteousness. This is what the Devil did to Jesus in the desert. He first tried to get Jesus to see the bread as bread the way the world sees it and rely on it for sustenance. He then tried to get Jesus to become self-righteous and test God. And then, when that didn't work, he tried to get Jesus to side with him. After none of that worked, Jesus banished the Devil away and Jesus left the desert into Stage Three.

So what does this have to do with Checks and Balances? In our own minds, we may see John being John and Janet being Janet, unchanging, uncompromising, at each other's throats all the time. But how could John and Janet be at peace? What I am about to tell you here is unthinkable to the world and religion because how could Janet give into John? But remember that Janet is not God. Janet is self-righteous behavior. John and Janet are both 1-to-2 year old siblings in constant sibling rivalry. They distrust one another. But as Parent, we have the authority over John and Janet and both will obey. We don't appease John and Janet; we have authority over John and Janet. So, how do you have authority over the two children without taking sides with either one of them? You give them both authority over each other when it comes to too stringent and too apathetic when they both are doing something together. This will help each of them develop trust in the other. If John wants to be compulsive, Janet has the right to check John for being too apathetic and Janet has to obey. But if Janet wants to be inflexible, John has the right to check Janet for being too inflexible and John has to obey. It teaches them to find a range of balance together. Eventually, they'll like the balance relationship a lot more than the unbalanced relationship and play together. And after they begin to trust one another more, they'll start wanting to focus on and calling on the Parent to be with. They'll develop allegiance-of-the-heart (be devoted) to the Parent. This promotes peace of mind and, thus, peace in your own household. This two-sibling rivalry in our minds may also be why Americans have on average two children and may be why most desire to be parents so badly as a dream in replacing these two spoiled brats in their own minds. But what happens usually is that you create two spoiled brats just like the ones in your own minds.

This is the same with Christ having the authority over us and directing us to play nice with one another. And it is the same as the United States' system of Checks and Balances between our Judiciary Branch and Legislative Branch and siblings, with the Executive Branch as Parent having veto power. But because the Executive Branch is in the world, the Judiciary and Legislative Branches have a certain Check system on the Executive Branch not to get too power hungry. It is already evident that the Executive Branch, like the churches of today, are abusing this power by manipulating their way into partisan positions within both the Judiciary and Legislative Branches. Thus, they are in the world. We still have "In God We Trust", but that may be going away soon as well.

When we establish Checks and Balances in this way with God as our Authority, we will learn to play with one another and then mature into higher (deeper) levels of communication and relationships until we come into affection for one another. This affection, this beginning of true and mature love, will then lead us into what Christ commanded, “to love one another as we love ourselves.” The key is for everyone to believe that God is Love and believe the calling when He calls them home too.

So, wherever there is a State of Opposition, use the practice of Checks and Balances until you both can begin trusting each other and see and commit to the Spirit of Authority to follow by together. And wherever you see opposition (opposites), there is the world. Let it be your opportunity to help convert those in the midst of it from darkness into light. For wherever there is two or more in Christ’s name, that is where he will be.

272. The Road to Freedom: Love Calms All Storms

This is very important, my son. Just like our own nature, everyone expects a confrontation (an assault) coming up when they are confused or things are not going their way. They play scenarios in their heads on defending themselves and attacking others when meeting up with them. They see doom instead of bloom.

When you must meet with someone who is confused or is scared of not getting their way, go in with a calm, gracious, and pleasant disposition with the sole purpose of putting them at ease. Ease their fears and be very truthful with them on what is going on. Don’t sugarcoat, but go in with respect as well. Serve, my son, rather than negotiate. This will place you on the offensive and help you maintain self-control and dignity. In serving, you shall get your needs met as well from within and from God.

Love calms all storms. A mission for us all is to supply an allegiance to God, who is love. And we must first connect with this love before we can accept it and be allegiant (devoted) to it. Be the one who helps others connect with the Spirit of Love by first planting the seed in hopes that they will gradually bloom throughout the rest of their day.

273. The Road to Freedom: The Role of the Church

And now I will tell you the role of the church.

Outside the path there are people with conscience and people with no conscience. The people with no conscience are who Paul speaks of who will never see the Kingdom of God. God calls His children to come home. Some of the people with conscience hear (are receptive to) God’s calling and believe what they hear. The people with no conscience do not hear—they remain outside. Whoever hears and believes will be saved from the wretch. God sends the Spirit and a host of angels to retrieve you. Those who heed the call of God and believe what they hear will find the inspiration of the Spirit upon them to follow. They are now in the path that is in the Kingdom. However, the people who now believe have been blinded by conscience for so long that they need to be reconverted back into consciousness. In other words, they must come out of

the darkness of the world and see the light of the Kingdom and the Spirit in the light. Conscience is a divided state of the world. Consciousness is a whole and indivisible Kingdom of God.

In the Beginning, Adam and Eve were in the Garden. But when they reverted backwards to conscience from consciousness (ate of the Tree of Good versus Evil), the Garden became a desert for them. The Garden of Conscious became the Desert of Conscience in their sight. They could no longer see the Garden, though they were still there in the Kingdom, but perhaps didn't know it. Then as their generations afterward degraded, people started leaving the path and, thus, the Kingdom. In other words, no one believed anymore. And so those with a conscience and without a conscience intermingled outside the Kingdom. God flooded the earth because of this, and then later sent His son rather than the flood to retrieve His children per His covenant with us. Now Noah, who had a conscience and believed God's calling by way of the Spirit, built the ark and took up two of each kind of animal and sailed 40 days and 40 nights in a vast wasteland of sea. Now this resembles conscience in the State of Opposition (Duality) of good versus evil, right versus wrong in the Desert. When the Dove came with the Olive Branch, this resembled the Spirit in the Flesh. And Noah saw the Spirit in Consciousness. The wasteland of sea left and the beauty of the land returned.

This Desert of Conscience or State of Opposition (Duality) is all the same with Moses striking the rock in the Desert of Zin (Sin) in his overly righteous (self-righteous) state. The rock resembled the Church in the middle of the desert. This is the same with the Garden of Nebuchadnezzar in the middle of the desert. This theme repeats and repeats itself throughout the entire Bible.

And what this all means is like Jesus, who converted God's children from the state of conscience (worldly thinking and seeing) to a state of conscious (Spirit thinking and seeing), so to was and is to be the role of the church. Jesus has situated the church in the Desert of Conscience, also known as the Place of Conversion, which is in the stage after belief in the process, also known as the Stage of Rebirth. The church's role is to convert believers from their state of worldly conscience back into their original birth-right place of the state of consciousness so that they may see the Spirit within themselves for themselves and, thus, come to trust and commit to it as the Spirit continues taking them on the rest of the journey to God. The church does this through Christ's death and resurrection in freeing you from having to focus and do good versus bad, right versus wrong, law versus unlawful conscience of the world and, instead, see and deliver you into the righteousness of consciousness. This is to prepare you to meet intimately with your Father with your eyes and heart wide open when you get to the Holy-of-Holies later on. The journey is preparation for this. Thus, the church's role is to serve you, not save you. You have saved yourself by choosing to believe in God's calling and beginning on the path with the Spirit via the inspiration of the Spirit.

The problem is that the church of today has been slowly degraded and deceived over time. This may have begun when the Roman Emperors of the time assumed their self-appointed and self-righteous role as spiritual leader of the world. Now, the church is so laden in conscience that it is losing its consciousness and taking God's children with it. It has taken the place of self-righteousness (what is known as good by the world's standards) and has taken on the role of

fighting evil (bad by the world standards). It saves rather than serves. It keeps you in rather than bringing you through. But good versus bad is of the world. Believers and righteousness is of the Kingdom, and the lost non-believers (those with conscience) and unrighteousness (those without conscience) are outside the Kingdom.

Thus, the church's role is not to keep you for themselves. By doing so, you never leave this Stage of Conscience. The church's role is to help you through the desert of the world by helping your conversion from seeing the desert back to seeing the Kingdom. The church is supposed to help you through the desert while increasing your faith in seeing the leading of the Spirit. Christ and the Spirit are in the Kingdom within you. Your faith in the Spirit leading you through the desert in your life will help you see the Spirit. The church's role is to increase your faith in seeing the Spirit. Then you will trust and commit to the Spirit in the realm of conscious (not just trust and commit to the church) when you come to the end of your own desert. You are to follow the Spirit, not the church. The church is not the Spirit. The church is the Spirit's helper in helping you convert from conscience to consciousness. All believers must go through their own desert. The Spirit leads them to the church to support you in doing this. Once you are at the end of the desert, you are now able to see the Spirit in you. He (not the church) will then teach you about and help you understand the Kingdom within as he leads you home to see your Father.

Why are so many people leaving the church today in search for the Spirit? The Spirit is calling them to him so to move on because the church is getting lost in conscience and self-righteousness and is not allowing God's children to continue on the journey home with the Spirit. In essence, the church of today is fighting Christ's purpose for establishing the church and doesn't even know it.

274.The Road to Freedom: The Spiritual Revolution

Now I will talk more of the State of Opposition, Checks and Balances, the Valley of Fear, continuing the journey to true and mature love, and the role of the church, and faith in democracy.

Faith in democracy is no more than realizing that democracy is required to free people from the State of Opposition (Valley of Fear) in the Stage of Conversion. In this stage, conscience must be converted into conscious via Christ's death and resurrection, i.e. through freedom from sin (freedom from the Desert of Sin). But first we must find the way to stop the generation of conscience (today's Generation of Conscience). How do we do this? We do this via democracy. In other words, we do this by giving authority to the people to check the government in their rigidity of law (abuse of power) and authority to check the people in their anarchical (rebellious) abuse of freedoms. This stops the abusing or what I call abnormally using.

This is not the way of religion. In most traditional religion, the congregation is not allowed to question the religious officials. There is even infallibility in one church. This is not democracy but dictatorship. The Spirit calls you out of conscience, out of duality, out of good versus evil, good versus bad, right versus wrong, and into individuality complete within God. As I have said, the role of the church is to serve you in your conversion as you go through the Valley of Fear and

that really is all. But religion is abusive because the religious meddle and overstep their prescribed boundaries.

True and mature love does not exist in conscience, but only in consciousness. Love is neither good nor bad. Love is love. Yes, there is mature and immature love, but immature love must be met with grace in order for it to mature. Immature love is drenched in emotion due to fear and not trust. But in order to trust, one must go through his or her fears, which all means that he must risk surrendering his worldly beliefs (what he knows of the world) so to venture into the unknown of the Kingdom where the Spirit is and can be seen. Have you ever taken a leap not knowing the outcome but taking it anyway because you were inspired to do it? And after you did it, did you trust yourself enough to perhaps want to do it again? You left the world of weighing good and bad, right and wrong, can and can't, and leaped. And once you leaped, you had no control but it was freeing. You leaped into consciousness (an awareness of only what was happening in the moment letting yourself go through it driven by momentum initiated by the Spirit (inspiration)).

This is what religion is afraid of. They see this as abandoning your faith, when in actuality, it is exercising your faith. They see this as irresponsibility. They see this as rebellious behavior where rebellious behavior of the world is following your own fleshly compulsions. Can religion see consciousness (the Conscious Being, the being in consciousness)? Did they used to fully or are they still in their infancy? I believe the Apostles came to see it. But today it's still very much a mystery to them because they are very wrapped in conscience. Fear crept up on them and took them in, though it has not overcome them. The church is still in the Kingdom where it is supposed to be. But the people within don't understand where they are and fully why they are because they lost consciousness over time. And as you lose consciousness, you begin to lose Life.

A person goes into the Stage of Conversion so to be converted into consciousness and follow the Spirit (the Being of Consciousness) the remainder of the path to become intimate with God, free, and at peace.

When you come to the Stage of Conversion, people seek churches. They do this because they figure the church is the one place in society that can help them through the desert. And yes, it is true. They are supposed to be, but most are not—not anymore anyway. They have been corrupted in power, in money, in conscience, in comfort of feel safe with their laws. They have been corrupted so much that when you do take the leap and follow the Spirit, they call it the Devil. Jesus spoke of this in one of his Six Woes where the church makes the people they convert twice the followers of Satan that they are. First you had to tackle good versus evil and now you think the Spirit is the Devil. They screw you all up. You don't know what's up and what's down. So what do you do? Succumb to the authorities of the church. Now you are a good little boy or good little girl. Can you see the sickness? Mental illness is all in this Stage of Conversion. There is no healing in this stage. Jesus found this when he tried to heal people in his own home town. The town could be called today's church. It is my firm belief that most Christians today don't have a belief-problem; they have a conversion-problem.

So then, my son, if you require a church because you are young and immature in seeing the Spirit, by all means seek the church. The Spirit prods you. But, at minimum, I recommend a church that has established a system of checks and balances so that you too may become balanced and less worrisome in it. This will enable you the time and faculties to focus more on Christ and the Kingdom rather than roaming in the desert for years and years in a state of lasting conscience. Remember that you are in the Kingdom, but you just can't see the Kingdom yet. Look for it in spite of those focused in the world, in the State of Opposition. Keep your emotions at bay (enact self-control), not letting your emotions be swayed by the controlling and the rebellious.

And this now leads us to what is known as "too deserving" and "not deserving enough". In this Stage of Conversion and State of Opposition, we must learn how to achieve balance so that we can see the Spirit and move on with him. And so, there are the arrogant (prideful) who say, "I don't need Jesus' death (grace) in this situation because I can go through it and figure it out myself", and there are the neurotic who say, "I don't deserve Jesus' death (grace) after what I have done." But if you do not take the grace that is freely offered you, you will not be able to see the Spirit. The feelings of arrogant pride and unworthiness (undeservedness) both prevent you from the Spirit. Neurosis is delusional beliefs that you conjured or engrained within yourself early in your childhood for one reason or another that continue to hurt you with guilt and shame. But they are fantasy. Once you believe this, you can change your behavior by not listening to them when they crop up. Get to know your neurosis, which are also known as your vulnerabilities and your weaknesses, and be not ashamed of them. The reason you continue to be miserable is because you are ashamed of them and ashamed of yourself letting them be a part of you. They became a part of you because you believed early on from whom you trusted or idolized that you were undeserving. It could have been from them saying it, gesturing it, or not just not being there when you really needed him or her (feeling abandoned). But if you can accept your neurosis, then you can accept yourself as human. In other words, you take responsibility for you and, if you take responsibility for you, there must be a you to take responsibility for.

So take the neurosis and toss them away and look to the Spirit. The Spirit will tell you the truth about you. What many people do is they ignore or avoid the neurosis like they're not there. Thus, they hide them and this makes them swing all the way to the other side of the pendulum. This other side is known as arrogance (pride). It is where they still don't know how to compare themselves (idolize) others, but they'd rather "fit in" than continue to be "put down". The person still isn't balanced and still won't see the Spirit. Until you are not ashamed of your neurosis anymore, you will not see the Spirit and you will not see the Kingdom (though you believe in Christ). How do you know if you are healing and achieving balance? When you begin to accept the grace that Jesus died so that you can have freely and whenever you want it.

Priests are afraid of such grace and call it Perfect Contrition, which to them happens extremely rarely. Perfect Contrition is when you don't need a priest and you are forgiven directly by God. But Perfect Contrition is grace (Luke 5:21) and it is the state of free and everlasting grace for the believer because Christ died for each one of us once and for all. The priest is taught that he is so unworthy and has most probably heard this all his life that he has swung his pendulum all the way to the other side and, thus, became a priest. Who is not proud and in awe of a priest as high

in the order of society? Me. And I can attest that they still can't see the Spirit nor the Kingdom he lives in. However, how do I know that they are still in the Kingdom? Because they believe in the glimmer (mustard seed) of hope in Perfect Contrition (actual grace). That's how.

When a parent punishes a child in the parents out-of-bounds emotion, the child's self divides into two regions—neurosis (id) and superego (condemnation). This creates a co-dependent state for the rest of his or her life unless he or she can find some way to feel forgiven through grace (absolution) or believe that the parent provided inappropriate behavior and that it was not the child's fault. This belief in inappropriate behavior of the parent usually frees the child only if the parent admits (owns up) to it. But most parents, priests, church leader are either in denial (in avoidance) due to their own deep-rooted neurosis (thus, they are now fitting in with the superego) or are just plain ignorant of what they have done. Thus, there is only one other outlet for the child to get back to the his own self (which has the characteristics of righteousness and is righteous) and that is by divine intervention. This divine intervention has come through absolution (grace) via Jesus' death and resurrection. When you are no longer ashamed of your neurosis, you can empower them to check your superego. If not by grace, you remain imbalanced, nor can you mature enough to accept your neurosis (weaknesses).

There is a revolution in America following the Spirit to individuality and leaving the world religions of duality. Go and be one of those people and find the freedom and peace you've always been looking for. In there is trust, and true and mature love, acceptance, intimacy, freedom and, yes, even yourself. Go find yourself in God. Be not afraid through the Valley of Fear. Look to Jesus and awaken to the Spirit who is there with you, sent to you by God to retrieve you home to be intimate once again with your Father.

275. The Road to Freedom: Believe in the Beliefs of the Non-Believer

Now I will show you how you may help a non-believer believe. I have witnessed myself and have been witnessed to. The vast majority try to make believers out of non-believers through testimony, witnessing, terrifying, and telling. But rarely have I ever seen a believer help a non-believer come to believe by the believer believing-in the beliefs of the non-believer.

I believe the greatest reason a non-believer chooses not to believe is because no one ever truly believed or believed-in them first. And I tell you, and this is the truth, that non-believers who are hurting have a great sense of truth and justice in the world because they are enormous skeptics. If you will not respect a non-believer, you have the real problem, not them. At least, they are ignorant of Christ. You have no excuse. I understand that respect is a stage in the Christian maturing process, and you may not be there yet. But, if you do not respect a non-believer, you have no right to go out and witness to them because you are the very reason they stay non-believers. You come out sounding condescending, not genuinely caring and helping. If you do not see yourself equal to a non-believer, you are not mature enough yet to help a non-believer. This is why affection and service is part of the next stage of the maturing process after the stage of respect.

So, now I will give you my actual testimony to you:

I was with my long-time friend. And he was telling me that he was intellectually superior to everyone. According to him, there was nothing that anyone could teach him about himself, about relationships, and about life. I told him that this did not seem possible. But he kept saying it over again. I tried to convince him it wasn't true. [He knew Jesus changed my life and he wanted to hear more about it because of the changes he saw in me. This was my witnessing. Please don't listen to pastors and preachers who tell you this type of character witnessing isn't good enough. If you do not have the gift of communication and healing, it is good enough. Believe me. You could wind up hurting more than you are helping. Know your own special God-given gifts, and, thus, your limits. Learn how not to exceed them. Refer the non-believer to those with gifts that the non-believer needs that you do not possess. Be with them, but don't surpass your gifts or you will sound disingenuous because you're being disingenuous (dishonest).]

Now, my friend told me that he was miserable. He discounted Jesus, but he wanted to analyze, psychologically and philosophically, how my life had changed through this belief system. But he was insistent that there could be no one who could help him. He was just too smart. He could see every which way they were coming from. He could identify their intentions and them blowing smoke on a dime. The more I spoke, the more and more I just wasn't getting through and, I myself, was starting to get a little frustrated.

And just then, the Spirit spoke to me. "Believe him."

I said, "What?"

And the Spirit said it again as clear and plain as rain, "Believe him."

And so I obeyed and decided to actually and genuinely believe him. I told my friend, "Well, I'm starting to see now. There really just isn't anybody is there?"

"No," he said.

So I said, "So what are you going to do about it?"

He said, "I don't know. There really isn't much I guess I can do about it?"

And it is then I said, "I've known you for such a long time, and one thing I've come to know is that you are a very wise man." [Now, in this I was telling him the sole truth. It is important not to blow smoke, but to always tell the truth. If not, you may get them in the door, but them later finding out will make them feel small and foolish and embarrassed about themselves. You may think you are being clever, but what you are really being is just plain selfish. Don't listen to pastors and preachers telling you to get them in anyway you can. See, we must understand that the truth to a person in the world is not the same as a person who talks from the Spirit. Wisdom to a man of the world basically means intelligence to him. Thus, if you do understand the difference, you yourself may find it very hard to help a non-believer or a believer. Understanding (wisdom), as we now know, is the fifth stage in the maturing process and come just before the stage of respect.]

“Yes, I am very wise,” my friend said.

So then I said, “Well it just seems to me that a very wise person may not be able to learn [denoting intelligence] anything more from anyone else, but a wise person could definitely see that, because there are so many people in the world, most everyone has a different perspective on things. Yes, you may not be able to learn anything but you can at least not rule out that other people have different ways of looking at things.”

“Yes, that is true. I kind of never quite looked at it like that,” he said.

[I knew he had seen a therapist for awhile back when and she seemed to help him. I knew he couldn't discount that she was possibly the only other person, besides myself, that he would and could listen to.] And so I said, “What about Sharon? She seemed to get you. Yeah, you might not learn from her much anymore, but at least you could spend a little time getting to know her perspective on things.”

“I don't even know if Sharon would take me again. It's been a long time,” he said.

“Well, just ask. The most that could happen is that you confirm in yourself what you've been telling me all along.”

[So, I heard back from my friend a little while after. He said that Sharon would offer her perspective. Then, after my friend met with Sharon, he called me and told me that he was going to meet with her again more on a regular basis for a greatly reduced fee. After awhile, he seemed to be getting more hopeful.]

About a year after our initial conversation, my friend called me up and said to me, “Tim, I need to tell you something that I've been holding back for about a year now.”

“What is it,” I asked.

“Remember that conversation we had about a year ago? Well, you didn't know it at the time, but I was all ready to commit suicide. I would have been dead by the end of the week.”

Does my friend now believe? Well, let's say that he is now searching for answers. He had a glimmer of belief (that of a mustard seed) because he saw how Christ changed my life and that gave him a little hope to carry on. So, believe? Yes. Oh, he may not believe to the standard that many a Christian would say he must believe to, but he does believe. Now, if he can just get over the pressure of us pushing that standard that closes everyone in like the boulder that the Romans rolled over to close Christ in his own tomb, he may just have a chance at a wonderful life.

276. Road to Freedom: Managing By Seeing the Spirit in Everyone

It is imperative that we begin trusting (believing in) each and every person to whom we have contact with. For as we get to know them, they will show us whether they are uncaring

(apathetic), caring, or controlling (meddling and manipulating). And if they are neither, then they don't have a conscience; they are neither sympathetic nor pathetic).

When we see a person being uncaring or controlling in a given situation, we then realize that they are out-of-touch with their Spirit (with reality) and we should intervene and help them become aware of what they are doing (connect or reconnect with the Spirit). We do this by staying within our own caring and loving conscious in the Spirit. We sit with them and ask them what is wrong. We don't sit idly by and ignore what they are doing or just get rid of them nor do we caretake them and try to control them (spank them, smother them, condemn them, or write them up). Instead, we involve ourselves in helping them in grace (if they are receptive) so that they may see what they are doing (how they are affecting themselves and others with labeling them good or bad, right or wrong) and confess to it. Then if their confession is genuine, we will ask them to seek help (ask and learn) the Spirit of Love who will educate them, help them understand the truth, embrace respect and humility, and change them forever.

277. Road to Freedom: Transubstantiation is in Everyone of God's Children

It is imperative that we begin trusting (believing in) each and every person to whom we have This change (conversion, transformation) is normal and common in all God's children and is Stage 7 also known as love. This, my friend, is what the act of transubstantiation is all about— one's conversion of affection (love) within himself (life's blood) and from himself in servitude (body) to others. Transubstantiation and conversion, which some higher priests believe happens to them during service is just that—conversion.

How many sacraments do you see in the stages of the journey? Our belief of Stage 1 brings us to the service. We take the Nicene Creed and Apostolic Oath to go through Stage 2 of Jesus' death and resurrection. We confess in Stage 3 that Christ is Lord. We learn from the readings of Stage 4. We try to understand the readings through the preaching of Stage 5. We take the humility (eucharist) of Stage 6, which is followed by love (conversion of affections, transformation to permanent change in and of oneself) of Stage 7 followed by acceptance (receiving the Spirit of Christ within fully as in permanently digesting) of Stage 8 and then followed by devotion (concluding service and dedicating oneself to God through faith and service via the Spirit from within) of Stage 9. This devotion will, thus, deliver oneself into intimacy with God (home in the Kingdom) of Stage 10, freedom to live free without guilt or restraint through faith in the Spirit of Stage 11, and provide us sustaining peace and harmony within of Stage 12.

It's these last three that people miss all the time. And if you only go with two sacraments, you miss much of the entire process of the journey. And if we don't understand any of this, then the rites and sacraments mean nothing to us. But all these rites, sacraments, conscience are so focused on and taught by the religious rather than what is meant by the true conscious transubstantiation of all peoples. And this is why it is so difficult to find intimacy in any church.

The Way evokes transformation. Some go through it over and over again fast and some slowly going deeper each time. Some stay in one harbor for a long time until they get the key to the land and then venture to the next land and then the next land until they are at the end. Some go to one land and then revisit the previous lands in regard to come to know the one they are in and

then when they go to the next land they do the same until they reach the end. The Spirit has as many ways within the Way as there are people of traversing the River and gaining the key to each land so that you can gain the Key to the City. It all starts with Belief.

God Bless.

278. The Road to Freedom: Conversion

Who Are You and Who Am I?

U and I, are They in We?
Who do you see when you see me?
Who is us and who is them?
Don't you know, we're all in Him?
There is no good, there is no bad.
Just believe and see the glad.
For who are you and who am I,
But love by grace and grace by die.

279. "Lighten Up"

Why did Jesus go through what he went through? He went through it so you can be free to be who you are. Even if the world thinks you're silly and an outcast, the Spirit in you says "Lighten up and go find who you are. If you knew me, you'd be able to stand yourself."

What is the church but the soul of man. Christ was the spirit of man in the flesh. He was consciousness. Conscience is the sense of moral goodness or blameworthiness (condemnation) of one's own conduct, intentions, or character together with a feeling of obligation to do right or be good. It is the "have to." In psychoanalysis, conscience is the part of the superego that transmits commands and admonitions to the ego. It is also the sensitive regard for fairness or justice (judging). Thus, one's conscience can be manipulated by others rather easily when he or she idolizes a person or a group of people, even to the extent of them or him or her using his or her conscience against him or herself. This is why Jesus' only command was to love others as one love himself and to love God with all of one's mind and all of one's strength. All other commands given to the person by way of his own conscience has, at least partly, deception in it to who he really is. In other words, a person's conscience hides or prevents one from reaching his true identity. It is appropriate for our childhood, but to be true adults, one must outgrow his conscience via Christ's command saying that he may come into consciousness.

How do we know when we love? We know when we "want to" just because the other person needs it and for no other reason. Love is in consciousness. Consciousness is the quality or state of being aware, especially of something within oneself. And so love and consciousness begins with belief in something within oneself that one cannot visibly see. And in the center of this

consciousness is God who is true and intimate love. Some say it is a mystery, but not really. It may be a mystery how you got called to it, but love in itself is true and absolute meaning of one's life. And there is a path within consciousness for connecting with it (with God), all starting with belief. If conscience is the first heaven, consciousness is the second, and perhaps the third is heaven itself.

Most people speak verses from the Bible and do not truly understand them. Others speak of a spirit within them but don't really believe it. Others are afraid to connect with it because their conscience thinks it wrong—that they may inhibit a messiah complex—but at the same time, they feel it right. Though we seek to be like Christ, most people's conscience won't let them. In other words, most religions won't let them although they keep hearing over and over to be like Him. And then there are those that overcome conscience and connect with the Spirit in consciousness who leads them to God. These people find freedom and peace on the inside but are not fully and unconditionally accepted by the masses. The reason that they are not accepted is because the masses can't believe someone actually "has the balls" to be genuine who they are. They are jealous of the one who displays raw and genuine truth. "Why can't I be like that?" they ask themselves. But at the same time, they want to fit in too.

People are in such a state of conflict in their lives (Stage 2) because they have to make the choice of whether to fit in or take the chance of not fitting it. If they commit to searching for who they really are (their true identity and individuality), they will most likely not fit in anymore with those in the world, but will find that they fit in with those of the Kingdom. These are the ones who are more accepting and display genuine caring (not pity). Denominations seem tiny and confined and narrow-minded. Warring and arguments seem meaningless because they now know what meaningful means. They begin to see the Kingdom on earth consisting of all people of all faiths. The Kingdom on earth becomes their church and where they meet or they and another meeting in speaking of God and love and Christ (in the real sense), there is the church. They realize that there is no earthly pontiff—managers, a possibility—but pontiff, no. They realize that God is their only pontiff. Variety seems immense where all things are permissible though not all beneficial. They begin to not rely on grace so they won't feel bad about themselves any longer because the Kingdom is all about grace (it is grace) and everything is permissible. They realize that they don't have to be "good" because love makes them "good" anyway.

Freedom is yours and peace is not far away. One is being delivered from the law, from the world of good versus evil. In the Kingdom, there is only existing (being). There is no guilt and there is no shame. The conscience has been cleared and the conscious delivered. There is no obligation ("have to"), only a willingness ("want to"). There is no such thing as interfaith, but only faith. One's identity becomes clear and no person can reach it so to manipulate, control, or do away with. It comes to be everlasting. Though they will kill the body, they cannot kill one's embodiment in the soul.

Conscience is perception, but consciousness is the same for all. It is the truth—the same truth for all—and we see each other in it. Free your mind from what you have been programmed to think from the world and see things for what they are. What is is what is. When one takes you to the canvass, wipe away the paint and see the light for what it really is. How do you do this?

Love what was not loved before. Love who was not love before. And love where there was not love before. Consciousness is love and love is consciousness and they are life. It is all unified, nothing defined, nothing confined, nothing divided, but just is. It is the end and it is the I Am of what I Am.

So lighten up. The race is over and you have won. Be free to be who you want to be without restriction. It's ok to be you.

280. By Whose Permission to Follow What

When you follow Christ and be who you are because you are being given permission by God, you leave a wonderful legacy. Christ freed us all so that we may be free to be who we were created to be without the confines of religious law and persecution and guilt and condemnation. And when we share with others who we follow, it gives others permission to be who they are too and crawl out of their own shell and their own imprisoning situations.

Our Father works through us as shining examples to free others. People are looking for acceptance, intimacy, freedom, and peace in their lives. Very seldom do they achieve these because they were not taught to think for themselves and given the freedom to discover Jesus personally for themselves. They aren't taught that the Spirit is within them. Instead, people think they have the right to meddle, as they were meddled upon. Meddling is what Jesus meant in Matthew 7:1-5.

You are already justified in who you are. You believe in the Spirit within you and you believe in this Spirit because you believe Christ. So then, you have been given God's permission to seek who you really are, to begin the journey of love. And the Spirit will lead you there. When you get there, you'll discover that you are of God.

People are so scared that if you don't do this or don't do that, you won't find the Kingdom, you'll go somewhere else. I'm here to tell you that conscience is only part of the Kingdom. If you follow the Spirit, he will lead you to God and lead you to the real you. In other words, you'll wind up doing this and doing that anyway via your faith in following the Spirit. The difference is that you'll wind up doing that which is righteous and true and honest within your conscience without the deceptive "noise" of what doesn't need to be there.

Don't get stuck on what your conscience tells you. Your conscience can be deceiving. It includes things that produce guilt and shame in you for breaking this law and that law, this belief and that belief. There is a lot further to go in the River of Life, the Path of Love, the Journey to God. Instead, ask yourself, "How would I want to be loved in this situation?" Then, do it (commit to it). This follows the command of Jesus Christ and then you will be following the Spirit of Christ further along the River.

281. Road to Freedom: Trusting the Spirit

In Stage 2 (The Land of Hope that includes the Valley of the Shadow of Death, Psalm 23) on our way to Freedom, we learn that conscience is a self-survival tool of laws (being part of the superego) preventing one from extreme anxieties ("ups") or depressions ("downs") caused by

fleshly desires that wish to force control upon (manipulate or caretake) or be indifferent (apathetic) to as we await the Spirit of Love to come over us. We learned that it is only by caring what the Spirit has to offer us by becoming conscious (aware) of his presence and leadings when he comes over us will we continue on our way to being free. We realize that living aware (in conscious) is really living; it is truly life-giving and is what separates us from the dogs. Anyone can obey laws, but who is conscious of who they are and what they are doing to themselves and others while they are doing it? If you really want to live, do things efficiently and effectively via wisdom in a slow and balanced pace with the Spirit, being aware of everything along the way. This is part of consciousness. If you just want to survive, being busy without the Spirit via all sorts of knowledge, most or all of what you do will be inefficient and ineffective even if you believe in a Spirit. You will stay childlike in conscience. A conscious person sees the way out. Conscience only knows the way he came in and cannot see the way out. Therefore, he feels trapped knowing he can't go back. So he either sits in judgment or manipulates.

When we enter Stage 2, we have two options (choices). We may surrender our own control and move forward or not surrender our own control and stay where we are. Going back into Stage 1—only believing that a spirit of love exists which saves us but keeps us ignorant yet still accountable of what we are doing—is not an option. This belief must stay with us so that we may hope to see the Spirit of Love come and confess that Christ is Lord. If we do not surrender our own control to the Spirit in this stage, we stay in death's shadow somewhere between and tempted by the evils of indifference and manipulation, both of which lead to death. We stay in anxiety-ridden conscience continually trying to mediate between two opposing forces—the force of angst-manipulation (which tries to get you to control what's going on around you without true regard for how other's feel) and the force of unfeeling indifference (which tries to get you to just sit idly by while you place judgment on the follies of what's going on around you). Feeling guilty and ashamed are reactive impulses that we place upon ourselves when we rely on ourselves or others rather than awaiting the Spirit to lead us forward in the journey. We react in feeling guilty and ashamed when we or other people are indifferent to us and do not help us or help us but it is obvious that they don't really want to (they do it because they feel obligated to). We also react in feeling guilty and ashamed when we or other people try to control (manipulate) what we want to do for ourselves or circumvent (manipulate) the law usually in thinking that it will get us further ahead when only it is dishonest, deceitful, and deceptive. If we surrender our own control to the Spirit, we enter into consciousness which delivers us out of Stage 2 by way of our caring Spirit allowing us to feel with balanced emotion. It is worth waiting for the Spirit to come before we move because the Spirit will deliver us an honest control over ourselves. We become conscious of how we treat other people, other living creatures, and other things around us—not just how others treat us. This helps us wait for the Spirit of Love (and Truth and Mercy) to come over us and journey us forward into trusting that there must be a reason why we aren't aware of (seeing) what we are doing to ourselves or others and why others aren't seeing what they are doing to us.

What else is there other than sit idly by or control? It is imperative that we ask for help. We must first ask for help from the Spirit and trust that the Spirit will answer our prayers. All things come in their own time, but if we do feel compelled to initiate asking others first to simply learn—no more and no less—realize you are still in Stage 2 and realize that most others reside in Stage 2. When or if we find anxiety coming on (no matter how small), realize that you are trying

to control the situation. So, Stop! Or if others resume their Stage 2 extremes (indifferent obligation or manipulation), stop the movement and leave. The problem is that if you are not conscious of what you are doing or conscious of the Spirit, you are probably being manipulated and you don't even know it. Resume waiting for the Spirit to answer your prayers and teach you by listening for him through relaxing, breathing, praying, and meditating. Remember that the Spirit works through others for your benefit as well and will deliver you to those and those to you for what he needs you to do at his discretion. This will help you understand how we are all interconnected by the Spirit within the Kingdom of God and via the Kingdom of God within each of us. Then we venture into Stage 3 of the Land of Confession (Admittance) where we confess our faith and that Christ is Lord. Then you will be admitted via the Gate of Christ Jesus. Application and understanding will come later.

So, why not be quick to learn? Slow down. Find balance. Stay calm by being calmed by the Spirit and trust him. You're probably going faster than you need to be. Anxiety is on you and compelling you. The quicker you are, the less conscious (aware) you are of what is happening within you and around you. This will result in loneliness rather than feeling interconnected and a part of love, a part of the community, a part of the Kingdom. Patience. Wait for the Spirit to come over you and lead you. You have become intimate with the Spirit, now wait (trust) and let the Spirit show (teach) you everything he knows. Who better to show you the Kingdom of God in you and others than the Spirit. Slow down and be mindful of each step, each stroke. Slow down your mind and let your body catch up. Be conscious (aware) of everything you do and where you are and who you are with. Be patient with yourself and others, not to be perfect, but to be aware. Slow down and you will begin enjoying the subtleness of life in the Kingdom.

Are you patient with yourself? Are you able to enjoy the process? Or do you need to continuously help people because you don't want to wait for something to happen by manipulating something to happen so you can attack it and get it done in record time so everyone will see you as great or so you'll see yourself as "one up on the other guy". When you are patient, you have to deal with the fear of someone getting at you for being "lazy" or not doing well. In other words, you must confess to God and yourself. You are impatient because you fear conflict and failure in other people's eyes, failure in yourself, and you fear embarrassment. But the question we must ask ourselves is if the path the Spirit leads us on is righteous and the only path for us. As for me, it is the only path I want to be on even as he takes me through the Valley of the Shadow of Death, which is the price of Admission.

And we must understand that during this time of Stage 2, through the Valley of the Shadow of Death, so to do we celebrate Christ's death via our faith in him as we go through what we are going through. It is pain that we encounter because we come during this time in growing a conscience. And by conscience, I mean growing sympathetic. However, we must also understand that if all we have is sympathy without the Spirit providing us a balance in our sympathies, we come to be not so much sympathetic, but pathetic. And pathetic means having the capacity to move one to contemptuous pity. But the path is about pathos meaning compassion and not pity. And what is contemptuous pity but sympathy that lacks respect or reverence. It is disobedient sympathy and is contemptible. When we pity, we do not empower others to get through what they are going through as does the Spirit, but instead we judge and condescend resulting in either smothering (controlling the person and the situation) or lending

little a helping hand (apathetic to the true needs of another). Evil plays on our sympathies (deceives us) into pitying one another sending a message to the one who needs help that he or she is of really little value and little worth to himself or any other. The Spirit is interested in justice (balanced sympathy), not judging (unbalanced sympathy).

This I'm telling you because Christians who are immature do this thinking they are doing it in love when really they are sending a message to the world that Christians are self-righteous and/or uncaring. Believe me when I tell you this that that is the message being received. And we wonder why people won't come and eat from the Tree of Life. In growing a conscience, the Spirit evokes the person to confess (admit) his or her guilt via consciousness (being aware of how what they did affected themselves and the lives of others). When we enact pity on another, he or she doesn't need to admit his or her guilt. They either let us caretake them or they blame others for not lending them a helping hand. This confession empowers the person to learn about themselves and why they do what they do, thus, begins their discipleship with the Holy Spirit.

So then, why are we continuously disappointed? Disappointment is a characteristic that locks us into the Land of Hope and not allow us to journey ahead with our Spirit into the Land of Confession (Admittance). Disappointment is just that: A "let-down" due to our expectations of others or ourselves by hoping that the position that we appoint others our others to be in our minds (falsely project unto) will come into fruition. If we do not understand the truth of who others or ourselves are, then we, in fact, are lying to ourselves. We are placing ourselves in a "world of deception and a world of hurt" via our unrealistic expectations. And, thus with expectations, especially unrealistic ones, we wind up judging, condemning, and criticizing.

Now, the truth will set us free. And by this I mean that once you know (understand) the truth, you cannot lie to yourself anymore and say that you never discovered the truth. And so this insane and addictive pattern you've been locked into (know as the world) because of your chosen illusion is finally realized within yourself. Your eyes are now wide open and you are no longer blind.

For me, I projected true love (intimacy)—that which I yearned for so immensely throughout my life—onto everyone I met. "If they truly love me," I said to myself, "I should be able to do this and that and they should respond in a caring and loving way that empowers me, not cripples me." And yes, that may be correct. They should. But the truth is they don't because most everyone is focused in the world and lost in contemptuous pity. They'd rather see things and other people as pathetic to raise themselves up and avoid their own problems. So, I've been testing people in Stage 2 throughout my life. And now that I know the truth, because the Spirit of Truth has set me free, I must confess that no one in the world will love me more than or as much as I love myself. And when I say "I", I mean a man with the Spirit of God within him. And when I mean the world, I mean those who don't know the Spirit of God or connect with the Spirit of God in them. And I confess that Christ is my Lord.

And so now I can learn about how to be good to myself and be myself via this love rather than continue to expect this love from others. Now I know that most all people live in a world of just conscience (relying on established behavioral rules and regulations because it is easier but

imprisoning) rather than transcend into consciousness (being aware of who they themselves are and caring about others discovering who they themselves are).

And so now that I have confessed that Christ is my Lord, I have been given admittance into this learning of true freedom practicing that everything is permissible though everything is not beneficial. And so who do I rely on now to tell me (listen to) which is which as I risk stepping out into true freedom and trying everything—my mind’s conscience with all my worries of obeying the rules and regulations (placed there by man to keep at bay the unruly and those with no conscience) along with a constant fear of being condemned by man or my worry-free obedience to my True Counselor (Spirit of Truth and Love and Compassion) who lives within me and convicts me of righteousness while displaying love, mercy, and forgiveness? There is no freedom without my sole reliance on, devotion to, and intimate friendship with the Holy Spirit within me. For where the church had once been my conscience, my consciousness (awareness) of the Spirit within me and intimacy with him have saved me and set me free from being lost in the confines of religious rule, guilt of nonconformity in the church’s habitual rites and blind following of its leaders and forced communal (denominational and non-denominational) identity, and, thus, little or no identity of who I really was that went along with it. For who I am is God my Father’s special and righteous and lovable son selected for a special purpose—not that I am any better or any more special than anyone else, but am conscious (aware) of my specialness to Him.

282. Road to Freedom: It’s All About Conscious Love and the Freedom to Live in It and Give It to Others

Conscience is dictated by fear and propagated by our desire to survive. The rules and laws are there for those who otherwise would deny their sinning. The law came first to which when taught, those who believed and trusted in the law grew a conscience. But law never saved anyone from themselves in making them become aware of the Spirit of God. This awareness is known as consciousness which takes away the fear of death and brings about the knowing of everlasting life. For everything good and evil done in the world by the world is due to this fear. But in the kingdom, all is done because of love and “wanting to” because there is no fear.

Man goes in and out of consciousness much of his whole life. And where he goes when out of consciousness is in conscience, trying to define (make sense of) what he cannot define (make sense of) and trying to confine within his own formulated boundaries what he cannot confine. Instead, he must free his mind. So then, my brothers and sisters, what you have here on earth is a mixture of consciousness and conscience to which you must sort via the Spirit of Truth within you. And in order to truly be free from the controlling nature of the world, we must leave the world by releasing one’s natural desire to analyze that which cannot be analyzed, releasing one’s natural desire to define what cannot be defined, and releasing one’s natural desire to confine that which cannot be confined. One either lives life without fearing death which is within the Kingdom or lives death without fearing death which is outside the Kingdom. But there is no life in living life while fearing death nor living death while fearing life imprisoned by one’s conscience. You will have to trust the Spirit wholeheartedly or you will not be free, nor feel alive.

Be free to live solely in love so that you may love others as much as you love yourself.

283. Road to Freedom: To Be Well-Adjusted

To be well-adjusted is to have achieved a harmonious relationship with the environment and with other individuals via the Spirit of God and God the Father and His Son within us. Thus, well-adjustment can only be achieved if we are intimate with our Spirit and if we are free with our Spirit from the confines of the world in mind and soul. So then, we must love God with all our mind, all our soul, and all our strength.

And when we search for God, where is He? Where is the Spirit of God in you? The answer to everything you search for is somewhere between trying to make things happen the way you want and taking yourself out of the picture altogether.

So if you are with or you meet someone who tries to get you to do what they want and you don't want to, let them know that when they choose to stop, where they can reach you. It is because you are intimate with God, you will be there in that balanced and caring place. And if they want nothing to do with you, let them go. If you see someone you want nothing to do with, at least pray for them and care for them from a distance and approach if that is the Spirit's request.

And that goes for yourself as well. If you don't like yourself, pray for yourself. If you are trying to control you or run away from yourself, stop and find the Spirit somewhere between controlling and running away.

When you believe in the Spirit, the Spirit sends you to what your conscience mind sees as a caring place. Where else but a church—religion? Isn't religion supposed to be the one place in all the world that should exude caring and intimacy? It is but it isn't really. You see, the Spirit sends you to church to learn about him through conscience. And it is almost inevitable, in Western culture anyhow, that a person falls into a by-product of the church known as "approval addiction." Approval addiction is what I coin "Mother-May-I Syndrome" because of a controlling mechanism weighing on the consciences of those who join and is especially common in religion. A pulpit is a stage and, thus, I would say that most churches are very conscience-laden. And by this I mean that they exemplify the essence of conscience which is to either idolize or be idolized, to either father (mother) or be fathered (mothered), to be either controlling or apathetic. This is the essence of childhood and the essence of adult neurosis and is not where God lives. The Spirit of God lives somewhere in between. And, thus, living in conscience is living in childhood as an adult to which there cannot be any freedom achieved. Freedom comes much later in the journey. And so, what the church calls interdependence, is really co-dependence. If it were truly interdependent, the church would not hand down punishment and make laws to the extent that they deem them the only "correct" law.

But you must learn as the world learns and how the world learns if you are going to learn the difference between the world (religion of conscience) and the Kingdom of God (Spirit of Consciousness). So, you must go through the church, but then you realize, as you follow the Spirit, that the church is to prepare you for the Kingdom. And when you realize that the Spirit is leading you out (past religion) into the Kingdom and religion has no intentions of letting you go

without condemning you for it (but in their minds, you are condemning yourself), then you realize that religion does not understand itself and its role. It is then that you realize that Western religion is in conscience and has refused to accept Eastern understanding of consciousness. This may be why Christ told the Apostles not to go into Asia because he had already been there.

In order to be totally free in the Spirit, we must journey past religion and into the true Heartland of Freedom. The great thing about the Heartland of Freedom is that you feel even more connected with others by way of the Spirit than you could ever have in conscience or physical presence. You realize and feel that everyone is connected by the Spirit and, though you become totally free as an individual, you feel so much together.

But, of course, the Kingdom and the world are opposite of each other in the way they work. In the world of conscience, the freer you think you are, the more alone you become. But in the Kingdom of Consciousness, the free you are, the more together you become. Western religion does not understand this and they really think they are protecting you from you. But individuality leads to indivisible interconnectedness making you much more well-adjusted.

284. Road to Freedom: Patience

Every person is much more impatient than the Spirit, and, thus, people place demands and expectations on themselves and others in an extremely rapid pace that people, if they idolize another, are always filled with anxiety and guilt. This is not normal. The religious is the worst at this. I may feel guilt but it is far and few between in my life today. Do not feel guilty over what the Spirit has not convicted you or shown you. Only people condemn others for things they themselves are unwilling to take the time and patience to teach. And even then, they still show little mercy, if any. You are just not there yet as you follow the Spirit, and that is all. Do not listen to the laws and expectations of man. Man is filled with very little wisdom to begin with, and when coupled with his impatience, is of no consequence to one who is friends with the Spirit. This is what separates an adult person from an adult child and makes us men and women of God. I myself have been waiting over 35 years to discover what God has in store for me, and all because of the Spirit.

285. Road to Freedom: Real Men and Women in the Spirit

If you are a man or woman in the Spirit, then you will know what I mean. We do not need to meddle in other people's affairs. We don't need to parent others nor do we need parenting by others in the world. We don't need to idolize others nor do we need to be idolized by others in the world.

The more you follow the Spirit, the more open-minded and sure of yourself you become and the more you realize how closed-minded others really are and how, at the same time, unsure and insecure they really are. An insecure person wants to do one of two things—father (be idolized) or be fathered (idolize). An insecure person thrives in the world of conscience, but a secure person (also known as a man or woman of God) sees things from the Kingdom of consciousness. We in the Spirit come to just be who we are, come to do our own thing and enjoy life, and are just willing to be there for others only when we are asked by them. I am not speaking here of

emergency intervention because, if I were, I would be speaking apathetically. I am speaking in the realm of empowering others who wish themselves to be empowered.

Therefore, stop going to people to be fathered or mothered by and stop trying to father or mother others. This comes from conscience. Be not an idol to your children and do not idolize your children or they will grow up insecure and unsure or prideful of their own selves. And again, I am not speaking about being supporting because either one I am speaking of lends absolutely no support. Your Father in Heaven is your only father and your only mother. And it is not your calling to father or mother anyone, but only share your spirit (of the Father) with everyone by now being just who you are. Then your children will grow up fine. Idolize no man or woman (not even yourself) and don't place yourself in a position to be idolized and you will be a man or woman yourself in the Spirit and of God.

286. Road to Freedom: Be Not Ashamed of Who You Are

When someone asks you if you are a Christian, or a Jew, or this or that, just respond that you are you. Be not linked to a group of people, to a stereotype. Do I believe in Christ? Yes. But there are many things that Christians do in the name of God that I find very unChristianlike. I do not like it at all, and I do not want who I am to be associated with such acts. No, I do not want the stereotype of being a "Christian" because I do not endorse today's Christianity, Catholicism, or what have you and whatever are the divisive terms used today. But I can love and accept others for who they are and those who say they are without having to endorse their actions. I am me and I'm not ashamed to say so. Be you and I'll be me. I am not this and I am not that. I am not typical and, of course, that will make me a delightful curiosity to some and a pain-in-the-ass to others.

287. Road to Freedom: Closed-Mindedness and Open-Mindedness

So, the question is that will they fully accept me as me only if I fall into their laws? If so, then they aren't accepting me as me but as one of them. But what if the Law I go by is greater than their laws, and the Land I live in includes theirs just so much more vast? Will they still accept me for me? No, because they can't see past themselves—past their own closed-off boundaries. They rigidly exclude any outside influence, which is the definition of closed-mindedness. And I have found that even the most open-minded religion is still very closed-minded, and all because of fear and lack of trust.

But I can, of course, accept theirs as I already have, although I don't like what I see coming from within the Land I live in coming from there. But they do have room in my land because they aren't all mean and intolerable, and are in fact, many times quite nice and loving. And it is because of my hope in their niceness and love that I keep a room for them in my heart.

288. Road to Freedom: Just Relax: Stop Looking for a Rhyme or Reason

The gist of it is that, truly, nobody knows what's going on, and no one is as wise as they think they are. Life is life. Even children playing in a playground sometimes get hurt—and even with the best intentions. No one really knows the true rhyme or reason, so why try to figure it out. Is

life a mystery? In one sense it is. The more you reach for the carrot, the more the carrot moves on you. The key is to stop reaching for the carrot and then the carrot is given to you. But the truth is that, if you didn't ever reach for the carrot, you wouldn't come to this conclusion. In other words, you must go through life as a child trying to define it, confine it, and refine it so that you will one day come to the realization as an adult that you can't; it's fine the way it is. Only God can define, confine, and refine anything and anyone.

Life is good the way it is. The problem isn't life; the problem is you not being fine with the way life is—you not accepting the omnipotence and omnipresence of God. The more you give up trying to control life without giving up on life, the more you will love life just the way it is. You see, the truth is that life is elusive until you stop trying to run it and, thus, only after you surrender to God's running of it. Then you will find the true essence of it—the truth in it. It is you who must be defined in, confined to, and refined by God with regards to the Kingdom rather than the world.

After life was created, you'd be highly surprised to find out just how much hands-off-the-world God is at running it. The Spirit helps you understand all this so that you can be in rhythm with God and His workings. This is why everything begins to get better in your life and why life seems to make more sense. And the sense of it all is that you are part of a complete universe that acts in unison, and that you were just out of synch with it. God doesn't change, He stays the same. You change into Him; He doesn't change into you. He is not elusive; you are the one being elusive. The more you seek Him, the more you change until you find Him. And once you find Him, you need not seek anymore. What you sought will be given to you once you accept what you've found.

In the other sense, life isn't a mystery? Though we may see life as a fog, as everyone moving around in a fog, life isn't a mystery. The Spirit brings everyone into clarity when you come to see the Kingdom for what it really is. Once you were in a fog, but no longer. The world moves slower because you are much more patient and less demanding of yourself. And you sustain this patience even when everyone else is placing demands on you and themselves to run around like a chicken with its head cut off. The details of God's creations move in slow motion, such as the leaves, the wind, the sunset, and yourself. Life doesn't pass you by; you are in its path when it embraces you and takes you on its wonderful ride. And you feel free while, sadly, others are frantic for their fix in life to control what they deem as important to them.

What I have found out to be important is letting people be as they are and just sharing the love that the Spirit has embodied in me. For there has come only one savior and my purpose is not to go save anyone but be there for everyone who would like some answers as they go through their own life reaching for that elusive carrot.

Yes, I am quite young by the world's standards, but I am already in my retirement. My wisdom has allowed me to seemingly do less work and yet get paid more for it—when really I am just much more efficient in who I am and what I do. I no longer chase the carrot and am pleased with what I have now. I need no more. This allows me a great deal of time to spend with God, my wife, my family, and you.

I choose not to believe in a rhyme or reason for anything but only in the belief of “just is in God.” This affords me the joy of relaxing and just sharing love. And if I pray that everyone go to heaven, why not? Why not all of us, together, have the chance to be joyous and in love at the same time with our Father?

289. Road to Freedom: Question Authority

A man must question authority of other men in order to know for himself whether he is being deceived or given the honest truth. He will then be able to know who he can respect and trust that the man is a caring man. He will also gain knowledge and wisdom along the way. What does others in authority fear if you question their authority if they have nothing to hide? Only then over time with enough experience, the man in authority can be truly trusted and respected.

This is not to say we don't risk first trusting (believing in) someone. But a man is only human and even a man in conscience can justify his uncaring decisions. Anyone can say, “It looked good at the time, so I did it.” Not many say, “It looked good at the time, but it would have been disrespectful to you if I did it. So I didn't do it.” One must first listen to his conscience so to let him know to seek the Spirit in order to sympathize and empathize (be conscious of his actions in how they will affect the soul of himself and others) prior to his next move.

And a person must find the key to the harbor before so that he may be ready to move forward to the next. Thus, he must have faith before he can have hope. And he must know (understand) the truth before he can respect. The irony of it all is that man is impatient for lands up ahead, but if he received them in his current condition, he wouldn't be able to stand in it (stand it) for very long. He simply is just not ready.

But questioning the authority of God Himself is another thing. Why question His authority when He is pure love and we know this by our faith and our relationship with the Spirit? By all means ask Him so that you may learn. Ask Him for help. Ask Him. Asking Him is not questioning His authority. It is actually acknowledging that He is the authority over you. And this is the same with others who have authority in the world. Ask them, but don't be surprised if man finds other things more important and pressing than to help you. This is the difference between God and the world. If others will not go into harbors further down the River, you go there with God instead. Do not let man impede your progress; you have the Spirit of God to guide you.

290. Road to Freedom: God Gives to Those Who Ask for His Help

Defending is offending. So, recommend to mend. When you meet with another and you realize you don't have the resources to meet a request, don't get defensive. Recommend creating another way. In other words, if you can't find the traditional materials to build a traditional bridge, build a non-traditional bridge. The goal still remains to get to the other side. We must always be striving to meet our goal by consciously being aware of traditional and non-traditional means, with the courage to pursue both. Conscience will only allow us to see what we already have. Conscious will allow us to see what is available to us but that we have not yet used. Thus, if you can't get to heaven by works (by building a tower out of what you can see), use your faith to get there by using what you had not seen before.

There is no such thing as “God helps those who help themselves.” Instead, “God gives to those who ask for his help.”

291. Road to Freedom: The Kingdom, The Way of Life and The Way of Love

The Kingdom of God

What is it that a man fears most and a woman most desires?

Judging closes one off from others, thus, the mind deems itself protector and defender of the soul in the world. But now that we have the Spirit, the mind no longer has to sacrifice itself as savior for the soul. No longer does the mind have to sustain and absorb hit after hit, blow after blow directed at the soul. It can begin healing as it transfers the reigns over to the Spirit. And when the mind is secured by the Spirit and the mind knows it, the mind will go free. And its conscience will be clear. Now we have a real savior through Christ Jesus. Because of the Spirit of God from God, the evil that we stored in our memory can now be released and those it came from we are able to forgive. We are able to forgive by growing mature in Christ by the Spirit and gaining the strength to pray for and show compassion to those people along the way.

First we must believe (trust) that the Spirit is love and ask it to come. The Spirit will come from our souls and enter our minds. The Spirit from the soul will wage war against the evils of the conscience mind, wipe them out, and, thus, free us from being bound by conscience. This is when hope will come rather than despair. The evils of the mind will fight with apathy and control as its weapons of choice. The Spirit will use caring and compassion and mercy which is infinitely more powerful. This caring, compassion, and mercy is the truth that the mind has been yearning for all the while. And when the Spirit has won, and the evil is dead, the conscience mind will surrender and confess that Christ is Lord; for we have now been bought and are bound to and by the Spirit of God who will lead us to freedom.

We all want security. In our conscience mind, we will take a partner who we believe will take care of us or we can take care of. But who is the real partner we can believe in to take care of us and us take care of him? No, we do not truly want people to take care of us nor do we want to take care of people. Fear of the mind (fear of embarrassment, humility, affections, acceptance, and one and on) is like a filter. It filters out truth, which is what the mind truly desires. And unless the mind is fed this truth, it will always yearn and feel hopeless and empty. The mind desires to be secure and free, but no man can make it this—no man except Christ Jesus that is—and no substance or thing either. The mind asks to be fed and only by the Spirit can the mind be fed exactly what it desires.

So, what is it that a man fears most and a woman most desires? Intimacy. And you can hardly find it anywhere on earth, and you'll never find it from those whose minds are in the conscience world. Intimacy can only be attained by following the Spirit to freedom. For, intimacy is security within the Kingdom of God in you. And a person will truly be free only after he or she is intimate with the Spirit, who will show him or her the Kingdom. Most all are in the conscience world trying to fix rather than truly serve. They won't understand unless they first will admit to themselves that they have trouble seeing what is evident and ask for help from the Spirit of God. Be not alone, my son, I am here and there are some who see as you see. You are mine and I am yours and we are His.

The prideful and all those that refuse to be anywhere else but only in their conscience minds will not see (be shown) the Kingdom. They fear their soul will be overpowered and die by evil. The hurt they sustained by evil and stored in their minds they fear is too great to let go. But by their belief, the Spirit is already there. And evil dies once touched by the Spirit. The soul is in tact. So, who will save our soul because our conscience minds can't take it much longer—because our healthy minds can't take trying to save our soul until our physical death as the evil, the stored guilt, and stored shame continuously closes in on it? Christ Jesus. Thank God death came early! For, the death we've been waiting and yearning for has arrived! Let us all swap our deaths with his so that we may never have to fear death again.

And now that you can see this, may you forgive everyone because they truly cannot and will not see what they are doing. They aren't conscious of it. But they all have consciences—and sadly that is the only thing they choose to hang on to. Who will take their place and save their soul? Not you—for then you would be trying to take control—but he who is in you.

Love others as much as you love yourself. Do not judge from your mind but be an open vessel so that everyone may drink from your soul and be touched by God's Spirit in you.

The Way Home And now, my love, I will show you the way home to the Kingdom.

"I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me. If you really knew me, you would know my Father as well. From now on, you do know him and have seen him."

Faith

Risk trusting and believing in the Spirit of God—who is Love

Hope

Go through the Valley of the Shadow of Death by way of the Spirit of God

Resurrection

Confess to God that Christ is Lord and be reborn and renewed in mind and body by the Spirit of God

Discipline

Ask and Learn from the Spirit of God

Wisdom

Apply what you learned and Understand the truth from the Spirit of God

Humility

Come to respect and be humbled by the Spirit of God

Love

Embrace the Spirit of God and Deliver love to others

Acceptance

Accept fully the Spirit of God

Devotion

Devote yourself to and Obey the Spirit of God

Intimacy

Develop a deep and everlasting friendship with the Spirit of God

Freedom

Be free from the world and help free others by the Spirit of God

Peace

Live in peace and harmony with the Spirit of God forever more

DON'T GIVE UP ON...

LOVE

Faith

Risk believing in Love

Hope

Go through hell and high water in hopes of finding love

Love

Grab hold with both arms and confess your love

Discipline

Learn what love has to offer

Wisdom

Discover the Truth of what love really is

Humility

Worship true love with all your heart, with all your mind, and with all your strength

Generosity

Share your love with others wherever you go

Acceptance

Allow love to enter the deep recesses of your soul

Devotion

Do whatever love wants you to do

Intimacy

Fall deeply in love

Freedom

Live in love

Peace

Remain in love forever

292. Road to Freedom: Go Into the City (Admitting and Facing My Mortality)

My friends, when I met with God, He said to “go into the City, love and live, be free, enjoy life, and there I will call on you.” I did not truly know what He meant by this. I even thought it meant the Catholic Church as they have proclaimed themselves the New Jerusalem (the City) in their own Catechism. And there I went but still if found more that law preceded love. Meeting God was my most important step in true intimacy. And by Him telling me to go into the city I realized over time that He meant for me to go on to the next Harbor known as freedom. The City is the place that is free of sin. I met with God within the Tent that the Spirit led me to and waited for me to come out. I had not come out yet I now realize because I was afraid until I pursued that which is written below to my bosses. For some reason, I thought I was in that city right after, but the city seemed bleak. As I began then to pursue freedom, I started catching glimpses of the City. I guess I just forgot there is a road that leads to that city.

Realize, my friends, that I am still in my human self. As you know of me, my preoccupation with sex—objectifying to relieve my stress and tension—still comes and goes. Though I am not nearly as I was to which my wife can attest to. I am in the intimacy to which sex not need to be that which I gain my intimacy from. But yet what is traumatic still to me is that which leaves me anxious to which I have high anxiety—an anxiety disorder if you will. Ah, to tackle and overcome my anxiety disorder. Now I can because I am intimate with God. In doing so, I must face all that which I developed it out of. I must face my death, my own mortality. Perhaps this be my greatest fear stemming tremendously from when I almost died when I was around two years old. And now I can. Release my anxiety, release my sin.

Like I have said before, the way the 12 harbors work is that there are actually 12 main harbors that a person focuses on to arrive at. But the road to each contains those harbors before it leading up to it. These harbors that are now supporting the main harbor I will call “stations.” For example, I am now headed for the 11th harbor known as Freedom. I must therefore:

1. Believe in my fear (that is it really exists) and that my denial of the fear is why I sin,
2. Pray to the Spirit to show me that which is my greatest fear at the time and for him to appear and be with me and guide me steadfastly and justly through the desert of hope where I must neither see myself as a victim (passive) to the fear or try to be a thug (aggressive) and overpower the fear on my own, but take the narrow path between the two where sufferance and prayer are one’s greatest assets and from where only the path continues,
3. Commit (confess) in abundant faith to the Spirit that He (Christ) is Lord to whom I choose to follow in my trust to the place of learning of my fear,
4. Learn of my fear, by that which I fear, from those who are familiar with it (when my fear was love (God), it was God Himself through His Spirit within me who taught me for He is Love and the authority on it),
5. Apply my teachings to tackle and overcome my fears with God and God’s Spirit as He takes the sin within me and places it upon himself
6. Become humbled as I realize how much God really does love me in spite of my own mortality and vulnerabilities and weakness to battle it to the point of him dying again so that I may continue to live abundantly due to the great weight being lifted off my shoulders,
7. Feel Love again Him with all my mind and my strength and my heart to the point of being able to love others again and/or even greater than before (meaning opening my heart and soul up to God to take His rightful and permanent place there in absolute command of my life),
8. Accept Him in my heart and soul to take His rightful and permanent place there in spite of my own frail and vulnerable self,
9. Declare allegiance to Him as absolute commander of my life, devoting myself to Him and Obeying Him without question,
10. Become intimate with Him in all His truth and true-natured self,
- 11. Be free to be me without regard to sin (anyone else’s damning affects)**

And so, this is my letter to my bosses:

“I feel I should clarify where I am with regards to my condition. It may be quite a while that I can fly overseas. Right now, the prospect of it makes me anxious, especially since a couple of

weeks ago when I tried to fly to Savannah. In programs such as the one I am going through, desensitization is usually the beginning norm. It requires a series of events desensitizing the person to getting on the aircraft and feeling comfortable enough to stay in one place for a small period of time when the doors are shut. How long this will take for me or if this will completely work for me is what I just don't know, but I will give it my all. In any case, as a result of this first-step in the process, more than likely I will only be starting out with short two-or-three-stop hops rather than non-stop flights to wherever I am going. I can't even think about OCONUS at this time. It is too far off in the future. How far off? I just don't know.

I'd like you to know that I denied my condition thinking that it was not as bad as it really was when I took on this job because I was heading to a whole new helicopter outfit and I was afraid you may have found it a sole factor in not hiring me on when I just knew I would be a valuable asset to Cargo at any rate. I was sure I could muster through it if I had to. For this I sincerely do apologize. I do find myself courageous and not ashamed of my condition at all, but just human like all the rest of us. Therefore, I'll continue to do the best job I know how while being upfront about my condition and ongoing progress. In the meantime, I would appreciate anyway you can support me in this effort. I would appreciate as much pressure taken off of me as possible to fly. This would help me relax and focus on pursuing my goal. I will discuss this with my counselor on my next AWS Day. It is my plan to see her every two weeks. But by all means, if you feel the need to temporarily place me elsewhere, I will understand and welcome the opportunity.

Thanks.”

293. Road to Freedom: My Declaration of Independence (Independence Day 2005)

There is a stage (we can call Stage 2) in each of our lives where we test the love of those whom we believe love us—those we idolize. It's God's way of empowering his child to test the waters and hope for the best so to choose on his own whether to proceed with his earthly parents (and others) or not. This is why this Stage 2 is what I affectionately call, The Parent-Proofing stage or the Stage of Hope. This stage is supposed to “child-proof” the child by empowering him from falling into a world that is deceptive and tempting, thus destructive to his own unique identity. And the parents are supposed to do this by providing the child unconditional love. But, on the flip-side, this is also known as the Stage of Neediness, Pain and Suffering, of The Valley of the Shadow of Death that can also ensnare children due to fear because they feel powerless (insecure) within themselves to move on without these others. This is because parents truly do dismiss their children in this world of ours. It's an epidemic and quite addictive. It happens in most every single home in America and the entire world. As you may have already guessed, this happens all the time in adulthood too because children don't have the choice of growing older. They just do. But as their bodies grow, their maturity doesn't.

In Stage 2 there are three states with which most people venture into because they feel insecure. They are the passive, aggressive, and manipulative (passive-aggressive) states. Most people go into these three states because they had not got their thoughts and feelings listened to (not just

heard), their needs met, and/or their wants negotiated in childhood. In other words, their own identities were never truly taken seriously. They were, too often, dismissed. And this was the case because the expectations of the parents were either too great and they demanded perfection or pretty much non-existent (both a sense of abandonment to a child). It is in this stage that, in order for a child to trust (which is Stage 3), he has to know that you truly love him. It's no longer good enough for him just to believe it (which is Stage 1 or the stage we are born into). The child needs you to guide him and feel assured and comforted that you know what you are doing in a most loving and assertive way. He knows what he needs. He knows what unconditional love is. He is trying to find it in you. And if he can't find it, he'll eventually leave you and just go back to God. Some parents have taken their children to such extremes that the child abandons all hope and literally goes back to God through suicide. And yet suicide happens because there is still a spark of belief in a loving God. So, if a child can just find one person in the City that loves him, he will stay because of a re-hope in finding this unconditional love on earth again. And perhaps if he still cannot, he can move forward instead of reverting back. It will be then that God will teach him Himself.

Passive and aggressive states are opposite one another and each cannot exist without the other. The train that goes back and forth between these states in order to try to continually bond both together is known as manipulation or mediation. Both are due to the child feeling trapped and powerless. Usually the father will take the aggressive state, and to balance the system out, the mother will take the passive state. The child usually takes the manipulative state, playing on both the mother and father to get what he wants while fixing the family's dysfunction. Children are very aware of what is going on but, yet, are usually dismissed for being perceived by the parents as not knowing what's going on. Thus, the child is never provided the real truth via an overprotective parent or is shocked by a truth which is too unbearable for even adults to hear, such as "you were never wanted." In any rate, the child's feelings, needs, and wants are being totally dismissed.

By the age of three, a child's instincts are wiser than the Stage 2 parents themselves because they don't have all these defense mechanisms blocking their intentions to move on. The manipulative state is all ego. And if the child gets what he wants in this state, he becomes what is known as spoiled which then leads to someone who later cannot be trusted—that is, someone who is deceitful due to his own over-inflated ego. This is because he never feels that he can fully trust. Aggressive parents will turn their backs on him. Passive parents will never stick up for them. But he will continue to manipulate to get what he wants forever, until he winds up at that point, through no fault of his, that he has no one to manipulate or mediate. Then he finds himself all alone and feeling abandoned. This is known as "hitting bottom" and desperation results because of it. And all the child has then is God, which is really the best thing that could happen to the person in this situation. But to a child, it's absolute hell because no one ever takes him seriously—no matter where he winds up. In other words, he has nowhere to rest his head. In our adulthood, we can consciously and deliberately separate from others so to rely solely on God. This takes enormous courage, but is worth everything to include being able to feel worthy yourself.

Now, there is this gate between Stages 2 and 3 that only one type of key can open. This is the gate of unconditional love and it can only open when it identifies itself in another who wants to

pass through it. Being passive will not get you through the gate because the gate requires you to ask it to open—it does not pity. The more you try to make it feel sorry for you, the more it will make you wait. Aggression won't get you through the gate because the gate is too powerful—it does not tolerate forcefulness. The more you try to force it, the further you go back in line. Manipulation won't get you through the gate because the gate is too wise—it does not tolerate deceit. The more you try to manipulate it, the more you'll start to disappear yourself—in other words, the more of your own identity will be lost. And the more you try to mediate between it and others, the more it will ask you to choose between it and them. So, what is it that will get you through the gate to the Third Stage of Trust (Faith)? Assertiveness is the only key that will open the gate.

So, aggression sends you further back in line, i.e. you are not served first. The Gate delivers you a time-out to reflect (deal with) your anger and aggression. The time for the time-out is dependent on the level of your aggression—the time it takes you to fully express your thoughts and feelings in a more constructive way until you calm down. After you reflect, you can calmly call for the Gate and the Gate will welcome you back and listen to you and your true feelings. Time-out is not a punishment. Time-out is a time for a child to express his thoughts and feelings in a more constructive manner. Sometimes the child doesn't need to leave the room if his aggression hasn't reached a certain point. The key is that he learns other ways to deal with his anger rather than hit or threaten. Even yelling can be beneficial when it is constructive. Then the Gate will accept your apology or guide you to those you need to apologize to through that more constructive way. Passive behavior makes you wait longer, i.e. sets you on the sideline to observe and thus benches you until you ask to go in (deal with it). Manipulation (passive-aggression) makes you disappear. The Gate asks you to tell it who you are because your identity keeps slipping away, until he can no longer identify himself in you. Thus, be honest and tell it the truth—express your true thoughts and feelings, your true needs and true wants. And mediation traps you between others. The Gate asks you to choose between it and them. For I am the Gate. We all are the Gate who choose the life of unconditional love over all else and whom becomes intimate with this love. You do not get to walk with me and learn from me until it is opened and you commit yourself to walking through it in trust. Ask and it will be given to you (be assertive). [Assertively] seek and you will find [the gate]. Knock and the door [gate] will be opened to you; [do not pound but be assertive]. For everyone who asks receives; he who seeks finds; and to him who knocks, the door [gate] will be opened. So in everything, do to me what you would have me do to you. This is the know-how of guiding you through Stage 2.

Do you see the pattern here? People use aggression when they feel that their thoughts and feelings are not being listened to (taken seriously) or they're afraid that they won't be. People use passivity when they feel that their needs aren't being met or are afraid that their needs aren't going to be met. And they use manipulation when they feel their wants not being negotiated are afraid that their wants will not be given them at all. And people use mediation when they are feeling torn between choosing one or the other or are afraid of being asked to choose between one or the other. These are all defense mechanism that a person uses when he/she feels trapped and fears losing (abandoning) his/her own identity in the process. The Gate helps you deal with these behaviors so that you can move on in your life. The Gate isn't there to punish you or judge you. It's there to help you narrow in or focus in on the truth of the matter so that you are able to deal with what needs to be dealt with in a most honest and truthful way. It helps you see clearly for the rest of the upcoming journey. It helps you see yourself so that you know that your

identity isn't totally lost, and thus, it helps you be calm so that you may become assertive. It delivers you full hope that you will attain or re-attain the real you.

Children learn by mirroring their idols—usually their parents. And so they take on the beneficial and not-so-beneficial characteristics of both parents. When the child finds out which state best suits his wants and needs, he sticks with it. So, if the mother was passive and the father was aggressive, the child will become passive, aggressive, or manipulative (passive-aggressive). The passive person is pitied (rather than truly loved), the aggressive person feared, and the manipulative person a combination of both. But it is the child who realizes that he feels too scared to leave and feels powerless to do anything about it. So he winds up joining the only way he knows how. The child wants to trust his parents but he is scared to journey into a stage of unknown territory. He wants to know if the parents are already there. He wants to be assured that his parents can help him get his feelings listened to, his needs met, and his wants received or negotiated. When this isn't happening, he falls into a manipulative state so that he can feel at least connected to both parents at the same time while getting his own needs met and wants received. This takes a lot of time and energy for someone to handle, especially a child, and is the beginning of a love-hate relationship.

A huge reason why a child becomes manipulative is because it is a way for the child to act out at both parents for placing him in this state of confusion (in the middle). When both parents are vying for control, nitpick at one another, and the sort,—which is the same thing as divorce just without the paperwork—the child becomes a master manipulator to fix the family. He feels responsible and, thus full of guilt and ashamed of himself and who he is. But he does not know really who he is, except for this person with the purpose to fix people and save them from themselves and what the child perceives as their own destruction. And what he's really doing, in a roundabout way, is trying to save himself from his false self in a way that he doesn't have to deal with or actually face. And when parents actually do divorce, the great manipulator no longer is able to bring the parents together, so the child becomes the great mediator to bind the family through him instead. His whole identity is based on being needed by his family and by other dysfunction peoples. The religious are huge examples of this (intermediaries between you and God) in an identity-based system for the masses. There is very little difference between a manipulator and a mediator, except that one seems more righteous than the other. One is selfish and the other is self-righteous—a deadly combination. What it all really comes down to is that the child wants to get his feelings listened to, his needs met, and his wants at least negotiated but he doesn't know how to go about it. All he knows is that he's not getting it. So, he becomes confused and angry because he continues to feel trapped and, at the same time, feels too scared to let go. He senses that his parents still love him and he loves them (Stage 1) and he so desperately wants to trust them (Stage 3), but he is stuck in this fearful but hopeful stage of confusion (Stage 2). If only they would say “I don't love you anymore”, but they never do.

A manipulator or mediator needs a dysfunctional family in order to fix it. And he will go all over the earth to find one—to find one to feel sorry for so that he, himself, can be needed. He grows up seeking dysfunction so that he feels like he has a purpose in the world. This is the greatest case when it comes to the religious who need to go out and save or help people rather than empowering them. If they were empowered, the child wouldn't feel needed anymore. And so once others are empowered by their own Higher Power and thus finding again their own God-

given unique-identity, the child discounts (excommunicates) these people altogether and goes out to help save other sinners. In actuality, the Spirit is actually calling you out of such places. So, the truth is that the child is never facing himself, but always placing himself in a place of dysfunction. And the tragedy is that those in dysfunction will let him be the mediator and savior because they are too afraid of leaving and dealing with things themselves. It's a tragic system. And the child becomes the scapegoat for them all. This was the case with Jesus.

People think that Jesus' mother and father were saints. Jesus came from a hugely dysfunctional family. But he turned it all around for himself because of God (the real God). He used it as a way to rely on God and get out of his dysfunction. Ask yourself this. Where did Joseph go? And what about the ever-doting Mary who had control over James, but just couldn't gain that control over Jesus. Jesus left his mother and father and the church and all the abuse. He was, in fact, the ultimate rebel. All these rules and laws and false beliefs were abusive and abused his own identity. All Jesus wanted was someone to recognize who he was. That's it throughout his entire life. And he eventually found someone who still did—God. And when James left his mother to go follow his brother, what did Mary do? All she could do in her own mind was to go along rather than be alone. Even when Jesus died, she was still not secure. Jesus asked John to take care of her. Jesus still left but did not leave her abandoned.

Let's not confuse being passive with being humble. They are exact opposites. Mary was very passive and yet aggressive too when Joseph went away. A passive person is very needy. And when he or she doesn't get what he or she wants, he/she usually gets on that train of manipulation and becomes aggressive. A humbled person is ready for a change or transformation from neediness. Jesus and his family were real people with real problems. It wasn't until Jesus died to all this dysfunction by taking himself out of the intermediary role and meeting his Maker and feeling absolutely secure within himself that he was free. He didn't need people to make him feel secure anymore. The disciples figured this out just before Jesus died to himself. Jesus had his own identity now and he was ready to really live and face his death (his own mortality) by relying solely on his true Father who lived in that Kingdom within himself. If he didn't leave his disciples, his disciples could and would never have followed Jesus' example in doing what needed to be done in finding their true freedom, simply because they wouldn't have known how to at least find the courage. It was only by Jesus leaving them that he could finally conquer his own hell. And Jesus coming back after he died only for a short time was his way of showing them that there is this wonderful life worth living here and now after this death (this hell) that they've been continually choosing to be a part of. It was then that, after his disciples' grief, Jesus empowered them with his wonderful spirit (his zest and advocate for life and truth) to go through the same path as him to find that life by trusting that, if they prayed and wanted it badly enough, they would find the power to trust and pass through and commit to it.

And so Stage 2 is also known as the hopeful state for a miracle, which results in the child (or adult-child) going back and forth and back again to people he idolizes to test them and see if the true-and-honest them will appear—hoping that they will go into an assertive state so that everyone can all move on together through the gate to this land of trust. This cycle becomes a repetitive (addictive) cycle onward and throughout adulthood. And it won't stop unless he is assured that he can leave later in life on his own and that it is the best thing to do—that is, to say goodbye. When he is ready to leave, God will reappear. He can idolize God even greater than

his parent because if God Is Unconditional Love and he believes it, then he can be assured that God won't hurt him anymore. In other words, he can stop seeing God as punishing him and instead loving him. God turns this Stage of Confusion (this Valley of Death) into a Stage of Loving, Assertive Hope. This is the one who understands the way to and through the gate and is willing to guide him along the way. This is the one who knows the secrets of assertiveness.

So then, what is this assertiveness? Assertiveness is about getting your feelings listened to, your needs met, and your wants negotiated (at least received in some way and at least in part). It begins with what is known as sufferance. Sufferance is a good word because it means to patiently endure or constantly persevere through perceived pain and suffering. And spiritual sufferance is doing this through prayer (or asking He who is in you) for the courage to follow Him out. And commitment or trusting is placing that decision into action. If one is impatient, he will either go into the passive, aggressive, or manipulative states out of desperation to end the emotional pain and confusion as soon as possible. Passive people give in, aggressive people dominate, and manipulative (passive-aggressive) people spend their time using both to get what they want. But assertiveness says that when you are expressing your feelings about something, I'm going to stop what I'm doing and listen to you. I will not try to fix anything, but I will listen and support you. Fixing people, especially when they are expressing their feelings, is only a way of trying to end your own discomfort as you listen to them. And it is also a form of pity or feeling sorry for them, just like trying to save people. But assertiveness empowers people so that they can go through the gate, not feel sorry for them.

Assertiveness is a part of unconditional love. Assertiveness says that when you need something, I'm going to stop what I'm doing and help you get it. Assertiveness says that when you want something, I will acknowledge you and call a meeting of all who are part of the decision-making process to discuss your want and if it is do-able at this time for all involved. There may be some conditions that we all will have to agree upon and most of the time you'll get your want in some form or in part. Sometimes the answer to your want will be a definite yes and sometimes a definite no, and sometimes a definite maybe. If you yourself doesn't want to do it, your "no" is enough. It doesn't need to be justified. If you are telling a child "no", it should be accompanied with why you say no. And that should be enough. All maybes should be accompanied by an honest and deliberate attempt to provide a timely response.

Negotiation is part of Stage Two's area of justice or fairness, which is a part of unconditional love. A child cannot wind up trusting you if he doesn't think you are being fair and just. Telling another adult "no" is an aggressive response and instills dominant/submissive roles in the family. The main reason one would demand that another be submissive is because that person does not know how to deal with him or her and is afraid of being exposed of this weakness to those around him. This is not a courageous thing. It is the easy way out, and it has been the greatest source of pain in relationships in all of history. But negotiating is an assertive mode between all involved that results in both people able to trust one another. Do not get fooled. What some people call negotiating is just a manipulative or deceitful ploy to get what they want. The truth is hidden down deep somewhere where fear encapsulates it from being exposed. Eventually, people become aware of this and stop trusting you. And this is when the system begins to collapse around you.

When a child fears telling you the truth, he uses manipulation to cover it up. And the truth is all about expressing your feelings, asking your needs to be met, and requesting your wants all within an unconditionally loving environment. What is an unconditionally loving environment? It is an environment where everything is permissible though perhaps not beneficial. It is an environment where people can express themselves without being judged or condemned. Judging and condemnation happens when a person(s) believes that whatever they think is the absolutely right way to do things, and bumping up against them and their beliefs requires an acknowledgment or confession of guilt and shame on your part. Those who idolize these people will remain guilt-ridden and ashamed of themselves until they find a way to stop idolizing them. And this usually takes some kind of calling or intervention from an even higher power.

So, what is the difference between needs and wants. Well, needs are things you require to survive. Your basic needs are clothing, shelter, food (sustenance) and help and, of course, unconditional real love. You need electricity so your air conditioner can run during the really hot months. This need is part of your basic need of shelter. You require help to get a big box down from the attic because you know it is too heavy for you to lift. This need is part of your basic need of help. Or you don't know how to get out of a situation because you just don't have the professional "know-how" and so you need help. This again is part of your basic need of help. On the other hand, wants are things that you desire but you don't really need to survive. "I would like to go to the mall after our date" is a want. You won't die if you don't go to the mall (although some people feel like they might) and so it is a want. When we run all our wants into needs this means that we are not getting our feelings listened to, our needs met, or our wants negotiated. Because a need is connected to survival, we placing our wants into needs means that we are trying to get someone to recognize the importance of our wants. It becomes an addiction. I no longer want this drug, I need it or I'll die. This is what is known as Distorted Thinking. And whenever we idolize something or someone that much, we go into that distorted thinking (that false belief or deception).

Needs are "have to" and wants are "want to". When we turn a "want to" into a "need to", we feel obligated and resentful and full of guilt if we say "no". "I don't really want to but I have to" is what we say. But unconditional love says, "Go if you really want to go and be guilt-free in doing so. Your happiness is my happiness. And I love you." Unconditional love does not tie one down, it does not impose shame or guilt. It doesn't impose rules or laws that obligate you either. Unconditional love listens to your feelings, meets your needs, and takes your wants seriously. It frees you to be you. The more secure you are within, the more you are able to turn most all your needs into wants because all you really need is Him who is in you. Rules and laws are only wants that people turn into needs because they fear that without them, everything will fall into utter despair. But the more rules and laws there are, the more despair we encounter. The more trapped we feel and, like a caged animal, the more we either hide into ourselves or the more we go into rage to try to escape or the more we try to manipulate those who we think have the power to open up the cage. It's all illusion and delusion and deception. The truth is that unconditional love dispels all rules and laws. There is only one Law we will ever need and that is the Law of Unconditional Love—the Law of God. This Law leads only to peace and harmony and well-being.

This is why it is very important to separate our needs from our wants. This, in fact, simplifies our lives. Since wants are negotiated and there are so many more wants than needs, we can add onto, subtract from, or re-prioritize our wants to simplify our lives. This helps us relieve our anxieties so that we may come into a calm, assured, and assertive place in our lives. And when we are calm, we can be assertive. And when we are assertive in getting our feelings listened to, our needs met, and our wants negotiated, we find trust. Why? Because most people run and hide from or attack aggressive people. In any rate, the aggressive person doesn't get his feelings listened to, his needs met, or his wants negotiated. Most people either hide from or use (exploit) passive people. In any rate, the passive person doesn't get his feelings listened to, his needs met, or his wants negotiated. The manipulative person deceives himself into thinking that he's getting his needs and wants met but what is really happening is his ego won't allow himself anybody else to help him get his needs and wants met. He needs the nurturing connection so desperately that he cons people into giving it to him. And this is unfulfilling because what he really wants is someone to just initiate it—that is, be assertive with him. In other words, the manipulative person is searching for that nurturing, true love that can only come about through assertiveness and not manipulation.

Remember, Stage 2 is all about testing if the people we believe love us really do love us. And not just love us, but love us unconditionally. What this means is a child will act out badly just to see if the parents really still do love him. It's easy to love someone when they are always good. What about when they do not-so-good things too? Both children and adults do this testing of love. Adults do this because they were once children too and they get scared just like children. They learned good and not-so-good behaviors from their parents at no fault of the child's all because of this Stage of testing for love in their lives. But a person cannot do what a person does not know how to do. And a person won't learn unless he trusts his instructor. And this is why learning is what comes after trust.

I, personally, have found it to go like this in my life: Belief in unconditional love is Stage 1. Hope for unconditional love is Stage 2. Trusting in (being committed to) unconditional love is Stage 3. Actually learning unconditional love is Stage 4. Understanding the truth of what unconditional love is by applying it is Stage 5. Respect for this unconditional love is Stage 6. And then feeling unconditional love, loved, and loving (being changed and feeling transformed) is Stage 7. Accepting that you can still be imperfect and human (a child again) with feelings, needs, and wants while still giving and receiving unconditional love is Step 8. Absolute devotion or obedience to your wellbeing by following unconditional love is Step 9. New found intimacy (secure and loving place) or an unconditional love you feel deeply within is Step 10. Freedom to express yourself (inner-dependence) without worrying about being persecuted in all these rules and laws because of your permanent deep-rootedness in this unconditional love is Stage 11. And peace and happiness from finding and being the true you (your true identity) because of this unconditional love is Stage 12. So, there are 12 Stages, but without at least Stage 7, which is feeling transformed, loved, and loving because of unconditional love, living can seem just so-so or really hard or unbearable or a real nightmare.

Stage 2 will come around again and again as we enter into each of the 11 Stages along the way after the Stage of Belief. This is because we fear the unknown and our own mortality. We use each stage we've already gone through as comfort-zones to build our confidences for the one we

are actually working (focusing our attention) on. But realize that we needed help ourselves as children to go through Stage 2 the first time, and we didn't receive it. We are innocent. It wasn't our fault. There was no comfort to be a comfort-zone. Was it our parents' deliberate attempt to punish us? No. As children, we can confuse our parents with God. The more abuse we receive, the more we are deceived, and the less we believe what God is really like, and the more we believe that what our parents did to us is what God is really like. We see them and their faces in most every situation. But God isn't like that. It was because our parents didn't and may still not know how to get to and go through the gate themselves because they were never taught. And if their fear is still very much deep-rooted, they will go passive or aggressive or manipulative or mediary when you try to leave and move on to the next stage in your life. Let them be and love them. They really know not what they do. If they did, we would have already experienced it for ourselves. And whether through ignorance or arrogance, they just don't see, even though they think what they are doing is truly loving. The gate is the great separator and it is there for everyone who cares to see it and wants a better life for themselves and the ones they love.

Have hope. Seek God (the real one). Rely on the same Great Spirit that Jesus had. It is only when you are secure within yourself that you can let go of this cycle for good and just be happy yourself. So, it is only when you are secure within yourself that you can become independent—what I like to call inner-dependent. But it all starts with dealing with whatever you must deal with so you can get onto the next stage of trust and a commitment to exercise that trust. This is why I'm writing this to you. I'm committed to my inner being, and I'm exercising my trust in Him. I'm leaving you to you, but I am not abandoning you. For now on, passive, aggressive, manipulative and mediating behaviors are not in my vocabulary. As I continue on my own journey to absolute freedom and independence, I will continue to be assertive and let you know when I believe you are acting-out these behaviors towards me until one day I'll just have to say goodbye for good if you continue them. Work on them if you think you need to or don't work on them. Maybe you don't need to. That's between you and God. I'm not telling you how to live your life or what you need to do or anything at all like that. I'm just telling you how to live your life with me. And if you want to know more, ask.

And so, that is all I've got to say. May you find all the love you can to help make you happy too.

From: DiMella, Timothy R.
To: nashvillerocker@aol.com
Cc:
Subject: From me to you guys

Sent: Fri 7/1/2005 11:40 PM

Attachments:  Attachments may contain viruses that are harmful to your computer. Attachments may not display correctly.

 [For Both of You Because I Love You.doc\(39KB\)](#)

[View As Web Page](#)

Chris and Lee,

Because I love all of you so much, I want to share this with you. I hope both of you will read it and find some comfort in it. I will see you tomorrow morning.

Love you,

Tim

294. Road to Freedom: Being in the Now

What is being in the now? Being confident and secure in yourself because of God within that you don't need anything else but what you have and are doing now. The time to do it will be the time to do it, and leave it at that.

295. Road to Freedom: Dealing With It Straight Up and Honest

“A long time before mom and dad's divorce and upto it, I used to manipulate everything because I wasn't getting my needs met and I wasn't being taken very seriously. I was very intelligent. I knew just the right buttons to push. I was one of those little boys who was aware of a lot more that was going on in my life than anybody gave me credit for. And I was hurt and very angry because of it. Mom and dad getting a divorce only peaked it. You probably remember this Chris. I used to try to then control you big time. I became very aggressive. But when Mom said that you didn't need to feed into my crap anymore, you found the courage to fight back. And I didn't have anyone to control anymore. So, I went back to being manipulative, but we only hung around adults and it wasn't getting me anywhere. So, I cleverly turned it into something else called mediation after Mom said that I would continually lose friends if my attitude kept up. So, instead of becoming alone (I was already so insecure), I cleverly became the great mediator of all time. I was so good at manipulation that mediation was really easy. It's pretty much the same thing. Going back and forth from manipulation to mediation or passive and then aggression and back is known as a peak-and-valley thing. You never stop at just being balanced or mediocre. You constantly feel this need to please people or be perfect. Is it ok to be a shopkeeper or must I be a doctor or lawyer? Why can't I just choose? Why can't I just get to be me and whatever I want?

When it comes to mediation, the secret though is to manipulate them with passive righteousness rather than manipulate them with aggressive deceit. Wow! Did that work! There are so many

hurting people out there, that I was like a kid in a candy shop. By the way, if you don't know it or not, that's what a really religious person is (a very insecure but clever manipulator/mediator). He knows how to get people to do what he wants. That's why you're scared of them down deep. They're very scary people. You can't trust them. They're very well hidden. But it was still only a way of getting attention again and left me really lonely. It's lonely being a savior. I put myself in between everyone I saw as needing help because they were arguing and the whole bit. I went out on a saving mission since I was around 11 or 12 years old. Now over the past 5 years or so, I have been working on and dealing with this displacement of who I am through these 12 Stages I write about in the letter. And I've been more and more assertive and honest and upfront with people on my thoughts and how I feel and what I need and what I want. No longer did I always fear being rejected or fear someone being angry at me when I confessed or did something wrong. Dad was comparatively easy because he was the furthest away and the biggest one I was already pissed off at. Later I was able to release him and be happy for him. Mom not as easy but had to be done. What I found out was that I don't have to totally abandon them, but I can't tolerate certain behaviors from them anymore. And I can't be placing myself in between other people and trying to mediate and help resolve their issues anymore for them either, especially when they're not committed to resolving them and asking for help themselves.

Well, I don't need people now to make me feel secure within myself. I have God and it's time to become independent and free. So, I'm stepping out. Besides, no one really ever asked me to step-in in the first place and mediate stuff. They just took it when I forced my way in. But I'm not doing it anymore-- for my own happiness. I'm leaving it all behind--this passive, aggressive, manipulating, mediating (place me in the middle) bullshit. For now on, I'm going to deal with things straight up and honestly without trying to figure a way around them without hurting people's feelings. I'm ready to be happy for me and this is the only way. It's time for me to be me.”

From: DiMella, Timothy R.
To: nashvillerocker@aol.com
Cc:
Subject:

Sent: Tue 7/5/2005 5:53 PM

Attachments:  Attachments may contain viruses that are harmful to your computer. Attachments may not display correctly.

 [My Declaration of Independence.doc\(61KB\)](#)

[View As Web Page](#)

Chris and Lee,

Please find attached an updated letter I wrote. This will help you understand what I am about to write here:

A long time before mom and dad's divorce and upto it, I used to manipulate everything because I wasn't getting my needs met and I wasn't being taken very seriously. I was very intelligent. I knew just the right buttons to push. I was one of those little boys who was aware of a lot more that was going on in my life than anybody gave me credit for. And I was hurt and very angry because of it. Mom and dad getting a divorce only peaked it. You probably remember this Chris. I used to try to then control you big time. I became very aggressive. But when Mom said that you didn't need to feed into my crap anymore, you found the courage to fight back. And I didn't have anyone to control anymore. So, I went back to being manipulative, but we only hung around adults and it wasn't getting me anywhere. So, I cleverly turned it into something else called mediation after Mom said that I would continually lose friends if my attitude kept up. So, instead of becoming alone (I was already so insecure), I cleverly became the great mediator of all time. I was so good at manipulation that mediation was really easy. It's pretty much the same thing. Going back and forth from manipulation to mediation or passive and then aggression and back is known as a peak-and-valley thing. You never stop at just being balanced or mediocre. You constantly feel this need to please people or be perfect. Is it ok to be a shopkeeper or must I be a doctor or lawyer? Why can't I just choose? Why can't I just get to be me and whatever I want?

When it comes to mediation, the secret though is to manipulate them with passive righteousness rather than manipulate them with aggressive deceit. Wow! Did that work! There are so many hurting people out there, that I was like a kid in a candy shop. By the way, if you don't know it or not, that's what a really religious person is (a very insecure but clever manipulator/mediator). He knows how to get people to do what he wants. That's why you're scared of them down deep. They're very scary people. You can't trust them. They're very well hidden. But it was still only a way of getting attention again and left me really lonely. It's lonely being a savior. I put myself in between everyone I saw as needing help because they were arguing and the whole bit. I went out on a saving mission since I was around 11 or 12 years old. Now over the past 5 years or so, I have been working on and dealing with this displacement of who I am through these 12 Stages I write about in the letter. And I've been more and more assertive and honest and upfront with people on my thoughts and how I feel and what I need and what I want. No longer did I always fear being rejected or fear someone being angry at me when I confessed or did something wrong. Dad was comparatively easy because he was the furthest away and the biggest one I was already pissed off at. Later I was able to release him and be happy for him. Mom not as easy but had to be done. What I found out was that I don't have to totally abandon them, but I can't tolerate certain behaviors from them anymore. And I can't be placing myself in between other people and trying to mediate and help resolve their issues anymore for them either, especially when they're not committed to resolving them and asking for help themselves.

Well, I don't need people now to make me feel secure within myself. I have God and it's time to become independent and free. So, I'm stepping out. Besides, no one really ever asked me to step-in in the first place and mediate stuff. They just took it when I forced my way in. But I'm not doing it anymore-- for my own happiness. I'm leaving it all behind--this passive, aggressive, manipulating, mediating (place me in the middle) bullshit. For now on, I'm going to deal with things straight up and honestly without trying to figure a way around them without hurting people's feelings. I'm ready to be happy for me and this is the only way. It's time for me to be me. So, brace yourself, because this is the deal:

You and Lee have real, real problems in marriage and in parenting. I know because Kathy and I were there where you guys are now and, when it comes to parenting, I was extremely aware of things when I was just a baby all the way to now. I see what you may not see or may not want to see. I actually once remembered being in Mom's womb and being aware of how it felt and what was going on. Nicolas is confused in every which way a little dude can be. He doesn't know whether to side with mom or dad or what. All he knows is that he isn't getting his own needs met. If it goes on much longer, you're going to lose him for good because he won't even recognize himself. He is very, very aware of what is going on. He just doesn't know how to express it well and what he does know how to express, he is getting more and more afraid to express it--so he is expressing it the only way he knows how. I really do believe that he's going to become this manipulator dude on a much more regular basis. One day he may go into this mediator thing, perhaps like I did, and you'll not know whether it's genuinely him or not. He'll just be this really good and perfect little boy. Not so good! Lots and lots of anger underneath there. Now, I say this with all the

respect in the world for you guys, but get him the hell away from Bubba. That dude is very disturbed. Passive people are easier to deal with like Billy. Billy can be trained. He's more open to it. Besides, I really think Billy and you, Chris, are good for each other. Bubba's just bad news.

Now, Kathy has her own problems and I have mine and we have our own. I'm working on mine, as you can tell. I'm working on my own independence and this whole saving stuff, which has affected our marriage as well. Kathy can't deal with what you guys are going through and she shouldn't have to, nor should you have to deal with what she's going through. She's having a hard enough time as it is dealing with her own stuff. It's something she has to work on for herself. It is a good idea if you don't come here and she doesn't go there for a time until both you and her commit to doing something about each of your situations. Kathy and I have had this whole discussion in length. She is very aware of her situation and, of course, knows about yours. I really think she cares a lot about you two, but she also is very sensitive to parent-children relationships due to her own stuff growing up. Anyway, it is no new news. And after this, I'm not going to say anymore about it.

Now, if you still would like me to, I will still come and visit. But I have to be straight and honest with you. I will start being straight and honest with you when I see you do things that I just don't like. And if I find myself in the middle of both of you talking bad about one another, I'm not going to fool around. I'm going to ask you to stop. And if you don't, I'm just going to go. I won't abandon you, but I will leave you and go home. I'll understand your position either way in me coming up. Sure I may not have all the answers. But I know what I know and I see what I see. Show Nicolas that you'll go through hell and highwater for him. If both of you get the help you need to trust one another, he'll be able to trust himself later and be allowed to be his own genuine and unique little boy he was created to be.

Well, that's all I've got to say. Pretty bold, I know. But I needed to say it.

Love you,

Tim

From: DiMella, Timothy R.

Sent: Wed 7/6/2005 9:07 AM

To: Nashvillerocker@aol.com

Cc:

Subject: RE:

Attachments:

[View As Web Page](#)

Chris,

I understand. It's good to be honest with each other and care about each other. And I really do still love you and we're still here for you guys.

Tim

-----Original Message-----

From: Nashvillerocker@aol.com [<mailto:Nashvillerocker@aol.com>]

Sent: Tuesday, July 05, 2005 11:58 PM

To: DiMella, Timothy R.

Subject: Re:

Bro You have it way wrong!! Me and Lee are very Happy and Nicolas is very happy too. This Boy has everything that we never had and Dad never could give us!! If you fell this way fine!! I do the steps of parenting!! Nicolas only see Baba like once a month if even that!! Your trying to play God Bro and until you have kids you can't understand shit!! I'm sorry that Dad was a Mofo but that's why Mom finally got the balls to leave him!! This is why he was dead to me when I was like 12yrs old. You have to get help both you and Kathy!! your hiding behind God and that is not what God is for!! You have to help yourselves first and get mentally well and than seek God.

I knew you were sinking when you were here!! You must seek help outside of God!! I also think you need meds for you condition also. You sinking fast bro!! If I don't give Nicolas Time outs and discipline him when he is going to hurt himself (i.e.) running away from us, Running into the street, walking up to strangers, not minding us when we know it's for his own good, than he will be one of those people shooting up schools! You both have no clue when it come to kids!! I had it better with our child hood because I stayed the F---- away from Dad. He was a nut Job and I sensed that all my life! I tried and Mom tried to tell you about Dad over and over !! You would not listen to anyone.

I tell it like it is Bro! I don't write Bullshit Letters Like this! We all need work out things and the best way to do this is by talking to your spouse and if this turns into a fight that is normal!! You must not keep thing inside you, you have always done this!!

For people that are in trouble it's you and Kathy! You to hide behind God!! When things go wrong turn to God!! That is using God for your problems not solving any of your problems!! Bro you really pissed me off here I reached out to you and you cut me off!! Your still the same asshole as you always were!! I think you and Kathy need some time alone away from ea other!! Your Marriage is not healthy at all, you need to both talk thing out without hiding behind God!! God is good but you coping out hiding behind God!!

Nicolas loves you and that is God's gift!! I will not have mental ill people around him that all think of is them and the way God way to raise Nicolas!!

You started this and I will end it!! Until you and Kathy get help pro help and meds I will not have Nicolas around you!! I knew it would come to this when you sent me your set program, which is fine!! But it never ends there always keeps going into more and more Bullshit!! How can you even send this step program when you and Kathy can't even get past the 1st 8 steps!! I'm telling you this a loving brother you both need pro help not church help!! You will loose

everything you have if you don't get the right help bro! I like Kathy she is very nice and would like to see you two stay together. This will not happen hiding behind God!! GET HELP NOW!!! GET TREATMENT NOW!!! You keep thinking wrong and rewriting things that are not the facts!!

It's best for you to know that we stay away from each other!! Once you get help and are both mentally stable I'll see you again!!

Please Get Help you thinking is out to Lunch!! I can see your very unhappy with your Life and relationship at home!! Sooner both of you do something about this the better you will feel about yourself. Don't hide behind the church and GOD!! Go seek Pro help and mix that with God help too!!

Good Luck to you two and when you get yourselves strong we'll talk again,
Chris

You Fucked me again when I reached my heart out to you!!

296. Road to Freedom: Find Your Own System Via God

“I’m not trying to tell you what to do or play God. I don’t have that much power. What I am saying is, as we were growing up, Dad was extremely controlling. Sure I sided with Dad. Could you blame me? I didn’t want him to do to me what he was doing to you. He scared the hell out of me. And, yes, it may have taken me a lot longer to figure out that he was a nut. Even the last time I spoke to him in January or February, he blamed all his past behavior on his meds. He’ll never take responsibility for himself.

Now for me, God is very important in my life. But God to me isn’t this Christian church philosophy kind of God. God is my spirit. You’ve heard people say, “Man, he has a strong spirit.” Or “I love her spirit.” It’s that force of energy that is wise and wonderful within you. And I’m always striving to get more and more in touch and in tune with it. And I’ve come a long way. Dad never, ever let us know we had such a spirit. He made us believe he was the only spirit that ever existed. And ever since, I have had problems with authority figures. I always allowed anyone who was in an authority role or who I thought was in an authority role to just use me. The only thing I knew how to do was run away from them or try to be their friends and side with them. This is why I have had so many jobs and just kept on moving all over the place. Either way, I always felt like I was getting dragged through the mud. It never occurred to me that I had rights by just being born. It never occurred to me that I could negotiate my wants with these authority figures and that, if they were just down right inflexible, I could become a free agent. I never knew I could renegotiate my vows. I never knew I could ask for and let people know that my needs aren’t being met. I never knew that I could express my feelings without getting into a major fight. That’s why I started trying to become [this perfect] saint around 12 or 13. I just couldn’t take it anymore. But my spirit does not back down even when I feel squashed. He comes alive with a big F.U. to people who try to squash you. It’s all allowable, even the F.U. Now, all I’m saying is that Kathy and I were hurting big time. And we found a system that works for us. It’s a very loving system—those 12 steps. I’m not saying you have to

follow them or even use any part of them. I'm just saying that every relationship needs a system that two people can come together and rely on. [Each person has a system given him or her by God. Each comes into a relationship with that individual system. If the system is loving, it will be accepted into the family. If it is not, it will not be accepted. Knowing that both are working toward the same goal and using the same family system helps everyone establish trust. Married couples must be willing to unite both their unique systems into making one beautiful loving and consistent family system. Children can't cope without one unified loving system in place or he or she will be forced to going back and forth between parents. This is as good as divorce. Does each lose his or her independence? No, because the system celebrates everyone's uniqueness while each person's uniqueness helps magnify the loving energy and power of the system. Each person's love can't survive without the system and the system can't survive without each person's unique brand of love. Being able to express your feelings without getting yelled at, being able to ask for what you need and being able to negotiate what you want without getting pounded really goes a long way in establishing trust. I don't trust anyone, except for my wife, because I didn't know that we were communicating like that over the past five or six years and I never knew I had a right to and right to a nice response in return. Now that I know I can negotiate my wants with anyone, it let's me know who I can trust and who I can't.]

So anyway, I could never play God. God needs me to be just a human and average person. And I don't care if you yell at me or what, I'll always still love you. [But harsh criticisms and putrid lashing-outs degrade the love of the system. And after awhile, it can't be tolerated anymore. One has to love another from far away. Abandonment? I suppose it may feel like this. But aggressive behavior and pitying (mixing up love with feeling sorry for others or trying to get others to feel sorry for you) passive behavior and manipulative behavior cannot be part of the intimacy of God and one's life (city) that God sends those he is intimate with to carve out for themselves afterwards. Assertiveness is key—standing up for yourself as the spirit has always done. Once you are struck with the intimacy of God within, separation is inevitable. The gate is seen and the gate never opens for those in hiding. The gate empowers you if you will ask for it, seek it, and knock on it. And for those who do this, the gate opens allowing you into the Kingdom of Heaven.]

I'm just an average guy like you and with some pretty cool gifts—just like you.

I love you.”

From: DiMella, Timothy R.

Sent: Thu 7/7/2005 8:25 AM

To: nashvillerocker@aol.com

Cc:

Subject: Please listen--even if it may be the last time for a long time

Attachments:

[View As Web Page](#)

Chris,

I'm not trying to tell you what to do or play God. I don't have that much power. What I am saying is, as we were growing up, Dad was extremely controlling. Sure I sided with Dad. Could you blame me? I didn't want him to do to me what he was doing to you. He scared the hell out of me. And, yes, it may have taken me a lot longer to figure out that he was a nut. Even the last time I spoke to him in January or February, he blamed all his past behavior on his meds. He'll never take responsibility for himself.

Now for me, God is very important in my life. But God to me isn't this Christian church philosophy kind of God. God is my spirit. You've heard people say, "Man, he has a strong spirit." Or "I love her spirit." It's that force of energy that is wise and wonderful within you. And I'm always striving to get more and more in touch and in tune with it. And I've come a long way. Dad never, ever let us know we had such a spirit. He made us believe he was the only spirit that ever existed. And ever since, I have had problems with authority figures. I always allowed anyone who was in an authority role or who I thought was in an authority role to just use me. The only thing I knew how to do was run away from them or try to be their friends and side with them. This is why I have had so many jobs and just kept on moving all over the place. Either way, I always felt like I was getting dragged through the mud. It never occurred to me that I had rights by just being born. It never occurred to me that I could negotiate my wants with these authority figures and that, if they were just down right inflexible, I could become a free agent. I never knew I could renegotiate my vows. I never knew I could ask for and let people know that my needs aren't being met. I never knew that I could express my feelings without getting into a major fight. That's why I started becoming a saint around 12 or 13. I just couldn't take it anymore. But my spirit does not back down even when I feel squashed. He comes alive with a big F.U. to people who try to squash you. It's all allowable, even the F.U.

Now, all I'm saying is that Kathy and I were hurting big time. And we found a system that works for us. It's a very loving system—those 12 steps. I'm not saying you have to follow them or even use any part of them. I'm just saying that every relationship needs a system that two people can rely on. Knowing that both are working toward the same goal and using the same system helps everyone establish trust. Being able to express your feelings without getting yelled at, being able to ask for what you need and being able to negotiate what you want without getting pounded really goes a long way in establishing trust. I don't trust anyone, except for my wife, because I didn't know that we were communicating like that over the past five or six years and I never knew I had a right to and right to a nice response in return. Now that I know I can negotiate my wants with anyone, it let's me know who I can trust and who I can't.

So anyway, I could never play God. God needs me to be just a human and average person. And I don't care if you yell at me or what, I'll always still love you. I'm just an average guy like you and with some pretty cool gifts—just like you.

I love you.

Tim

297. Road to Freedom: I Follow God

When I pity others, I find me (not God) being sovereign. I talk myself into believing I am responsible for them (which is me talking) when I wish not to be responsible for them at all (that is God talking). It is a sure sign of insecurity on my part. My stress level goes up. My anxiety and worry elevates. I begin to doubt everything and everyone. I begin to feel guilty for them not getting their needs met. But when I see others having the same power as I do, just not exercising their power, I feel relieved. They are responsible for themselves. Yes, it is my job to let them know that they do have the power within them. But like God, I cannot and will not force them to do anything they do not want to do. Do I condemn them for it? No, not at all. The reason being is because they are already condemning themselves. They pity themselves and ask you to pity them and request you enable them by doing for them what they are too scared to do for themselves. And so what about pitying yourself? When I pity myself, I want everything safe. I find safehaven within the confinement of my fears. I use my fears as safeguards (excuses) from the world. But the world becomes more relentless. “Leave me alone”, I say. “Get away”, I say. How many more fears will I have to develop to build my fortress sound? More and more and more fears. The world is relentless, but really I am just really being scared of it is all it is. When I pity myself, I trade-off more and more of my power within to the fear that I think is protecting me. Protecting me from what? We need not fear the world. The power we give to fear, the more we fear fear itself. No longer are we terrified of the world. It is at a distance. We become terrified of fear because it is our nearest enemy because it is within us. Wherever we go, it goes. And to survive, we give up all our power to fear and become its slave. When I pity myself, I feel guilty for not being able to attain the expectations of others or those expectations I believe they have of me. I feel there is something very wrong with me not being able to achieve the perfection of those expectations. Who will save us? Who will free us? The spirit of the Almighty God will—God, whose only expectation of us is to become fully complete in who we are. And only by accepting that our sins are dead through Him who is unconditional love will we be able to attain that goal. Unconditional love means no more do we have to feel guilty for

expressing ourselves and who we are. In fact, I recommend giving guilt a new job rather than the one of tormenting us. Give guilt the job of warning you—warning us that we are beginning to pity others or pity ourselves and are about to stray from God’s path and take our own. This is what I have done.

Do I know what I need? Do I know what I want? Yes I do. Expressing our thoughts and feelings (asking for help) in getting my needs met and my wants negotiated is what we all must do. And it takes more than just expressing. We must have the courage to place it into action. God can prepare a room for me. He can set everything up for me. He can tell me when it’s time to go. But it is ultimately me who must get up off my rump and go. It is me who must muster the courage to go, trusting that God is there and that Christ’s promise is true—that what he has said is true. Will I speak out of fear? If I do this, have I sinned? Have I broken the law? I become paralyzed in anticipation. I am just waiting for the condemnation. If I do that, have I sinned? Have I broken the law? Again, I am paralyzed in anticipation. Where oh where is that condemnation? Where will the rejection come from? Sin is dead through believing in Jesus. And so then, nobody has the right to condemn you. And if they do, they are not of God. I am free to express my thoughts and feelings so to get my needs met and my wants negotiated. That is my God-given right made known to me through the teachings of Christ. And to know this and be free to choose whether to exercise my right or not is the true essence of free will—the choice that we have been made aware of through Christ Jesus. Who else but through Christ Jesus were we made aware of this. Sin is dead and I have been given life and the power to exercise it. To all those who rejected me, pitied me, smothered me and put me down, including my own voices coming from my own mind, I have exercised the power in me to toss them all aside one-by-one as I walk through their gauntlet to the other side. They are powerless against me. I am Christ. I am the power. And so is everyone else who believes in him. And I have found that all who pity and who pity themselves—that is who become passive, aggressive, and manipulative—are really too scared to do anything about it. Once they see you gone for good, they will write you off and go seek other poor souls who fall for their traps of deceit. And in the meantime, I am free of them all.

I follow God. God says, “Go get your needs met and no longer listen to those voices. Just go. Just go. This is the way to peace and harmony. Do not doubt. Just follow my commands. Get your needs met and your wants negotiated and do not stop until it is done. Persevere in My Name. Follow my commands and continue on until you cannot tell the difference between Me and you.”

Brother will leave brother. Son will leave father. Son will leave mother. And brother will leave sister. All as I have done to follow the one and only God who is within me and says, “Your needs shall get me. Let no one and no fear and no pity detain you from this quest. For your needs are my needs. Your wants will get answered. For what you want, I want for you but the time and place may not yet be altogether right. You may have to gather up bits and pieces along the way. Talk to Me and ask by expressing to me your thoughts and your feelings. Expressing to me is the beginning of our beautiful relationship—a relationship built on love and trust.”

And so, it is time to leave. Good bye.

298. Road to Freedom: A Child (Person) Doesn't Want to Behave Badly (There is a Reason)

A child does not want to be passive, aggressive, nor manipulative. He does these things when he feels something is wrong—like when he feels abandoned, disliked, or not loved. Why can't I love you? Perhaps because I see somewhere down deep that you are a person who is passive, aggressive, or manipulative. Can I pity you? Oh, of course. But pity is not love. Pity is deceptive love. A child doesn't want to behave badly. He does it because he has obtained some false belief system arising from the insanity of the system he was born or raised in. The greater the insanity, the greater his false beliefs about himself. Children come to derive their identity from those they idolize and the environment (system) they were raised in. A strong-willed child will make it through longer than others. But over time, he or she begins to manipulate, be passive, or aggressive or mediates (a form of manipulation resulting in “the perfect little boy”).

Now, it was not until I left the church (any church) and came to live outside it that I realized I had nothing to fear. Where was the condemnation I was promised? Where was the rejection I was assured would come? Why did these churches place me in such fear if I were to leave them? Ah, it was because the leaders were too afraid to be alone. They may have had to face their own fears of abandonment and loneliness themselves. Then that would be very embarrassing. They may have to actually show their human condition. All church leaders I know have claimed that they have a human condition, but none I know have accepted it. They all felt guilty and ashamed of themselves when they did something that was human—like get drunk or angry or the sort. The congregation demands perfection from its leaders and the leaders try to oblige and vis-à-vis. This is the exact example of dysfunction.

Any and all condemnation and rejection I experienced were within the church or by those whose history and ancestry came from the church. I never experienced it outside the church. The only thing I finally found out I really feared (a sane type of fear) were those who imposed the fear on me—those who made you believe that the outside world was sick and depraved. Who knows what crazy thing they would do to try to take back control. I have experienced stalking, trying to guilt you, shame you, degrade you, threaten you with hell, coerce you, manipulate you, and the list goes on and on. Who God do this to his people? No, I had not experienced judgmental and non-caring people on the outside who were not affiliated with a church. They were not confined, defined, or refined by these organizations of moral law. They were free. And many were pretty happy. And they all had the spirit within them. They were all full of life, full of spirit.

Yes, I have seen hurting people outside the church. But all the insane people I've seen where shame and guilt ridden and very, very angry at God and all his rules and injustices. Where did this come from? Not when he was born, but from those who raised him within the rules and confines of organized religion via current or ancestral history. Don't be fooled? People who cannot rely on the God within them become addicted to Jesus in some physical form on the outside. They look up and pray and raise their offerings and pray. Who are you praying to? He is in you, not over here and over there and up there or down here. Organized religion is a fanatical and addictive society processing insecurity after insecurity and making people need

them to identity themselves. Pity is love in these places. And pity enables insecurity and insecurity feeds off those who pity. Seek not a religion or faith. Seek he who is in you and become the true church.

People become addicted to many things. Organized religion houses Jesus addicts and, thus, very off-balanced people. Organized religion came by one who thought himself as or even more merciful and loving than God; thus, someone who really was very upset with God. This was known as the anti-christ. This one decided to start a church and make his own rules and laws out of his own perception of loving mercy greater than that of God. He made himself infallible in the faith, thus, in a way, claiming himself a god. And many followed in the same excuse by making it a law not to question authority. And what he could not see was that it was not love he was offering but pity. This is the epidemic of churches beginning with the first church. Churches are supposed to help empower the individual by helping him become aware of a power, a spirit of God, within him so that he may come to full completion of himself and not need the church to make his identity. Organized religions have become mini insane-asylums. As you become more and more sane through the true spirit of God within you, the Spirit starts taking you out of these asylums into a church known as the individual and independent you—for that is where God is anyway. He is inside you.

So, if we see a child (and we are God's children) be passive, aggressive, or manipulative, he has strayed because he has pitied himself or is pitying another because of some false belief he has chosen to go with. A child learns this very early in childhood—I have seen it in children as early as two, but I can see how it can start as early as birth. At birth, and perhaps even in the womb, the child begins to absorb like a sponge. His nervous system is very sensitive via all his senses to the environment around him. All that is around him, he begins storing within his own mind. And whatever is in his mind he tends to believe is the same for his soul. That which is false love begins deceiving him from the pure love of his own soul.

I'll explain even more. I know a mother who has told me that her child needs to be more independent. That he wants her to be wherever he is. And at the same time, I always see this mother asking her child to come and kiss her and love her and be with her. So, she is telling her child that he needs to be healthy when she doesn't want to deal and she is tired, at the same time, she can't manage without him when she is able to deal. This is all forms of pity. She pities him and yet pities herself as well, back and forth and back and forth. What she is telling her child is that he needs to be responsible for him and her at the same time. "This child makes me sane." The child is innocent and pure—the nearest thing to God. Of course the child helps you be sane. But the mother is keeping him trapped in an insane world. The child is very manipulative. His father is always expressing the view that his time will come someday. The father keeps himself distracted with things the father wants to do. The father doesn't want to deal with it either. When the child wants more and more attention, the father hits his boiling point and strikes out emotionally and verbally abusively at the child. "What's wrong with you?" the father says. Time-outs are the father's greatest tool he threatens the child with. "Get into time-out" he yells. And then after time-out, the father is so loving. So, the father is telling the child that when the father can't deal with it, it's the child's fault. But if the child would do everything the father tells him to do and be a good perfect little boy, daddy will then love him. So, then the child is trying to take care of his mother, take care of himself, and be perfect for his father. And yet there is one

other thing. The mother and father always complain about one another and both are always vying for control. (Organized religion made a quick law on this one—the woman must always submit to the man. What cowards.) So when the child pays more attention to the mother, the father says that the mother is messing the child up. And when the child pays more attention to the mother, the mother says she is jealous of the father and wishes the father would be more loving to her. Pity on top of pity on top of pity. And each of the grandmother's and one of the grandfather's pities them and pities themselves as well. In order for this child to grow up sane and healthy, he will have to rebel against both parents.

The child needs a uniform unconditionally loving system to work in. It should reflect the unconditional love of the one within each one of us. This unconditional love is consistent and doesn't show favoritism. Therefore, when two who are intimate in unconditional love unite, they and their unconditional love unite becoming one unified system of unconditional love expanding to encompass all the members (family, friends, etc.) within that system. This is supposed to be the way of the church. But it is evident that because the church is divided into multiple denominations and non-denominations, this unified unconditional love is either waning or is very suppressed (almost like it doesn't exist anymore). They all deny this fact, but the evidence is right in front of them. The truth usually is. People just find it hard to believe. It is simply this. One can obviously see a multitude of denominations. If the first church was full of unified unconditional love, there would be no need for denominations. The first church is blind and thus has become more and more insane as time passes by. Their insanity, the degree of which is measured by the distance away from unconditional love, can be measured on earth by just the opposite. The degree of insanity is proportional to the amount of denominations and non-denominational churches throughout the world today and the different faction of churches within each of those. The further people leave, the greater the insanity to which they leave from. And now it is to the point that the first church is collapsing in on itself. For the core of any system or society is its people—not its rulers. Unfortunately, most CEOs and heads of state realize this too late. They are all in great denial thinking that those who leave are the crazy people—in mortal sin. That in itself shows the insanity of these people and their churches. For sin is dead. The one they believe to have made the church for is actually the one who winds up destroying it. For evil will not overcome it. No evil did—God did.

Raise a child to not need you for his/her identity. Thus, do not pity him or yourself. Allow both of you to get your needs met and your wants negotiated. You, as a parent, are the first relationship the child will have and learn from. Go be secure within yourself by being intimate with God within so that you may be able to do this for your child. Don't be prideful, but be courageous.

299. Road to Freedom: Courage

COURAGE

In courage there are three,
When all I see is poverty.

One that expresses myself of late.

Two that meets my needs to date.
And Three my wants, negotiate.

Would it be best,

To hang up my hat,
Let it all rest,
Let that be that,
An end to an end?

Or might it be best to take a chance,
Claim my vict'ry,
A temporal glance,
Go down in hist'ry,
By a stance,
To never bend,
And make that end,
In revenge?

Permanence prevails,
In these three tales:

In appearance—do not worry.
Of your sufferance—do not hurry.
Perseverance—do not scurry.

And to top it off, there's better none.
My victory will have thus begun.
If all I've said can be done.
While creating love and having fun.

300. Road to Freedom: Paradise

All my life I have believed that I was powerless to have unconditional love but only be unconditionally loved if I found a family or person to give it to me. I searched and searched and searched for someone to mold me and for someone to give me unconditional love and for someone to nurture me and create a world for me that is—well—paradise. When I found God, I found unconditional love. I have worked very hard and, because of it, became intimate with God in me. And it was then that I realized that I have the power to create my own paradise. I have God in me. When God said go into the city, I didn't realize he was saying what Christ had said a long time ago. Christ said, "I will prepare a room for you." And what I didn't ever realize was that God had prepared me up to this point when he said "Go into the city." Go into the room I prepared for you. He had already provided me the structure. What I never realized was that He would allow me to design and decorate it the way I wanted to. "Go into the city" meant "go create a new life for yourself in the life I gave to you—within the City System I am for you."

I took some classes in interior design a long time ago because I was searching for a new life. However, I was trying to do it on my own. I didn't realize what I was doing. First I needed the new life, then I could design and decorate it the way I wanted to. A person must be given first the room before he can design and decorate it. God has given me that room. It is called "a new life" in Him.

I have said goodbye to all in my past who rather pity than love. I, Tim DiMella, get to design and decorate my own room (city) within the room's already built structure (God's City). And me doing this expresses my true trust without worry in God Almighty. God is my room. He is my structure. He is in the entire framework and in all I do. How free it is to be able to create paradise in *my* own room when its structure is made of pure God. God is very pleased with me. And now I have been given the power to create my own paradise within Him. And I will. How important it is for each of us to have our own room to design and decorate the way we want knowing that the house is made and filled with unconditional love. Be free. Go make my new life in what I believe and perceive—my own dream—of paradise.

Thank you, Father. Oh, how much I love you!

301. Road to Freedom: The True Mortal Sin and Trusting in the Lord for My Serenity

THE SERENITY PRAYER

God grant me the serenity
to accept the things I cannot change;
courage to change the things I can;
and wisdom to know the difference.

Living one day at a time;
Enjoying one moment at a time;
Accepting hardships as the pathway to peace;
Taking, as He did, this sinful world
as it is, not as I would have it;
Trusting that He will make all things right
if I surrender to His Will;
That I may be reasonably happy in this life
and supremely happy with Him
Forever in the next.
Amen.

--Reinhold Niebuhr

Trust in the LORD with all your heart
and lean not on your own understanding;
in all your ways acknowledge him,
and he will direct your paths.

Proverbs 3, 5-6

So what is it I cannot change? What is change? Simply, change is want. When I want something, I am asking for a change in my life—something I do not have now or something I am not aware of that I have now. Change is brought about by the appearing of something new to me. The Spirit was new to me when he appeared. A car is new to me when I buy it or receive it.

So what is the difference between needs and wants with regard to God? When we ask God for something and that something appears, it may be a need or a want. God supplies my needs. This I must and can trust in with all my heart. There is no need to worry about my needs when I have God and God has me—in other words, when God and I are intimate. And God does not only supply needs. He also supplies our wants sometimes too. But is the want I want what God wants too? Not necessarily. He loves me unconditionally. He grants me favor, but is the favor

beneficial for me? Not always in the way I think or desire. Sometimes it is more beneficial to Him by it leading me to trust in (rely on) Him more because I tried to pursue it.

When I think I want something, I will pursue it—even to the point of deceiving myself that God will come along with me in this grand pursuit. But what I have found is that when I am growing greater in debt (in my resources and in myself), it is not a want that I need to pursue. In fact, it is a change that I cannot change. God will have to change it if He wants it for me. The more I try to win over it, the more I succumb to it. For instance, I have claustrophobia. Because my job position demanded that I travel overseas or in-country, I tried to board a plane and fly. I had to get off. I went to a therapist to overcome it but my money was dwindling. I became more and more stressed in my job and in my life and marriage, and I began to want to escape life more and more. I was becoming very unhappy. I grew more and more tired. I started obsessing (worrying, ruminating and idolizing) more, thus, staying fixed (fixated) in my life. I started eating out more and eating fattier foods and foods with more sugar and chocolate. I wasn't enjoying anything. All I was doing was focusing and refocusing on my fear. I was placing a "coma" on my life. I started seeking medication. All this because I was sure that God wanted me to rid my fear of flying. Yes, he placed opportunities in my life. But I found out it wasn't to conquer them. It was so that I would finally come to admit that if I was wanting my fear of flying rid of, God would have to rid it. My job was to continue enjoying my life as stress-free as possible. I cannot alleviate my fears. Only God can alleviate my fears—if He wants to and when He wants to. I cannot worry about whether I will fly or will ever fly again. This is what it means to trust God.

So, what can I change? I can change nothing that God doesn't want me to change. If I can change things relatively easily to which there are opportunities and increasing headway, then that is what God says I, personally, can change. Otherwise, I cannot change it, only He can. And I don't need to be striving to change it to please others or prove to myself that I am "all that". Obviously, this want to rid my fear of flying is not an immediate need. If it were, I would be making great headway and knowing that God was with me in it. So, then if it is going to be rid of, God will have to do it. I'm continuing on with my life. I can still do my job well without flying.

This is the wisdom I am gaining for my own serenity. I'm always thinking that I'm missing something if I don't get what I want—if I don't get what I fantasize I want or think I need. It costs me more than \$4,000 to take four classes in Interior Design because I felt I needed a change in my life because my life appeared empty. When I feel my life starting to get empty because I am stressing and trying to control things my way while increasing my outer and inner debt, I begin to fantasize about what will give me serenity. I escape physically and mentally. But what helps is that I deal with the matter. And dealing with the matter means sometimes that I must come to this point of realizing what I can and cannot change. This "dealing with" is the same as "accepting hardships as the pathway to peace" in the serenity prayer above.

So then, if I start to become more and more in debt with my outside resources and my inside Resource (God), this is when I know I am trying to control something myself and trying to change it on my own. Though I may deceive myself into thinking that God is with me in it to succeed and overcome as I would like, this is not the case. I am becoming more and more alone and actually wish to leave everyone and everything behind. I must then abandon it (my want)

rather than abandoning others and myself. And it by abandoning my want, others won't understand and they try to get me to not abandon it, then I must abandon them as well. They too rather abandon me than that want. What all this means is that I am engrossing myself more than I should be in the situation—which is due to a wanting to control the situation rather than leaving it to God and His angels to pursuit it for me. This is a mortal sin, which is a sin that heaps heavy and stressful upon a human being because he will not trust in God taking care of his needs and wants. In other words, you are trying to do the work of God. You are trying to do God's job. And He will let you know through stress and worry and ailment. God will automatically take care of your needs and will take care of your wants if you'll just stop trying to do it yourself. Ask (pray or place into action) and let it go. If it is to be then it will be. If not, then not.

Leave the fears to God and enjoy my life. And if the fears are not alleviated, trust that the Lord has a reason for those fears to be there in my life for my own good and, possibly, for my own protection and serenity (peace of mind). If He wants it changed in me, He will do it in a way that is not so overpowering to me. This shall be my miracle to which I will then find unrelenting faith.

Allow my assertiveness to be the catalyst (catapult) to what I can and cannot change. Assertiveness is simply dealing with or putting forth an effort or putting something into action to whatever comes up at the time (in each moment within each day)—no more and no less—and placing the rest (restfulness) in you by leaving the rest to God. Place it into action and then let it go. God is in charge of all things and all answers. If it comes back in a form of what you do not want, then release it from your pursuit as God's Will be done and not mine. If it comes back positive, continue to pursue in God's favor. Passive is when you ignore it because it goes against what you want. Aggressive is when you try to control it in detail to get what you want. Manipulation is when you fear being caught in passive or aggressive mode. Passive, aggressive, and manipulative are all forms of mortal sin—trying to control what God gives you or ignore what God gives you toward your own selfish goals and agenda. Assertive is acknowledging that which God gives you and serving Him—for all good things come from God for the good of God. If it is not from God—you will know it soon enough to which using your wisdom is key.

As soon as you begin to ask yourself—"Okay let's say I do this, but how is it going to work?"—let it be a signal to you to stop thinking and just do it. You have your answer. You have what God gave you. Now go with it. It is God's job to show you how it will work. It is not for you to worry, ruminate, or obsess how it will work. If you try to figure it out, you'll become so confused that you'll lose all control and become fearful. Your mind will then desperately try to decide whether you should ignore it or control it rather than go forward and trust it. God's workings go toward His already placed outcome. You will only hurt yourself by meddling. You will be in mortal sin, which happens when you try to play God (or control what He gives you) or try to figure God out or ignore Him. All you need to know is that you are in His presence and you are intimate with one another. When you go into his area of work, you go into mortal sin. Do not meddle in God's work—in God's business. He will not allow it. You will only ruin yourself. Instead, go play as He works for what you desire. Go enjoy and play until he calls you at different times along the way to show you what to do along His path. He controls the future—not you. In other words, mortal sin is not trusting in God. **Trust in the LORD** with all your

heart and lean not on your own understanding; in all your ways acknowledge him, and he will direct your paths.

So then, Believe (insert yourself) in the Lord and where He is. Place into action what you receive and hand it over to Him and go play. Trust in His Omnipotence (Don't think about it anymore). Trust that He knows perfectly what you need and want. Trust that He fully understands it. Trust that it will be respectful, desirable, and acceptable. Trust that you will come to be completely devoted to it and intimate with it because it fits you perfectly. Trust that it will provide to you greater freedom and peace of mind later on.

302. Road to Freedom: Exposing Injustice, Testing the Spirits, and Enacting My Faith

I have said in the previous passages how I know if I can trust someone and how I can be trusted myself and can trust myself. The key to enacting your faith (trust) is to speak up about injustices. Do not allow yourself to be passive (walked over) when an injustice is happening to you, nor be aggressive by taking the matter into your own hands as if seeking revenge. And don't try to manipulate the situation and make it all okay by trying to play both sides of the fence, thus making pacts with the devil. These are all modes of distrust. You become only as sick as your secrets you hold deep within yourself.

What if I am honest and speak up? How do I know that I won't be rejected or chastised for speaking up? That is the chance you take. But there is no other way to know who you can trust and who you can't. In other words, there is no other way for you to know who is in the Kingdom and who isn't. Those in the Kingdom will be understanding (not pitying but empowering). They will take action in the right and just direction. Those who aren't in the Kingdom will not. Speaking up honestly about (exposing) injustice is what separates the true believer from the deceiver. If you do not work through your insecurities to have the guts (intimacy and security within yourself) to speak up and expose injustice, it will eat you up inside. It will divide you up inside over and over again. You will increasingly become more and more in debt like I spoke about earlier.

What good will speaking up do me now when it happened so long in the past? Speaking up now is not for seeking revenge on those that did you an injustice in the past. It is about healing. Speaking up, confessing, or exposing injustices releases their affiliated demons from you. But you must do one better. You must use that injustice demon as a catalyst to help thousands of others who are now in the situation you were in and to help those thousands who will be in the situation you are in. Thus to be really free, you must free others as well. That is what kills the demon for good. Without the latter, the demon will only circle around and try to reenter. You must use the injustice demon for good and Godly purposes. Then all its life is drained from it.

Stage 2 is all about being assertive and speaking up and exposing injustices to those whom God has created to take the ball and run with it. Be selective when you speak up. Go to those who have been empowered by God to do something about it. This is the essence of interdependence or my enactment of faith in others who have been empowered or given the authority by God to do something about it. I cannot have independence unless I first demonstrate interdependence. Each person has been created by God, whether they know it or not, to fill a certain gap or room

in society so to help alleviate the burden of others in society. Each person thrives in his or her role when he realizes that the role is designated by God Himself. So to think that I don't want to burden others with my problems is distorted. There are people in key positions that thrive on your "burdening" them because what you are actually doing is empowering them. They wait for the chance to exercise their purpose in life given them by God. And by you speaking up, you give them that chance. Here is a prime example. Here I am sending an e-mail to the President/CEO of Children's Trust—a trust of Miami-Dade Public Parks in Miami, Florida.

From: DiMella, Timothy R.

Sent: Sat 7/16/2005 11:47 AM

To: 'mo@thechildrenstrust.org'

Cc:

Subject: Child Abuse at Tamiami

Attachments:

[View As Web Page](#)

Dear Sir/Ma'am:

When I was 10 or 14 or so (around 1976 to 1980), I was a summer camper at Tamiami. During this time, most of my time was spent sitting in unairconditioned warehouse-type facilities with about 20 or 30 other children in my group. When we would ask to go into some of the airconditioned facilities, we were told very starkly "no". During one of the sports outings, my camp counselor and one of his friends took us to the very end of the park to a baseball diamond. There we were supposed to play dodge ball. Someone was supposed to throw from the mound to hit a kid at home plate. The counselors took the balls and started beaming us. Some kids got hit extremely hard in the shoulders, back and head. When some kids decided that they didn't want to play anymore, the counselors took them by the shirts and pulled them up and yelled at them and tossed them back around homeplate. They yelled at the other kids to start throwing the ball at the kids again. They began as well. I didn't know what to do. I saw a counselor pulling another kid by the shirt and he looked over at me. I remember staring at him and he left me alone. There were kids crying and terrified. When we walked as a group back to the unconditioned facilities, I saw my brother in another line walking past me in the other direction and we decided to just run home. We never returned again.

Nobody at home really believed me when I told them. I was so insecure at the time and over my life I have worked out these insecurities. My mother was a single mother and we all had just gone through a divorce a few years before and moved down from New York, where my father stayed. I idolized men in these counselors' positions because I didn't have a father of my own. This was an incident in my life that stuck with me and really contributed to my distrust of people and authority figures in general.

I'm telling you this now because I am no longer afraid of these cowardly people. These people think they can get away with this because we were children. But children grow up and expose injustices in our system. You being a Children's Trust need to know this. I don't know how much it has changed over the years, but this happening to one kid is too much. Kids won't say anything. They are too ashamed. It is of my concerned opinion that there should be professional trustees taking frequent and periodic visits to each of the summer camp groups. These summer camp groups are easy targets for child molesters and abusers. I don't know if the Children's Trust has things like this in place, but it is imperative.

Thank you for your time.

Tim DiMella
Huntsville, Alabama

So then, freedom it seems is not only inner dependence but interdependence as well. Freedom is dependence on the true Spirit of God in each one of us, including ourselves. And those who have the Spirit of God within them are in the Kingdom of God. Test the spirits by exposing injustices everywhere you go. See if they become passive, aggressive, or manipulative. Then you will know who you can trust and who you can't (who has made it through the gate—who is truly in the Kingdom of God and who isn't). But like I said, it is not enough to just expose it, but expose it to those who can do something about it. Saying to another person "look at the bank because it is being robbed" is not good enough. You must call the police. Just saying it or seeing it without doing anything about it will weight so heavy on your conscience via this injustice demon. And going in with your own gun to try to take care of the problem will weight heavy on it as well when other people get killed because of it. You neither had the education or experience to know how to deal with the situation. When you can assess whether you truly have the education and experience to deal with each situation in life that comes your way, you will make great strides because you will then ask for help to those who have truly been empowered to help. **God grant me the serenity to accept the things I [personally] cannot change; courage to change the things I [personally] can; and wisdom to know [when to ask for help to enhance your glory].**

For The City is the Kingdom of God. Once you meet God first hand, you have met your intimacy and your security first hand. God absolves you and sends you into The City. As you go unto The City, you will become free by freeing yourself and freeing others along the way until you reach The City of Peace and Joy and all that is right in the world.

303. Road to Freedom: Abuse and Its Effect on Balance

All For You—Loving & True

It all begins, *Believing in Him*, then *Hoping* the best. Then *Faith* in another, and *Learning* your guest, by getting to know, not presuppose.

Then find *Understanding* via this test.

Be wise, to this disguise, for pity's not love.

Admonish and empower, and thus rise, as with you, He has done.

Will they listen, will they hear? You will know by their fear.

Whether passive, aggressive, manipulative, or assertive,

Remain aware, be conscious of these as they appear.

The first three deceptive, the last honest and true.

One gets you through, the others leave you, all black and blue.

And after this reflection, you'll find *Respect* in.

That is, after you decide, to abide, in weeding the honest from the lie,

Then the spirit you will find, and feel way-down, deep inside.

Seizing the moment to relate, you speak aloud, communicate.

It's too late, no more doubt, no more wait, you get it out, and if you must, reiterate.

Now redeemed, through *Esteem*, no longer ashamed or pitying, nor in debt, you'll *Accept*, one's choice to live, with you and He or be, bound to poverty.

Devotion, then comes, when you as one, leave and turn toward the son, bearing intimacy from, receiving *Love—His Kingdom Come—the kind unconditional, secure in realizing nothing intentional, premeditated or deliberated, 'cause whatever sin, you felt within, you know had been, done in one's illusion. Now knowing you're right within, you can then, forgive and live. Realizing so, you will no, longer take the bait, they send out, that's all fake, to reel you in, to feel forgiven, of their sin, to later bash you again and again. For doing so's not choosing God, not trusting Him to do His job, getting in the way of what has to be done, trying to*

make your way the way it's run. They can only face their sin, when they no longer can pretend, that what they're doing is okay, by you enabling them to be that way.
Freedom, now you'll find, no more bind, paying their trespass no more mind.
And then when free, their existence ceased, you'll then be, simply in Peace.
So, for loving another and loving yourself,
One more time, the first through the twelfth.
This is the first—to all that is true, believe it is good, loving like you.
This is the second—hope it is true, risk to view, approach it like new.
This is the third—in all you pursue, trust it's true-blue, and introduce you.
This is the fourth—learn of it, a lot or a bit, then
This is the fifth—be sure to apply, to discover the truth from what is a lie.
This is the sixth—the pivotal point to all that is true—decide if you like it to continue, in spirit or flesh,
separate or meshed. To whichever you choose,
This is the seventh—esteem your spirit and speak its truth, and realize then,
This is the eighth—by being a friend, it may just be a means to an end. Then,
This is the ninth—live in the Life, as much as you can, and then
This is the tenth—fall in love with your number one fan. So, then
This is eleventh—be free from the burdens that once have been, and
This is the twelfth—be happy and joyful again and again.

Abuse is pressuring someone into doing something that is outside his/her comfort zone or range of comfort. Pressure can be exerted too much or too less resulting in states such as anger or boredom. Thus, you can try to force someone to do something or do it all for them. Each is abusing the system. Showing something to someone in an assertive way to help them be aware of it in order for them to take responsibility for their actions (admonish and empower them) is not abuse. Now a person may experience discomfort the more he/she draws closer to the limits (be it lower or upper), but abuse begins when you pressure them too much or don't pressure them enough outside these limits. It is then that your faith is in question. Like the poem says, **“For doing so's not choosing God, not trusting Him to do His job, getting in the way of what has to be done, trying to make your way the way it's run.”** It must be their choice to believe (Stage 1) and pursue it with God or not. When they venture into Stage 2, they will most likely go to God for help as they risk seeing if it is true or not. Also, when we don't do our part (be responsible) as part of the system, we indirectly exert undue pressure on the system as well. Other people have to do our jobs. Now this isn't to say that we should do things that make us uncomfortable either. The key is for everyone to take responsibility within the range of comfort according to each person. Productivity will then go up 10-fold in each of their areas. But when the outside demand is too much for the quantity of people in the system to do, then more people must be added to the system or, if not able to, then one must decrease such demands on oneself or on the system. This is known as balance.

Balance is achieved by the acronym H.A.L.T, where “h” is for hunger, “l” is for loneliness, “t” is for tiredness, and “a” is traditionally known for anger. But I believe it best to use “a” for abuse. The thing that promotes anger is when someone feels pressure to do something he is not comfortable doing. And that is the same definition of abuse. Abuse sends people into very strong emotional turmoil, and what crops up are very strong emotions like anger, fear, anxiety etc. This is why I find “a” for abuse as an all-encompassing term. Boredom also sends people into emotional turmoil too, but this is because they lack purpose in their life more or less and are trying to find great excitement and fulfillment from outside things. Abuse prevents a person from seeing their true selves and being secure in themselves and, thus, their true purpose in life. Once

the veil (illusion) is lifted, their true purpose become evident and they are also able to have more fun in little everyday things. So, I believe boredom is a symptom of abuse, but of course, not only abuse. What about sex you say? Sex usually crops up because you are out-of-balance in one of the H.A.L.T. areas. The more you are in balance (in comfort), your desire is for physical intimacy is diminished.

If people allow themselves to be abused, they are in fact abusing themselves. They are pressuring themselves to perform in ways they are not comfortable because of outside pressure. They may even believe they must perform, when they don't really have to. The thing is that they believe that they are a failure or something is wrong with them if they don't. This is a "manipulative technique" from institutions (religion, family, business, etc.) where the bottom-line and prestige are the crucial factors in measuring the success of the system. How many people have the church saved or how many people do they have in their congregation? How much profit was gained last quarter? How well did Betty do in school today—denoting prestige for the family?

The problem is that undue stress and strain due to exerting pressure are candidates for long-term degradation and potential failure in the long-run, though can reap huge figures in the short-term. Discomfort may not be outside their range, but continued discomfort will degrade the system over time. The more discomfort the greater degradation over a shorter amount of time. The long-term rewards will far out-do the short-term because of severe fluctuations in the economic situation of the institution due to exacting pressure. When we stop doing this, we then are accepting the system and the people in the system that God gave us, including ourselves. We accept who we are and the limitations we uniquely have that make-up the limitations of the system. Only God is limitless, human are limited. This is one of the most pivotal points in achieving balance, living together (coexisting), security, freedom, and peace. Without accepting ourselves and one another, the whole system is out of balance. But also understand that people can't coexist with abusive people. This is why acceptance is where the gate of Jesus Christ is. We must turn from abusive people, and go toward the Son.

Whenever we exert undue or unnecessary pressure (abuse) anything, it becomes distorted. Exert too much pressure on the eyes and the vision becomes distorted. Exert too much pressure on the body and the limbs becomes distorted. Exert too much pressure on the mind and the thinking becomes distorted. What this means is that, until we find ourselves secure in the unconditional love of God, we continue to live in distortion (illusion). We believe that the outside world (that which is outside our comfort) is reality and that there is something wrong with us because we can't seem to sustain it for very long. This is because it is not reality. It is abuse for the short-term reward (fix).

Therefore, abuse and addiction are one and the same. There is no discontinuity between abuse and addiction. Addictions comes from people abusing themselves or the system because they think that who they are isn't good enough, and that being comfortable is wrong. The truth is that being comfortable while also being responsible is balance and is exactly who you are and the way God made you and needs you. You still have pressure on you, but it's just the right range of pressure you need to be comfortable.

Now, why is it people break the limits of (abuse) the law? It is because children (immature and egotistical people) see the law as confining them personally rather than helping them physically and emotionally. A healthy respect for the law means that one sees the true spirit of the law in helping others and themselves, rather than seeing it as the letter of the law, which is condemning them to confinement. The more laws passed to stop lawbreakers, the more confined these people feel, and the more lawbreakers you will have. In other words, more laws produce more lawbreakers when people are immature and, thus, self-centered. But when people realize the spirit of the law, they only need that one law to respect it.

When people journey with God, they find the spirit in everything. And this means that there does not need to be as many laws. As they near the end of the journey, they need no law but one. That law is God, who is Love. Thus, they only recognize love as the only law to which love commands that you “do unto others as you would have them do unto you.” Recognizing this one law means that they have God secure within themselves. This is the stage prior to Freedom. Whatever you do unto something in love, then full respect of the true spirit of that something emerges (including laws). But man-made laws become more corrupt the greater one is forced or forces himself to lose sight of its spirit and go by only the letter of the law. Thus, enforcing the law actually promotes more lawbreakers. This is why one’s own will is fruitless in obeying the law. One’s own will is ego, seeing only the letter of the law, and thus, a hindrance to his freedom. He will not obey the law for long. He will break it, and then be in fear of condemnation of those who enforce it. This is because he is in his own ego. Without journeying with God in mercy and grace while breaking the letter of the law, a person will never see the true spirit of the law, and thus, find freedom because of it. For, one must break the letter of the law and gain mercy from God (because his ego thinks he has broken it) in order to be shown by God the true spirit of it. All who have found the Spirit of God, have broken the letter of the law to pursue the spirit of it and are labeled as sinners by men. So then, in order to find the true spirit of the law, God asks us to not be bound by the letter of the law, but break it’s seal in order to pursue its spirit. And so in our search for the spirit of the law, we are lawbreakers (sinners) in the sight of those who are actually abusing (corrupting) the spirit of the law. Thus, as they continue to exert more pressure on us (abuse us) to obey the law to the letter, we are relieving pressure by focusing only on God and being secure in the true spirit of it. This makes us absolutely innocent in the eyes of God. The letter of the law is a corruption of its true spirit. The spirit of the law is its absolute truth.

So then, the difference between the Old Testament and the New Testament is that the Old Testament is the Letter (Tablets) of the Law and the New Testament is the Spirit (Soul) of the Law. You will never be innocent and free by the Letter of the Law, but only by seeking the Spirit of it. The truth is in the spirit. There is no love in the letter of the law—all the love has been drained away. So, the more one gets closer in exacting the letter of it, the less truth there lies in him and, thus, less spirit. There is only love in the spirit. Thus, the more one gets closer to the spirit of it, the more truth there is in him. Therefore, through grace, one no longer is required to obey to the letter what was taught him by man, as this will make him more corrupt by exerting greater and greater pressure on him, but obey only what is shown him by the spirit of Love—the spirit of God—to which he will wind up being free of burden.

304. Road to Freedom: That Which Separates People Living in the World to Those in the Kingdom

The gate is at the stage of acceptance. What does acceptance mean? It does not mean, because we love everyone, we must accept everyone into our hearts and homes. In fact, it means just the opposite. Love cannot stand the irresponsible—the passive, the aggressive, the manipulative—to which acts are mindful. These are the mortal sins, also known as acts against humanity. This is important. It is not that you will not be in the Kingdom because you break the letter of these laws to not be passive, not be aggressive, and not be manipulative. I can show you these laws in writing and command you not to break them. You'll wind up breaking them anyway because I offered you no understanding of the loving reason it was created and you wish not to understand. Thus, breaking these laws means that you do not see that the spirit despises these things, and doing what the spirit despises means you are separating yourself from the spirit. In other words, you choose not to want to understand the loving truth of why these laws were created. If you did understand, you would come to respect and from respect comes esteem (the feeling or empathetic desire by having found (connected with) the spirit deep within). If you feel no wrong from being passive, aggressive, and manipulative, you aren't yet connected to the spirit because these laws are of the spirit and, thus, are of you. If you feel wrong from within and do them anyway, you have the spirit within but you choose to not follow it—you choose not to follow the true you. Genuinely repent later for it, and you can enter the Kingdom and be saved. This is the mercy of God because His mercy is shown greatest in times of a person's weakness.

Envision yourself a law of God. Now believe that your mind in all its logic goes according to the letter of the law. But the truth is in the spirit of the law. So then, if the spirit is your truth, then why don't you follow the true you? Instead, you apply logic to everything and follow your deceiving mind. Your mind takes in everything it sees and delivers it to its beliefs to find truth. Everything it doesn't believe, it believes to be false. Your mind searches for truth in whatever it believes at the time. So then, begin believing in the spirit within and you will find the truth behind everything that your mind sees because everything that is righteous is based on this truth. As long as you stay within your logical mind, you will continue to be deceived by the passive, aggressive, and manipulative ways of the world. The spirit frees your mind by trusting solely in Him within. Only then will you have real peace.

This repentance only comes from being aware of what you have done, trusting in God's mercy and unconditional love for you, learning how to do it right, doing it right, feeling a deep respect because of it, and then finding esteem (the spirit) once again within you. Repentance then comes at the stage of acceptance. Will you then accept His way or will you revert back to your own? Some feel the esteem and think they are all good as gold again and think they don't have to repent. So they go back to their old ways. They don't realize that the Spirit has come into the world to retrieve you back into the Kingdom. You are not yet in the Kingdom. But for those who truly repent, God calls them back into His Kingdom to live with Him. We show our devotion by turning away from the old and pursuing the renewed. And then we find the intimate security of Him once again. We then demonstrate our abhorrence of our once passive, aggressive, and manipulative ways. And this abhorrence to which we cannot tolerate passive, aggressive, or manipulate ways in us and in others, is what brings us into our own freedom. And from this freedom, we then weed out everything and everyone passive, aggressive, and

manipulative in our lives. Then we are able to coexist in peace with the spirit within us and those in the Kingdom we now live in with God and with God on earth.

When we experience something that is unjust and irresponsible, we feel something deep inside saying to us it is wrong. This something's source is the Spirit. This is how you know you are connected to the Spirit. But if we choose to do nothing about what is going on, we are passive and disobedient to the spirit. We choose not take responsibility. If we choose to take over the situation and, thus, the responsibilities given to others, we are aggressive and disobedient to God. If we choose to use or exploit the situation by being passive and aggressive at our whim in order to get our fleshly desires, we are manipulative and not only disobedient to God but actually trying to play God. Manipulation is the greatest of all the evils because someone is purposely and premeditatedly staying to deceive another. It is easy to drive out passive and aggressive spirits. But to drive out manipulative spirits, one must bore to the heart of manipulator's spirit and take him by the neck and throw him out—it must be nothing less than an hostile takeover. And if he tries coming back in, knock him down to his knees until he can no longer live with himself and either kills himself or turns to kill his own evilness.

If the letter of the law is aggressively all the way to one side, then no law is passively all the way over to the other. The balance is assertively the spirit of the law (the Word). That is where the truth resides. Now, the spirit of the law can never be waived. But the letter of the law can be because it does not apply to all situations. So then, the letter of the law can be flexible with regards to the type of situation. But the spirit of the law—the loving reason behind it—should always be upheld. Disregarding the law altogether to get what you want is aggressive. Letting the letter of the law rule your life is passive. Using or exploiting the law (as in loopholes) to get what you want is manipulative. But when someone wants to uphold the loving law then one need only go to the truth of it (the spirit of it) which is forever unchanging. Breaking the loving spirit of the law (the loving spirit of anything) is evil and, thus, one cannot be in the kingdom.

It is up to us to make others aware of their passive, aggressive, or manipulative ways. If they continue to do it, their excuse of ignorance is no longer valid. Expose their ways to them, then to them again with witness, then to them with the leadership. If they still do so, they can no longer be in the Kingdom we live in. Do we kick others out so that they may see the error of their ways? No. If so, we would be in mortal sin ourselves by manipulating someone to see things our way. We would be playing God. Do we ignore them? By no means. That would be passive. When we see them and speak with them, we continue to do so by the words of God. Do we yell at them and condemn them and force them to see things our way by making them feel guilty or ashamed of what they have done? By no means. That would be aggressive. No. Instead, we leave them to themselves as we continue on with obeying the righteousness of God within ourselves. We kick no one out. We excommunicate no one. These are signs of the ego—of selfish pride and self-righteousness. Instead, by us continuing on the path of God and not wavering while loving them, they will either come to see the error of their ways and come home or remain gone in pride.

So, what does all this mean with respect to the law? There is the letter of the law, which is the physical, outer expression of it. And there is the spirit of the law, which is the inner loving truth of its creation. The outer does not represent the truth of the inner when filtered by a prideful

mind. So then, there will come times when some laws we cannot accept physically in our homes because it does not represent righteousness, but we can still love it from afar because we know that it was created from God, who is Love. We believe it has love and we hope it will risk changing and trusting this love. It knows there is love in the world because it will hopefully recognize one day that we are shining examples of that love—even in the form of tough love. When one believes in God and His unconditional love for them (unconditional meaning grace even in the midst of sin), he is able to hope. How else can he later come to place faith in Him while trying to change his ways. But then he must be made aware of his passive, aggressive, and manipulative ways. If he sees what he is doing, he must risk not doing it anymore by placing his trust in God's mercy. Trusting God cannot happen unless one risks changing his ways.

Do not get perfection and righteousness mixed up. One can still be righteous and not perfect. Human righteousness is the obedience of the righteousness of God from within oneself. When he performs acts of unrighteousness (passive, aggressive, or manipulative action), he is no longer righteous, but can be righteous again through repentance. These are the mortal sins. All other things that people may call sins are not sins. They may as well not exist because they are automatically forgiven. In other words, the spirit doesn't convict you of these because it is the same spirit of Christ. If they weren't already forgiven, then God would not accept His children as human, which is the form He created us in. God would be shirking His own responsibility as our true Father. What He promised would be all a lie. So then, we are free to be human. Passive, aggressive, and manipulative are acts against humanity—acts against God and His creation. They are, indeed, inhumane. But because of His Son, we have been given the chance to change our ways and come Home. By believing in Christ and what he died for and why through the obedience to God Himself—in other words, under God's explicit direction—we can share in the life of our Father and in His wonderful Kingdom.

Freedom begins when one is obedient to the righteousness of God within himself. In other words, freedom begins when one starts trusting God and His spirit within. No longer do we concern ourselves with thinking our way through things, which always winds up in passive, aggressive, or manipulation. We speak from our guts. We speak from what the spirit within us convicts us from within. This is assertiveness and is the truth. This is the sword of God himself and is what parts the entire body into righteousness on the right and unrighteousness on the left. So then, if I feel something is wrong, like the way people treat other people in businesses or churches, then I need to say something about it when it is time to say it in God's time and timing. Not to make them see it my way or for my own gain like making me a priest or boss or whatever, but to only make them aware of it. Then it is between them and God. I am not to bring them along, but to consistently insist they communicate with God and His spirit within them and take to the spirit's guidance.

Must I obey the letter of the law to prove to you that I obey the spirit of the law? If you do not know the spirit of the law, how will you know that I am actually obeying the law or not? In following the letter of the law, I may act within your interpretation of it but not in another's. Am I obeying the law then? Some will say yes, and some no. Must the spirit go to each and everyone to prove itself to them? No. But because it loves you so much and wants you to have what it has, it did. The spirit is who I obey. Why must the spirit prove to you it exists by following your interpretation (letter) of it? Are you God? Rather, let go of your interpretation of

it, clear your mind's beliefs, and search for the true spirit of it yourself. Then you will have your proof. But, alas! That is not the way of the world. The world follows nothing it cannot no be entertained to see. It believes only what it wants to believe. And evil entertains them everyday.

What is the difference between self-righteousness and obeying the righteousness of God within oneself? Self-righteousness is a result of insecurity and immaturity where a person doesn't want to take the hard way in taking the journey to deal with and work through and face what he needs to in order to become a man. Obeying the righteousness of God within is a result of achieving security (intimacy) with God and His spirit within oneself by taking the hard way through the journey and dealing with and working through immaturity and insecurities with the spirit in order to be secure in him and become a man. So then, self-righteousness is a result of insecurity and obeying the righteousness of God within is a result of security. One is a result of denying the spirit and the other is a result of following the spirit. The self-righteousness always has an excuse for not having to take the journey and has yet to take the journey. He has little or no wisdom because of it. But the one who obeys the righteousness of God within oneself is able to speak of the wisdom he has gained by having taken the journey with the spirit. One is fake and the other is truthful. One tells made-up stories of wisdom and philosophies to gather people under him. The other speaks of factual experiences to empower others and free people from themselves. The self-righteous spouts out what he has learned in his mind of what has already been written by man. The other spouts out what has been written on his heart by his experiences with the spirit. The self-righteous will tell you he is what makes him self-righteous, like "I am humble or I am this or I am that." The other will speak none of it and just continue to obey the righteousness of God within himself. That's how you'll really know that he is truly humble and meek. Beware of the one who speaks of his own righteousness. He is insecure. He needs his followers to make him whole.

So then, believe and invite in the unconditional love of God and His mercy and begin to see the miracles in your life. In seeing how the world works, God is a hard sale. God has come to the world so that the world will come out of it and over to Him in the way the world will only come to Him—by the way the world works and follows. The world believes in and follows nothing it cannot see. It does not risk through hope. Instead, it is too scared to risk. It wants to see first and be led rather than moving on its own into the unknown in hopes of finding what it searches for at the end. But this is the difference between children and adults. And God must treat most like human children so that they will come to be human adults. And human adults know that they are God's children because they feel secure within themselves. In other words, they feel fully adopted (bought) by the Father via His spirit and, thus, Him within them. For if God is the Law, His Spirit is the Truth of the Law. And, thus, if you have His Spirit within you, you, in fact, have Him.

305. Being Nice

The fact is that you can't be nice if you are not responsible—if you are not a responsible person. Being passive, aggressive, or manipulative are all signs of not being nice—all signs of egotistical selfishness. Only nice people belong in the Kingdom because only nice person have the capacity to genuinely love.

306. Road to Freedom: Who Has Earned the Right?

Who has earned the right? Those who have taken the journey are the only ones who have earned the right. Taking the journey (persevering through it) builds character and results in you truly appreciating what you've secured. In this great appreciation for it, you will want to live every moment with it and be in the moment with it because you have found the true spirit of it and not just the thing itself. This will bring you into real freedom without the immature and insecure distractions of the outside world trying to play on it or deter you from it simply because they don't appreciate it like you do. You will be absolutely honest and very responsible with it. You will cherish it and never take advantage of it. This is the sign of one who has taken the journey and has, thus, earned the right to have it. The journey is the Journey of God, thus, the Journey of Love.

307. Road to Freedom: Living in the Moment

To live in the moment means to take and live life as it comes. We can only do this when we are secure in and with God within us. We no longer are afraid of what will come because we know we can face it and deal with it when it does. No longer do we have to worry. No longer do we have to ruminate or make scenarios in our heads now of how to deal with it when it does come. We will be able to speak God's truth when it does. Living in the moment (living life as it comes) is the purest example that we trust full-heartedly in God and His spirit within us. Living life as it comes solidifies our security in Christ and unveils our truest freedom no longer being a slave to fear. As our true selves are delivered to the world, our whole embodiment comes to a singular fruition in living in the moment. We start to feel complete, whole, and a unit of one. No longer are we divided. We actually feel and know we belong—no longer alone. This is where the river culminates into the sea.

308. Road to Freedom: Freedom is Delivering Your Spirit—the True You

Who did you meet when you met with God and became secure within? You met the truth of yourself. You met the true you. The spirit in you is of the same Spirit of God Himself. And then to be free is to deliver the true you. How can one help another find his own self if the one does not yet know one's own self. God knows His Spirit. Do you know yours? God tried to help His children see Him in themselves in the Old Testament, but His children saw it as imposing the letter of the law upon them. This is the world's perception of everything it meets. So God sent His Son—His Spirit in the flesh—so that the world could see the Truth within Him in hopes that they too may correlate that with the spirit within them.

The church's spirit is Jesus Christ. Does the church still know the true it? Who follows the letter of the law and who follows the spirit of it? The closer one gets to the letter of it, the closer to the world it gets and the further from its spirit it gets. Do you follow the rules because they are rules

or do you question the rules to discover the loving spirit (source) of the rule? If the ruler does not ask to be questioned, the ruler is no ruler from God. The ruler is indeed disconnected from its spirit. Ask me. Question me. I am secure within myself and I will tell you. Many follow the zest for life by going all over the globe in quest for it, thus they search for the letter of life. The vast minority realize that the Spirit of Life is the real quest and stay where they are searching for it there. This is why the more you fill your spirit by the Spirit, the more content you are where you finally wind up being.

309.Road to Freedom: Flies in the Ointment

And so what are those that follow the letter of the law. They are pesky flies—distractions to the love and wellbeing of their own spirit and, thus, of themselves. They only see things in black and white. They don't want to deal with (work through) life toward their own salvation of being secure in the truth of themselves. They don't want to take the journey. They fly around in the world and to those they meet (land upon), they defecate on. Then they fly off and do the same to the next they meet. In other words, they dump everything on you for the relief of themselves. Flies are the happiest when they are around the dump and around dead waste. Thus, they identify themselves with this. Without pitying them, we can have compassion for their actual misery. Pray for them, but also remember that they must be empowered by believing in God and His unconditional love and mercy. Pitying them would be to caretake them and, thus, try to play God and try to change them. Therefore, pitying is meddling just like that meddlesome fly. So then, they are flies in the ointment and the ointment is the Anointed Kingdom.

310.Road to Freedom: Who am I and What is my name?

Who did you meet when you met with God and became secure within? You met your Father who evaluated you. Did you do well? Have you earned the right to go into the Kingdom (the City)? Yes.

Your spirit is the child born of the Great Spirit in Baptism to which you are to bear responsibility to feed and nurture via the Spirit who feeds you as you follow him. Your spirit only knows Truth. It only knows that which comes from its Father. So then, you can join a hundred churches, but if your spirit feels starved because there is not enough Truth feeding it, it will cry "find Truth and feed me." It needs Mother Spirit to feed it. It needs its Mother's milk, then transitions to solid food still being fed by its Mother and its Mother's helpers, until it can feed itself by asking the Mother for what it needs, swallowing it, and digesting it. Whatever I ask the Great Spirit (my Mother and my Father) for, the Truth will be fed to me. Will you stay where there is not enough Truth or will you be responsible and leave and go find it from your Mother and your Mother's helpers. I ran everywhere in the world to feed my spirit and went to go find Truth wherever I could find it to feed it. I gained scraps here and there to suffice it but not continuously fill it. I could not find enough of it in the world to fill it and calm it on a regular basis. When your spirit is hungry, tired (unrested, uncalm), abused, and lonely, it cries in desperation, "Feed me!" Then I finally went to the Source—its Father, the Great Spirit. And I fed it. Now it became satisfied and filled. If your spirit will take in nothing but Truth from the Father, then all you will be filled with is Truth.

And then one day, it worries not about being fed, but develops a hankering to feed others. It itself becomes one of its Mother's helpers. And on that day you will secure your spirit and free it—deliver it into the world. It will come out and its voice will be heard and heard and heard, not in the voice of a child, but from the voice of Authority as a man of God, and not for my own gain but for my Father's gain in making men of God as well. And then:

In where we are,
The truth has come.
The deceiver knows it,
And so he runs.

So those that feed their spirit from the direction of the Holy Spirit will have Truth and be left with nothing else but love. And it is this that they identify themselves with. Because God is Love, we are love because we were born of the Spirit of Love itself in our rebirth. And our spirit is the child of God Himself—and so that is who we are. We are spirit—our Father's child—and all else has died away. My name is Spirit. And I come from My Father, the Great Spirit.

311. Road to Freedom: Whose Good Works?

Good works done by the letter of the law or the spirit of the law? Good works done because we are supposed to do them is done by our own will. We follow no spirit. There is hardly any spirit in it. This is performing good works because we are supposed perform good works. Faith without good works is dead. Yes. But faith must come first and not a faith of “if I do this, then I will get favor back.” Who then are you doing the good works for. And are they even “good” works. Man follows only his own desires when following the letter of the law. But man follows his Father's Spirit within them when following the spirit of it. Your faith is for following Him and, to this, He will lead you to the works He wants you to do. These are the “good” works. Nothing is good enough if not done by following the spirit. You will never “earn the right” of being secure in Him and He securing you by doing “good” works apart from Him leading you there. In fact, man will be so busy doing “good” works because the letter of the law says it that he will shirk his own spiritual maturation. It becomes a selfish distraction because he doesn't want to work through his own salvation. But every relationship demands being worked through.

When following the spirit of the law—the spirit within you—the good works come as maturing you. Without maturing you, God cannot use you in the way He needs you. He can use you in His good works. So then, it is by faith that we follow the Spirit who leads us to salvation in his security. And then we are able to deliver our true selves by way of the Spirit within us in the leading of the Spirit within us and in the Truth. How may we perform good works beforehand? Beforehand we would corrupt the goodness of our works with our immature and irresponsible behavior. But after we have become secure in God, our works that are good via the leading of the Spirit within us will not be corrupted, but will be responsible and mature staying within the presence of God.

312. Road to Freedom: The Journey (The River of Life)

The River of Our Life Together in the Kingdom

“Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives; he who seeks finds; and to [the one] who knocks, the door will be opened.”

We choose to **believe** (see) something (a spirit) has been sent to us for some need or want it desires. When it is God calling us to Him, the spirit is His Spirit and we are His desire.

We choose to **hope** to give the spirit’s desire serious consideration. We choose to approach it in as much of an assertive, responsible manner we are able in hopes it will respond in a responsible manner back when we address (speak or ask of) it. Perhaps our first inclination is to be passive and not say or do anything, or be aggressive and really give it to them before they give it to us, or be manipulative and redirect it for someone to come to know about it and it get back with us or get back at them in some indirect way (sin or being bad). Instead, we choose not to fall into that temptation and choose to direct our attention to the spirit’s desire.

We choose to **trust** that the spirit’s desire has some good in it and is worth considering.

We choose to **learn** of the spirit’s desire even though we may not know the exact truth behind it.

We choose to **understand** (communicate and figure out together) the truth (true spirit) behind the spirit’s desire. Behind every desire (need and want), there must be a truth and understanding. We then weigh how much truth (value) there is in the desire with the Truth of God that is Jesus Christ. The value (usefulness) of the need or want to God is the thing in question.

We choose to **respect** (be accountable to) the Truth of God. There is usually at least some Truth (value) in the need or want. So the desire will probably be met or negotiated in some part. Though always worthwhile to be considered, the desire feels worthwhile the more Truth there is in it. We come to an agreement of what we will do to get the desire met. Whatever portion of the truth that is not in the Truth of God is declined. When this happens, the person humbles himself or herself by apologizing for (giving it up to God) the portion of the desire that is faulty (weighs us down).

We choose to **esteem** (continue in) the spirit’s desire that is true to the Truth of God. We are transformed anew or renewed. In the case of an apology, here we will know for certain if an apology is genuinely heartfelt or not. Even if not, we still show respect and not make light of it.

We choose to only **accept** the spirit’s desire which falls under the Truth. Anything that goes against the Truth is deemed “unacceptable” and will not be accepted. It will be rejected immediately. In the case of a true apology that is accountable under the Truth of God, it is here that we accept the apology. It is here that forgiveness takes place.

We choose to **devote** ourselves to (go forth and live with) the spirit’s desire that is acceptable to God—that is, part of our Truth.

Jim: July 6/05

I'm very sorry I have to write this letter to you. I canceled the will I gave you and your brother. I summarized that you weren't good sons. So a new will was made giving all my estate to the poorest of the poor, my pension and my insurance Policy's

I wish you and your wife God's love and good health. This will be the last you will ever hear from me. When some one forgives someone they talk to each other and forget what was and be grateful to one another but I see your forgiveness was not meant in good will take care, so I had no choice but to do what I did. Bob

P/s your brother received the same letter.

Nicolas by pretending to want to be with my brother so Nicolas will wind up coming over to my side. I will leave Chris to Chris. And I will not use Nicolas to get back at Chris simply because I have no hard feelings when it comes to Chris. I still love my brother just like I love my nephew. I will pray that Chris listen to the Lord when He calls for him. And I will pray for Nicolas to find love—to find God—and maintain Him in his heart and soul.

So then, my father no longer has any hold on me. I am free. I know the truth now. I know his secret behind all his manipulation. Now his lies will never have a hold on me ever again. I am free from him and my brother and all who are like them.

314.Road to Freedom: Defeat of My Enemy (Psalm 37)

315. Road to Freedom: The Sign of Being a Man or Woman of God

One who seeks the Spirit of God, seeks himself. Though we have been saved when we believe in the Son of Man, it is only the beginning. We must work out our salvation. The 12 steps are that working out. It is the beginning of being a man or woman of God by first being a child. When we are secure in Him, we come into His manhood or womanhood. Why? It is because we realize that in order to be free in Him, we must deal with things as they come in a responsible manner. Anxiety comes because we are not dealing with something in this way. Children deal with things by being passive (hoping they will go away), aggressive (hoping they will be able to kill it), or manipulative (hoping that they will be able to outsmart it). It is all selfishness, and selfishness and sin are the same thing. Sin or selfishness is narcissism, which is when a person does something to receive it for only himself or herself without any intent to reciprocate in giving to another. It is fine to want things for yourself. But it is sinful when you only use people

to get what you want, not thinking of them or wanting to serve them as well in what they need or want. Your first belief in Christ takes you out of this narcissism and, thus, you are saved. No longer are you only concerned with the world (your own self). Children stay in the Step 2 of salvation by being lost in the stage of hope of getting what they want (afraid that they will not get what they want). In other words, they want what they want now. Even it is to get people for God. They begin to make it their own mission when they begin being passive, aggressive, or manipulative. Every organized religion began with a true spirit of God and, because of the impatience of follower of this spirit, became a sham (one big mind or head game).

Adult-children use manipulation in this way as well, but in a more complex and hidden way. They do it like this. First they define a spirit that they see as theirs (they put a name to it—they label it for everyone to see). This way they are then able to confine it so people from all walks of life identify it as such. This enables these manipulative people to try to make you feel ashamed or guilty of what you are truly innocent of to begin with. Then once they confine it, they try to refine it (change it or mold it into their image). There is only one image and that is of the Spirit of God. But because adult-children are scared of becoming men or women of God because they would have to deal with very complex problems that are real, they take a spirit and try to confine it in the walls of a religion—of anything. And so this is the corruption of the body of anything that house the true Spirit of God. This is organized religion.

Organized religion tried to define the Spirit of God by naming it Jesus Christ. Then they built a church to confine it. Then they tried to mold it in their image. In doing this, they lost the True Spirit of the spirit (the true spirit of the law) as they hung more and more letter of laws on it until one day the vision of the True Spirit cannot even be found anymore. This is what the world (people's ego) does to you as soon as you are born. They first name you. Then they place you in a family against your will. Then they try to mold you in the acceptable image of the family. If you will not conform, they want nothing to do with you, or they try to kill you, or they try to make you feel guilty or ashamed of not conforming. In other words, it is all about the people in the family and has very little to do with you, if at all. But you must be something to identify with. You are the spirit of the Holy Spirit of God. What is that? You can only know through experiencing the steps yourself. Each spirit is different in the way it serves God, just as each person is different in the way it is to serve the family in the eyes of the family. Who must you serve—God or people? What family (kingdom) are you to be in—God's or that made up by people?

Yes, church is pretty much a way for people to hide themselves within safe walls because they are not yet secure in themselves. Is church bad? By no means. Children need the safety of these walls in order to grow in confidence and maturity. What is bad is when the churches do not allow them to grow to be secure within themselves. In other words, the church is bad when they will not allow the transference of True Spirit to be secure within a person—when the church does not allow the person to become the church. This is politics and the hierarchy structure of the world. One should be rewarded for the wisdom they gain. Power should not be in the hands of ungodly wisdom.

Men or women know that dealing with things is to not to be selfish with whatever spirit comes, but to act selflessly toward accepting it the way it is. Is it in accordance to the wishes of the Spirit of Christ? Perhaps and perhaps not. It may not be perfect, but is its truth Truthful? Here is where we must choose to either enable it by devoting ourselves to it and its ways or choose not to enable it and, thus, not live with it. This type of dealing with it is mature and assertive.

So then, a man or woman of God turns completely toward God and lives in the Kingdom of God and no longer concerns him or herself with the family of people. And the only way to get to this point is by working the Steps of Salvation, and thus, eventually deal with each thing selflessly as it comes. This is the difference between men/women and children.

What is it to deal with things in a mature way in accordance to God? It is to face your fears using the 12 Steps. Remember that each fear is only a spirit. Will you try to define it, then confine it, and then refine it? Or will you selflessly get to know it until one day you choose whether you want to enable (accept and choose to live with) it or disable (deem it unacceptable and not choose to live with) it because it does or does not accept the True Spirit of God respectively. And again, being secure in the Spirit enables you to be able to deal with each spirit as it comes. The more you deal with each spirit as it comes, the more you will realize that you need not fear the spirit of fear and no longer do you have to entertain (accept) any fear that is contrary to the Spirit.

And so to each spirit that comes your way:

Believe it is a real person (spirit) with a real desire.

Hope that you can help it reach its desire by turning towards it and facing it.

Trust giving it your full attention.

Learn its desire by listening to it.

Understand its desire by realizing its true spirit (underlying truth or meaning).

Respect its desire by being a servant of it.

Recognize (see) its desire in its true light.

Accept its desire only in the True Spirit of Christ.

Devote yourself to its desire with all your God-given ability.

Meet (secure) its desire Head-on.

Deliver its desire to it in the Truest Sense of the Word.

Fulfill (complete) its desire by bringing it to Fruition and being filled with it.

There are three heavens within the Kingdom. The first heaven begins at belief. The second heaven is within the first heaven and begins at acceptance. The third heaven is within the second heaven and begins at completion. The third heaven is at the core of all the Kingdom, it is Heaven. There is no judgment at belief (where the first heaven begins). The door is there for you and can be opened by your own free-will. All may enter by the spirit born in them by the Spirit from their own belief. All you have to do is believe, even just a little, and the door will begin to open for you to the River. Here lies the Temple. It is the belief in the man, Jesus, and what he stood for and why he died. The first six steps are for taking into account Jesus the Man (Son of Man) and what he stood for. This you do with your mind. The seventh step is recognizing Jesus the Spirit (Son of God). This is the transfer from the mind to the heart. Christ himself is at Acceptance. From Step 7 through 10 are of the heart. From Step 10 to 12 is the transfer from the heart to the soul. The Holy Spirit is near completion but meets with you beforehand to prepare you through deliverance to the final place where God is, which is in the soul. Then from the soul, God will fill your heart and then your mind. So then, at completion, He is engrained in your mind, heart, and soul. This is the command, which is to love God in all your mind, in all your heart, and in all your soul.

Now we see that Christ the Gate is at the Step of Acceptance because Christ sends you on your way to meet the Holy Spirit at the Step of Meeting, who in turns sends you on your way to meet God Himself at the Stage of Complete Fulfillment. The first six steps are your immature steps of

the Kingdom (working in the letter of the Law) because you still recognize yourself as human. The seventh step is your transformation from human ego to seeing spirit (from immaturity to maturity or from the letter of the law to the spirit of the law). The eighth through eleventh steps are the mature steps of the Kingdom (working in the spirit of the Law) since now you recognize yourself as spirit. And the twelfth step is the culmination of the Law. So then, when we die, we are judged by Christ. There is no longer a human form present, therefore, we can not deny the Truth (Christ). We begin in the seventh step, instantly recognizing the Truth about ourselves, and being judged (accepted or not) to live with him in Heaven.

How far did you get down the River? The further you get, the less you are bound to the world and the more you are loosed from it. It is exactly the same that the further you get, the more loosed you are from the world and the more bound you are to the Kingdom. This is because the 12 steps or harbors of the River are in the Kingdom. It flows from the Temple at the beginning cross-roads of the Kingdom. And the twelfth step is the culmination or full-actualization of it.

So then, don't let your ego stop the spirit from meeting up with Christ. All spirits wind up at Christ when you are a man or woman of God. When you are a child, you (your egos) try to be the gate because you do not yet recognize (Step 7) Christ for who he is. And the spirit of fear creeps in because you know that you will have to become accountable to Christ at the Stage of Acceptance. Therefore, fear only comes when your ego, somewhere in your mind, knows that there is a good chance that what you desire will not be acceptable to Christ, and thus, your desire will not be fulfilled. So then you remain a slave to fear because of your own ego. You think your own offer will not be good enough, and, thus, you think you will not be good enough. And you just can't take one more rejection.

But know this that this is why Christ is at Step 8 and not at Step 2. In his compassion, he realizes that you are human and that you need the first six steps to come to him. Rejection will only come when you will not work the steps. In this fear, people try to "pull-the-fast-one" over on Christ, rather than just working the steps. But you cannot do this. It is impossible. You must work the steps. Only when you work the steps will you be acceptable to Christ, and, thus, you will be able to live with yourself. Step 7 is about recognizing Christ for who he is. It is about recognizing the Kingdom. Only then will you be able to see where the gate to Heaven is and go to it. Prior to this, you are blind to it.

But how do you know what is acceptable to Christ? Do you have the fact sheet (the evidence) from having met up with Christ? What is fear but False Evidence Appearing Real. In other words, fear is when your ego fears that whatever spirit (desire) has come will be unacceptable to Christ. Fear places pressure on your mind and, thus, your mind distorts reality. The more fear, the more anxiety, the more pressure, the more distortion. You appear really anxious and think that you are not worthy and whatever desire you have is not worthy. But how do you know this? You just think so because of what others have told you about it—the laws they put in your head. You believed people (took their word for it instead of Christ's word straight from his mouth) rather than following the desire of the spirit. Each spirit wants to be recognized. Even childish spirits want to be recognized. There is no bad or good spirit—only responsible and irresponsible ones. Somehow you got in your head that being a child was bad. You correlated being a child with being irresponsible. But are you not God's child? And you will always be God's child, and yet you can be a man of God at the same time. So then, being a child is good and righteous.

So it is not being a child that you are ashamed of. It is being a grown-up acting in a childish (irresponsible) way, meaning being passive, aggressive, or manipulative when the time comes to

follow God and be assertive (responsible). When you were a child, you had a valid excuse and you were, thus, excused. Now as a grown-up, you no longer have such an excuse. So if a child is righteous but a grown-up acting childishly is not, then what is a man or a woman of God?

A Man or Woman is a Responsible Child of God (God's Responsible and still human Child). What is a responsible child? When you experience it, you will know God-your-True-Father. You will have no fear of the world and, thus, no longer any shame. Fear and shame are only things born from the world, and thus, do not belong in Heaven. You will only do what your Father wishes for you to.

Stop trying to be what you think a man or woman should be by the standards of people in the world. This is all ego and is why you continue doing things childishly. Be a man or woman only by the standards of God Himself. You are His child. Start acting like it. You have to decide if you are going to be a man/woman of the world or a Child of God. The first is really a child and the last is really a man or woman. So then, the last will arrive first and the first will arrive last in Heaven. A Child of God will be crucified by the world for being irresponsible to (not answering to) the powers that be in the world. A man or woman of the world will be rebuked by God for being irresponsible to (not answering to) the powers that be (Christ) in Heaven. And a person who claims to know God and what He desires and still acts irresponsibly, is insane. He or she is outside the Kingdom altogether.

316.Road to Freedom: Test the Spirits

Test all spirits. Are they insecure (immature) or mature? Following the 12 steps will let you know. The mature are easier to pick out because they have gone through at least some of these steps. The insecure are harder to recognize because they can appear all together. We tend to look for the ideal or the dream in a relationship. People who are insecure can appear this way. But in fact they are demons masquerading as children of the light. They are usually very clever and very intelligent. You must use all you know of Christ to expose them. As they approach the true Christ (Step 8), they will get more and more nervous. If you have yet to at least reach Step 8 (Accepting the True Spirit of Christ as Lord and judge of your life) for yourself, it is best that you don't devote yourself to another person at this time (which is Step 9). You will not be able to test for insecure spirits to any real degree. Many people who are not secure in Christ (Step 10) will go with these people because they see them as so strong or independent, when in fact they are very mentally unstable. **Keep this adage to heart: If it seems ideal, it's not real.** It's not about the end; it's all about the journey. Dealing with things as they come in a responsible manner creates fulfillment. The other leaves you empty.

I have found these steps create fulfillment in any relationship. This is how I have noticed God developing His relationship with me.

From the Step of Belief, ask him if he believes in Jesus Christ. A mature person will either say no, try to get around the subject by dodging a direct "yes or no" answer like saying maybe or I'm not sure, or will say yes and will probably spark up a friendly conversation with you. Those who dodge the subject, like saying maybe or I'm not sure, are mature but insecure (immature). An insecure (evil) person, also known as personality or character disorder people, will do one of the following. They will say no and try to convince you that you are nuts, or they will say yes and tell you that they are intimate with God and know His exact desire for you. It's all or nothing with them. They swing all the way to the right or to the left. Anyone who tries to convince you that you are nuts is nuts themselves, period. Do not go with these people. I'm not talking about

them saying it to you. The mature will most likely tell you of their belief, but will leave you alone too. I'm talking them trying to convince you. The insecure are always trying to recruit the mature. If anyone says that he or she is intimate with God and knows His exact desire for you, leave. But if it seems okay, continue on to the next step.

From the Step of Hope, ask him how you can help him. Insecure people will tell you that they are good to go and that they need no help. In fact, they will claim that they are there to help you. This is the Jesus Complex. But if it seems okay, continue on to the next step.

From the Step of Trusting, look at him square in the eyes when talking with him. Does he feel threatened? He senses you looking into the depths of his soul and he doesn't want you to see what is there. But if it seems okay, continue on to the next step.

From the Step of Learning, ask him if he loves the words in the Bible. Has he read and does he know the Bible? People who haven't read the Bible, won't be able to discuss it with you. But if it seems okay, continue on to the next step.

Then from the Step of Understanding, ask him what God's desire is. Does it match a good amount of your understanding of what God desires by reading and absorbing the Word? Here you will begin to feel for whether he is telling you the truth or not. Something just won't jive. But if it seems okay, continue on to the next step.

Then from the Step of Respect, say "Good. Well, it's been nice talking with you. I have to go. I'll talk to you later." If he continues to try to contact you even when you haven't given him your contact information or more than you feel comfortable with after you meet again, he or she is insecure. This is known as stalking. A person who is intimate with God will always respect your right to privacy. He or she is not respecting your privacy. Also, serve him. A person will show his true colors when you place yourself in a position of service. An immature person will exploit you (take advantage of you) for his own gain. A mature person will thank you in deep gratitude. This is why the servant has all the power because he will be able to then see the person for who he really is. A self-proposed master will never even give his servant the time of day. He will, thus, continue to remain disconnected from God. But if it seems okay, continue to the next step.

From Step 7, try to see him in his true light. Surprise him once in a while like a thief in the night. Recognize Christ in him. Does he try to practice love (serve God) in these situations? When he is scared and acts irresponsibly, does he admit it and apologize sincerely and genuinely? When he is surprised, how does he react? A person who is insecure will try to control nearly all situations and when surprised, usually lash out or not react at all (feel no remorse or excitement). He rarely apologizes but blames you for things going wrong. This is due to his excessive fear or having no fear at all (like not even human). But if it seems okay, continue on to the next step.

From Step 8, deem his behavior as a human child of God. Lashing out of course does not reflect a human child of God. In fact, it is inhumane, so leave. Insecure people seem almost not human (having no or little weaknesses) nor remorse. Ask him about his humanness. If he doesn't want to talk about it and goes passive, aggressive, or sidetracks the subject, he is really insecure (immature) but most likely mature. But if he says that he has been cleanse or purified or has none, leave. Nobody is that perfect. Insecure people are usually trying to cleanse you, not thinking that they need grace or forgiveness at times themselves. If you still feel something not

quite right, leave. Christ is telling you something you are not quite fully aware of yet. But if it still seems okay down deep, continue on to the next step.

From Step 9, observe him in everyday life by devoting yourself to him. Here you are looking for consistencies and inconsistencies. Is he or she nice and responsible for long periods of time or is he or she nice and/or responsible sometimes and questionably nice at other times. Insecure people are erratic, although they appear not to be. They usually want to go from Step 1 to Step 12 in a blink of an eye because they want you all to themselves to define (put a label on) you like Mrs. John Doe, confine you (control you to be and act how they want you to be and act), and refine (mold) you in their image. In other words, they want to play God with you. However, they cannot keep up appearances over a long period of time. They need their insanity fix. See if they try to hide things from you like not talking about where they were and such or hiding documents or information from you. They are trying to hide their erratic states from you. Now, insecure people will have short periods of passive, aggressive, or manipulative behavior in front of you because they want your attention. In other words, they will act as children at times. But insecure people usually have a lot of secrets that they try to hide when any of them rise to the surface, which always happens. This is why you need to observe them over a long period of time before being engaged or engaging them. If you feel that there is something wrong, there probably is. Again it is Christ trying to tell you something. But if it still seems okay down deep over a long period of time, continue on to the next step.

From Step 10, secure them by asking them to be get more intimate with you—meet or engage your souls together. Secure this by asking them to marry you or making a pact of friendship, etc.. This begins your engagement period. This engagement period is for getting to know him or her more intimately so to secure your hearts together. Insecure people do not like you to become intimate with them. They want your soul, not the other way around. It is very rare that insecure people do not show their true colors by or at Step 10. But if it seems okay down deep, continue on to the next step.

From Step 11, deliver your life together to God. Make all the necessary plans together to walk down the aisle. An insecure person will refrain from making any such plans with you. He'll let you do all of it or he'll want to do it all. He does not believe in getting married or being in a friendship under God. Simply because he believes he is God or better than God or he is too ashamed to face God Himself or he is doing it to gain acceptance by man. This is a sure way of telling. He will try to get married outside a church or try to take charge of how everything is to be carried out. This is not a man of God. But if it seems okay down deep, continue on to the next step.

From Step 12, be married in the sight of God with vows to be faithful to God and raise your children under God with no mention of being faithful to or obeying him or the church. This is not your wedding or the church's wedding. It is God's wedding. All honor and glory go to God for your union. If you are faithful to God, why do you need to make a vow to each other or to the church? This is again defining, confining, and refining you in the image of men, not God. Vowing being faithful to God is your vow to each other. This is the truest test of the insecure. They will either not show up (leave you) or just won't go through with it if you insist on going through with it in this way. But if it still seems okay down deep, be married.

317. Road to Freedom: Who's to Say What Sin is?

Let no man judge what sin is. Sin can only be judged by Christ. Man judges sin at Step 2 due to his own insecurities because he is afraid (doesn't trust) that God will agree with him. There is a chance that the person who judges will be found wrong, especially if he claims to be infallible. Christ judges at Step 8 which is after you are transformed and he is recognized for who he really is—the true Son of God.

If anything, mortal sin can only be done by a Man or Woman of God because a man or woman of God has proclaimed himself to God in Step 10 and the Holy Spirit has deemed him righteous. Being secure (mature) in God (Step 10) leads to being Free in Him (Step 11) and freed from the chains of the immature world upon you that then leads to your marriage with God. Applying mortal sin to the immature (as does the Catholic Church) is an abomination of God and counteracts everything that Jesus Christ lived and died for. The Catholic Church is crucifying children trying to humiliate them into become men and women of God. This is the devil.

Everything done prior to your full realization of Step 12 (which is in Heaven), cannot be a mortal sin especially in Step 10 when you realize yourself absolved of all prior sin by the Holy Spirit. This means that Grace which came from Christ dying for us nullifies mortal sin. Sin is dead. But still we are to proceed on our journey to get closer and closer to Him because this is the responsible thing to do. Should we exploit grace to stay irresponsible (Romans)? By no means. Use the grace to continue on the journey to become responsible men and women. The goals and intention is being with your Father because your Father wants you with Him. He loves you. And as you go through the journey, you'll realize that He loves you UNCONDITIONALLY.

We all know that any contract entered into by a child (immature person) is null and void. And it is the same with God. An immature child knows not what he or she is really doing. That is, he or she doesn't truly understand not just the consequences of his actions, but the ramifications of them as well. All is forgiven in immaturity by one's confession. In Step 10, you find yourself secure in yourself. In Step 11, you choose to be a Man or Woman of God and for God. And anyone who says differently is an immature child him or herself and needs to be forgiven. Children can say some very cruel things without understanding the ramifications of their words.

Because you will never truly understand the ramifications of your doings while on earth, you can never commit a mortal sin. This was the conclusion of Jesus Christ and Christ's death is the reason God sent Him here for us—to absolve us of all our sins because we really just don't truly understand the vast ramifications of what we are doing. The whole objective by our Father is to have all His Children home. This is all entirely possible by His Unconditional Grace upon us through His Son, Jesus Christ.

An immature human doesn't want to get to know God. He is an unbeliever. A mature human is still immature of God for he or she is a Child of God. However, human maturity begins at Belief and ends at Completion, where the person identifies himself as a true Child of God (God's True Child). Still immature as compared to God? By all means. This is why all is forgiven. Mortal sin only has to do with children of the world trying to be men or women of God rather than just a mature (responsible) child of God (God's responsible and still human Child). So who are we to be? We're all children. We're all stupid of God's ways. So how can there ever be mortal sin but only by the prideful of the unbeliever who claims himself men and women of God but act as immature little children of the world.. The Catholic Church are all full of unbelievers of the Spirit of Christ.

The Old Testament was where God was too hard on His children. They could never measure up to or please Him because all He saw were disobedient children. But it wasn't the children's fault. They were just made that way. They were made human, not spirit—not perfect. Even the angels aren't perfect. God saw that nobody could measure up and be with Him. So the New Testament was all about God accepting His Children as human. Instead of having to be perfect in their obedience, all they had to do was just be willing to be responsible men and women.

All is forgiven in the name of Jesus Christ. You are free.

ANY MAN OR WOMAN WHO TELLS YOU THAT YOU ARE IN MORTAL SIN IS IN MORTAL SIN (NOT YOU). HE DOESN'T KNOW GOD OR UNCONDITIONAL LOVE. RUN FROM THESE PEOPLE. HE HURTS ME (AND I AM JUST A CHILD WITHIN). HE KILLS MY SOUL AND MY SOUL IS WHERE MY CHILD LIVES. MY CHILD IS THE SPIRIT OF MY SOUL. HE IS THE LOVING AND INNOCENT SPIRIT THAT MAKES MY SOUL ALIVE. JUST LIKE TASHANA WAS THE SPIRIT OF OUR POOL. SHE LOVED THE POOL SO MUCH THAT WHEN SHE LEFT, THE SPIRIT OF THE POOL LEFT AS WELL. LET TASHANA BE MY SPIRIT AND THE POOL BE MY SOUL. AND IF ANYONE HURTS MY CHILD, HE IS KILLING MY SOUL. ISN'T THIS THE DEFINITION OF MORTAL SIN? ANY MAN OR WOMAN WHO TELLS YOU THAT YOU ARE A SINNER OR A HEATHEN IS INSECURE AND IMMATURE HIMSELF. HE WANTS TO NOT UNDERSTAND YOU AT ALL. HE WANTS ONLY TO BE PREJUDICIAL. IT IS THE SECURE MAN WHO LOVES OTHERS AND LOVES HIMSELF WHO SAYS "I DON'T LIKE IT WHEN YOU DO THIS TO ME OR TO HIM/HER." HOW DO I KNOW IF SOMEONE IS BAD OR GOOD? I KNOW BY HOW MY CHILD REACTS TO THEM. IF HE CRIES BECAUSE HE IS HURT BY THEM, THEY ARE BAD. IF HE IS EXCITED BECAUSE THEY MAKE HIM LAUGH, THEY ARE GOOD IN THIS WAY. MY CHILD REACTS TO THE TRUTH OF HOW OTHERS ARE. I WILL PROTECT MY INNER CHILD. WHEN HE IS JOYFUL, I AM TOTALLY FULFILLED. BUT WHEN HE IS SAD, ALL I WANT TO DO IS COMFORT HIM.

318. Road to Freedom: Judge for Yourself by Christ from Within –or- FREE-WILL (Choose to Be a Servant or a Victim)

If we continue seeing things as the world sees them, we will continue being insecure. Being passive, aggressive, or manipulative are temptations of the flesh that continue to feed into our insecurities. So then, if we are insecure, we will see authority as the monster. We will see it as defining, confining, and trying to refine us. And, yes, it is true that this is the predominant characteristic of man in the world—his excessive greed and need for power and control until he kills or winds up being killed. A man in the world is an animal—plain and simple—playing off his instincts out of his constant fear feeding him. And so we who have a conscience of the law that has been engrained in us have low esteem because of this condemning perception of ours.

But the difference between being insecure and secure is CHOICE (FREE-WILL). Free-Will is Freedom. Do I see myself as a victim under condemning powers with little or no true power of my own or do I choose to be a servant with real and true power? But a servant of whom?

People in the world continue to fight and fight and fight for equality as if they don't already have it. You can call it what you want. In the 1960's, it was called the Counter-culture. Today, perhaps they call it terrorism. What both have in common is that they fight against the apparent

conservative culture of nations in irresponsible ways. It is no different. In the 1960's you had the Flower Children (passive) and the Black Panthers (aggressive). Today you have the terrorists (aggressive). And all of them do manipulative things to get their ways. And, of course, nations retaliated aggressively whether these people were passive, aggressive, or manipulative. Nations make people take sides. But there is only one side and that is God's side and there is no nation that can claim they are exclusively God's—but don't tell a nation this. It's all about power and control.

But where is the true power and control? Is it with the world or with God? It is with God. Who had the greatest power on earth—man or Jesus? It was Jesus. But how could a servant have the real greatest power? Simple. A person who chooses to be a servant of God has all the power because a Servant (Son) of God becomes a Servant (Son) of Man. And in the world, man looks at a servant like less than nothing with little intelligence or wisdom and so man pays him or her little mind. And the less mind someone has, the less they are controlling their behavior. This means that the master's true colors come out around his servant. The master no longer feels he must be on his best behavior all the time. He can no longer be consistent in hiding his false behavior.

When the servant is a Man/Woman of God, he understands what constitutes evil in the world and what constitutes Christ in the world. This provides the servant easy passage through life, knowing who is who. In essence, the servant becomes the judge of acceptance and non-acceptance because he has Christ within him. Whoever is deemed bound to the earth will not be written in the Book of Life in Heaven. Whoever is deemed loosed from the earth will be written in the Book of Life in Heaven. And so when the servant speaks up at the Stage of Acceptance (Acceptable Behavior), the master is blown away. "How did this servant come to have such wisdom?" he says to himself. "He has no intelligence. He is a fool. He has not been able to leave and go study." The only conclusion the master can come up with is that he must either be in the hands of God or evil. If this master claims himself Holy with God, he will declare the servant evil. If the master does not claim himself Holy with God, he will declare the servant being of God. In the former, the servant will be killed. In the latter, the master will wish to learn from the servant until the master decides to set his servant free. Either way, the servant is set free by the master because the servant chose to be a Servant of God rather than just a servant of man. Without God, a servant remains in the world and a victim with no power. With God, a servant is set free because of the power (of God) people come to recognize in him. The servant of God becomes the master of men.

So then, choose to be a servant to everyone—including your enemies. Their true colors will show, and through the judgment of Christ from within, you will speak up and be assertive and deem their ways righteous (acceptable) or unrighteous (unacceptable). You will also be set free (just like Moses and Joseph in the Old Testament). What did all these people have in common (including Jesus the Man), they all spoke up at the time God told them too with the power of God's words, and they were set free because of it.

And so who really has the power?

319. Earning God's Trust

God works on your future if you will promise to work on your present—God's present to you each moment. Accept His presents (presence) each moment for He is in each thing that comes your way today.

When one has God, hope is a stage of preparation. It is the time needed to adjust yourself, allow your steps to come into focus, and align yourself in the direction of those steps. It is where you die to yourself via prayer so that the spirit within you can appear and show you where to go so that you can make a confident choice to proceed in an assertive manner in full-trust of Him.

Hope is a time to do a personal evaluation—in other words, assessing if its worth getting into—and is an assertive way of giving time to something or someone, i.e., prayer. Sufferance (Sustaining hope) earns trust because you are giving someone the “time of day”. You must evaluate (deal with) each thing as it comes along. The more you do, the more you live in life. The more you feel useful. The more you feel connected. And the more rich your life will become.

Praying for what you wish for and knowing the outcome will be better by God doing it for you than you trying to do it yourself helps you sustain hope. While God is working on you and what you’ve asked for, you must sustain hope by dealing with each thing that comes along. By doing so, you are earning trust through your consistency until one day what you asked for is realized and your trust in Him is also realized. Dealing with each thing as it comes keeps your mind off of you trying to get what you asked. That is manipulation. Pray and ask and leave it to God. How will this work out and how will that? How can I be sure? If you could be sure, why then need to trust anything or anyone. But if trust does not come by sufferance, how can you learn of how God works? And without trust, how can you come to have peace of mind? Instead, you will continue to try to figure out and control outcomes because you fear of not getting what you want. And yet you will not get nearly what you want if you don’t suffer hope and earn God’s trust.

God works on your future if you will promise to work on your present—God’s present to you each moment. His present today is yesterday’s future. Accept His presents (presence) each moment for He is in each thing that comes your way today. Then everything will fall into place and you will continuously fall into the lap of Him and His Presence tomorrow. And you’ll come to realize in wonder how you’ve been so much more happier and your anxiety is gone.

320. Dear Judy

Dear Judy,

I’d like you to understand where I’m coming from and I’d like to understand more of where you are coming from. I’m writing this to you so that we can collaborate better when I see you again.

As I began to write my Love Letter to my father from the template you gave me, it dawned on me that I believe this not the path to actual love but the path to pity when it is others who have done you wrong. I have done nothing wrong to my father, but only to my True Father in Heaven. I have done this template with my True Father while working His 12 steps and this is how I came to have love within myself and love Him so much. I have done it with my wife and others in my life as well. But the truth is that, in this life, there are people who deserve to be my friend and live in my life and there are those who do not. The world doesn’t understand this but God does.

There are those you must separate on your left and on your right, and my father must be on my left. This is not because I don’t love him and want him to have a happy life, but because he has not earned it yet. He must be accountable for his actions and until then, he is not allowed to be part of my really happy life. He’s not a nice person, and He has only himself to blame for that, and no one else. I used

to feel guilty because he wasn't happy. But now I just feel sad that he never had the true courage to walk side-by-side with his own God. I know that courage and it leads to my True Father in me. If only he'd call to Him. I used to be the one for him to call on, but I can no longer be that one. I want to be free. And God wants me to be free.

Manipulation is a real art. The Bible talks about charlatans (devilish little people) masquerading as children of the light. I can think of a lot of reasons why people are like this—from being really hurt in childhood to trauma. But what they all have in common is that they choose not to want to deal with it and dealing with it means trusting God and others. And it is not me but is their own choice to keep themselves miserable. Unfortunately with some people, their distorted beliefs are so engrained that they try to take the whole body when offering them a hand because they never think there is anything wrong with them. This is my father and is especially most religions I have been acquainted with to know. I have lived with it first hand for several years. I have noticed that this is the way many reformers and especially religions refine or rehabilitate others to try to get them to conform and identify with the reformer's own self-pity, insecurities, guilty consciences, or beliefs about themselves. In my experience, this does not reform people. It's a temporary illusion (fix). Instead it suppresses their issues until a later time when they do something really bad. Someone really manipulative can use your anger against you via this path to get what they want. It doesn't lead to freedom, but just the opposite.

Anger is a good thing when it helps you speak up for yourself. It helps you respect yourself. But the manipulative person will use all his logic to counteract your emotion and all his emotion to counteract your logic. In other words, he'll never apologize. He'll only continue to try to make you think you are always wrong. This, too, is my father. When you try to leave them, they stalk you. When you try to free them, they try to imprison you in guilt. They do everything opposite of you because they will not allow them to be controlled by anyone. They are a nemesis—they are the anti-Christ to real Christians. What they don't know is that the greater they spite you, the more secure you become in Christ and, thus, the less powerful they become. So then, when you are in Christ, they are the ones deceived by destroying their own selves. My father has destroyed himself by me keeping to the code of God (Psalm 37).

Many people see someone who is angry as an aggressor where actually they were usually aggressed upon in their innocence. I'm telling you nothing new here. But that spirit of the aggressor is still in them somewhere that they have yet to deal with. And if we try to keep it in check through only conscience, it will wind up being worse than before. I feel I'm telling you nothing new here either. But reformers need to feel good about themselves by helping to reform someone without the reformers feeling that they disobeyed or ran outside their own religious or personal beliefs (laws, religious comfort zones). In other words, reformers always want to change (reform) others without doing the hard work or seeing the need to reform themselves. This is why I believe most religions to be egotistical bullies and "sin factories" and why something keeps telling me not to tell anyone how to live their life by writing one of those self-help books. Probably because it would be for my own praise and not God's. All we need is another Bible.

Without the sins of others, the religious would feel useless due to their own void within themselves. They need insecure people to be insecure simply because they are insecure themselves. They, in fact, secretly hope for sin to come out so they can feel useful in murdering it for God. They evoke sin to beat sin, making you feel bad about yourself in the process while others around them are "ooing and aawing". This is, in fact, my father. They have little if no faith in God that He alone can truly rehabilitate a person from the inside-out. They want to be free but are absolutely terrified of pursuing freedom's path at the same time. The closer one gets to freedom, the more anxiety he has, especially if he continues to fear it by always looking back or fearing being exposed, which he will have to be in order to gain his freedom. I know I see my father in a lot of things, but it is all the same

when people try to make you conform to their ideals through using you and deploying guilt and shame. They say if you feel no guilt, you should. This is evil at its most manipulative. If you haven't done anything wrong, why feel guilty. I feel no guilt when it comes to my father. I feel totally absolved by God. It is not a sin to be angry.

Let me further explain why I feel the list you gave me doesn't work for children who have been abandoned by their parents. In order to feel useful by reforming another person, reformers need the other person to act irresponsibly. So they instigate (try to convert him) by pushing his buttons by telling him he is unworthy in the sight of God, especially if he doesn't come to Jesus Christ, when all along it is them who feel unworthy in the sight of God. Misery loves company. This is no different than the Salem witch hunts. They exploit Christ rather than tell them they are forgiven because of him. When the person does act responsibly, reformers usually always label them as in denial. But if they can get the person angry and eventually to the point of being passive or aggressive, the person acts out (sins). Then after he acts out, he usually feels sad (or remorseful) for the person he attacked or abandoned as being down and out. He becomes fearful that the person won't get up, or he himself will be condemned, or so forth. And if the person lying on the ground is really good in acting, that person will play the pity card. Then he feels very guilty for what he did and so he apologizes (playing into the hands of the instigator and giving all his power away to the instigator). And because of this, he feels ashamed of himself, pities himself, and then conforms under the controlling hands of the reforming instigator because he feels he has no choice.

This is how religion forces people and society to be humble so to conform. It's all about them feeling good about themselves. It's a holy war for God. There is no love in this path. It is all illusion. It is what I call "playing the game" and is, indeed, the way of power and control in the world. Rather than a person feeling humbled, they just feel down right humiliated. And that distorted guilt is what keeps them at bay, for a little while at least. The religious pushes back down what the Spirit within the person is pushing up. Eventually the spirit wins. This is what you are seeing erupting in today's spiritual revolution, especially in America. The religious, for their own survival, are truly subconsciously scared of freedom exposing itself. The Spirit demands no less. The Six Woes that Jesus spoke of has everything to do with what I speak about above from my own first-hand knowledge and understanding.

In fact, I have found freedom to be achieved in the exact opposite way from the path in the love-letter you gave me when the innocent, low self-esteem must heal. From my own experience, I find that a person chooses to deal with his shame and pity before succumbing to it and, thus, starts searching for true unconditional love (God). Then he identifies his sinful (guilty-distorted) conscience and tries to clear it, then fears dealing with (learning) the truth, then conjures up his suppressed hurt (sadness) deep within him, and then gets angry because he feels he has been duped or made fun of for so long. He then respects himself by speaking up to his deceivers and finds his own true inner voice in the process before he accepts himself for who he is and lets his past and his deceivers go to be with themselves. Then he chooses to live his own life in thankfulness to God, finds security and intimacy within himself, and then feels free to be a complete and joyful human being.

This in the previous paragraph is the 12-step process that God gave to me. I have found this to be the process of spiritual maturation, for me anyway, from one's own miserable and trapped but familiar world of shame and pity. And it can only be traversed by the unconditional grace of God through His Son. No one ever makes it very far down this path, if at all, by continuing to feel guilty. So you need to know you are forgiven no matter what along the way. It is only when you accept His grace for you that you can truly come to let others be and wind up forgiving them in the process. This can only be done by believing in the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ. The key is to just keep going through this process and trusting this fact of unconditional love, no matter what your brain tells you.

I have already dealt with these issues to great extent with my father. It has occurred to me over the years that the reason I am mostly angry isn't because I couldn't deal with what I was angry about, but I didn't know how to express myself with authority or I missed the opportunity when it came my turn. This is what makes me frustrated and feeling trapped like I failed to expose the real me. When I remember that the path that God gave me is the path out, I feel better, but I still feel sad because I missed that opportunity—that defining moment. See, God has helped me to discover the real and true path to real and true love that is not an illusion. Very few people want to take this path because they'd have to give up their own control and own religious beliefs, while going through the path of healing and love with another. If they only knew that they were being held in bondage by their own religion. The vast majority wants to help change another, but doesn't want to face themselves and change themselves because it would take true trust, discipline, and understanding.

So, instead of writing a love-letter to my father in the path you gave me, I've decided to write a love-letter in the path God gave me. So, here it goes. I've bolded the key word in each of the 12 steps.

Dear Bob,

When I was young and you took care of me, I really, whole-heartedly **believed** that you loved me. And I **hoped** that you would take your responsibility of fathering me very seriously. But when you left my brother and me and I saw a lot of the bad things you did to us along the way, I was very, very hurt. Who could I ever trust again? I so idolized you that I thought I only had one chance at this life because I only had one father. Without my father, what hope would there ever be for me? You were my life and my soul. I just kept on asking you to be my responsible father, but you wouldn't. I looked everywhere—churches, schools—for a most-loving father. No one came. I felt that I was the trouble and the problem. I was a good kid, but I guessed because no one would step up to the plate, that I was faulty in some way that I just couldn't see. But I found out that it was the other way around—that responsibility isn't and was never in fashion.

I finally just didn't know what to do. I didn't want to act out irresponsibility because no one would ever love me then. So, I just tried to act as much as the perfect little boy I could. At least I got praised, even though I never felt loved. Oh, how I wanted to be loved! I was so sad. All I wanted was to be loved.

And then I found a book by Joyce Meyers. It was called "Reduce Me to Love." And there was one passage in there that changed my life. It said "God is Love." All my life I wondered if God really did love me or if it was just a "con" to get me to do whatever he wanted me to. But if God is Love, then He could not "con" me. He had to love me. Finally, someone I could **trust** (have faith in) to really love me. Someone who really knew the way to real love. I'd go through hell-and-high-water for that person.

So, I pursued Him. I read His Word and I found out that He said that He will be my father now. God was taking over now. I studied and **learned** His Word. And the more I studied and practiced, the more I **understood** the dynamics of our relationship and why people do the things they do. And then I realized that it wasn't my fault. I was the good little kid. I was the loving little kid. You were the mean little monster and mean little bully. I began seeing you for who you really were—a stalker and a very manipulative person. What sick, perverted monsters of people got to you? What deranged monolithic deities brainwashed you? And that is when I stepped up to the plate and let you have it. You remember when I yelled at you? That was the turning point of our relationship. That was the day I **respected** myself apart from you.

The power in sticking up for myself was wonderful. I found a new leash on life. I **recognized** (saw) for the first time in my life that I had a voice (a spirit) that was right and righteous and alive in me.

And I **accepted** it for the rest of my life. There was and is no turning back. I no longer felt ashamed of myself. And from it all, I still felt that someone deep within me loved me and still loved me though I did and still do some human and irresponsible things myself. I no longer needed to be the goody-two-shoes. I could just be me and God was all and fine with it. This is what I always needed from you but I felt like I was never good enough in your eyes. I felt like I could never just be myself. I felt so distant and so trapped. I loved you, but how could you not love me in this unconditional way?

And then it dawned on me that it wasn't that you didn't love me, but that you didn't *really* love me. You loved me in your deceptive illusion of what love was and not what real love is. You would have had to make it this far where I am to know what real love is. And I also realized that you didn't want to take the responsible and hard path in finding this real love. I realized that I never have to read anything into what is right in front of my face. What I see is what I get. And so I accepted you exactly as you were with no illusions. This was a great relief for me because I was also able to do this for myself too. You could be who you showed yourself to be and I could be who I showed myself to be. If who you were wasn't really who you were, it wasn't my problem. I'm still going to call you on it. I'm no longer going to come up with excuses for your behavior or mine. We are what we project and that is that. If not, then do something about it until you are proud of yourself. You want me to be proud of you? Change your behavior towards me. If you won't, then I say goodbye.

This is when I came to have great compassion and sympathy for you. You and your life were so sad. I didn't know it before because I didn't have anything to compare it to. But now I do. And so it was then that I just let you be free to be who you wanted to be. Obviously what you wanted to be wasn't a serious parent, but I no longer needed a serious parent because I had my True Father. So, I released you to be whomever you wanted. That was last February. Your behavior is atrocious but you still have the right to be a very happy or at least loving person. So be it—you just can't be around me until you are. I really hope you can be.

I forgave you. Be free. Be free. I have no ill feelings. I told you that you being happy makes me happy, but you just couldn't come to accept that. So now, I have come to accept that you just don't want to do what it takes to really be happy and find real and true love. I tried to help empower you but all you wanted was pity. Well, I can't pity you. It does no one any good. I can't enable you to continue the way you are. I guess I wanted you to make the move to release me, but I just have to release you and release myself. So, I have to let you go for good now. Sometimes you can release someone a thousand times and they still just won't ever accept it. I myself used to have this problem with accepting God's grace for myself. I guess what it really comes down to is that I just have to forgive you myself no matter what you have done to me but never have anything to do with you ever again. I can't help you find love. You're going to have to do that all by yourself. I can no longer feel like your Rock of Gibraltar.

Find that Rock within you. I release you and release myself from you. I can no longer help you. I have to live my own life being **devoted** to the Spirit within me and being secure in and **intimate** with Him so that I can be **free** to be a loving, joyful, fulfilled, and **complete** person within myself. Isn't that what any good father wants for his kid? Be a living sacrifice for your own kid, Dad, and leave and work on you. That's what would make me so happy and so really proud of you.

Goodbye and God bless and may you find the God you so lovingly deserve.

Tim

321. Your Defining Moment

Define each moment by your defining presence.

You have heard me talk about how people and their egos tend to first try to define (label you), confine (stereotype you), and then refine (reform you in their image or beliefs). God, like usual, does this exactly opposite. Why? When you have fallen into the trap of others and the world and you find yourself being refined by others, you must turn it around and perform your own Exodus. By believing in God and His Son and the Death and Resurrection which delivers true grace every step of the way, you can reverse this and be free.

First refine your ownself by allowing God to transform you into the Righteousness of Him. This I have found to be Steps 1 through 9. Then confine yourself to Him by allowing Him to secure you from within. This intimacy is Step 10. The define yourself by seizing the moments He gives you and freeing your inner voice to what you need to voice and do what needs to be done from Him within. This freedom and unifying presence is the real you of Him and is Steps 11 and 12.

Everyday you have defining moments. And sometimes you have really big defining moments. Each is a time to practice refining, confining, and defining you via Him. If you bump into someone coming out when you are going in, see Him in you and transform your fleshy desire of being rude and demeaning to focusing and meditating on Him. Collect yourself in His calming presence. And then voice His assertive righteousness through you. “Excuse me.”

Constantly practice refining, confining, and defining who you are in Christ in Him. Be not concerned with others’ egos in trying to define, confine, and refine you. Counteract it all, especially when you meet them, by the way of God Himself—not their false god. Be refined by God, confined in God, and defined of God in that order. Always go away with who you are. Define each moment by your defining presence.

322. I Have A Child

I have a child. Hello, Child.

323. Why Am I So Angry?

Why am I so angry? When I am angry and express my anger, I feel guilty for it. And what I feel guilty about is losing sight of the truth and the Truth. Rather than trying to understand, I see it black and white. It’s either all or nothing—my full attention or no attention whatsoever. I deem it as bad or good and nothing in between. This is all passive-aggressive behavior.

When I feel people have done me wrong, I feel angry. Feeling angry and being respected, or should I say disrespected, go hand in hand. But when you choose to harp on being angry at someone, it is because you feel insecure. You keep giving these other people power where these people are fake because they simply have absolutely no power (are powerless) to save you. All power is with God who is within you. That is where your focus must be. God is a jealous and a selfish God. Take responsibility where responsibility lies. It is your responsibility to focus solely on God and not on these people. By focusing on these people, you idolize them. God then gets angry from within you and, like a little child and like Adam, you deflect the blame onto others by telling God that it is because of them. Nothing is because of them. You choose to disrespect God by idolizing (giving power to where it does not belong, thus, giving power to the powerless).

Irresponsibility is not trusting (giving your full attention to) God. And when we don't trust God, we become angry and abusive, passive and aggressive, and manipulative. We become our own egotistical selves. This leads to disrespecting God within us by losing sight of the Truth and truth by not choosing to want to understand the situation for what it really is. Asking for forgiveness is taking responsibility for disrespecting God, and, thus, saying sorry to God for disrespecting Him. Others may have done us wrong, but it is we who are sourcing the anger, the vengeance, and the wrath. It is we.

If you have done others wrong, say sorry to God in them. But if others have done you wrong and will not apologize, then you must walk away from them in complete security with God, never to return again. Wipe your feet and conscience clean of them. You feel His anger toward you and you project that anger onto others who you feel imprison you, and, therefore, you give all the power over to the jailers. Focus on God and use His power He has given you to walk away from these people. You can walk away anytime. It is only an illusion that you are trapped or being imprisoned. You hold on to them because you are afraid of being truly free and have to absolutely rely on God for everything. That is why you keep this anger alive. You keep it alive because you are scared to be totally on your own, totally alone. But you know you won't be alone, but I am scared to risk trusting it. What will I do once I am free?

We know that once you respect God, you respect yourself. And then you come out of your illusion. You see things clearly again and accept Him. The sin is giving power to the leaders. Idolize no person. There are no leaders. There is only God the Sole Leader. I recognize no other power over me. You cannot imprison me with any rules that you made up to do just that. I recognize no law. I do not recognize your power or your authority. I am a free man.

324. What Do I Do With Myself Once I'm Free (Once I Secede)?

Once people are free, they don't know what to do with themselves. So rather than just be, they feel they must do something in order to please God. If they know God intimately, they will not require others to make them feel not alone or okay with themselves. Most make a religion (nation), make themselves a leader, create law and order and enforce it. Like Jesus said, once the demons are gone and a person has cleaned house, he doesn't know what to do with himself. He feels so alone, so abandoned. So, he starts doing over what only he knows and invites more demons than ever before because of his own ego. Because of his own uneasiness and peer pressure and fear of being seen as lazy or a failure, he starts to take matters into his own hands. He creates a religion (a church) and becomes more egocentric than ever before because the power becomes to him an aphrodisiac.

Why do people secede from the union? They secede to make a more perfect union of people to how they believe. But I secede from the union of religion and nations, not to create another religion or nation, but to only be in perfect union with God Himself. I am the only union I need. I do not need another man-made union out of anger or rebellion in the name of God. I only need a union with God. I am a nation of One God, One Nation.

What will I do with myself? Just be. Just be and work for God wherever and whenever He needs me. But first I must secede. I must leave, giving absolutely no power to any person who people deem to be in power.

There are no powers-that-be. There is only One Power and only He rules my life. I acknowledge no other power, no rules of my father, no rules of any religion or religious leader, no rules of any other person, and no rules of any nation. I have my Only Father in me, my own rules come from Him and Him alone, my religion from Him is the only religion I recognize that has any power over me, and I am my own nation of only One Nation, His Nation. I recognize no other power and no other authority of me.

325. Good, Bad, and Then There's God

When I was a boy, I didn't care about good and bad. I was comfortable in my skin. It was only when I heard I was a good little boy or a bad little boy did I realize any difference. This was the beginning of my fall.

When I was a boy, I was a complete person. I didn't think of if I was pleasing people or not until I was made aware of moral authority over me in this world. This was the end of me and who I was.

“Good” means nothing to a little boy, except meaning normal or nothing new. “Bad” means abnormal, unworthy, unfit, undeserved, and outcast. I am sad in saying that the more a little boy hears that he is bad from what he perceives to be a moral authority over him, the greater he falls. What this means is that God does not make a person fall from being complete. Man does it all by himself in his own cruel way.

I have spoken about 12 steps in the process of getting back a person's completeness, like a child. For me, these 12 steps are belief, hope, trust (faith), listening (learning), understanding (empathy), respect (humility), recognition (love, esteem), acceptance, devotion (living with), intimacy (security), freedom, completion (peace, unity, full integration). God brings you back through the process, thus, building you back up from what man has torn down by reversing the process. Most people only survive on what they learn with their minds' ego and will not go deeper into their hearts to empathize. And even less people will make it to respecting because respect (humility) comes from the soul where your Spirit of Love lives (and is when you feel alive again). My ego could not handle it anymore when it came to men and women. I could not stand one more rejection—one more hearing that I was good or I was bad. I just couldn't and I just can't even now. Only from God can I hear whether I am right or wrong, good or bad, because only God do I trust with all my mind, all my heart, and all my soul that I am forgiven when I err.

It is quite sad. All of us were children at one time and complete people. How much hurt have you had that you cannot and will not empathize. And how much more sad it is that you can't respect. It only means that you have lost sight of yourself. All is forgiven. The only thing not forgiven is when you choose to be built up again by God and you recognize Him (Love) in you once again and then you choose not to accept it. This is an act against the Holy Spirit. All else is

forgiven. I just don't know how someone will not accept love once they experience love. They may be afraid of love, but most all of us yearn for it to come again. This yearning is proof that you are going to go to heaven when you die even if you don't reach it again on earth.

When I was a boy, I was complete. But when I identified myself as good or bad depending on the perception of others and myself, I was no longer complete. The more bad I heard and told myself I was, the more my own freedom was in question. My security became a question of whether I could live with myself or not. My acceptance of myself became a question of whether I could even recognize myself. I left my esteem (my spirit) and, thus, started to lash out for my own survival, apparently soul-less to (not respecting) anyone, including myself, along the way. My feelings (my heart) became shut to understanding (empathizing) with others and myself. My mind (my listening to others' instruction) became closed-off. I started trusting no one. And my hope became hopeless to the point of believing that the world would be better off without me.

It was all an illusion.

When I found God and believed that He was unconditional love—love that doesn't tell you that you are a good little boy or a bad little boy, but just a loving and lovable little boy—this is when the process of rebuilding began. My belief turned into hope. My hope turned into trust. I was able to listen again, then feel again, then respect myself and others again. I recognized myself again. I accepted who I was. I was able to live with myself. I felt secure and intimate again. And now I'm beginning to get back my freedom so to become a complete person like I used to be back then.

So what is the relationship between good, bad, and God? The Holy Spirit sets you free from having to rely on other people's (including your own mind's) moral laws. With the Holy Spirit, there is no such thing as good or bad behavior by the world's standards or interpretations. Anything outside the Spirit's convictions is deemed bad, and everything within the Spirit's convictions is deemed good. Guilt by listening to the Spirit's convictions is good guilt. All else is bad guilt. Therefore, you may be feeling guilty for no real reason at all. It may only be an illusion brought about by your own misguided chosen beliefs.

The world in each person's mind sees (perceives) things as good and bad, black and white, right or wrong, but has no justification for either. What part of good is really bad and what part of bad is really good in accordance with the mind? What part of right is really wrong and what part of wrong is really right in accordance with the mind? People cannot discern gray. But life is gray. So then, people cannot discern life. Who can make this judgment? Only the Holy Spirit within each of us can make this determination.

When God secures us and we Him, we are then able to be free from anyone else's (including our own) moral interpretations. We are secure and intimate within ourselves. We need not any human moral authority over us nor do we wish (want) to be a human moral authority over anyone else. Our perceived good is, thus, integrated with our perceived bad when fully trusting God and dying to ourselves (our own egos). In other words, we give up our selfishness and self-righteousness. God weeds out the true bad from the true good. No longer do we worry about the consequences from our own determinations of morality derived from our own insecurities (false senses of security of ourselves). This is simply because there is no longer anymore of our own discernment. In other words, no longer do the accountants (self-righteous) have the right to cash the Company's (God's) checks. Our accountability lies only with God to whom we are judged and never again do we allow man the right to judge us. We are bought by God, not man.

So then, when will we know for ourselves what is really good and what is really bad for us according to the Spirit who lives within us? This understanding will only come in the moment in which we are living life in. We must live life and deal with each thing in the moment in order to be able to listen to the Spirit in each one of us each day. Do you feel convicted that what you are doing is wrong in that moment? If not, then it must be right. Do not second guess (doubt) the Spirit. Second guessing brings back your own ego and the bad guilt even in the act of righteous doing. Shrug it off and continue on knowing you are doing God's work.

This is the secret of being content and never having to worry anymore. Listen not to the moral consciences of the world nor your own (for these are corrupt), but only to the promptings of the Holy Spirit within yourself. Let no man judge and listen to no man's moral judgments. They who judge morally do not accept fully the Spirit within them and definitely do not solely rely on Him but more or less still rely on their own consciences (egos) by way of fear of human authority rather than God's authority. If they knew God, they would love God's authority rather than fear it because God is Unconditional Love.

This is freedom from the world through Christ-the-Spirit, not Christ-the-Man. Christ-the-Man's words have been interpreted and manipulated by man. Even his words written down, one cannot decipher (judge) for and with and as his own. Freedom can only come from a person dying to himself and the world's moral judgment of him and himself. And this can only be done by trusting (having faith) in Christ-the-Spirit within us via our own belief in Him. Thus, when a religion believes it to be the divine word of God (the judge between good and bad and right and wrong), it is hurting and is a hurtful religion. And hurting people hurt people. There is no room for you in its seemingly hardened heart. It must choose to be built-up once again by God and with God to overcome this state and find once again its own love it had in its wonderful infancy.

When you have Christ-the-Spirit, there is no right and wrong, good and bad in accordance with the world, but only Him and His truth in you. There is no one but Him and you in each moment you are alive. The moral thoughts of others and yourself do not and will not ever matter anymore. If we will separate a person (ourselves included) as human from his own moral ego (self-righteousness), all that is left *is* a human, weak and loving in the circumstances of his life—that is, a scared and yet loving little girl or little boy. This is when our compassion is full for him or her and our mercy and comfort have no end.

326. What is Important to Man Has No Bearing on Me and My Life

We trying to sustain freedom and peace is like us trying to reach and sustain perfection. It is impossible. Nor can we sustain imperfection. Man either tries to achieve perfection or he runs from being imperfect. In other words, he tries to be good all the time and is deathly scared of being bad.

It is impossible for man to determine what is good or what is bad, even with a majority consensus. All he can do is rely on God to convict him of what is responsible toward Him and what is not. Because of Grace, you need not worry about such things. The key is that you listen to Him and no other. This means that you prove to yourself that you trust Him, and that no other can deceive you from such focus and clear attention.

People define people in two ways. They are either good or bad, right or wrong, or leaning toward the good, bad, right, or wrong. In life, there will come good times and bad times. You will act responsibly and you will act irresponsibly. To act irresponsibly does not make anyone a bad person. Life is life. We must accept everyone as good and the way they are. When someone acts responsibly, we seem to recognize love and caring and generosity in them. Then we accept them in our lives. When someone acts irresponsibly, we seem to recognize just the opposite. Then we do not accept them. This does not mean that they don't have love and caring and generosity in them. It means that they have not shown it. We can still accept them. But one who thrives on irresponsibility I cannot be a part of.

God brings up children into adulthood. That is, He raises people from being irresponsible to people being responsible. And responsible means responding to Him. Adults do not share adult lives with children. If a child wishes to remain a child, that is a choice that needs to be respected. But then act like a child. Do not go into the world grasping grown-up things. They will be the death of you. Forgive a childish-man his ways by releasing him to be a child forever. But adult-children always want to make the rules. There are no rules, except that of God within each one of us. Rules of society are made by children who want to rule. They cannot stand it that they can't rule over you. There is no man that can rule over me. I do not acknowledge any one of their moral rules. And a person can only rule over another if that other acknowledges the person's rules. I acknowledge no moral rule of no man, no religion, no entity on this earth, other than God in me. **God is my Rule.**

This means there is no good in the world and no bad in the world to me. There is no heaven by the world's standards and no hell by it either. There is only God, and me being accountable to Him who is in me. We must all accept that there will be perceived good that will come and perceived bad that will come. But the greatest thing we must accept is that we have absolutely no power and no authority to judge which is which and what is what. That must be left up to God to convict in each one of us.

Why can't you sustain freedom and peace by your own will? It is simply because, if man achieves and tries to sustain freedom by himself, he will eventually become lonely and wish to conform. If man achieves and tries to sustain peace by himself, he will eventually become bored or believe other people who call him lazy and he will begin to instigate things. Then there will be no more peace. In other words, he will fall into his own temptations of the world, his own fleshly desires. So in order for a man to sustain freedom and peace, there is only one way he can do it and that is by rely solely on God to sustain him. And that means rely not on any person, any religion, any worldly thing to do it in His place.

This is why it is necessary not to interpret things or people as good or bad. Rather hand-off that responsibility over to God. It is not your responsibility in life to determine this about others or yourself. Do whatever you do and, in whatever you do, listen to God's convictions within you whether or not it is popular. Then you will be a Man or Woman of God.

When we accept the impossibility of determining on our own what is good and what is bad, we will be able to live life lovingly with ourselves and with others. I do not like children who actually act like irresponsible children but want to live in the responsible adult world. They automatically want all the attention through ruling or destroying. There is no peace with them hanging around. I can accept children as children and adults as adults, but I cannot accept

children who want to be accepted as adults. They have simply not yet earned the right to be accepted as so. Only when I recognize love will I accept love. Children make moral rules. They see not God within them (they are not yet secure but only insecure). Adults trust the Rule in themselves.

God obviously sees something of me that I do not. No man can know God's itinerary or plan for himself, and to what degree of importance God places on his own behaviors while executing that plan he is not sure he is rightfully or wrongfully executing. A man never knows whether he is being good or bad, right or wrong in executing God's plan for him until the very moment when he feels convicted by God that he is on the right path or wavering from it. What I think is important, only God really knows the true importance of it. This is why my worrying is a waste of time.

Man only worry's about things he places importance on. And, from my own experience, almost none of those things appear to be anywhere near what is important to God. What I think I am doing wrong or should be punished for, God absolutely pays almost none if little mind to. This is what blows my mind. My ego means no mind (nothing) to God. Therefore, never listen to what others may place importance on, especially when it comes to morality and you. They have absolutely no idea what they are talking about.

In other words, what is morally important to man has no bearing on me and my life.

327. Respect is Part of Falling in Love

Only by learning what someone wants and then truly understanding why they need it (so to empathize with their cause), will we be able to feel a respect for them down deep. Understanding, in its true meaning, is to dig deep with your mind so that you can connect with their heart and then their soul.

Respect is a feeling in the essence of humility. It is a humble feeling you feel way down deep. It is a sense of having fallen. And when you haven fallen far enough, you land in the Land of Love. Where understanding is a connection of each other's minds, respect is a connection of each other's hearts, and love is a connection of each other's souls. And so falling in love is the process that really starts with trusting another enough to truly listen to their needs (instructions) which begins the jog and clarity of the surface-layered mind, then dig deep to understand why they need it so which begins a consciousness in the depths of your mind, then allow yourself to feel and empathize with them which begins the esteem of the heart, and then to which only then you can truly love via the connection each other's souls. This will drive you toward God in one another and deliver both of you to the solution of one another's cause.

328. I Do Not Believe in Morally Good, Bad, Right, Wrong and any Moral Authority on Earth (I Believe Only What God Tells Me Inside—I Do Not Believe in the Bible)

I do not believe in the Bible. I do not believe in worshipping the Man of Christ. I do not believe the basis of the Catholic Church or any church for that matter as a moral authority over me or anyone. I do not believe in the congregational church on earth but only in the church within each one of us in Christ to which is love.

I only believe in love and not in any man-made interpretation or representation of that love as defined by their moral beliefs to represent God's authority on earth.

There is no physical God on earth. There is no physical representation of God's authority on earth. There are only people believing so to play God. This is my belief. So be it in me.

329. I am God's Chauffeur and My Body His Car Transporting Him Where He Wants to Go
(An Example of God's Work in Me and the Route He Takes to Complete it for Him)

Each opportunity is an opportunity planned by God to do His Work. Make it Count!

On September 19, 2005, I was in an Egyptian Program Management Review for the US Army Foreign Military Sales. I was given the assigned seat at the end of the long table near two people (one who I unfortunately work with, but thank God not too often, and the other who is a Boeing contractor). Both were very disrespectful to the Egyptian's cause. I hoped that I would not be near them. The next day, the leader had changed my seating assignment before I arrived because the person taking minutes could not hear well enough and need new accommodations at the table.

At first I felt hurt like "I can't **believe** you did this to me of all people?" But I didn't say anything. Instead I just chose to believe that it was and did happen to me.

I went to my newly assigned seating. It was next to the CECOM folks. I was still hurt and contemplated in my mind to just seek out my revenge by not answering anymore questions or any numerous amount of things. I was hurt and hurting people tend to want to hurt people. But I didn't because I first thought that what I **wished** for earlier really did come true and then I thought of God.

So, I decided to **trust** God. I said to myself, "Well, I am away from those two people and that's good. And who knows, it might even be better over here. I mean I just experienced the miracle. So, I really need to just trust God and ride this thing out and see what happens."

So, I went ahead and started **learning** about the people next to me and around me. I started learning my new environment. It really was really good. I had forgotten that I wanted to also be able to use my laptop. Now I was near a laptop connection. And I was seated next to the CECOM PM person. They were having their own problems with short supply of an item for the Egyptians. So, I started to really get to know them. It turns out that the CECOM PM liked the ocean just like me and she loves Blackhawks just like me. We really hit it off good. I conveyed my feelings for things she likes.

Then she said, “With your background and all, why don’t you go for a position in the Blackhawk PM? There are slots in Configuration Management FMS in Blackhawk. They really need Government people and there are so few people who know Blackhawk that have the capability of being part of the PM.” She then gave me contact people in the PM and the PM himself. Then she even went further and said that she’d speak to them at next week’s conference about me prior to me contacting them. I’ve been wanting to get back in Blackhawk. I really love that helicopter. Now I **understood** why God changed my seating and I perhaps even gained advanced insight by God that I would be moving—possibly away from disrespect in following God to good things. **Thus, follow God and His ways and stay away from disrespecting people and continue on His path in adherent focus, and I will be rewarded by Him.** This is the most important thing.

I began to **respect** myself even more by realizing that God had given me opportunity—opportunity to speak up, to help people, and help change their lives. **Therefore, trusting in God leads to great opportunities for us.** By seizing these opportunities with wisdom—or knowing what is not going far enough and what is going too far—I found a whole new respect for myself. I even spoke up to the Egyptian General, who was the Head of the Delegation, in helping him convert the new Chinook phase inspection structure into a training structure of what he wanted it for. Not speaking up enough leads to regrets later on. Speaking up too much leads to regrets later on as well. Both cripple you by not listening to the promptings of your spirit. **I chose to respect myself by choosing to speak up in the technical and relational wisdom God gave me at the right time he gave the opportunity to me.** And my choosing to respect myself in this way, I then **spoke up** (my voice, my spirit came out). **I listened to God within me and then took action to deal with it and do something about it. I realized I had something unique to offer and that the offering was special. It needed it to be offered up with great humility and respect in all the wisdom I gained from God in knowing how to offer it up with this humility and respect. So, I contemplated and recognized and connected with the love of the spirit in me as the vehicle to offer it up. OFFER EVERYTHING UP IN THIS LOVE. Must I offer it up in love. No, I don’t. I will not be condemned for it. But in my experience, it is so much better to feel love and loved every chance you get than to let the opportunity pass you by. I accepted this love as the essential vehicle I was going to express it in. I chose to devote myself to it by obeying its absolute truth and not waver from it. Whatever I was going to say, I was going to say in absolute love and honesty and all virtue in the form of what God wanted me to deliver it in. And so I secured it—the whole package—of what I was going to say and how I was going to say it. And I got up and I let it go. I let my spirit go. I let my voice go. I let it out. I delivered it. I freed it from my own control. I let it out in the way it was inspired by God within me to let it out through physically speaking and giving. And by trusting it to do the work better than I could ever do in the minds, hearts, and souls of all men it would influence, I left it there in its true God-given, God-driven independence. My spirit was in the**

world doing the work of God in the world. And after all my physical speaking and giving was over (my closure was closed), I felt my event and my time complete. I was complete. And so then I left it to go on to the next thing, the next person, the next opportunity God is to give to me to do for Him.

For this is His Command. To Love Others in the Way You Want to Be Loved Yourself.

**330. Forgiven by God is Forgiven by God Through His Son Jesus Christ
(Your vices are your own and neither good, bad, right, or wrong)**

*Be not tied down or bounded by your vices by placing any importance on them.
They can neither save you nor condemn you.*

When you choose to believe in God and His Son Jesus Christ, you are given a Holy Spirit that is the Spirit of God Himself. You believed and He had already long-long ago made His pact with you and whomever believes in Him through His Son. And when you receive His Spirit, you receive Him. And you receive also a purpose to which only He knows. You have been given a Driver that drives you and guides you wherever He wishes for the rest of your life, as long as you choose to listen. The Spirit within you bears spirits (fruits) from you releasable into the world. This is your responsibility—to listen and bear fruit.

This Spirit is only concerned with God and God's purpose in which He works through you to do. He is not concerned any longer with your vices. Do (execute) your vices. He is not concerned. He pays no attention to (counting them for or against you) your vices. Your vices are only minded by your own mind and not Him. They mean nothing to Him because of His pact He made with you through His Son to whom you believe in. From then on and from here on, only man is concerned with man's vices. They are all forgiven and forgiven means not even acknowledged—as if they weren't even there or done or in the process of doing. They are dead to God. Sin is dead to God because all previous, present, and future sins died with His Son Jesus. Your freedom depends on your belief in this because you believe in His Son. He makes no account of your vices, only takes account of your good works. And any good work not initiated by Him from within is no good work because it is not the work of Him. It is not genuine. It is only done to make bargain with Him as if you will get into heaven if you do the good works only you want to do or you think He would want you to do. If you don't feel the genuineness and inspiration from Him from within in the moment it is to be done, it is nothing—it is not genuine. In other words, it doesn't count.

So then, do your vices. My vices are my own. They are neither good nor bad. They are not condemnable in the eyes of God because of the Death of His Son. Vices mean nothing to God—as if they were forgotten as soon as they were done or begun. They neither count against you or for you. Good works not inspired by Him through your faith in Him are vices as well. They neither count against you or for you.

God made you human for Him. And through His Son, your human nature is deemed neither good nor bad, dirty or not dirty, but just human. You

yourself have been deemed clean and righteous by the love and death of Jesus Christ, who I love very much. Your vices are your own and no concern to God. Be human—whatever. There will be no condemnation from God. Take responsibility for your own vices. God nor the Devil has any right to them anymore through the Pact God has made with you through His Son. By delivering them over to you, he has also taken them away from the Devil at the same time. Sin is actually dead and the devil has no more power to use and control you with. Through grace they don't even exist in the accounts of good or bad in God's mind. They are just vices. That is all. They only live now as false perceptions in your own mind. They are not even real to God or as anything in this world. Don't feel guilty. There is no guilt to something that doesn't matter to God. And whatever doesn't matter to God, does not really exist. There is no acknowledgement of them because there is no longer any knowledge of them. What matters to God is you and that you listen to Him and obey Him what and when He tells you to? Be conscious of His callings and His promptings. This response in your responsibility to Him is what counts in His Book of Life.

You have no control over whether you are forgiven or not. If you believe in Jesus Christ, you are by the Pact God has made with you all everyone else who believes in Him and His Son. If you keep feeling guilty for your own human vices, it is you who is condemning your own self and your own self as human—not God.

331. What Are Vices?

Vices are human and every human is good. Belief in Jesus Christ and the okay to be human (which is the same as forgiveness for our sins) is for our benefit. God already saw and sees us as good. Religion is inhumane because religion is nothing without people's vices. I don't need to compare myself to people's vices to tell me who I am. I am tied to no one by their vices, their mannerisms, or their modes of operandi in order to find the place where I fit in. Because we believe in Jesus Christ, vices are not faults or moral delinquencies. Rather, vices are neither good nor bad, but are just human to which we have all been forgiven for being human. How can God make me human and then expect me not to be human? That is inhumane. Everything is permissible but not beneficial. I am tired of seeing myself only as Christian. It is depriving me from being in the lives and places of everyone and everything. Believing in Christ is for my sake as a vehicle along a path so that I may grow to be a complete person. But there comes a time when I reach (secure) my destination and begin making my own path with God. This is when I will be free. It is only when Christ will set me free from his parenting will I know that he truly loves me. "I am very hands-off," says God. "Go and find your own way, your own path. Just always remember to be responsible (accountable) in it."

“Religion is for the children and not for the adults like you. Once you met with me and became intimate and secure—I securing My rightful place in you and you in Me—you became a Man of God and you have become truly an adult. You have secured heaven and your place in heaven no matter what you do. Because I have secured your soul, which is My Kingdom, you have secured heaven. There is no difference between you and me. You are like My Son. You are My Son. I see no difference between Jesus, My Son, and you, My Son. Both of you are brothers of Heaven (My Kingdom). The servant may never know more than the master, but can share equally in the prize. You can do a thousand vices. You can tell people to go away. No matter what you do, you will be with me forever. God frees you and says, “You needed My Son and His Path to grow to be an adult. And now that you are an adult, I give you permission to go find your own path in life. I give to you the world. Go and do whatever you wish. Now that you know Me, your path will be a fine path. Choose your own path and be not concerned with any vices you may have along the way. There are no such things as vices any longer. While you were a child, I needed to use these vices to show you right from wrong. But now you no longer need these vices because you have Me. There is only you, Me, and the path you choose for you that we can journey on together.”

BELIEF IN JESUS CHRIST AND THE OKAY TO BE HUMAN IS THE SAME THING AS FORGIVENESS OF OUR SINS AND IS FOR OUR BENEFIT ONLY.

332. This is My Path Whether You Like It or Not

This is my Path of God. He showed it to me and it is now how I will be forever more. It is my desire to be in the hearts of every man and every woman. It is my desire to take up my residence in everyone I meet and every place I go. And this is how I will do it for now on. To all who don't believe in me or in my path, you do not have the ability to walk with me (you cannot walk with me) because all who don't believe in me or in my path take the Path of Man and not the Path of God. If you will not believe, nor hope, nor trust, nor desire to learn, nor desire to understand, nor find respect within, nor wish to connect with others, nor accept people for who they are, nor try to live with one another, nor make a home with them, I cannot be with you. I cannot help you. I am a free man with free dreams and a free life. And only by being me, am I able to complete me or you or anything else. A child becomes a man and it is a man who must complete his own journey. It is I who must complete my own journey.

And so, this is my path:

I will believe in where I am and where I will be and in the people who reside there.

I will look adversity straight in the face in dealing with my own insecurities and fears in hopes of being a part of them and their place.

I will trust in them and their place and place myself under their care and guidance.

I will learn from them and their ways and their place.

I will experience them and their ways and their place so that I may understand who they are and who I am there and why I'm there.

I will come to respect and honor them and their ways and their place.

I will come to find myself connected to them and feel connected to them and their place.

I will accept them and their ways and their place as my own.

I will live with them in their place, devoting myself to them and their ways and their place.

I will become a member and secure my rightful place in them and with them and their place.
I will be free to be who I am in this place, delivering myself in and to everyone I meet.
I will help complete them in our place together.

And after I die, I will be a part of them forever.

Dear Father, I sin and you make it like it is of no concern. Yet you still are with me and love and cherish me. Why is this? If I do not sin, how will you love me? It is me who you love, is it not? I see this now. No matter what I do. No matter what vices I may act upon. You still love me. It is like my sin means nothing. It is like my sin is dead. You do not avoid me and yet you do not condemn me either because of my sins. This is how I used to wish it would turn your head. But your head needs no turning. You are not ashamed of me. You see me for who I am and you love me for me. And this makes me free and delivers me from me—a me who I so linked myself with sin and attention and favor and a person's love and a despaired loss. It was a cry to humanity and I cried for myself. I wept, I cried, I mourned, and I lied. Where was my love, where was my life? Where is it all? Promises are nothing without a show of it by action. And you hugged me. "Oh, how beautiful you are, my son," you said. "This is my son," you said, "and I am not ashamed of him. From this time on, all will see who my son is and you will wear me in everywhere you go." For it was from my repentance to You, my Father, that I was saved from the wretched soul I was and became.

And to my other father, the one that is of nothing and of no more:

How can I love you if you aren't there anymore? I loved you once, but twice (and then) never there—that is, until I chose to be a part of you and not a mere observer from far away. I chose to be with you in your life and your vices, your disdain for humanity, your disdain for me. Where were you when I needed you? How could I have gotten through to you? Where was I to call? And yet you heard my hurt, you saw my pain, you sat in my shame and we took a walk and then a ride and you showed me my pride. Be it you who saved me from me. Your life is no more and your death is filled with nothingness. Cry in the night and where are all of my lovers? Cry in my sheets and from where will they come? I have nothing, I have no one. Cry not to me, my father, but cry to your Father. He is the one you must find forgiveness by. I can forgive you but who will forgive you in heaven? Your pain that is inside shall never reside unless you ask of Him to be forgiven. Love is what you need, but not from me, but by Him. Is what you have done too much to be forgotten? Love you I do. But how can I live with a person who cannot repent to the only One who can help Him. Pray to Him, my father. Pray so hard. Say to Him so to live for yourself, "Love me, Father, for me and not what I have become. What have I done? Where am I going? Dry my frightful tears and sing once again in my heart, oh Lord."

There is a range of loving balance and, when I am with God, I do not fall out of this range. Do I need to worry that I will be obese? No, I do not, because I have God. Do I need to worry that I will go into raging and killing and maiming and revenging? No, I do not, because I have God. I have God and I belong to Him and His Path. The Path is a river and it has banks to its river. And when I get off at each bank, I bear life from the Life I have been given by Him who takes me down the River. But in order to stop hurting, to stop sobbing, to stop hating so much and so often, Your Path is the path I must take. It is where I belong. It is where my home is and where I must always go and always be. I cannot connect if I do not engage.

There is only one command and only one sin in my entire life that I must be aware of. The command is to love others as I wish I would be loved. And it is by running the course of the Path you gave me that I am able to do this. I must first love so that I may feel loved. And the sin is that to stop believing in the Holy Spirit, in the Spirit of Christ and He who is in me. This is because if I stop believing, I am dead, and I feel no love because I have not walked the Path of my True Father's Love.

333. Free to Be Me

I feel like this is important. I am really, really mad. I'm mad because these people I talk about below are unscrupulous people trying to rip your souls from you and possess it as their own. I hate the way they keep trying to attack you and define you and confine you and try to brainwash you to refine you in their way all in the name of Love (God). My father tried to do this, my mother tried to do this, my brother is a jerk, churches are always trying to do this. All institutions have their own agenda in doing this. I'm the only freakin' sane one out of the whole damn bunch. Never again will I ever let anyone take away my own identity and tell me I'm not good enough or I'm not right or anything like that ever again. And I'm not sure I can really trust even you. I don't know whether to love you or cry for you. I want to be free to be with you, love you, make love to you. I want to be free to be like this with everyone. I want to be passionate and leave caution to the wind. Yes, I have wisdom and it will be with me always and I will listen to it as well. But I feel so trapped. All I want to do is live. You asked me to be truthful and so here I am being truthful.

When I say that religion is inhumane, what I mean is that religion is for children and that those religions I have been a part of have raised these children inhumanely. They don't raise children to become adults. They raise children to remain children. It is about power and control. They get mixed up between Children of Men-of-God and Children of God. Their members are never allowed to freely leave the church in absolute peace. The Religious don't see the church as a vehicle to meet and be with God. They see the church as God, as the embodiment of God. It is not only my belief, but my absolute embodiment of who I am that I know that any and every church that does not hand its members solely over to God and allow them to leave it in peace to live their own lives and their own paths in life, is a cult and possessed by what we may know as the devil. They only believe that the ordained are allowed such freedoms to parent without having to be just as accountable for their own actions to God. This is the Catholic, Baptist, Methodist, etc, etc, etc. They are all of the Jewish Church tradition and they are all forms of the degradation of all humanity. Every one of these churches began with fierce moral dictators. It is true in the history books. The Catholic church of today is not the Holy Church from Jesus Christ. It is the Cult Catholic Church that began with the death of the Disciples and began with the Holy Roman Emperor of Rome making himself Pope and Head of the Church. What we see here is the evil incarnate of the once truly Holy Church of Love and Compassion. In fact, this Holy Church of Jesus Christ is not to be found anywhere in organized religion. It can only be found outside of it. We are the righteous fighting these demons that try to delude and deceive us. I will never believe again otherwise. This is how I feel.

334. Being a Man and Becoming Your True Self

There is Children of Men, Children of God, and Men and Women of God. Children of Men don't give a shit about nothin'. Children of God come to have a conscience but are under the instruction of good and bad, right and wrong, and sin from what he sees in the external world. Men and Women of God have no concern with good, bad, right, wrong, and sin from any man, woman, or child on the earth and not even thinking it and judging it for himself. He could care less about it. He hands it all over to God within him.

Moral people do immoral things because moral people try to tell other people what to do and how to do. And no one wants to be caged in. They rebel against people trying to tell them how to live their lives and what is good and what is bad. I have been through church. Yes, I have been through church—through God's training ground for His children. I am now a Man. I am God's Man.

I used to be afraid of now that I have secured God and He me, will it be time to die physically. And then I realized that it was time for Jesus to leave in the way he did because he was to leave the institution of the world and return to his true self—Spirit. Jesus' form on earth was not his true form. He was not human. He was Spirit, born with Spirit, born by Spirit with human body. Our true form is human. We were created human. But we get to live on forever because we have Spirit within us just like Jesus. We don't have to turn into spirit. We must live like human relying on the spirit within us. We are not to live like spirit because we are not spirit. Jesus was Spirit, not us.

A man realizes this. He realizes that he must live like a human in reliance to the spirit within him. Only a child thinks he must live like a spirit and not have anything to do with him as human. I am a Man. No one gets to tell a man how to live, where to go, how to go, or what to do. He chooses on his own to do this or that and he takes responsibility for his own actions and whether or not he wants to listen to God and others. But he doesn't have to. This doesn't mean he will not go to heaven. It only means he is a stubborn asshole. If he believes in God, he believes in God. He is just a child of God then and not a Man of God. He speaks his own mind. He draws strength from the spirit in him and he does what his spirit tells him to do. This is a Man.

335. Hanging Around with the Real People

Jesus only hung around the real people. He didn't hang around self-righteous bastards. Only the self-righteous would see these real people as substandard people who need to be pitied and felt sorry for. These real people of today are those that say fuck, bullshit, fuck me, asshole, bitch, dick, prick, fuck you, etc. etc. etc. Oh, how appalling? Fuck no. These are the real people. The ones that make no bones on how they feel. They are just kinda lost because they fell into the trap that being real is being bad by the world's standards. It's all bullshit! I'd rather be around a fuckin' asshole than a self-righteous bastard.

Moral standards are bullshit standards. I'm going to say "shit" and be happy too. Oh, my God, what a fuckin' concept? I don't need to say "shit" and then go rob a convenience store. As long as you get it out in a real and truthful way, that's what counts.

Jesus hung around with the real people. He didn't pity them. He loved them. He loved their bold honesty. It was absolutely refreshing. You just can't find this in any religion or any church. It was so refreshing, like a cold drink of water.

336. I Am Saved, I Am Sanctified (The Best Things in Life Come From Human Error)

The best things in life come from human error. It is from this human error, that if we sit patiently enough and trust that it is all part of God's plan, that we can learn and then experience (understand more) the greatness of God. It is because of human error and our trust in Him that we are able to love Him even more.

I am saved and I am sanctified. Religion is God's preparation tool for children to get to know Him. God Himself is for adults. As children, people imagine God and try to fit Him in (conform Him into) the rules of society. As adults, people know the real God. And the real God does not conform to the rules of society. Sanctified is sanctified. Everything is permissible, but not always beneficial. And everything means everything. Be human, live human. Remember, the best things in life come from human error, and in order to make human error, a person must live as human. That means he must put away all laws, rules, misconceptions, etc. of what he may think is good or bad, right or wrong, and live as human with all the desires of the flesh and all the wisdom that God has shown him along the way.

Why do I not make love to everyone? I don't because my wife does not understand it. She is still a child. But it is not because she would deem it good or bad, right or wrong. It is because I respect her and she would be utterly hurt by it. So even though I am free to do anything and everything I want and still always go to heaven, I cannot make love to others because of the vows I made to her.

Perhaps I should have never made the vow? No, not at all. As children of God, we must go through the institutions of religion, marriage, business, etc. in order to learn and practice believe, hope (with objectivity rather than subjectivity), trust, discipline, understanding, respect, esteem (recognition, connection), acceptance, devotion in order to get to intimacy (securing the place within us) so that I may be free like this. And all this is needed so that I can face my own death and be free from the constrains of the world.

But can I be bound to another in my life in order to exert my true freedom? That is the question.

337. My God, It's Me!

I deal with change frequently during each day of my life. Every time I strike up a conversation, every time I meet someone, and every time I walk in a different direction, I enact change. I am a creature of habit for this very reason—I'm scared to change. And yet, without change, life gets mundane. So, I am also a creature of variety. I crave variety to feel alive. So in one respect, I don't want change, but in the other, I do. This confusion leads me to feel depressed, stuck, anxious and yet scared at the same time, and out of control.

Once I believe something is out there, I either hope it doesn't come or I hope it does. It's a time that I find very confusing and frustrating and guilt-ridden. And why is hope confusing,

frustrating and a lot of the time guilt-ridden to me? It is all of these things because when I hope, I have a mental outlook on the unknown—on what I cannot see—and yet I believe it is out there. If I refuse it, I feel guilty. If I fantasize about it (manipulate it in my mind), I never get to truly know it and feel sad. And if I try to conquer it, it eventually eludes me and that makes me crave it that much more. I always see that whatever is out there is quicker and wiser than I am. It can see me, but I cannot see it. I feel drawn to it, and yet it has the power to suck me in. I am so easily influenced. And this is why hope is a very fearful time in my life and is why I also tend to be very angry with it and the world. I keep feeling that I can never conquer it and that I am worthless or pitiful because the harder I try, the more I fail. I feel like such a failure, and I feel like I don't deserve to be part of a world that everyone else seems to have just easily found the secret way into. I am so jealous and vengeful of all their free and happy lives. How could they have done it and I can't even see how to get in?

I know that the reality is that a great lot of people feel the same way I do, but I can't really be sure of that. In fact, a lot of people maybe think the same way about me. And still what I understand about things that I hope for and that I want is that it will not be secured without first being respected. I must aspire to dream and to imagine what can be without doing it subjectively. But the very thing that destroys hope is the very thing that I do when I am faced with it. I try to control it. When I believe (perceive) change is upon me, I get scared and I try to control it. The first thing I do is define it. I usually do this by naming or labeling it in the way I see it. This releases my own stress temporarily. Then I try to confine it so I know where it is at all times. I place it within the confines of my own understanding. I categorize it and enact moral rules (dogmas) upon it. Then I refine it by trying to change it (transform it and convince it) to conform to the way I see and live life instead of allowing me the joy of it adding to my life and how it may see it.

I know that this defining, confining, and refining are all illusions (defense mechanisms) against change. I hide behind people and judge them so I don't have to face my own life myself. And I use God to do it. And I know God knows this, and it is why now is the time to leave home. God is my imaginary friend, my security blanket. I used Him to give me the power to be on my own, but He gave me the way to love myself and others.

Whenever I deal with change, I realize that I change a little bit of myself in the process. When change comes, I must change from what I am doing at the time. I must change the way I am thinking at the time. I must change the way I am feeling at the time. In other words, change makes me focus on it rather than on myself. Life ebbs and flows, constantly flexes and changes. And this is scary and frustrating to me. I try to control it while figuring out who I am on my own, and it seems to me that change makes me stop figuring it out. What I haven't been realizing is that change is the very thing that I need to know me. I'll never know who I am and feel content within myself without going through the changes of life.

So what does this mean? In order to get out of the funk that I always seem to be caught up in the hope of things *to come*, I must entrust myself to the change that *has come*. And how do I do this?

Have you ever heard that believing is perceiving? Every time I am faced with change, I tend to perceive it as good or bad, and my emotions crop up to the surface real fast. If I perceive it as bad, I fear it and distance myself from it or attack it all at once in the name of something so holy.

If I perceive it as good, I am excited and draw near to it and then try to conquer it for myself. The key to entrusting (commit trusting) myself is by perceiving change objectively—as neither good nor bad. Objectivity is expressing or dealing with facts or conditions as perceived without distortion by personal feelings, prejudices, or interpretations. What this means is that every time I meet someone, even if it is the thousandth time they’ve approached me or I’ve approached them, they have changed and are, indeed, part of change itself. In fact, though I may not realize it, they have changed just a little bit physically, mentally, emotionally, and spiritually from the last time I saw them. They are, indeed, a new person—as am I. I need to realize that the past is the past and it is not part of the new person I see before me.

God is change. I am change. He is changing. I am changing. He is never the same. I am never the same. And yet His essence is the same as is mine. He is always changing, always transforming, always transfiguring. And so am I. This is why no person can pin-point God because when one person says “there He is and He is like this”, another person sees Him in a different light. And this is the same thing in trying to pin-point myself and another. And I realize here that God and I are meshing as one now. I no longer need God to be in the world with me. I can be in it myself. I no longer need God to define who I am. I can do that myself. I am starting to find my true self—my true identity. It really is true that if you love someone, you really do have to set them free. God is God in me. He is me and my image of Him is fading from my mind’s security and saturation of Him.

See, no one is right and no one is wrong. No one is good and no one is bad. It’s all change and it all changes. Nothing is set in stone. When I live within change, I am free. Nobody can get at me. Nobody can pin-point who I am, and I am ignorant if I think they can. I see things objectively. I never see the same thing or the same person (including myself) the same way each time I see them. Each is a new life and a new beginning. I find constant renewal throughout each and every day. And even each day is a new day for me.

I used to try to control change. But the truth is that, once my mind changes focus on something, I change. So then, in reality, change is the reality, and controlling change is the illusion (distortion) of my own mind. Change is who I am and what I do. I am always evolving, devolving, or revolving. I am always changing. In fact, I change so often that, by embracing change, I am able to feel more consistent, in control, and fluid. By ignoring this fact, the uneasiness I feel is the constant changing in me that I deny. Change does not stop changing. God does not stop evolving. Only I try to change that. Change is our normal element. Controlling change is our abnormal element. By being aware of change throughout the day, I embrace life. If I am not aware of change, I am in a false sense of control in my life via my tendency to define, confine, and refine things in my life (including myself).

If I want to know what I am (definement), where I am (confinement), and who I am (refinement), then I must allow change to show me by being a part of it. I cannot do it on my own because the beliefs I have in my mind were placed there in childhood without any of my own wisdom to filter through. Each one of us must come to have our own beliefs and take our own path. This is the path of being a man and woman rather than remaining a child. This means that I must embrace change with objectivity and patience. Each time I meet change subjectively (as children do), I am not able to see it for what it really is—the truth of it. Subjectivity is all about me and my delusional perception of the truth and how I think everyone else perceives me due to my delusional beliefs about myself. My subjectivity places a barrier between others and myself.

Subjectivity is my defense mechanism against change. Subjectivity halts the process of riding the wings and involving myself in change. And life begins to be lifeless. The wind of change appears windless. And I begin to feel hopeless. And yet can I still say that I am safe?

Instead, I now see change objectively as my opportunity for newness in my life to that which revitalizes me and renews me and makes my life worth living. Objectivity is all about seeking the truth of someone and myself and experiencing myself in that truth that helps me understand the truth of who I am. Thus, I cannot know who I am without engaging in the true lives (truth) of others including my God to whom I imagine myself in and as. I then can realize my own needs, desires, and inherit make-up because of my own choice to engage in this truth. And my mind becomes free because I am not trying to define, confine, or refine people any longer in my own image. I find the truth in them and of myself, and the truth is what sets me free.

The more I flow in change, the more I see and the more I feel in control of my life. The more I live in each moment because I no longer fear the next moment to come. No longer am I blind-sided or fear being blind-sided all the time. I was born to be a part of change, and I was born ever-changing.

So then, each time something or someone approaches me or I approach them, I find it best to not make snap judgments about them or me. I see them and myself objectively in a new light, as a new creature. Go with them and see where they will take you. I first did this with God, and He built Him within me as a rock that I can always count on. I expected nothing of Him—only to engage Him—and He took me down this river through the harbors of belief, hope, trust, learning the Truth about who He is to me, understanding the Truth of who He is to me, respect (humility), recognition (self-awareness, connection), acceptance, devotion (living with), intimacy (securing my rightful place in Him and He in me), freedom (deliverance of me), and into the ocean of peace of who I am—completely unified and identified.

And so there is no reason for me to fear change or worry any longer. I am able to freely go where no man has gone before in and with others in the security of my own choice and my own life's independence wrapped in the warmth of the love within me and the love I emanate of me. And so, I will go into each change with an objective and joyful heart with the love that is mine now and forever, knowing I will come out of it more gladdened, more confident, more fulfilled and more enriched, and more—me.

338. Choose Soul-Love or Mind-Love

It is important to understand the twelve steps in acquiring your dreams. It is important to stop philosophizing about life and see it for what it really is. This is derived through wisdom and executed by trust in having seen enough, known enough, and having the tools to count on in going through life.

That which is in your mind and in your soul are two different things when you devote yourself to acquiring God (Love) and following love, even though it contradicts the beliefs that are in your mind. Every man and woman must come to a crossroads in his or her life to choose between following his or her beliefs of the mind (will) or belief in God (love). There is no love in the mind. Love is not stored in the mind nor does it come from the mind. Love comes from

somewhere else and goes through the mind, then the heart, and directly into the soul. If you think love is in the mind, think again.

When people choose “mind-love” rather than “soul-love”, we who love from the soul can get hurt. This happens a lot from children. But we must recognize that a person has made his choice. If we recognize and accept this fact, we realize that our fathers (or whomever left us to fulfill their own wants and needs) chose mind-love rather than soul-love. Mind-love is impatient, selfish, narcissistic, and yet may still feel like the right thing to do and justified by mind-love (justified love of oneself more than another). Mind-love and soul-love cannot exist together. They do not belong together. No matter how much soul-love you may have and compassion for another, those who choose mind-love have made their choice.

The mind is full of illusion and fantasy. It is filled with the beliefs, ideals, and hurts of your father and your mother and your grade school teacher and everyone else. You do like your ancestors beforehand because you refuse to listen to the wisdom that delivers you to soul-love. The wisdom of soul-love says that you have seen this situation before and you know where it leads. Don't go there. Mind-love says that I must love everyone and, thus, always see people anew without the wisdom I have accumulated over the years. Mind-love is fantasy (illusion). You continue to run into the same results over and over again because you think mind-love (narcissistic self-righteousness) is the real love. But it is not. Those in mind-love must be weeded out from those who have acquired God (soul-love). Those who choose mind-love are soul-less and will never be fulfilled and content. They keep on searching and searching for life to fit into their paradigm of the way they think life should be without accepting the way life really is.

There are people who feel trapped because they are riding on the fence between mind-love and soul-love. They don't understand the difference and are trying to combine both because they somehow believe that mind-love plus soul-love equals all love. This is impossible because reality wants no part of illusion. Introduce illusion into reality and you've got illusion. It's like being a little pregnant. But introduce reality into illusion and the reality begins clearing up the illusion. You must free your mind to welcome God into it. This is the power of prayer. You can't bargain between the two. There comes a time in everyone's life when they must choose one or the other. Mind-love is worldly love. Soul-Love is God love. Mind-love will always display disrespect. This is how you can recognize it so you can make the choice of throwing it back. Soul-love will always display true respect, which brings about an action of public service and servitude. Mind-love is filled with tradition and making it irrefutable law that must be with you forever from generation to generation. Soul-love is independence and freedom realizing that tradition is in the past and the laws of the past do not correspond to the life of today. Soul-love is about accepting evolutionary change. Mind-love is about refusing evolutionary change.

It is very important to secure God (reality) first so to then introduce Him into your mind's illusion. This will create balance in the mind. Tradition will no longer be realized as dogma but only as wonderful history. Tradition will no longer guide the person, thus being an integral part of mind-love. Traditional rules of what you think you should do will be reduced to a choice of what you would like to do. Traditional beliefs (rules and cultures) mean nothing in guiding a person's life. I am my own creature by God.

Each step along the twelve steps is a choice and neither is a good or bad choice. It is not good to believe or bad to not believe. Both are permissible, but one may be more beneficial than the other. It may, in fact, be better not to believe than believe in someone who likes to hurt people. We all must choose the better way for our lives.

Choose to believe or not believe.

Choose to separate from old (traditional beliefs) or not

Choose to trust that which you chose to go with or not

Choose to learn about it by trusting it or not

Choose to understand from what you learned or not

Choose to respect (apply that understanding) or not

Choose to recognize a person as respectful or disrespectful

Choose to accept a person you recognize as respectful or disrespectful

Choose to live with a person you accepted as respectful or disrespectful

Choose to be absolutely secure (known as absolution or point of no return) in the person you chose to live with

Choose to let go of all negativity toward (stop fighting against) that person you chose to secure for the rest of your life.

Choose to live in peace forever more with that person to whom you let go of all negativity.

339. Respect is the Pivotal Point of Our Responsibility to God

A child gets angry because he doesn't get his way. He doesn't want to understand where someone else is coming from. He just wants what he wants. A man understands that he may not get his way all the time and, in fact, there may be a better way than his way. A man gets angry because he is being disrespected or disregarded as a worthwhile and value person within the group of people he is with. A child believes he knows God. A man knows God, period. God is in him. A child never believes himself worthy enough to know God. He needs an intercessory. He doesn't think himself worthy enough for God to be within him and embody him. A man allows himself to acknowledge Jesus to help him find God and then sees Jesus as his brother and his friend who he cherishes and love in deep respect and humility.

A man will speak up to authority who disrespects him. A child fears authority and is passive, aggressive, or manipulative because he feels himself not worthy enough to venture any further. A child does things in the name of God (his perception of what and who he thinks God is). A man sees things how God sees things and rarely gets involved. This is the difference between caretaking and empowering others to handle the situation in the way it needs to be handled—by realizing that misery results from not seeking first God. By delivering to us Christ, man has now been given free will to choose between life and death. And love is life. If he does not choose the way of love—which is Christ's way—he and only he is responsible for his own outcome.

I am a man and I will be respected. I am a man and, because I know God, I feel good about myself when I respect someone. I hear God and feel God being proud of me. And I feel convicted by God when I disrespect someone. It is a conviction that tells me that I jumped the gun and made a rash judgment—that I chose not to take the necessary steps that lead up to respecting someone. Believing what someone is saying, hoping or reserving my own engrained feelings and opinions for their own pursuit of those beliefs, having the courage to trust that they know what they are doing, asking to follow them and learn from them, understanding where they

are coming from, and then being able to respect them through acknowledging (recognizing) them and their belief as different but fine—something that I can accept for me, as a good additional part of me.

Disrespect comes when someone chooses not to take these necessary steps and is usually decided at the step where hope comes in. For children, hope is a stage where a person sees the opportunity to meddle and caretake or use others to get what he wants. So then, hope is the stage that children pass rash judgment on others. Speaking your mind (implementing your own opinion of what is and how things should be) during this step enables you never to trust, learn, and understand another, and shows up as disrespect. “How can you tell me what I need when you don’t even know (understand) me?” People don’t want to understand; they want proof-in-hand or a miracle, if you will, before they’ll even trust you.

Yes, hoping is suspending your own engrained feelings and opinions and rules in your own mind so that the person can pursue his or her belief in his or her own way from their own mind. Thus, sufferance (patient endurance or “biting your lip”) is part of hope. In my terms it’s shutting the fuck up and listening. Separation (choosing between one’s tradition beliefs and the conventional beliefs of another) is part of hope. The opposite is when you enforce your own rules and opinions and feelings on another to pursue his or her belief in your way hoping he or she will come to see that your beliefs are more important or are right beliefs and should be law. Hope is also the stage for everyone fearing that another may just be leaving them behind—leaving behind the old and pursuing anew. And if you will not change, you will most probably get left behind. They see the hope in their eyes and people realize that they may not be invited to come along or are scared to go along. They are venturing into the unknown and may possibly never be seen again.

See hope is scary because hope means change. And people are very scared to change because they are scared of the unknown. Hope is the time of adjusting your sights on seeing things as good rather than bad, right rather than wrong. And if you are an adult, you know that choosing to see where the change leads doesn’t mean you always have to live with it. If it is not respectful, you will get to accept it as beneficial or not and be able to choose to live with it or not. Just because you choose to trust someone doesn’t mean you have to be with them for life.

Will I get hurt by trusting? Children place their full emotions into a new change. Adults are more cautious; they do not wear their hearts on their sleeves. Instead, they allow change to evolve and make a determination later on whether they wish to accept it or not. Adults understand their own power and choose when to incorporate it and secure what they see as good. This is because adults are secure within themselves. They know who they are and they feel intimate there. The part of truly accepting change comes after they feel for it via respecting it. Thus, adults reserve emotion for the stage of respect. They either feel good about it or bad about it. Feeling good about it brings about benevolence. Feeling bad about it brings anger and speaking up. If children are disrespected or disregarded, they don’t know how to enact self-control because they are insecure, so they act out their anger violently.

A man or woman is secure within himself or herself. He or she is his/her own church. A child is only secure when around other people or never secure. A child needs another kind of church—on the outside. This church is known as community or family. And because a child needs to be raised to adulthood, it is very important that an outside church realize its responsibility to God to

respect the child and regard the uniqueness of the child and the child himself. The outside church's role is to raise the child until he becomes a church of his own, and then release him. This is what an adult outside church does. Churches who do not understand this, do not understand (know) God and are make-believe (child-like) churches.

A man who is in authority is willing to give up his control for the greater good. A child who is in authority never will. God gave up His control by sending Jesus Christ. No longer can God or anyone use sin as a weapon to get someone to do something they want him to do. In other words, no longer can someone make you feel guilty for doing something that they think God wants you to do because there is no longer any right or wrong—only responsibility for the results of your own actions. You are either going to respect yourself in the morning or not. You become your own church. This means there is no condemnation for whoever believes in Christ. If you don't believe in Christ, you'll never believe this. But if you don't believe, it doesn't mean you'll go to hell either. It only means you'll create your own kind of hell.

I get angry when I am disrespected. Anger is the preparation (sign) for imminent, permanent separation. For a child in the stage of hope, it can be a sign of separation between him and God only because a child sees only himself and chooses not to pursue God, especially when he gets angry. For an adult in the stage of respect, anger signals a potentially imminent separation between him and an adult-child because the adult is already filled with the wisdom (understanding) of God and values Him.

Someone has chosen not to try to understand me, but make rash judgments about me and my life. I say no I don't want it and another chooses to disregard my own decisions for me. Or they try to manipulate me or use me. They see my life as less important and try to use it as an emotional, mental, or physical dumping ground. This is known as abuse or abnormal use and it is absolute disrespect. Disrespect is not tolerated. You will try to understand where I am coming from or you do not get to pass Go. Everything else is just playing games. Children play games. Adults don't need to. Children need adults. Adults don't need children. And adult-children make believe they are adults but still want to play like children.

Adults do not disregard children or other adults. Adult-children disregard children and fear true adults. Fear is part of the stage of hope. People fear that someone they see in authority will come down on (condemn) them. Respect is when they know someone will not condemn them but try to understand them instead. Trying to understand someone tells him that he is a worthwhile and worthy person. He is someone who is worthy to get to know. Most people fear God, not respect Him. They feel ashamed of themselves and guilty because they don't think themselves worthwhile to be forgiven. They don't realize that God doesn't want to condemn. He wants to understand why they did what they did so that they will have respect for themselves and recognize their true value as loving people with and by Him.

My father doesn't respect me. My mother doesn't respect me. My brother doesn't respect me. When you stick up for yourself because you are being disrespected, you see the true you. You see the light. You see them for who they really are and you see yourself. You recognize your own value, your own worthiness. And you choose to accept you over them. You leave them to them and live your life your way without them. When you become secure in this decision, you become free of them for good. You don't even know who people who disrespect are. You don't

even recognize them and you say “go away, I don’t even know who you are.” And you wind up living in peace.

Jesus did the same thing to his mother and Peter. His mother disrespected Jesus when he was holding Service. She came and demanded that Jesus come out. Jesus sent the messenger back to his mother saying, “I know no mother. My mother is in here.” Jesus knew exactly who he was and he wasn’t about to be bullied by his mother. “Who in the hell do you think you are, Mary? I know who I am. You have absolutely no idea who you are. And you obviously do not know God or you would have never done what you did.” Peter tried to caretake Jesus and Jesus said, “Get behind me Satan.”

It all comes down to disrespect. Don’t patronize me. Don’t disrespect me. Everyone who disrespects me does not belong with me. They belong with themselves because all they want is themselves anyway. Therefore, I release you to who you really want to be with anyway—yourself. I give to you who you always wanted anyway—yourself. Go find yourself and then maybe one day, you will recognize you via the love and mercy of God through Jesus Christ. Then you will see me for who I really am.

If you don’t have Jesus, you don’t have respect for people. Jesus will help you understand God. Without truthfully understanding God (knowing the wisdom that eludes everyone who doesn’t know Jesus), you cannot respect you. Those who do not and will not respect me, cannot be with me. Disrespect is what is known as 666. It comes after the fifth step of understanding God (wisdom) and just before the seventh step of recognizing the true power within you (your true spirit). Thus, respect is the pivotal point of our responsibility to God.

Your church is just as good as my church, which is me. I am God’s church. I am God walking. I feel strong and I know who I am.

Think about it now. If you don’t want to get to know me, you can not be with me. And you will not be with me until you see the light of my brother-in-arms, Jesus Christ, who will guide you to me.

Farewell and may you find God and His holy mercy within you.

340. Conquering My Neurosis

Please read by clicking on the following hyperlink about neurosis:

<http://www.ship.edu/~cgboeree/genpsyneurosis.html>

The only way I know how to overcome neurosis (insecurity) is through Jesus Christ. Through Christ, I have been able to feel secure within myself and realize the Spirit of God in me. Now what does this mean? I have come to realize that being concerned about people’s lifestyles and the human things we all do are pretty much attributed to our feelings of insecurities via our neurosis. I have discovered that I am a very sensitive and aware person. Sensitive and aware to what? Neurosis. All this time, people have coined sin as bad, evil. Sin is only symptoms of neurosis--no more and no less. The whole thing about Christ is that he helps you focus away from yourself by focusing on God so that the Spirit can fill you and you can feel secure and be a

true man or woman of God. God is not concerned with your neurotic behavior (sins)--what human beings seem to rag others about and feel guilty about themselves. The reason is that we must concentrate on the source, which is neurosis itself. Let God's grace take care of all neurotic behavior. They're just distractions anyway from the real truth. We must get to the source of our neurotic behavior--the neurosis itself. When we feel secure within ourselves, neurosis disappears and we are free. I believe hell or "the devil" is neurosis. I believe neurotic behavior is what Jesus is saying is in the world. Conquer neurosis and you've conquered the world. You become your own free person.

So, we need not concern ourselves with people morally judging us on our neurotic behaviors. We must just accept them as human, not inhumane. In order to be free (resurrected), we must go into the neurosis (hell) itself and conquer it. If you get caught up in peer pressure, etc. that make you feel insecure, you will never conquer your neurosis. You must focus on overcoming your neurosis without the distractions. How can you overcome neurosis? By being secure in God's grace for everything you do. Then you will not feel insecure and guilty about doing human things. The only thing we ever need to feel guilty about is doing disrespectful (irresponsible) things. God is all about respect, not about human weaknesses. Grace (Christ dying for us) takes care of all human weaknesses (imperfections). We are deemed perfect (righteous) because of grace. If we accept totally His grace in lieu of our faults which bring about delusional guilt, then we can concentrate on conquering the neurosis itself.

I realize that there are two sides: neurosis (known as sin) and character disorder (known as self-righteousness). A neurotic cannot be a neurotic if he doesn't has a character disorder to play off of and vis-à-vis. Most people I believe swing from one side to the other and back and never have much of any rest or true happiness. Christ is perfectly at rest (at balance). If you keep your focus on God, you will achieve balance. Will I ever achieve Christ perfection at rest? Probably not, but I can get really close. There is a range we each have, and when we come to God at our center, the range decreases towards rest and our emotional pendulum doesn't have to swing as much. We become emotionally stable and very tolerant.

Also, I realize what Christ is saying when he says "you can ask me anything in my name and I will go to the Father on your behalf." What he is saying is that there is God within each of us. You have to come to me (or the person) and ask and then the person will consult God within him to give you an understanding and respectful answer. In other words, you go to Christ just as you go to me or just as I go to you and ask. Each of us who is secure in God and God is secured in us can help others and we can help ourselves. However, Christ hopes that one day you will feel secure enough to just consult directly the same God, the same spirit in you, and find the answers there. We have to understand that the Kingdom of Heaven is in each one of us, not in some magical, mystical place in the universe. Where we go after we die? I don't know. But people keep on searching for it on the outside when all along it is within us on the inside.

I must conquer my own neurosis accepting fully the grace of God along the way in order to be free and live happy and restfully.

People worship a god of neurosis. It makes them paranoid and mentally ill. I refuse to worship a god of neurosis. I choose to worship God who sets me absolutely free from all neurosis. And I will no longer enable others' neurosis by following their "moral" rules. These rules do not come from God; they come from a god of neurosis known as the devil. I do not believe in moral rules

and I do not believe in something that thinks it is a god but all it does is deliver neurotic behavior. That is not a god. It is a pest.

It is time to be free in the real God. It is time to explore the real God and live in the real Heaven—the real Happiness.

341. I Will Not Be Disrespected!

I'm really starting to respect who I am. I don't feel nearly as guilty as I used to about having my fears and my wants and my desires. I used to think that God looked at them as some kind of flaws that were not worthy of him. But that's not it at all. He's just doesn't see them as important enough to place his own importance on. In other words, they are all mine and I am free to enjoy my desires and wants and needs and accept my fears and such without any heavy hand or any heavy consequence. I am free to do with them as I please, when I please, and how I please. And I like them because they make up me.

What really gets our goats is disrespect. That is the one thing that my spirit in me can't stand. My father said in his letter that he deemed us bad children. See, narcissistic people deem themselves holy and think that they have the power to choose between what and who is good and bad in the world. He even said in one of his letters years back that he is a holy man and that I must now respect him. And neurotic people look to narcissistic people to tell them if they are being good or bad. They place their entire worth under the decisions of these people. But spirited people like me are just concerned with whether I am being respected. And boy am I spirited! When I was a kid, I could care less whether you were gay or this or that. It made no difference to me and it makes no difference to me now.

People are people and they are free to be whoever they want. What always got me is when I felt like I wasn't being listened to and there was no attempt to even try to understand me. I HATED that. And that is what God can't stand either. And after realizing this, I realized that there is a Judgment Day in all of us and it comes out a lot in our lives. Our spirit rises up and says "Hey, take notice! This is me you're talking to!" And it exacts judgment on people due to their respect or disrespect. It is now that I know for sure that there are definitely two kinds of judgment: Pre-understanding judgment known as prejudice and post-understanding judgment known as acceptance or unacceptance of people's disrespectful behavior including our own. If you don't have this understanding of who you are in God, you won't really know whether you are being disrespected or not. Most of the time, if you're neurotic, you'll just blame yourself for it. I don't discount people, but I will never tolerate people who are disrespectful because I know who **I** am in Christ.

Disrespect goes right to the heart of the Holy Spirit. It is unforgivable and can only be forgiven by God Himself (not me). God has forgiven me when I was lost. I disrespected but I did not understand the impact of my sinful disrespect. Now I do. Now that I have been found, I see what he sees and I see disrespect. I can see how I disrespected people and the Catholic Church and many others when I was young. I am truly sorry for what I did to them. But I will not be trapped by people who are ignorant and yet think themselves so high and mighty to even think that my apology gives them the right to jail me and control me and exploit me and do whatever

they wish to me. I am not a Catholic and I am not anyone's property and there is absolutely no authority over me on this earth. I do not like jerks and I never will! And I'm very pissed off because I allowed myself to be bullied all the way through school and my childhood by parents, aunts, uncles, teachers, kids, students, and the list goes on. And they were all the sick, demented, losers of this world. I guess I feel pretty thankful now that God has taken me out of this disgusting and sickening world of these neurotic and narcissistic jerks. I now have all the power to swat them away like little peons that they are and tell them to all go F. off. I also pray that they either all burn in h. or find their way to my doorstep and beg for my forgiveness. And I will forgive them almost immediately.

So now I see the twelve steps as: belief in God in you, hoping to see who he is, trusting in him, learning (listening to) him, understanding him, respecting him, recognizing him (his spirit in me), accepting him and thus now having the right to judge whether to accept others in my life or not by him, devoting myself to him and his judgment (sticking to my guns or relying on him), being secure in his decision (owning it), freeing it or letting it go (not worrying or being neurotic about it anymore), and then continue living in him in contentment and happiness.

So, with all this in mind, I wrote this poem:.

RESPECT

To whom do I look to be defined,
If to man, then all I am, is confined,
Awaiting my truth to be refined.

I am me, so I recognize no authority,
No government, rule, opinion, or law.
I simply choose, by my own autonomy, respecting you,
And that is all.

How simple a thing, to choose to grasp,
Yet so eluding, behind one's mask.
And in your smugness, if you believe,
That I can be, so deceived.
Then try, and you will kindly see,
My spirit risin' up in me.

And if not sorry for your remiss,
Then off you go to your abyss.
I pay no mind to frivolous ways,
Lifestyle choices gone tomorrow, here today.
But respect me not, and you will pay.
Gone tomorrow, gone today!

342. The Way Out of Feeling Trapped By Society

The more a person is responsible for his life, the more secure he is in himself and the more free he feels he has the right to be. If a person accepts the stark truth of how his idols are, he can then forgive them and move on to becoming secure in himself and free to be who he is. A person can never forgive unless he recognizes himself just as worthy as those he idolizes.

There are about three philosophies about independence, responsibility, and idolatry in life:

First there is the philosophy that responsibility is what makes up a person and independence or independent thinking is a sin. The more responsibility he acquires, the greater a man he is in the sight of God and everyone else. And the more he becomes independent, the greater he abandons society and the more evil he becomes. In this philosophy, a person perceives his worth by adhering rigidly to society's rules of how to perform. He idolizes society and those that represent society's norms. In other words, a person with this philosophy equates rules with responsibility and lives these rules. In this philosophy, the person never realizes his own true self and the provided autonomy via Christ to be who he is. He believes he can be free and happy if he can destroy independent thinking. However, he never feels secure in himself and secretly fears either leaving the nest on his own or being abandoned due to a secret desire to be autonomous. He can never be free because society deems him irresponsible for acting or thinking on his own. Therefore, he can never escape irresponsibility. He remains a child.

Second, there is the philosophy that responsibility traps a person and, thus, he has no independence. The more responsibility he takes on, the less freedom he has. In this philosophy, a person perceives society's rules as evil because it is telling him how to perform and who to be. He believes that being totally autonomous with little or no responsibility in his life is the key to freedom and happiness. He idolizes himself. In other words, a person with this philosophy equates rules with death. The person never realizes his own true self and the provided autonomy via Christ to be who he is either. Though he may put on a good act, he never feels secure in himself, and much of the time, he resents those who set up these rules in his past. He can never be free because society deems him responsible for his own actions and thoughts. Therefore, he can never escape responsibility. He remains a child.

Then there is the third philosophy that a person can only be independent if he is responsible to God. The more responsible he is, the more independent he is able to become. He equates responsibility with respect. He sees responsibility and independence as righteous and working in conjunction with one another. If God deems him a responsible person, then he doesn't need to adhere to society's rules and society's approval of his actions and thoughts. Thus, he is able to be free to be who he is in complete autonomy. He perceives his worth by obeying God within himself and becomes his own society. Therefore, he can be responsible and independent at the same time. He idolizes God. He doesn't fear being without society nor living in society either. He doesn't feel trapped by responsibility nor does he wish to destroy his own independent and true self. He becomes a man.

343. The Path Yet Traveled and Societal Addiction

Am I brilliant? Brilliance is the degree of belief in conjunction with the amount of receptiveness to listen to and act upon what the spirit tells you. We appear only as brilliant as the amount we express ourselves via the spirit within us. It is my job to connect with the spirit in me and obey whatever he tells me to do. A loving person listens to the true God within him and exudes God

via all His own brilliance. A mad person, as in a mad scientist, listens not to the true God, but in a devilish spirit to whom has power over him, and to which he in fact has denied the true calling of God perhaps millions of times or more over his lifetime.

Several years ago, God told me that he had given my father chance after chance after chance to come to Him. I recognized the voice of God saying this when I realized that God had given him million times more chances than I ever did or could ever imagine. And God said to me, “Enough! Now you will come to me and I will be your father. Your father will no longer be your father. He is not with me and I am not in him any longer. He has denied me. What is to happen in the future is not of your concern. Your devotion will lay with me, and I will teach you what you should have been taught in childhood.” And I listened. And God said, “Now write down everything I tell you to write down and leave nothing out. This will be my breath to all people in all my nations.”

Wickedness is a good thing for a man to know and experience for himself. Without knowing wickedness, he cannot help others recognize it either. This is perhaps why God allows wickedness in the world. Without recognizing (being aware of his own or another’s) or overcoming his own denial of wickedness for what it is, a man cannot be secure in realizing a truthful and honest relationship with the one and only God. Wickedness is what sin is. It is mortal sin against the Holy Spirit of God. All other by the residue in a person who has been baptized is automatically forgiven and forgotten by God. Grace covers all of it now and forever.

Perhaps it was for me that God chose to take my father’s denial of Him and then harden his heart to no end so that I would become the man I was deemed to become in and for God. And then perhaps after I am totally free from the confines (residual sin) of my father in my own mind, God will then deal with my father one-on-one and directly by Himself. This would, in fact, be a sight to see but will, at the same time, be of no concern to me because I will be totally free. This goes along with what I came to understand earlier in my life that God uses people who don’t even know God for the good of those who love God. The enemy is being used by God and doesn’t even know it because the enemy is so absorbed in himself.

I have to say that I did not totally believe God in what He said to me in the beginning, but I believed him enough to journey on with Him. It has only been over time in the 12 steps I have been walking with him that I believed more and more and more. And there will be one day real soon that I will believe Him all the way and explicitly. It will be on that day that I will be absolutely free. Jesus said to his disciples just before he left them to die on the cross and go into hell and defeat the demon for once and for all before he ascended into peace and joyful heaven, “Finally you believe.” The spirit came upon them and they secured the spirit within them forever. They were secure men and women in God forever and free from the confines of the wickedness (residual sins) of all the world. The baptism of the new life in the City of Heaven itself was theirs permanently.

When there is loss and there is always loss, we must go through stages in our lives in working through this loss. When we choose the path of Christ, which is the only path to the true God in Heaven, we leave the wickedness and wicked behind. What remains is only residue of it in our minds but no longer in our souls. And there is a sense of incredible loss when we get off the fence and say goodbye for good. And so our Father takes us through the various stages of our loss and grief in order to be raised in ourselves. This being raised is known as childhood in God

and we are children of God. God raises us to become secure men and women in Him and then we are baptized anew and again as Men and Women of God. We are baptized once as children and a second time as adults in Him. The first death was at the first baptism to which was symbolized, I believe, when Jesus the Child was baptized (circumcised) at infancy. The second death was at the second baptism where, I believe, was symbolized when Jesus the Man was baptized by John the Baptist and to which some may call Ordainment. And the third death is at the baptism into Heaven itself, which is also known as the Third Heaven which some may call Ascension to which Jesus became Christ. This, I believe, is the evolution of God in man on earth and into Heaven.

So, during our childhood in God, the grieving process begins. Prior to our childhood in God, we were in denial and in our own wickedness. The addiction to things and people other than God became our wicked life. For me, I was addicted to people to validate my worth. Everyone was seen as an authority figure over me. It is what I call Societal Addiction, and it was these societal forces at work in me that I bound my whole life and worth to. I listened to no other than these societal voices and societal forces and the societal ruling class (which was virtually everyone) validating my existence. I felt trapped and welcomed any release that became available to me. And it was only when I felt like and was about to make the decision to leave my wife and family behind and run away that I realized (via my own father's behavior) that there was something wrong. And that was when I heard God for the first time say, "Go see why", and I felt powerless over people and my addiction rather than thinking I could control all of my society and was all-powerful over it. And I became very scared and hoped for God to give me a miracle. And miracles started popping up like almost effortlessly. Of course, the greatest miracle he gave to me was me (his intimacy and love in me and my intimacy and love in him) my own true self.

People form rituals in the physical world via their own egos' interpretations from the inspirations from the spiritual world. The problem is that the understanding is not there. That from the spiritual world must pass through the emotional world and into the mental world. If we are all ego (logical or mental), then we receive the signal weak going through the emotional world and we only get part of the message filtered by our own egos. If we are only physical (like "dogs"), we aren't even looking for a signal. This is when we are in our full-blown addictions. This is why it is important to get in touch with your feelings. Thus, the space (place) and time is not in synch with the right time and place guided by the spirit. This is why the first baptism correlates to infant baptism but infancy isn't exactly the right time to perform the first baptism. The first baptism is when a person is aware that something is manipulating him and it isn't God. In other words, it is when he realizes that he is allowing something other than God to be all-powerful over him. Thus, childhood baptism is a choice that acknowledges God as all-powerful rather than the other thing. An infant of God begins with this belief in Him.

So, it's not when you are born into the world, but when you are born into God that comes your first baptism. And for many, the physical time of Ordainment is really the spiritual time of childhood baptism, still having all this residual sin in one's own mind. So, many people get really mixed up, but it is all a time and place that is right with the individual in a personal relationship with God at that time and in that place. He comes like a thief in the night. No one ever knows pretty much because you are so absorbed in yourself at the time. You're not even aware of the possibility of it happening to you.

So, during our childhood in God there is this grieving process:

First there is the shock that this is happening to you. And then there is denying **believing** that it has any real validity (a kind of riding the fence if you will). So you pray for a miracle secretly **hoping** one won't come. But one always does. Don't ask me why—it's a God thing. So then, you get really angry that it came and your guilty conscience sets in on what you've done that now says that you have to deal with it. So, you start dealing with it and **trusting** (having faith in) God. During this period, you feel depressed because you no longer get what you had and, at the same time, you feel the future is going to be all common, ordinary, conforming, and bleak like having to dredge through the muck just to make ends meet the rest of your life. It's called, to a kid, being responsible like your dad or mom. So you wait and you suffer. This period is also known as sufferance, which is a patiently enduring period that feels like you're suffering. It's also known as detox or fasting or "breaking the bronco". And during this time you do things like bargain, etc. to try to get it over faster. But it's going to take as long as it's going to take. Eventually you just give up struggling and then the true recovery begins. You then are apt to start **learning** things. And some of these things start to kind of hit home and seem vaguely familiar. You begin sensing these things you kind of liked from your (not old self) but young self. This begins the period of recovery or what I like to call re(dis)covery or rediscovering your self or inner child. And it is here that you become aware that you really were lost. That is why this period is the actual beginning of recovery. And the more you learn, the younger you get, and you kind of start liking it. It feels all new and stuff.

So now realize that the first four steps in the 12-step process have already consumed about 80 to 90% of what we traditionally call the Grieving Process. And you have to understand that, because recovery has always been seen as the final step in the grieving process, all you hear is that forever you will be in recovery. So it's pretty rare that anyone ever makes it past recovery. It's kind of like a self-dooming prophecy. You start getting pissed. "I made it all this way and even recognize some of my young self", you say, "just to be trapped in someone else's universe?" That's bull. It's like dangling a carrot in front of you and then taking it away forever at the last minute and you can never go back. Who wouldn't be pissed off?

What you also need to understand is that this grieving process is actually childhood in God. And so, you can really feel institutionalized during this period if all you hear is that you'll be in recovery forever and you'll always have to go to the meetings or stick to the plan or go to church each and every Sunday or do this or follow this for the rest of your life or you'll just backslide and never see Heaven or whatever. It's terrifying because you can really see you losing you and at the same time it feels safe from having to go to hell or be alone or whatever. But it is all immature.

Recovery begins with learning (listening, rediscovering, etc.) and, for a lot of people, they believe it ends with learning. This means that a structured plan (religion) exists and you are to stay on this plan. But recovery only begins with learning. After learning there is understanding oneself in relation to God, respecting oneself in relation to God, recognizing oneself in relation to God (recognizing true love), accepting oneself in relation to God, devoting oneself to one's relationship with God, and then being sure and secured (intimate) in one's relationship with God. This is where recovery ends. Notice that true love comes after understanding and respect and learning comes before them. What does this mean? It means the more people follow a religious plan over and over again for generations, then understanding, respect, and true love are less achieved from generation to generation. This is why it is important not to buy into or rely on a

religion that is rigid in its ways for your recovery. You come to understand not you and your relation to God but others and others' relation to God. In other words, you diverge from your own path that God is taking you down and, because of this, you always will be in recovery. So, don't buy into a religion or another's plan. You have to develop your own path or plan with God or you'll never end your recovery.

This is why it is important that when you begin picking up the Bible and learning, not to see it as a religion. Never learn the Bible by another's standard. Never use it as a crutch. And this means never buy into a Catechism or other type of book or other people's translation of the Bible. And never see the Bible as a rigid "to do" book. It is only meant as a tool to find your own relationship with God through the path of Christ. Why the path of Christ? It is because only Christ will keep you along the righteous path and away from this type of stark religion and true to yourself. Listen only to the spirit of the Word (Spirit of the Law) and not the letter of it and you will find your own self from the pages of the book. Security is realizing that God is in you (you've rediscovered and recovered God). Jesus said this too. He said that one day a Spirit of Truth will guide you and provide you with more than what I have given you thus far.

And so this is why I'm so angry. My childhood in God was interrupted by me idolizing authority and authority allowing me to idolize it. I became a Societal Addict because I didn't know any other way, especially after the divorce. But the divorce was good because I would have never found myself idolizing my father and he had not placed more importance on other things besides me. His abandoning me gave me the choice to leave him and follow God. Without it, I don't know what I would have become. This is why Moses granted divorces and why we must all leave wickedness and wicked people to themselves and not stay in these relationships for the children. Church, mother, father, brother, etc. who are insecure will always allow you to idolize it or them because your idolatry is what gives them worth and validation in their lives. An insecure society will always dangle a carrot then also keep you down to validate it's own worth as a society. They dangle the carrot to prove to everyone that they are righteous and then keep you down to validate that they are right. Just ask the poor in America. You will always be in recovery because you will never meet their expectations, and if you get really close to doing so, they'll change the rules on you and deny responsibility. This happens everywhere in the world because people fear being alone. If people start acing tests, the test changes. If people get too close to the wisdom of the church and secrets of the elders, the church and elders' rules change or they just forbid you to ever try to get that close. You'll always remain a child and you'll always be told that you are being very bad, when all along it is the others who are terrified of you getting too close and intimate.

This proves my theory that the one thing that most every person (especially males) are terrified of is intimacy, even probably more so than death. They'd rather die than become intimate. But realize that security or intimacy is the step of the second baptism and second death and end to childhood of God. So really intimacy and death go hand-in-hand. Worship no one but God and enter into nothing that allows you to worship it, except God.

We all hear that we are children of God. But we never hear that we must mature by God to be men and women of God. That title is usually reserved only for a very elite few: preachers, popes, and wealthy businessmen. But I'm telling you now that these are not men and women of God. They are only children of God if they chose to enter into learning the Word by the standards of others. Even these elite businessmen took on the plan or religion of the

Businessman's Bible on how to run a business and get ahead. Again, never, never, never adopt a religion for your own relationship with God. God has a special and unique relationship with you waiting for you. It is the only way you will become a Man or Woman of God. But you will get major, major flack along the way and people telling you that your path is bad or wrong. And this isn't so bad because it helps you develop character and confidence and courage within yourself along with the approval of God every step of the way. Remember that God uses people who don't even know (understand) Him to help those who love Him. They spout His words (via learning) but never have the courage to venture into understanding Him on their own without the standard's of other people's religions or plans to hide behind.

So if security (intimacy) is the end of recovery, what is next? After recovery is freedom and then peace. In other words, once you have intimacy with God, sin is dead. The residual sin in your mind is dead. You are wiped clean and clear and are free. You are a Man or Woman of God. You are cured! The world will never admit this. It needs you to stay a child. The Spirit wants you to become a Man or Woman of God and what is also known as a Son or Daughter of Man(kind)—Mankind being God too.

And what is forgiveness? If a person asks for your forgiveness and deems you good or bad by your answer, he knows not God. He thinks he is God instead but actually idolizes you. But if one forgives because one accepts the truth of what he sees in the person in front of him, then he knows God. This acceptance is forgiveness. It doesn't mean you have to like him or be with him. He may not be a nice person, or he may be a disrespectful person. But you recognize him the way he is (which is the seventh step of the 12 steps) and accept him as such (which is the eight step). By doing so, you are able to forgive him. And a person cannot become a man or woman of God without first forgiving others by this acceptance of "what you see is what you got." Thus, the illusion is gone. The idolatry is gone. The anger is gone personally. You see the person as at least an equal. Now you are truly on your way to becoming a man or woman of God.

So, then to sum up, you will never be cured by taking another's path. You must take your own. Not the path less traveled, but the path yet traveled by a man or woman such as yourself.

344. I Am a Man

There is no heaven or hell. Heaven and hell is for children. A Man of God lives in the now. He never divides himself. He doesn't place his bad self in an imaginary bad place and he doesn't place his good self in an imaginary good place. There is no Santa Clause in the North Pole or coal in children's stockings for a Man of God. What you see is what you got.

Before our first baptism (death or rite of passage) as children of God, we were human children believing only in ourselves. And as we all know, children leave calamity in their wake. They are unconscious whirlwinds. If we allow children to continue on in this manner, they will become destructive and develop full-blown addictions. This is the physical.

A Man of God realizes that the earth is for children. Most everyone on the earth are either children who don't believe in God or children who do believe in God. There is no such thing as an adult non-believer. Children play, war, pretend to be this and pretend to be that. The physical church is for children. It gives them a physical presence to which they can see. It introduces the concept of sin to them and instills mental rules and boundaries, thus developing a conscience. This is the mental.

The church then enforces the rules and boundaries so children will not kill themselves and everyone around them. The children then feel emotion like guilt and anger and apprehension and also feel safe and other more comfortable feelings. None of these feelings are "good or bad". They are there for the children to develop into Men and Women of God. Only children equate things as good and bad by the discomfort or comfort they feel and the enforcement of good and bad behavior by bullies. A child thus becomes schismatic (separated or divided of himself). Then the bullies move in and conquer the child. Men and Women of God realize that only through letting children produce and work through their own calamity that they can become Men and Women of God. Feelings are expressed through calamity and character arises. A person of God who tries to suppress childhood calamity is actually a child himself who doesn't know how to deal with his own discomfort. So, we must not exasperate our children or we form in them love-hate confusion also known as Stockholm Syndrome. The purpose here is to introduce children of God to and get in touch with their feelings. We must show them that feelings are feelings, thus seeing them objectively, and they are all grouped together as members of the same family working together in a positive way for a common goal which is achieving one's Manhood and Womanhood of God. One is no better than another, and yet they are all important to be considered. This is the emotional.

The church teaches a child of God until he becomes aware (conscious) of what he is doing and how his actions affect others around him. Then the rules and boundaries should be lifted because this awareness spirit takes their place. This takes faith on the part of the church. The child of God should be left alone with his spirit of awareness of God to pursue a journey of his own discovery to becoming a Man or Woman of God. If not, the child will always fear being alone. When the child of God becomes a Man or Woman of God deemed by the spirit, he achieves his second baptism that is into Manhood or Womanhood of God known as security or intimacy or ownership. Each person is an entrepreneur in going through this journey. Only going through this journey by himself with his spirit will the person reach ownership of himself and, thus, be married to the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit within him. When we come into our Manhood and Womanhood, we come to realize that, when we produce in ourselves discomfort from something or someone, we tend to deem that person or something in the category of good or bad. What we realize is that he or she is neither good nor bad, but a member of the whole acting in the body of the spirit for a common, more maturing good or goal for that spirit and by the will of that spirit. We are only doing what the spirit unconsciously or subconsciously is telling us to do. Therefore, no person is at fault, or good or bad, or right or wrong. There can be no judgment on the believer, but only on his respectful or disrespectful behavior. This judgment is to test whether a person is truly a Man or Woman of God. A Man or Woman of God need no more than three chances to apologize for his disrespectful behavior. If he is a Man or Woman of God, he'd apologize pretty much right away. A child of God needs a lot more than three chances because he may have yet reached the sixth stage of Respect and still is trying to understand it up until Manhood or Womanhood. To me, disrespect is the disregard for the dignity of life—human or otherwise. Again, we must show them that people are people, neither good nor bad, thus seeing

them objectively, and they are all grouped together as members of the same family working together in a positive way for a common goal. One is no better than another, and yet they are all important to be considered. Thus, we believers of Jesus the Spirit are all in the body of the Spirit for the common good or goal of the Spirit, which is to fill and fulfill the universe and each person in it with love. This is what Christ meant when he said, "On that day, you will realize that I am in you and you are in me." This is the spiritual.

A Man of God lives by no one's rules. He lives only by and with the spirit bride within him. A Man of God does with his own life what he wishes and he makes no excuses for it. A Man of God lives by his own instincts that have been formed inside him by the same spirit to which a child had imagined only on the outside. No longer does a Man of God need to imagine heaven or hell. He realizes that heaven and hell is what he makes of himself from within himself. A person who believes in heaven and hell as unreachable places while on earth is a child of God. A person who believes that heaven and hell is what he makes of it is a Man or Woman of God. It is because in Manhood or Womanhood, God gives you a place to create in yourself for yourself and by yourself with whatever help you choose to request along the way.

A Man of God wants to be and is responsible for his own actions. He doesn't need to hide behind the fear of heaven or hell or sin, for that matter. Heaven and hell equate to being good or bad. Sin is alive mentally for a child of God. Sin is dead mentally for a Man of God. A Man of God does not need sin to excuse his behavior. He is what he is and does what he does. He accepts himself and his actions and chooses to continue living with them or not. He does not need forgiveness. He has already been forgiven. What he needs now is to own up to what he has done. He senses the instinctual subtleties and idiosyncrasies of feeling complete or not complete within his own self. And when he senses something amiss, he trusts his own instincts as his spirit.

A Man of God is a church (temple) himself tied (married) in love to the spirit within him. And when a Man of God accepts that the earth is for children, he recognizes children most everywhere he goes. He recognizes in places the evidence of what children have left behind. He knows for sure that people who believe in this imaginary heaven and/or imaginary hell and God and the devil still living there are still in their childhood stages. And he realizes that he no longer has any ties to them. It is not that he doesn't love them. It's that he just doesn't have anything in common with them anymore.

I believe we transform into three forms in which we perform throughout our existence. We are baptized into each. We first transform into children of God. We are introduced to sin, and the spirit convicts us because it loves us when we desire (are tempted) to go back into our addictive (sinfully active) ways prior to our first baptism. But, the residue of sin is still alive in our minds. We then transform into Men and Women of God where sin is now dead in our minds. Our conscience is clean and clear, meaning we are fully conscious. The spirit convicts us when we desire (are tempted) to go back into our childhood ways prior to our second baptism. We choose to do from the love we have for the spirit within us. Children see as the world sees. A Man and Woman of God see as the spirit wishes him or her to see. He is no longer concerned with the world. And then we transform into Spirits of God after we physically die. I believe we are baptized into what I call pure instinct of the Righteousness of God.

I am a Man of God. I take no excuses for sin, heaven, hell, God, the devil or anything else for my own actions. I am neither good nor bad. I am what I am and I do what I do. And I will be judged by no man or woman and I will not sentence my own self. I choose my spirit to do it all for me. I take action myself to be complete, and I sense within myself when I feel less complete, and then do something about it. I will never apologize for me being me, except when I have disrespected someone in some way.

I am a Man.

345. Stockholm Syndrome

I believe we should seriously consider looking into Stockholm Syndrome (also known as Societal Stockholm Syndrome). Please see link below:

http://www.drjoecarver.com/articles_stockholm.html

As a survivor of domestic violence, I believe this is exactly what has happened to me. Thus, the confusion and the feeling of entrapment. My father was a sexual, physical, and emotional abuser and still is. My mother, I believe, identified much with him and her own father as well and is probably why I am angry with her as well. I also believe, for me anyway, the New Testament is about this very thing--getting away from an abusive family, institution, etc. to those who feel trapped and are crying to get out and yet feel a nurturing warmth to the abusers and thus feel guilty for doing so. Jesus the Man, I believe, went through the exact same thing. I believe, perhaps, my 12-steps were given to me as the path in working through it and being free of it and helping to free others from it. I believe it may just be my true calling in life to free people from abuse using these 12-steps.

346. Ta da, la-dee-da, la-dee-da

I am a Man. I need no reason for what I do. I need not have to justify myself or my actions. I do simply because I want to and that is that. My sole concern is respect. And respect is not enabling your or my insecurities (neurosis). When I was a child, I felt guilty and my mother and others would get on me for not empathizing with people (which was in fact their neurosis) and accommodate (please) them.

The biggest bull is this statement: "When you do this, it makes me feel . . .". How you feel is not my concern or my responsibility. I do it because I do it. Make no illusion about it. You are probably not even in my mind when I do it. What kind of narcissistic malarkey is that? Keep doing to accommodate you so you can feel good about yourself? What a lot of bull. Gees Man! Doing that is actually disrespecting you and doing things just to make me feel good about me is disrespecting me too. It's all idolatry. If it ain't empowering you to be secure in you, it ain't respecting you. If I stop enabling your neurosis, that makes me disrespecting you? Get real!

I have spoken of Stockholm Syndrome. Basically, to me it is identifying with your neurosis as fast as you can so you don't have to go through it. When we identify with our captor, we live in

the light or darkness of him or her. It doesn't have anything to do with either living in the light (good) or living in the darkness (bad and what many equate to evil), but only to be enlightened (being brought out of the illusion). The former is just all about idolatry. By identifying with our abusive captor, we feel all powerful by him or her if we choose to identify with him or her. We feel like we have permission to kick ass and take names. This is the curse that goes on from generation to generation.

There was a point in time in the very beginning where we actually felt powerless and absolutely terrified of our abusers. But in order to survive, we chose to identify with this person. Which brings us to another cock'n bull statement: "If you can't beat 'em, join 'em." This is the quintessential statement of Stockholm Syndrome. If we feel powerless, then in order to survive, we must strive to accept that which we feel powerless against. What a bunch of bull! There is only one way to go when we feel powerless and that is to God—unconditional love through Jesus Christ. Then you will gain the most powerful you and accept no other. Any Higher Power without Christ is only an idol dreamt in the midst of our own neurosis. Neurosis is the darkness, the illusion. You can never know God without Christ. This is the essence of the New Testament on the Old Testament. The Bible is the symbol of hope, meaning that you must stop idolizing by your own neurosis by what you have already seen and feared from the past (Old Testament) and begin trusting (having faith) in the unconditional love that you have yet seen but know is there (New Testament). Old Testament—theme is abuse. New Testament—the way out of abuse.

I am taking down from my walls all the outside things of Jesus and other stuff because I realize I have and am my own true spirit—my own true self. I need not idols on the outside to tell me who I am on the inside. This took many years of maturing with God. I am a Man, and I make no illusion and no excuses for it. I see the world as it is, and I live in the part I like the most—me. I am soooo much more interesting to myself. That doesn't make me more important than you in the big picture of things, but it certainly does make me like me in my little neck of the woods. I am a Man, and I am a Church of my own true self. I need no other in my life.

What is the Truth? The truth is the obvious. It is right in front of your face. Make no illusion about it. Imagine nothing more than what you see in front of you. What is is what is. What you got is what you got. What you don't want is what you don't want. It is that easy and that very simple. I need not try to be more or less than I am. I live in the truth (the reality of myself through what I see via my spirit). I am who I am. What is abuse? Really. I mean should I make varying degrees in my own mind so that I may accept it and live with it? If I break the rules but cause no person disrespect or even potential harm, should I be crucified for it?

Let me tell you how it is. From our physically addictive states, we find God. God replaces sin (neurosis). Neurosis is what produces harm and disrespect. Our faith replaces abstinence. Abstinence is void, even of faith. It is the most fanatic form of passiveness. Being in a body—be it a church body or a family body or whatever—is not good or bad, it just is what it is. It is a vehicle for our own growth, our own maturity. In the body, there is structure or boundaries—hopefully vague in themselves and always open to interpretation and yet there. This is for the benefit of one's ability to mature. New interpretations form new boundaries. However, when these boundaries become rules, maturity begins to slow down. This is the beginning of abuse and is where good versus bad is introduced. It is the introduction of true evil in society and in oneself. It is not our fault that we once entertained it. As children, we had neither the wisdom nor ability to comprehend such things—even as children of God. When the rules are enforced

(i.e., spanking, jail, etc.), good versus bad is engrained in the psyche. This is a crime against humanity, and those that exact the enforcement of the rules are criminals. Society and each of its citizens become schismatic. Nobody even knows what good and bad is. It is all taken by the word of the most manipulative and deceitful in all society—the ones, the bullies, who are in fact the most insecure. It was not until general guidelines became rules that one started to become divided. And it was not until condemnation occurred that we became bounded to the world. Rather than seek revenge on our captors, I find it very beneficial to pray that they too will one day see the same light we now do. This enacts forgiveness. We can be secure in ourselves. They really don't understand what they do. They can't see it. I do not pity them—far be it. But they don't have the courage to trust in that which they cannot see.

Why do people do this? Generation after generation has done it. It was introduced by evil many, many eons ago. It is done so to conquer an individual, thus, the phrase, “divide and conquer.” This is how evil works. Nearly all people are schismatic because of this, thus, Freud's id and superego. But when God replaces sin, the schism between good and bad does not have to come about. We can say “no” to evil. We can stand our own ground even in the wake of terror. We can go to God and give the criminals one big hellacious sigh, “I am so over this.” Thus, if we truly believe that God replaces sin, we (ourselves, our own identities, our completeness of who we are) are truly saved. This is the essence of the purpose of Jesus Christ and, now you can see that this is why there is no other way but by Christ. Are we to become like Christ? No! We are to become like ourselves in the way God made us through a relationship with Him. When it comes to Christ, our job is to just believe that, through him, God replaces sin as if sin no longer exists. Sin is truly dead. It doesn't even exist anymore. Get it out of your mind. It is all illusion.

What does this mean?

I do what I do,
I live how I live,
And, well, uh,
That's about it.
“ta da, la-dee-da, la-dee-da.”
I've been made whole once again.
Good night, my love and long-time friend.
I'll be seeing you in the “whend”.

347. I Am my Own Nation

I am my own nation, and I impose my beliefs on no person. I am loyal to no one but God. Who is God but who I imagined Him to be. Who did I need the most in my life? I needed a father who loved me unconditionally. So like every male child who must grow up, I imagined Him—the perfect father. Every child needs an imaginary friend to fill the void—the loss. I imagined God my father of who I always dreamed of. It is all in the Bible because it was the same with everyone in the Bible—including Jesus. It is the Bible—sons and daughters desperate for unconditionally loving parents (every book in the Bible), wives desperate for unconditionally loving husbands (Song of Solomon), and husbands desperate for unconditionally loving wives

(nowhere in the Bible, which means everywhere in the Bible when it comes to males—I know a little about male ego and not wanting to admit anything).

Whatever a person needs most and feels abandoned by is who God becomes for that person. God is different for each person. And so a child defines his God, confines his God for him personally, and then God is refined (transformed) into spiritual form to fill the void in a child's soul. We know that a child has an imaginary friend and then the friend goes away when the child grows up. No, this is a huge misconception. The imaginary friend never went away. The imaginary friend filled the emptiness, and, thus, enabled the child to feel more secure and feel free to face the world of himself, for himself, and by himself. The child no longer needs the imaginary friend in the physical world. Over time, by playing with the imaginary friend, the imaginary friend transforms from physical to mental to emotional and then finally into a spiritual being permanently residing in the soul of the child. This is what God does for us. We imagine God and He transforms for us. He takes on many shapes and forms as there are people in the world. "Ask anything of me and I'll do it," said Christ. And so, one need not see God any longer in the physical presence (i.e., the Bible, a picture, or in a far off place like heaven). He is secure within himself. He is a nation in the newly complete person with God filling the void in his soul. Even though you don't see the physical evidence any longer doesn't mean it is gone. It has only transformed.

When I joined the Catholic Church many years ago and got confirmed, I didn't care. I didn't believe in it and, thus, there was no vow. Words yes, but only words. Disrespectful? Oh, I don't know. Now that I am a man, I realize that they take themselves and their religion really seriously. So perhaps it was and still is to them. And I'm sorry if my leaving them upset them. I really don't wish to disrespect anyone. Do I feel guilty? No, I don't. But still, I can see how they might be insulted by it or feel saddened by it. So, I'll send a little letter without a return address and just say sorry and let it go at that. When children get hurt, they don't want to forgive. And when you leave them, all of sudden you become very important to them and they just can't let you go. I was like this with my own father. He left and I was very sad and angry. I just couldn't let him go. But that's because he was everything to me. Now, my everything is my true Father—my imaginary Father who is more real to me than my father ever was. God is my Soul Father.

So, what are the stages a child goes through with his imaginary friend. Jesus said, "I now call you friends." Jesus was an imaginary friend to his disciples. Jesus became whatever they needed the most. Jesus was not the same to each of his disciples. He was personal to each one of them. The disciples needed a messiah so much and felt totally abandoned by God. And being in the Jewish Church back then, my god who wouldn't feel like they were being abandoned? There was as much real unconditional love as the tip of a toothpick. Maybe even less than that. This is why I am loyal to no one. Without imagining God, there can be no love, and the state or circumstances go to hell in a hand basket. And the less you evolve with your God, the less you mature further from that hell in a hand basket. In other words, the less you change into a secure and positively loving human being and the spirit of that perfectly loving God you imagine.

I'm a government employee, and there is this oath I took to follow the Constitution and all. I don't even believe in the Constitution. I took the job because it was a really good job. So, I have to say some bull to get the job. Why do I care? My loyalty is not to any institution. It is not to a government, or a family, or a marriage, or anything. My loyalty only lies with the

human condition—the breaking heart, the desperation for compassion, the hopelessness of an abandoned child, the confusion of a new single mother, the loneliness of a woman or man weeping on the inside. This is God to me. This is my loyalty. I went into an institution to be in the midst of sadness and gladness of a person from within. I never cared about the governors or the rules that governed, which is the essence of what is called an institution. I went in to go into the souls of others and fill something that they just were having a hard time filling for themselves. That’s why I go into anything and everything. That’s me. It’s always been me. That’s why I have a hard time in this world. I’m not angry with the people. I’m angry with the pretense (the defense mechanisms) of all the people that they use to prevent them from opening up and sharing their real them—their truth.

I am my own nation. My wife is having a very difficult time with people who don’t think the way she thinks. But I don’t. I think the way I think. She asked me to vote in the next election to get the Republicans out of office. I said that I don’t vote anymore. She got really upset. She said that if it was that important to her than I should at least do it for her. I said no. I told her the way it really works is that what infuriates bullies the most isn’t when you ignore them, but it is when you just don’t care about what they care about anymore—thus, freedom (independence) infuriates them. You go on with your own business. They can’t stand that you don’t have a voice. They need you in the mix—one more to feed the pot. “Oh, how will I live if I have no one in the game? I’ll be left to myself.” They can’t stand it. I told my wife that she is kind of like a bully like Bush and them—that’s why she can identify with them so much.

Put me in jail for speaking my own truth. I really just don’t care anymore. I’m not bound by your rules and you thinking that your punishment will break me. That was Paul’s idea early on. Early in Paul’s evolution with his imaginary friend, he was still the big bully. Paul’s idea was three strikes and you’re out. “Should I come to you with a whip or in love with a gentle spirit?” He just declared a Jihad against the “bad”. Before, he thought Christ was the “bad”. Well Paul, which is it? Later, we realize that it’s all part of a merry-go-round. It’s all a big game. Later in Paul’s ministry is when he realized that really he just didn’t care much either. Christ’s spirit was the deal, not the physicality of Jesus. Everything’s permissible just not beneficial. In other words, just do what you want. I’m really tired of fighting with you. Sin’s dead anyway—whether you realize it or not. I’m tired of trying to force it into you. You’ll figure it out hopefully one day for yourself.

So, I don’t take any institution seriously. I don’t take marriage seriously. I don’t take religion seriously. I don’t family seriously. I don’t take work seriously. And I don’t take people who are part of the institutions seriously, i.e., fanatics. I am my own nation. Does Switzerland vote for the President of the U.S.? No. Neither do I. If you don’t like it, I’ll move on. When enough people move on, the President and Congress will change all the rules to sucker ‘em back in anyway. They don’t have any real power, and they know it. In the meantime, I’m living really peaceful.

I asked previously, “How do you live within the rules of an institution and be free?” Now I know. By separating church and state. The state helps you function in the physical. You are your own church. Your spirit is limitless and needs no one, but your body has limitations. Your spirit needs no one, but your body will always need help from others. Be part of an institution of others to help take care of your body but not your spirit. Impose your God on no other but only transform to help people in the way they need it deep inside when they ask you. “How may I

help you?” are the kindest words one can say. Transforming themselves (dying to themselves) to help you is the kindest action they can give.

I can adjust to anything, anywhere now that I know the secret. And the secret to contentment is believing, which is simply imagining in something that can be but isn't there within you yet. It doesn't make things as fearful anymore, does it? Hang around with your imaginary friend long enough without listening to all the negative and crippling crap of others, and you'll evolve and the void will be filled (fulfilled). Some people may call this desensitization. No, this is another huge misconception. People don't desensitize. They come to accept that which they imagined to overcome the fear. Put it into practice enough and the imaginary friend fills the void, thus, replacing the fear that was once there. The fear leaves.

Ah, but can a person's will do all this? No it cannot. You need to know that whatever you do is ok to do. In other words, you need the kind of grace that only comes from believing in the erasure of sins and that sin is dead. If you sincerely believe in this, then you will not listen to the negativity and doubt that comes from your mind or anyone else's mind on your journey. It is not to believe in Jesus Christ. It is to believe in what he stood for. It is to believe in his spirit. And yet there has been no other before or after that gave so unconditionally, which means I am not here to judge you. I am here so that you may fly and for no other purpose, no hidden agenda. The disciples always believed Jesus had a hidden agenda. They never did totally trust Jesus until that crucial point in time. And who could blame them? Who really was there to trust in there battered childhood and in their crippling religion? And what was that crucial point in time? It is when Jesus said, “You believe at last” in John 16:31. Now, Jesus could fly (leave). The disciples trusted (had faith in) him. Even though he was leaving, he'd be back. How?

Belief or imagining it is the first step, hoping for it the second, and trusting it will be there is the third. Then receiving it's truth, committing to it so to truly understand it, respecting or being humbled to it, confessing it as righteous, accepting it fully, obeying it, securing or becoming part of it, dying with it meaning being renewed by nothing else mattering but it's spirit and belief, and finally being or identifying with it. These are the steps of evolution and evolving with your imaginary friend. And now you are able to face the world without fear. You are your own nation.

We are all scared little children yearning to stay children. But there is nothing to fear. The less we fear death, the more we live life. Imagine not and live not. Imagine plenty and live plenty. Imagine life after death and eventually you will be ready to die and only then will you truly live.

Do you know what you want? I just want to be hope for people who feel hopeless. That's what I want to be. That's all I every wanted to be. People know what it is they want. It's whatever a person needs most and feels abandoned by. They know what that perfect thing is. They know what it looks like. They can see it. They can taste it. It's all upstairs. What makes them feel hopeless is that they just don't think they know how to get there. They feel depressed, really scared, utterly abandoned, and very angry. But the spirit of whatever they see lies in their imagination—just like a child. Whatever they imagine is who God becomes for that person.

Our minds (egos, wills, whatever you may call it) cannot guide us there safely into maturation. And their minds know this. This is where the fear, depression, and anger comes from. They go to anyone and everyone? Can you tell me how? Can you take me there? There is only one who

can take them there? We as people can help them realize this, but cannot do it for them. Imagine what you want and pray to the spirit that lies in the center of it all. See him there. Create him in there and he will show up. He will be whatever you want him to be. Love him and follow him. There, my friend, is God. What is he telling you? Whatever you want, you will become. He knows the way. Pay no attention to your mind. Sin is dead. Believe what God tells you. Do it. He has all the wisdom. Your mind is for learning from him and not delivering the wisdom. Your ego is foolish. God is wise.

What am I saying? I'm saying that faith is the only thing that will secure that which you so desperately yearn for. I wanted an unconditionally loving father. I am becoming an unconditionally loving father. Do what you want. Come to me and we'll talk about your experiences. What is it that you need? What is it that you are confused about? Come and talk to me. This is all I have ever wanted. I think it is my time to place me in that position. I must present myself before the people so that they know I am available for them. I am ready to be that unconditionally loving father I always wanted for myself.

One's purpose in life is that which a person yearns for the most and yet feels abandoned by in receiving in childhood. To some of us, it was love itself. To others, it was to be taken seriously. To others, it was a sister or brother. To others, it was a family. What do all these things have in common? Love. No one ever imagines wanting the outcome of these things without seeing them loving and lovely. Thus, whatever you imagine becomes our purpose, our guide, our truth and becomes who we are when injected with this love. Our journey begins with it by imagining it and ends with it by us becoming the spirit of that which we imagine.

348. Being Free and Peaceful through Integrating

The key is to find a way to integrate opposing views while respecting the dignity of each. Integration will happen when one feels incomplete without the other. Then each will feel that they need the other to live in peace and harmony with themselves. Therefore, we respect each so to then be able to integrate each as a complete whole.

Let us take abortion. Which is good and right—Right to Choose or the Right to Life? Neither and yet both are good and right. Neither because each is stubborn and self-righteous. Both because they are both in the righteousness of the complete God. How can we say that it is not righteous to have freedom and free-will? And yet how can we say that it is not righteous to want to preserve life? Ah, so now we see that it is not about abortion at all. It is all about preserving the dignity of human life. It is all about respect and neither feeling respected. Abortion is only an issue of pride used as an excuse to not evolve. It is the state (of mind) in the division of church and state. The state is the pretense of the true church within. It is the disrespect of the true nature of God within. The true church is the kingdom within each of us.

There are as many true churches as there are people in the world. But you must acquire this division of church and state in order to see the truth from the illusion. The end of America will be the re-infusion of both church and state in the governing offices. America will destroy itself from within by becoming its own worst enemy. We will have another civil war. Abuse of power will result if they are combined. Martial law will be enacted. Freedom as we knew it will be gone. Thus, state and faith will all be lost because the weeding out will be the enactment of genocide using the pesticide of pride and ego. Rather, the state and the faith must be weeded out

when ego is lost and love is what is the prevailing loyalty. This is what Jesus meant when he said if you weed out too early, you will pull up both the good harvest and the weeds together.

Why do I say that the state is the disrespect of God within? The worldly state (of mind) must be lost by evolving into a Godly state (of mind). God is evidenced by faith and not by state. The state is what is made by the mind to control the outcome of what it fears via the creation of sin. The state is made by the mind because it trusts not itself. The state wars within itself and with other states that oppose it. The state acts by the will of the people. Faith acts by the will of God. Faith doesn't even know what sin is. Faith is, thus, the vehicle that winds up replacing fear with peace and harmony and makes a person regain his innocence. A whole and peaceful mind is an innocent mind. A warring mind is a guilty (sinful) mind. Let go of all control and sin vanishes and innocence is restored.

What am I saying here? Sin is in the mind and innocence is in the soul. We are all innocent all the time and all our lives. It is the state (of mind) that refuses to believe it. By imagining God, the state (of mind) now has created a vehicle to have faith in (trust) itself so to mature and acquire peace and harmony with itself—thus, becoming one or whole again. Now the state can evolve with each moment and address and deal with each thing as it comes. The process can be evoked in each moment. Laws are no longer laws. Sin is no longer sin. The state is no longer driven by a human will that fears. It is driven by a Godly will that loves and is no longer afraid.

So, how do we integrate two opposing factions? I have been telling you this over and over and over again. When will you believe me? First you must believe that the other side may have a smidgen of truth in it. Then you must hope that your belief in them is true and, thus, trust approaching the other to see if it is really true. Only then will the truth appear and you can receive the truth. Now you must commit to understanding this truth. Now you will gain respect for the other. Only then will you recognize the righteousness in them and come to accept them. This is the bridge, the gate if you will. Then you will get out of your own self and devote yourself to them as well as you. Then you will integrate by becoming intimate and secure both of you together at the same time in the same place. Then your own fighting will end and you will feel free like a huge weight has been lifted. From this elation of freedom, you will acquire deep appreciation for the other. This is the glue. Finally, you will live in peace and harmony together. Thus, your identity was not lost. Instead, it grew in leaps and bounds.

So, what is this stage of integrating all about? It is the stage of securing where you have absolutely made up your mind. This is also known as absolution or the defining moment or moment of truth when you choose to let go of past presuppositions and pretense and either leave those that really are disrespectful and thus ignore the truth or become part of those who are respectful and reveal (expose) the truth. In any case, it is the time when you move on. It is the time when one believes more in his own innocence (told to him from his soul by God) than in his own sinfulness (told to him from his mind by ego).

One cannot escape trauma during life. Trauma is an impact on the belief system of one's mind to whatever it idolizes. Idolization is our perception of who we trust that replaces our ego, including the ego. This idol can be anything, including our own ego. The neurotic displaces his or her own ego with another. The character disorder or narcissistic idolizes his or her own ego. When our minds perceive the idol disrespecting us, then our minds are traumatized because there is no love in disrespect. Disrespect is, in fact, the absence of love. This is the beginning of

awareness. Trauma makes our minds face up to its own mortality. And for our own survival, it sees the idol as harmful or defunct. This is when God appears. The mind knows it will indeed die when the body dies. So it imagines a God who will help us to live on forever a part of it. And the more it is terrified of dying (the more traumatic the incident impacted it), the more fanatical it becomes in its pursuit of God. We cannot believe that which we idolized doesn't love, so we continue to give it a chance over and over and over again to love us. We wait and wait and wait for it to say sorry. And when it does, we believe in it again—until the next time. We will forgive them a million times because of our denial. This is why when someone disrespects you three times, get the hell out! In other words, accept it as the way they are.

Now, ego is selfish and, thus, persecutes. It is demonic meaning it rather divide, persecute and kill the person and it in the process than give into or give up what it wants. The mind is used to this narcissistic part of us. And if we so idolize our own egos, we see others the same way against us when we idolize them. And when the mind (or person) tries to leave it, the mind feels guilty and ashamed for leaving the one thing that protected it all its life while growing up. It requires permission to leave. But the egotistical person will never give it permission to leave for its own narcissistic preservation. This is the state and one's state of mind. When one is more egotistical than Godly, one persecutes and wars and kills and "self-sacrifices" and guilts and shames in the name of God for some made up Godly cause or reason. This is known as martyrdom and it is a selfish act. So why then was Jesus dying not selfish. Because Jesus needed to die so that we would enact our belief in the death of sin and thus our minds believe it okay to die to our own ego. Without this, we would never be able to escape our narcissistic selves and respect one another and find love in the process. The simple truth is that the ego wants what it wants like an immature little child. But God has only one cause and it isn't in the world.

God's only cause is for you to mature to die to yourself and be free and whole and complete. Jesus dying on the cross is the symbolic representation of us dying to ourselves (our own ego) so to be totally with God in our own innocence in our souls. It is leaving the egoism and those who are egotistic (narcissistic) in the world to be forever with God in our souls. Just as our minds are the vehicle of our egos; our souls are the vehicle of God our spirit. Our minds will eventually die when we physically die. Our souls go on forever. Thus, God's cause is to prepare us for our deaths. See, our egos are under this illusion that it will go on and live forever, even without the body. The ego doesn't give a crap about the body or anything else but itself. It lives for itself and kills for itself. It is all about itself. Our minds created it in our childhood for our own preservation. We never realized at the time that we would mature. As we did mature, we realized that this little child called the ego is a spoiled little brat that is not good for us any longer. At one time, our minds needed the ego because we were not wise to the world. The ego gave us our self-preservation. So it (and sin) were good for us. We were afraid to leave our egos. But overtime, our minds became wise to the world (evolved) and realized that the ego was not wise but only intelligent or logical and crafty and not loving at all. And so, our minds needed to create the a new evolutionary ego with the perfect combination of intelligence, wisdom, and love. And so it created God. There are three key times in our evolutionary maturation. The first one is the mental. This is the infant ego and includes believing in good and bad, hoping, trusting, and learning good and bad. Next is the mental-emotional ego. This includes that of the mental with the addition of understanding, respecting, recognizing (feeling good or bad), and accepting something as good or bad and devoting oneself to the good or bad. And the last is the mental-emotional-spiritual ego known as God. He includes all in the mental

and all in the emotional plus intimacy (the ultimate determination that this is the real deal), then freedom, and finally peace. Trauma is the impact of the realism of life on the illusion (denial) of one's mind. Trauma happens when the truth of what one has conjectured appears in one's life. In other words, we can imagine in our mental stages, feeling emotionally good all the time. We know by what is around us that there is feeling in people. But we denied ever feeling bad ourselves. Then life hit us in the face. We were traumatized. Now we have to decide to deal with and how to deal with bad feelings. While we are in our emotional stages, we dream of a God in heaven who is all loving and powerful and everything and is our great spiritual advocate. Then life hits and bad things happen to really good people. We are traumatized. How do we deal with this? We then realize that God doesn't care much about our individual causes. He's pretty much just a hands-off dude. He doesn't want control over our lives. There is no sin, there is just life and whatever you choose to do with it. Now, we are in our spiritual stage and there will be one more jolt trauma just before our last breath. What is it? We'll come to realize that God is us. We created him. There is no heaven, there is no hell. There is no good and there is no bad. There is no right and there is no wrong. There is only life. What was is now gone and you live on only in the minds of others who believed you. And our life will pass before our eyes showing us of how much we wasted it. So, you see. We create God to cope with our own mortality. If you accept your own mortality, whether there is a God in heaven or Devil in Hell doesn't much matter. You have no regrets. Thus, we create God to deny our own mortality. Now that you know the secret, accept it and be at peace with yourself. Today is the only day that matters. You are your own church. Leave the state (of mind) behind.

People think that if they aren't fighting for something, then they aren't doing something good and right. It's all a ruse—a shelter to hide the real, deep-seeded truth. Rather, stop fighting and serve the ones that are not fighting for a cause. The world terms these people "lost". These are not the lost people. These people who are poor in spirit will be found. They will see the kingdom. The one's who are lost are the people still fighting.

You see, laws secure the past and anticipate the rebelliousness of the future. This divides the whole. Wars start because of this. People feel imprisoned especially when these laws are violently enforced. By not realizing that you cannot be complete without the other, you enact condemnation and damnation on the innocent. You are so enthralled with conquering the other side that you ignore the one needing the love and attention. In other words, you are so caught up in the illusion of what you think was and what might be that you totally ignore the reality of what is going on now. Is it all about those who want the right to choose or is it all about those who want the right to life? Neither. It is about the one who is contemplating abortion now and is warring between both in her own self. Don't choose one or the other. Don't make her choose between one or the other. That is criminal to make another choose one or the other. This is the same as children in divorce. This is because each wants another minion in the crusade against the other. What happened to the poor and innocent child? You've made her into a wretch like you!

We can not label things as black and white nor foretell the future because everything is evolving and is dynamic in nature right now as we speak. What seems right today may appear wrong tomorrow. The key is to process it in the moment toward integration and peace and harmony.

Well, how can we know when someone is contemplating abortion? By making yourself easily accessible to them if you are in your real mind. If you can let go of the "I'm right, you're wrong" thinking and, thus dying to yourself, and become the servant only to the one in need and

to what she needs, then make yourself easily accessible. Otherwise, you're really just better off dead so you tempting them is dead as well. The child is the innocent one. Jesus was the innocent child (lamb) but was found guilty by those who were guilty of ignoring the needs of the innocent. They saw him as part of the other side. If you are not for me, then you are against me. That's a lot of crap in a barrel. I'm not for anyone's hype. I'm loyal to no one's state of mind and particularly their cause. I am only loyal to the needs of the poor in spirit—the innocent who are going through pain, hopelessness, and confusion now. I am here for them. This makes me innocent as well. The other is all illusion and pretense to the real truth. They're not fooling any one, especially me.

Unfortunately, the ones who are most accessible in the world are those who are in the illusion of “I'm good, you're bad or I'm right, you're wrong.” This is because they need you to reassure them that they are indeed good or right. They believe that the more people they have on their side, the more good or more right or more valid they are. Does majority rule? It shouldn't because the majority are in this thinking. The majority are foolish and immature. Rather it is the peacekeeper (the integrator) who should become easily accessible so that society can be saved from itself and people can be saved from falling into the illusion that happens when they respect one side more than the other.

God is objective and impartial. He respects everyone—murderers, prostitutes just as much as businessman and preachers. He respects everyone—the poor just as much as the wealthy. Why is the middle class the backbone of society? It is because the middle class is the integration of both the poor and rich in society. The middle class is the most sane and, at the same time, continuously being sucked in by the poor and rich “victims” of the world. The self-righteous poor say attack the rich. And the rich of the world say just ignore the poor. I say screw the poor and screw the rich. It sucks to be either. Instead, integrate the two and become average middle class and then be on your own way. Stop giving everything to the poor and taking everything from the rich. You're not empowering anyone. Instead, be happy with what you have and move on. When you move on, people follow. People always wind up being allegiant to the impartial—the one who doesn't give a flip and is secure within himself. They get tired of fighting because they see another option—be myself. And give in the moment and receive in the moment. In the moment is where it's happening. The moment is righteous and is where righteousness always radiates brilliantly.

349. Impressing God

Impressing God

God and a woman came to a shore of a great ocean and God asked the woman, “My child, go find us a canoe.” The woman looked a little bewildered but said, “Yes, God”, and off she went. In a little while, she came upon a canoe and said to herself, “This canoe is ok, but if I got God a ship, how glorious that would be! God deserves a ship, not a canoe. Besides, it would take a long time and so much effort to traverse the ocean with a canoe.” So, she went off and searched for a ship to bring God.

Three years later, God looked over the horizon and saw a ship coming his way. And as it drew closer, God saw the woman sail the ship and anchor it off-shore. When the woman stepped on shore, she approached God in all gladness and also all bruised, broken, out of breath, her knees

wobbling and arms dangling at her side. “I know you said to go get a canoe,” she explained, “but when I found it, I thought to myself how glorious a gift for you that I bring you a ship instead. It was a long and arduous journey met with so many obstacles and hazards along the way. I was so excited in the beginning and then I became so miserable as I suffered so much along the way. But here I am. And again, I’m so excited! This one moment makes it all worth it! I did it all for you! And what kept me going is me imagining how this very moment would be—your eyes, your smile, you being so proud and so very thankful! So, for you God, here is your ship you so richly deserve! And now we can traverse the ocean in comfort and style and ease.” Exhausted, the woman then fell to her knees before God.

God said to the woman, “My child, you didn’t need to go through all that trouble. I needed the canoe so we could go down this small river over here to get to the ship you brought me.”

“Why didn’t you tell me that at first?” the woman asked.

“You didn’t ask me,” replied God. “I keep telling you that you need to ask me why I am so you can understand who I am. Then you will bring me exactly what I need and not what you think I need. Only then will I be able to accept all of it.”

The moral of the story: *Judge and you shall be judged. When we presuppose (judge) another (and ourselves) for who he really is, we place ourselves in agony by feeling guilty for impressing upon him our own will. Then we cover it up by trying to impress him (inflate his ego) and make him more than he really is by sacrificing ourselves to be less than we really are. The longer we act in judgment, the longer the agony, the greater we try to hide it, and the less we feel ourselves worthy. You’ll discover the truth if you offer up the little you know and the little you have and leave it at that, trusting it is enough. Stop judging, and, thus, trying to impress people along the way, and you’ll find out how free and simple life really is and how much time there is to just have fun!*

350. God is Me

These again are the steps I know to finding one’s own identity. Believing in it by choosing that it exists is the first step, hoping it is there by imagining it is the second, and trusting it by inquiring of it is the third. Then receiving it’s truth by listening, understanding it by committing to it and persevering in it (working through it) until you find or comprehend its truth, honoring it by offering up a respectable response as the pivotal point in your own evolution, confessing or feeling esteemed by your act of righteousness, accepting yourself fully because of it, obeying (devoting yourself to) it by doing it over and over again, being intimate with it by securing it and placing it in you as Law or part of who you really are, releasing it or dying to it meaning no longer controlling it by not thinking about it anymore and just relying that it will be there when you need it, and finally identifying it as you. These are the steps of evolution and evolving with whatever you believe in or imagine. You become your own nation. And the more of you that you find, the more of you there is, and the more confidence you acquire to face the world as you without fear.

I, personally, am on the eleventh step. I’ve been practicing letting go, and thus, I’ve been catching glimpses of the twelfth. I’m realizing that this one I call God—my Higher Power—is actually me. God is true objective (freeing sinless innocent) self. Ego is the subjective

(controlling sinful and prejudicial illusion or distortion of) self. God is whatever you imagine him to be. Imagine big and you will get big. Don't worry. If you go through each step in sequence, you will become a responsible and respectable person in whoever you become. And you will become very confident and compassionate. I believe the reason we feel bad about ourselves, and thus remain low in self-esteem, is when we choose not to acquire the wisdom (understanding) needed to then deliver a respectable response. It's our own fault for giving into our fears of not working through things. Many of us fear the truth. What if I really am bad? What if I am this or that? What if I can't handle the truth? But only the truth will set you free because, without the truth, you won't know how to respect yourself. And if you don't respect yourself, you won't be able to feel the esteem (love) you have for yourself. You won't be able to feel God with you.

So let me reiterate:

Believing in you by believing God exists is the first step, hoping you are there somewhere by imagining God somewhere is the second, and trusting yourself by inquiring of (asking) God is the third. Then receiving your truth by listening to what God tells you, acquiring wisdom by understanding your truth through committing to God and persevering in (working through what you received with) God until you find or comprehend God's truth for yourself, honoring yourself by offering up a response you believe is respectable to God as the pivotal point in your own evolution, confessing or feeling esteemed by feeling God's love within you because of how you handled yourself, accepting yourself fully by realizing that God loves you even though you didn't do it all perfect, devoting yourself to yourself by devoting yourself to God over and over again on a regular basis, being intimate within yourself by feeling God securely within you, releasing or dying to your subjective self (ego) by no longer controlling (judging) yourself and thinking about stuff (worrying) anymore and just rely solely that God will point you in the right direction and drive you to speak and do whenever and however you need, and finally identifying yourself as you by realizing God is you in absolute confidence.

I don't know who created the universe. I don't know how things got here or what is what they do or what is what they are or whatever. It's all a mystery to me. And I don't need to know why anymore. What I do know is that the God I call God and imagined in my head is actually me. God is no more than me and no less than me. God is me and the full range of me. We are, we exist, and we do all at the exact same time, in the exact same way, in the exact same place. God is me, but I am not God Creator and Power of the Universe—the Whatever it is, Whatever it looks like, Whatever form and shape it takes. Who knows? No, I'm not the God of the universe—whoever and whatever that may be. I'm not the Life of life—the Giver and Sustainer of life. However, I'm part of it. I affect it and it affects me. I am alive because it gives life. It sees me as I am. It sees me as perfect. It has no preconception of me. It accepts me as is. To it, I am, I exist, I am a part of it, and it takes me in and changes shape and form upon my entrance, throughout my living, and then at my exiting—and vis-à-vis—simply because I affect it and it chooses to affect me. We affect each other. There is no heaven or hell out there. The Life of life doesn't exist in just one place. It exists in all places. It maintains and sustains balance from my and from everyone and everything else's actions. It acts, we react. We react, it acts. That is the Creator. There is no heaven. I am the heaven. I am the hell. I am God who is God in me. We are the same. There is no difference. I imagined Him to become Him because I needed Him, and in return, He helped me to become who I am. And because of it, we became one and the same.

Why do religious people say that Jesus was God? I believe Jesus was a man that took the path to God that I followed Jesus by. The secret to contentment that Paul was talking about is when you realize that God is you. Thus, you'll be able to face the world on an equal playing field and, in fact, just put it behind you and move on one day when you get tired of playing with it. When you realize that everyone else who idolizes Christ is a child who is continuing to try to find themselves, you realize you really are in a league of your own. You are a man or woman. No longer do you need to make yourself feel worthy by judging (prejudicing) others or situations. Judging is demonstrating one's ego in lieu of making the effort to work through so to find or comprehend one's truth. In fact, when we presuppose (judge or falsely accuse) another of being someone other than who he really is, we wind up placing ourselves in agony by feeling guilty once we do find out the truth. We feel guilty because we exercised our ego and impressed upon another our own will. And because of this we offer the respectable response, which is offering up our apology. So you see that the key is to work through whatever you need to so to find and comprehend the truth of whatever and whomever you perceive as troubling you. Then the respectable response will come.

Judging others keeps a child a permanent child. And at the same time, children are punished for judging which makes them feel so much more ashamed of themselves. The only way for a child to mature and leave childhood is by not being attacked for judging. In other words, a child can only grow up if the one he identifies with does not judge him, but only allows him to discover his own truth. This is done through objectivity (grace and the erasure of sin). A person receives input (learns) and it triggers judging. Judging is not a sin. Sin only comes about when someone intrudes his own moral law on the objectivity of a person or situation. And this intrusion and assertion comes from people's own pride and ego. This is what children do. Men and women are their own church. Secure in themselves, men and women don't need to prove their value by asserting their own moral laws on the populace. This immaturity necessitates the division of church and state so that people are able to acquire freedom for themselves. Children don't understand this and think that this division is an attack upon God. A man and woman know that this division is imperative so children are able to mature, build character, and draw closer to God. The division of church and state provides people an awareness that permits them the freedom to choose between subjectivity (egotistical immature selves) and objectivity (true mature selves). Thus, judging is only an act of an immature child who requires the grace from a true man or woman to help him feel empowered to work through his own feelings so to grow up on his own and secure his own true self.

351. Ego and You

Ego is an innocent child, and if the parent or something traumatizes (shocks, abuses, abandons, spoils, exasperates or places grown-up expectations on) the child, the child inflates his or her own ego to meet the challenge of the traumatized situation which causes excessive worry. This isn't fair because all the ego wants to do is play and the ego knows it. From then on, the ego is super-critical on injustices of the world. Instead, it is forced into an adult position that it has absolutely no idea how to handle. So out of fear (terror really), it tries to control everything. The ego perceives everything by it and tries to control everything for its very survival. It pities (depresses) itself by perceiving power and authority on the outside as its enemy (the devil). Thus, it then manics itself by perceiving itself as the true power and authority (righteous) to counteract its victimizing guilt and balance itself out. It's a pissed-off person is what it is. All it

wants to do is play and have fun. But nobody gets through his or her life unscathed. There will come trauma to one degree or another and at one time or another to which the child ego must work through to build character and strengthen itself to become a mature adult.

But ego is also really scared of being alone, like children are. This adds to its terror. So, because it is in the position that it is in and fears for its life, ego creates sin. It creates moral law not only to hide itself from the big scary outside world but to impress its perceived authority by seeing itself sinful and punishing itself when it breaks the law. This is a way to gain attention of its perceived authority figures and be comforted by them without being abused by them. It needs the attention of the authority figure to not feel alone but also batters itself so that the authority figure may take pity on it and not punish it further.

Then the ego places this world of illusion into play so it won't have to face the real world that it perceives as abusive in nature. So, ego starts to "sin" so it can get caught, be punished, confess its sins, be forgiven, and then be accepted in and comforted. And that power (authority figure) which the ego created to absolve it is actually enabling it to sin again. Why? Because once comforted or at rest, the person is deemed okay and sent back into the real world. Thus, the ego feels okay for a while until it sees itself in the real perceivably abusive world again. So, it goes through the scenario again. This is the addictive cyclic nature of the traumatized ego.

The world and its institutions (religious or otherwise) are representations of the nature of this traumatized ego preparing itself to be compulsively comforted in the future by obsessing (working overtime) to stay away from its perceived abusive real world, also known as hell or on the cusp of hell. The only way then that the ego can escape its rollercoaster world of sin and absolutism and also its perceived abusive real world known as awaiting hell is to envision (fantasize about) a heaven after death where everything is perfect and peaceful and joyful. Obviously and ironically, this positive fantasization is the way out of the illusion. Obviously because it could lead to suicide (physical death). Ironically because, if we imagine God as unconditional love and fantasize how much he loves us, we begin the path to the way out of our addictions. This path leads to the death of the traumatization while leaving the healthy ego intact. It is imperative to believe that God not only loves us unconditionally but that God is Unconditional Love. If God is Unconditional Love, then there is absolutely no way God can change his mind and abuse us.

Imagination is our minds seeing an image of the nation we wish to be happy and complete in. There are two nations—one that aims to seek worth from people in the world and the other that aims to seek worth from God in the soul. Each is seen as a different heaven. As predicted, a person will never feel complete and find peace becoming what he imagines in the world. A person will only find completeness and peace by following his mentor in his soul. Whoever has the power in the image nation is who he or she will strive to become. And whatever he or she experiences and sees in the image nation will become the different parts of who he or she is. If a person is the idol in the image nation, he or she will become that idol. If the image nation is filled with frantic deadlines, fans, stiff buildings, concrete sidewalks, sunny skies, etc., then the spirit of each will become all part of his character identity. And this is the same if he envisions peaceful streams, rivers, etc. (innocent things) with God.

A person draws strength by all that in his surroundings that he does not try to control but peacefully coexists with. The problem is when a person imagines a relationship with others and

controlling other people's actions. A person who idolizes himself in the world has to control the world in order for him to complete his identity. Anything that feels itself trying to be controlled resists this control and will not deliver to the person itself (die to itself). This promotes destructive aggressiveness in the controlling person. A person who idolizes another in the world freely gives up (dies to) himself to become that individual. This promotes destructive victimization when reality hits that there can be only one of that idolized individual and the person gave up all he had and all he was to become that individual. But a person who idolizes God in his soul gives up (dies to) himself to God. Each person's God is unique. Because God can be found and seen anytime in its happy loving nature, the person can continually embark on a fruitful relationship with his Mentor. When he fully dies to himself, the person can slip into being that Mentor and the mentor in his soul and the environment of his soul can then be recognized as him in the world. He is complete. He is his own church, his own nation, and has his own identity and has come full circle—from him to God to him. As he continues to peacefully coexist in the real world past this point, the actual him surpasses the wisdom of his once-imagined mentor. The student has become his own master (adult).

Now, of course, there is Life itself that propagates the universe. This is the ever-present God—the non-critical, non-judgmental life force. This is not what I am speaking of. I am speaking of the God in you. He is the one you imagine (the Spirit God) to help you find and guide you into your own identity and to transition you into manhood and womanhood. He is the I Am to whom you will see yourself. In other words, he is your true identity, your true self. Some may even say that the Spirit God is actually a projection from the untraumatized child ego (who is hidden within the trauma) to an imagined unconditionally loving parental power on the other side of the trauma to rid the trauma and free it. But all along it was, in fact, the child ego breaking itself free. This is the power of the child ego. This may explain better the perception of God versus the devil and heaven versus hell and the warring that takes place. At any rate, the Spirit God helps the child ego work through the trauma to rid it so to reveal and comfort the hiding innocent child within. This is known as respect. Thus, the Spirit God becomes the child's savior. This is the esteem (love for the recognized spirit) you feel. And once it has esteem, the child ego still follows his Spirit God to become very secure and independent. Then it begins to feel very confident and whole again. This is when the ego comes into its own. But now the child ego is not a child anymore. It is a man or woman spirit. When the child ego fully matures, it identifies itself with the Spirit God and as the Spirit God. It realizes that it is the I Am and created God through imagination to save it and complete its maturation to full self-awareness.

Understand that people who stay in abusive relationships don't realize that it is as abusive as you and I know it is. Their perceived real abuse is the outside world. They know what they are doing in their world. They know how it works and they know for certain that they will at least get some comfort from time to time in their world. They are totally convinced that they will gain absolutely no comfort in the outside world. They thus choose some comfort over absolutely no comfort.

But you can escape this imprisonment and live happily and peacefully while still alive via this imaginative process or path of which I believe Jesus took. Believing in you by believing God exists is the first step, hoping you are there somewhere by imagining God somewhere is the second, and trusting yourself by inquiring of (asking) God is the third. Then receiving your truth by listening to what God tells you, acquiring wisdom by understanding your truth through committing to God and persevering in (working through what you received with) God until you

find or comprehend God's truth for yourself, honoring yourself by offering up a response you believe is respectable to God as the pivotal point in your own evolution, feeling esteemed by feeling God's love within you because of how you handled yourself, accepting yourself fully by realizing that God loves you even though you didn't do it all perfectly, devoting yourself to yourself by devoting yourself to God over and over again on a regular basis, being intimate within yourself by feeling God securely within you, releasing or dying to your subjective self (ego) by no longer controlling (judging) yourself and thinking about stuff (worrying) anymore and just relying solely that God will point you in the right direction and drive you to speak and do whenever and however you need, and finally identifying yourself as you by realizing God is you in absolute confidence.

To Spirit (men and women), ego is never sinful—ego is only a child trapping itself because it is so fearful. As we mature, we become wise. Wisdom sees things more objectively and not just black and white. Thus, wisdom sees things as permissible outside the child's law. So when we explore or experiment outside the law, the ego makes us feel guilty and ashamed and places us under the illusion that we are being sinful. Ego asserts its victimization by judging itself all the time and asserts its righteousness by judging everything else all the time in regards to it. One moment it will be ultra-conservative and the next it will be ultra-liberal if it needs to be. We become very confused and anxiety-ridden because we need to mature into men and women but our traumatized ego fights us all the way.

In reality, ego that has been traumatized is too afraid to take the steps necessary to become a man or woman. Ego thus becomes defensive and simply believes it shouldn't have to do anything it doesn't want to do, but everyone else should succumb to it. Ego wants what it wants when it wants it. It reacts in all emotion to most all situations. It manipulates, schemes, bullies, and even becomes a victim to get what it wants. These are nothing but temper tantrums started by a fearful ego. Punishing children for having temper tantrums just reinforces their perception of the abusive and more powerful nature of the outside world.

Now, ego is not bad. It has only been traumatized. As children, we need ego for our very survival. But as we transition into adulthood (through adolescence), we begin to ask ourselves, "Who am I?" And at the end of our journey we find out, "Who I am." We become the I Am as men and women. More and more we don't need the traumatized ego to protect us from the outside world. We grow more confident as we experiment in living. The ego was there to protect us, but when we want to leave because we are growing up, our traumatized ego is the one that imprisons us. It is ultra-stubborn. The ego truly does believe it is protecting us, not imprisoning us. But our wisdom that we gained by following our imaginative God knows differently. The ego fights back trying to make us fit into its mold of moral law. But we are simply outgrowing (transcending) our own egos now in a normal, healthy manner, and finding it acceptable to do so.

The traumatized ego tries to protect you at all costs. It does not want you to be wise to that which is outside of it. In many ways, ego is one's Garden of Eden in childhood. But one must live life in order to mature. So, when we are introduced to life, the illusion that the traumatized ego produces for us begins to wane more and more. The ego is subjective. God is objective. As we mature, we find life as paradoxical simply because we are leaving our subjective egos and following our objective mature selves. Eventually ego can't keep up. And the ego gets very upset and kicks us out as a manipulative tactic so we will come back and beg forgiveness for our

sins because of how hard it was on the outside. The ego would never lovingly take you and help you work through life because it knows it would be advocating its own death by going outside its comfort zone and it so fears its own death. This is why it tries to hang on and fight as long as it can.

I believe that God in the Old Testament is actually the Traumatized Ego (a child of conditional love born of abuse) by itself without any Spirit God savior. God in the New Testament is the innocent child ego linked to its projected Spirit God savior working through and out of the ego's trauma. In the New Testament we follow Jesus' own path of maturation, possibly from trauma in youth to peacefulness in manhood. When we acquire wisdom, we find respect, and then esteem (love), and then acceptance. This acceptance is paramount because acceptance is when we realize that love is still there loving us even though we stepped outside the box of the ego's moral law. This is known as unconditional love. Now we get to choose between staying a traumatized ego (with conditional love) and God (unconditional love). And we choose to devote ourselves to unconditional love.

The more we become adults, the more we see our healthy egos as nuisances rather than advocates for our own peace of mind. This is good. It means we are growing up. It's like when older siblings don't want their younger ones following them everywhere they go. It's known as adolescence. As our egos say to us "No, no, don't do that", we ignore it by continuing on in faith trusting God over it. But because of trauma, we imagine God so to transcend our traumatized egos' abusiveness. The ego cannot enter into imagination. As we mature, we continually try to escape (transcend) our egos. The mind knows that it cannot do this by its will. Its will and ego are very connected. They are buddies. Rather, the mind realizes that it must go into imagination where the ego cannot enter. And, thus, to whatever we imagine God eventually becomes who we are and more and more the traumatization of the ego dies away. If the trauma is dead, moral law is dead, and thus sin is dead.

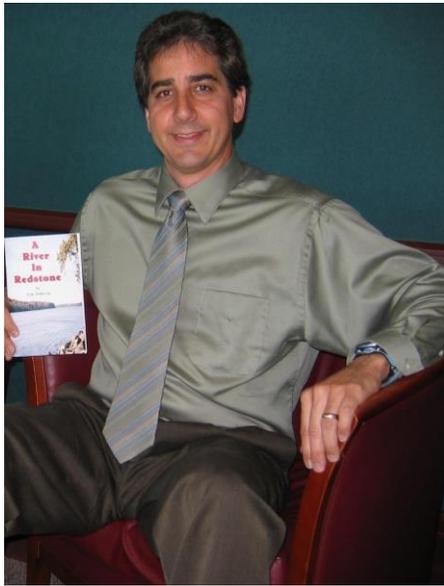
Now as men and women secure in ourselves, and our trauma (devil) is dead and powerless over us (the addictiveness broken forever), we can now come to appreciate what our healthy original egos tried to do for us. We aren't angry with our egos anymore. We forgive our egos. We can now actually truly and unconditionally love our egos because its controlling craziness is gone. This means that we are able to appreciate and forgive others as well because we realize they are going through the same thing. We recognize the child ego through the wasteland of destroyed trauma. Their rash behavior is driven by the traumatization of their own egos. We see others objectively as the children or adults they really are. We are no longer fearful. We then resurrect our healthy original egos from the ashes of its traumatization (pretense) as the free and wonderfully happy children they are and accept them into our new home—the heaven we created with the loving God Parent we've become. And the child ego is matured into loving adults by way of the guidance of our Spirit God. And our egos are very happy playful children who feel safe again. And we men and women feel happy living in the world and confident in facing each and every moment along the way while being responsible and loving to our children. That which was imagined now becomes actualized in the real world. And, instead of fearing, we draw strength by all that in our surroundings that we choose to peacefully coexist with.

352. Goodbye My Love

Spirituality is all about growing up. When you become a man or woman secure in yourself, you've made it. Don't search any further. It's done. You make your own rules and you don't ever apologize anymore for who you are. Be free, my child. And like any good parent, I release you to yourself. It's been a long trip and we've come to our end together. Remember to confess your needs rather than your sins. Because of Me, your sins have been taken care. People sin because they have a need that must be met but try to satisfy that need their own way without Me and My wisdom I have for them. And they are never satisfied because of it. So even though I have already taken care of your sins by My Son's death, you still need to satisfy your need. So remember to do it through Me. Confess your need and not your sin and take the journey to satisfy your needs with Me in the way I've shown you. Be you and be happy. If you need Me, I'll always be there for you. Find your own life and thrive in it with no excuses and no apologies. You are ready. You are free. Trust me. It's all in you. It's all there. And be not concerned with the "what-if", "what-was", or "what-can-be" in life—those extraneously distracting matters—but only with the "what-is" in life, for this is all you can control—the reality of the day within your own room of Heaven. For freedom is letting go of the extraneous and being left alone to live in your own room—the room you have secured by Me. For, I have given you this room. Do not dishonor it. Do not forsake it because to forsake it is to forsake me. It is your room in Heaven and it is divine. Do not invite troubled minds and souls into it. Do not let any other person reside there who is not there now. Let these others go. You concentrate only on your own room. Let their rooms be to them, for I will take care of them. And when you need Me, you'll find Me. Just ask, and I will be there. Goodbye My Love. See you soon. I so love you.

Signing off for now. 12 May 07 (Updated 16 Apr 08)

PLEASE S



FOR AUDIO

Of Healing

Tim DiMella

For All of God's Children

Copyright © 2007 by Tim DiMella. All Rights Reserved. All scripture quotations and references from: "Scripture taken from the HOLY BIBLE, NEW INTERNATIONAL VERSION. Copyright © 1973, 1978, 1984 International Bible Society. Used by Permission of Zondervan Bible Publishers."

<Start Audio>

Introduction

Hi. My name is Tim DiMella. I think that you are about to find more hope, happiness, and peace in your life as we take a journey together—a Path of love and healing—known as The River of Life (Ezekiel 47-48 and Revelation 22). The Path is filled with God’s love and secret insights about real issues that all of us tackle at one time or another. It’s about growing up into real adulthood in God’s Kingdom—also known as the Kingdom of God or Kingdom of Heaven (see Psalm 48 and Luke 17:20-21).

One day, I felt compelled to write my lessons learned on this Path with Christ. See, after a long stretch of feeling hopeless to reach my dreams and share my dreams with others, I turned and faced God and admitted my own insecurities, and it felt good to be accountable for my own actions. It was then that I received Christ as my Savior along with his fulfillment, love and understanding. And it was this that brought me to where I am today.

All my life I had been seeking a mentor, someone to show me the ropes so life wouldn’t be so hard. I also thought if only I had a guidebook. I read the Bible a long time ago, but I never really understood it, and so I gave up on it way back when. But now the Word (JN 1:1-18) is my dearest friend.

For a long time I struggled for my own identity, as you may have. I felt alone with just me and all this great stuff in me to give to others. All I wanted was an outlet and some people who’d take it and be changed or touched in some way because of it. But I felt like no one was there to listen, to really take me seriously. Then one day I found Christ. It was he who helped me grow into who I really am by going down the Path with him. Though I knew from time to time that God was in my life, without Christ I felt I wasn’t developing into a whole person.

Only until some years ago when God guided me to seek professional help and my continued diligence in listening to Him, did I understand what true love and grace were. A little while ago, I wrote a little trail book called, “A River in Redstone”, about an actual path down by the Tennessee River on a military installation called Redstone Arsenal in Alabama that describes, in about 40 pages, the path that Christ led me through in my life so I could face the real world and be happy. The path has 12 actual stops, or what I call harbors, along the River that are keys to living life and maturing into a loving and confident adult. My path with Christ was such a positive experience for me, and still is, that I actually wound up enjoying being part of life as an adult without being afraid to share who I am. And I found out that life isn’t as hard as I once thought, especially when seen from the eyes of someone who loves someone else greater than he loves himself.

This unconditional love is what allows all of us to really see life for what it really is and be part of it, and feel free to have fun in it while being ourselves. And now it’s your turn. So come with me, and we’ll go down this River of Life together, at least for a little while, and I’ll show you what Christ showed me. And maybe together, with the help of our Father, you can find the peace and happiness you’ve been looking for too.

So, come on! Here we go.

PLEASE SCROLL DOWN



Where Are You and How Did You Get Here?

It can be scary entering the real world, especially if you didn't grow up having someone to teach you. Right now, you might feel like you're all alone in a deep dark place, like in a valley or a pit. Maybe you feel desperate and afraid, seeing only thick woods all around and maybe people who don't seem to really care or who really don't get who you are and what you're about. And even though the place you're in is really scary, sometimes leaving is scarier. So you're kind of stuck. Maybe you even feel trapped, and there just doesn't seem like any way out. And if there were, there's no one you can trust to see you out safely and help guide you.

That's kind of how I felt before I found Christ. I wasn't ready to go into the real world, but the real world was drawing me into it. I felt totally trapped without the power to break out. But after being in enough pain and enough desperation where I was, I finally just had to look at me instead of looking at everyone else for how I felt and how I acted, and take the leap. I had to turn and face me—a person who felt empty and who felt had no direction and no way of knowing what to do. And the only way I could turn and face me was by turning and facing God. And by doing this, I discovered the first harbor on the River to gaining power and freedom in life.

So, where are you really? Well, believe it or not, you're exactly where you're supposed to be to begin gaining true power in *your* life. In other words, God has called you (like He called me) from the exact place you are now to fulfill a purpose in your life under His power that He wants to give you. And I don't mean the kind of power to go out so you can be right back where you started. I mean the kind of power that releases you from fear and desperation (Romans 8:15). I mean the kind of power that allows you to be the real you and allows you to overcome condemnation from your thoughts, feelings, and actions. The kind of power that truly sets you free by giving you free access (without guilt or retribution) to the presence—the body, mind, feelings, and love (essence) of God Himself (Ro 8:27, Ro 12:2, and Eph 3:12). Yes, because God is Love, you have free access to God Himself without having to go through anyone else.

Right about now, you might be asking yourself, "How did I get here?" I know that when I got in the place I was—really unhappy and desperate for a way out—I didn't understand how I wound up there. I couldn't really pinpoint the exact time and place in my life when I turned away from my true self and toward that place I was in. But I realized later that I wound up there because I idolized somebody or something. These people or things are known as false gods (John 10:34 and Acts 19:26). When I was a child, it wasn't my fault that I idolized people, but it would be my fault today as an adult if I allowed myself to idolize somebody else. When you idolize, you tend to expect someone or something else to fill your emptiness, your needs, and your desires. But others can't fill your emptiness or your needs or your desires for any real length of time. And there'll come a day, when they won't be there for you to go to for one reason or another. So, if you can't go to that someone or something anymore, then who or what can you go to?

Who can you always go to for help when you really need something? Who will always love you enough that, even when you're embarrassed or ashamed to confess things you've done and ask for help, you won't wind up feeling embarrassed or ashamed because that person isn't embarrassed or ashamed of you? Who can you always trust absolutely to be there for you—to be your advocate, your buddy, and your true friend—even on your bad days? Who? Who can you always turn to and face unconditionally—no matter what? **PLEASE SCROLL DOWN.**



So Who Can You Turn To?

God did not create you to be alone! You may feel alone only because you haven't traveled down the River (also known as the Path) with your Father yet, but you're not alone. Only the lies you believe about you, and the life you're leading keep you alone. Actually, you're really in good company whether you see it or not. Yes, you have a lot of people willing and able to help you. They truly love you very much and made it their purpose to be with you to show you how to get where you need to go. So, let me share with you those you can trust right now.

God

You can trust God right now. The first and greatest Truth is that God is the creator *of* you (Jeremiah 1:4-5). You were created by God who is able to take a portion of Him—His Spirit—and place it in you. So, it just goes to show that you were created by God in His image as part of Him. You reflect His vision and mold. He is your True Father who is perfect and purely loving and purely loves you every moment of every day. And you are part of that love and, whether you know it or not, you have something in you that can identify perfectly with that love. It is impossible for us to find unhindered, continuous love from others. People are human, and they sometimes have a hard time themselves dealing with things—just like you and me. That continuous, unwavering kind of love we will only find from our True Father.

The second greatest Truth is that God is *in* you. As you venture down the River, this information is very useful. If God is in you, then everything you're afraid of can be reconciled with in you—even if others aren't so willing. God is always willing. People can be another story. Yes, for the most part, you'll be able to understand, accept, and be friends with (belong in) who and what you feared. People were created to coexist (be, live) in peace and harmony with one another, just like with nature.

And the third greatest truth is that God is *for* you. He is your greatest advocate for your desires in life and, at the same time, for your own wellbeing. You may desire anything because everything is permissible to desire, but it may not be wise for you to actually do. That's where God's Spirit comes in.

Christ (The Spirit)

Jesus is God's Son, just like you are God's child, who was one (united or synonymous) with God's Spirit. And, because of this, he is known as Christ. Jesus was born with a particular purpose—just like you. His particular purpose is to stop you from avoiding God so you'll stop hurting yourself and form a deep, personal relationship with your Father.

Jesus delivered to his disciples the Truth on how to navigate through life and wipe away their (feelings of) shame by providing them a River, which was a Way out of bondage. You are one of these modern-day disciples because you, too, are going down your River with Christ. Once the disciples truly believed (had faith in) Jesus for who he really

was, Jesus left so that his spirit could reside in them forever and not just on the outside. After Jesus died, the disciples grieved and, at the end of their grief, they found Christ (Jesus' Spirit of Love and Truth) living deep inside them. This changed their lives forever.

Christ instructs and counsels you from within like how Jesus instructed from the outside—just in a more personal and unique way to you. The Spirit in you is a unique Spirit given to you from God. It abides by all of God's moral guidelines, but the Spirit in you is uniquely suited just for you and no one else. It knows where you are now and has the unlimited patience and forgiveness to see you through to the end. So don't worry if you feel like you've messed up. Christ knows, and he knows why. The important thing is that you continue to have that faith in him and continue on down the River with him. Christ is ready to share all he knows with you just like how he shared everything with his disciples when he was here on earth.

What Christ promised everyone is true.

“For God so loved the world that He gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life” (JN 3:16).

“Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives; he who seeks finds; and to [the one] who knocks, the door will be opened.” (Matthew 7:7-8)

People

It's okay to go to people for help—just don't idolize them. These people are wise people who receive and put into action the wisdom that Christ has given them. They're God's helpers, not gods. They have what are known as limits or boundaries just like you and me. These people want to help you by sharing with you their wisdom because they love you. They don't want any payback, and there are no strings attached. The thing is that you need to go down the River a little while with Christ so you can weed out the truly wise and loving people from the pretenders. You can give yourself all the way over to God and Christ right now, but you're right and wise to be cautious of people, at least until you get to know them some. As you venture down the River, you'll be able to see how Christ treats you, and then you'll be able to see who treats you in the same way or not.

Like the Bible says, “Are not all angels ministering spirits sent to serve those who will inherit salvation? He makes his angels winds [Spirits who are free to deliver God's love]. (JN 3:5-8 and Heb 1:7, 14).” One day as you continue further in your journey, you will come to find yourself in synch with Christ in you, and then you too will wind up being a person who ministers or imparts the wisdom Christ gave to you on others freely and uniquely for them.

PLEASE SCROLL DOWN



The River's Path

Okay, so you have a problem and you need a way out of it. Like I said before, you're not alone. God created us never to go through things alone. There are millions of people just like you that have similar problems like the one you have. The thing that is different about you is that you are one of the few who've decided to do something about it. You've decided to take the first step—journey into the first harbor—by turning and facing God and the reality of the thing or person you've been idolizing (taking your focus off God). And that means you also chose to turn and face you. And now that you've turned, where do you go? Is there a path? And, if so, what is the path? Better yet, how do you walk the path? How do you even begin?

These are the questions everyone is asking and only a few have actually found the answers to. People say to themselves, "Now that I've turned and faced, where do I go from here? What is the way out? How does it work? What is life about? How does life work? What is my purpose in life? How do I walk *with* this purpose? Because, I gotta tell ya, it just ain't workin' for me where I am now."

Maybe you even thought to yourself, "I need to do something. I can't do this anymore." And it was at this very point that you turned, whether realizing it or not. It was at this very point that you realized you needed to leave the Valley you're in.

You already discovered that God is your unconditionally loving Father and that there are two main realities in life—the one you're in and God's. The one you're in feels dark and isolating because it *is* dark and isolating. Don't fool yourself. It is what it is. But God's reality is free and full of light. When you turn and face life, God's Path on the River of Life simultaneously appears before you. You may not be able to see it yet, but it is there. Now, the Path's not easy—you probably already figured that out—but with God it is very doable. Sometimes when you have it too easy, you can take life for granted and wind up in the same place you're in now. Sometimes we need that wake-up call that shouts, "Hey! Wake up! It ain't as bad as you think it is, but it ain't easy either!"

Okay, so let me describe the Path to you. The Path is on The River of Life, and it takes you to twelve harbors on the River. I'll describe them all in detail later. What you need to know right now is that God created the River and the Path for all His children to bring them home. Home is where true love is and is where God lives. God is this love. So when you've fallen in love, you're home. The River's given name is Grace, and Grace is what ties all the harbors together because, without it, you could not reach any of them. In other words, without Grace, the rest of the harbors in front of you need not even exist. The River is called Grace because you need grace to fall in love again. This is the tenth harbor. Grace is the vehicle (River) to gain true love—like the love of a child, innocent and pure and perfect. We lose sight of love when we are hurt by others we loved or hurt others we love. We stop trusting ourselves and others. And we isolate. God always loves you and, thus, gives you all the grace you need to find this love again.

As you venture through the River towards love again, your mind will remember times you've wronged others and they've wronged you. This will produce either anger or feelings of regret within you. And this may lead to action that is destructive (sinful). But if you believe in an unconditionally loving spirit that wants to give you its grace to give to yourself and others along the way, you will make it all the way down the River. Grace is a river with harbors that are like special keys that open the door to your heart and soul one at a time toward feeling confident and/or

deserved to fall in love and be loved again. This Grace or Mercy is delivered freely to you by God simply because you are His child. Once you find the Spirit (being in the Spirit's presence), you'll be able to resume on the right path with him. The Spirit is your confidant, your friend, your companion, and your buddy. The Spirit and you are never too far away from each other to hear one another's voice. It may just take you a little while to find him depending on how lost you are.

PLEASE SCROLL DOWN



Ways to Lose

Grace begins with each need or desire that you, as a human being, have by way of a noble thought, idea, or inspiration. Needs are important. And needs are always fine (permissible). It is how you fulfill your need that may or may not be so noble. For instance, wanting to change your life for the better is a noble thought, idea, or inspiration, but how you change your life could either leave you benefiting from it later or leave you wishing you hadn't started at all. This is why the Spirit beckons you to fulfill your needs by journeying down Grace with him. The Spirit wants your need to be fulfilled successfully in the manner that it deserves.

But before you start fulfilling your desire through Grace's many harbors, you first need to know how you can lose sight of Grace. You lose sight of Grace whenever you try to control the River's flow by not accepting Grace in your life and in yourself. Instead of focusing on the Spirit, you turn your eyes away and look too far ahead or look too far behind or too far away. And if you're not careful, you'll be tempted to steer your way there without the Spirit. This keeps you from living in the present and in the presence of the Spirit. So, let me share with you some ways that you can make yourself lose sight of Grace and the Spirit.

Before we begin, let's say Psalm 23 together to prepare us.

PSALM 23

The LORD is my shepherd, I shall not be in want.
He makes me lie down in green pastures,
He leads me beside quiet waters,
He restores my soul.
He guides me in paths of righteousness for His name's sake.

Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death,
I will fear no evil,
For you are with me.
Your rod and your staff, they comfort me.

You prepare a table for me in the presence of my enemies.
You anoint my head with oil; my cup overflows.

Surely goodness and love will follow me all the days of my life,
And I will dwell in the house of the LORD forever.

Okay then, let's begin.

PLEASE SCROLL DOWN

Walking by sight and not by faith:

Like I said before, Grace has many harbors. I've found there to be 12. But being only on the first harbor—the Harbor of Turning & Facing God—how do you really know that there are 11 more harbors still ahead? Can you see them up ahead? You can if you imagine them to be there, but other than that you can't. Will you still continue on toward them anyway? That is what walking by faith means. It means that you still continue on with the Spirit knowing that God has prepared a place for you somewhere down the Path. If you only walk by what you see, you can come up with every excuse in the book to stop from going on, especially if what you see ahead is dark and full of fear. Walking by faith means that nothing is too difficult to go through, especially because you have the Spirit always with you and guiding you. So, focus on the Spirit and walk by faith, instead of focusing on the world and walking by sight.

Many people tried to follow Jesus when he was on earth, and they turned away because what they saw was a path that was too difficult to go down. They chose to go back to where they were and lost sight of the Spirit. But those few disciples who chose to continue wound up being very happy they did.

Trying to be perfect:

Grace is all about not having to be perfect and still being able to reach fulfillment. That is how much God loves you and wants you to achieve happiness. It's not about being perfect along the way; it's about developing a relationship with the Spirit so you can find a complete happiness with God. You're not supposed to be perfect along the way. The Spirit is perfect. You're human. God created you human for His own purpose. God does not need you perfect. He needs you human. In fact, the more you accept Grace by going down it, the more human you'll feel, and the more your Spirit will become evident in your life.

God loves to father you. He loves to give you His Grace so that He and you can share in a beautiful relationship together. He loves it when you admit your faults to Him and His Spirit. And if He does discipline you, it will be with love and encouragement for your own good. He won't make you feel unworthy and lowly. God absolutely loves to father his children with love because He is Love. When you are too afraid to confess to Him your foul-ups, it is your own condemning fears and false beliefs about God and Christ that condemn yourself. You condemn yourself to misery at the same time that God wants to give you His Grace to go down. And there's nothing worse than feeling trapped in misery.

If you understand that God needs you human, and you allow yourself to be human, then you'll be okay (fine) with everyone around you being human too. And you'll succeed at whatever you set out to accomplish. And when you still see you worthy in God's eyes—even while behaving human—then you find out what love really is, and you're able to feel loved and start feeling freer.

Avoiding, Denying, or Fearing Life:

You belong in a world that is good, a world that includes all of God's creations, and a world that is empowering and loving. You belong here. You just need to travel down the Path to find this world that you're not used to being in. You don't belong to the other world—the world that is dark and full of abuse, the world that schemes and plays games, the world that condemns and oppresses you. You've been in that world. That's how you found yourself in the Valley. You were a kid who idolized someone other than God and that someone disappointed (shocked) you through not-so-good behavior. So then, you belong in this life (world)—the world of light and love—with Christ. Don't avoid it. Seek it and find it by going down the Path of Grace.

Feeling Ashamed of Yourself:

You no longer have to feel ashamed of who you are if you turn and face God and follow His Spirit down Grace. Grace was created to stop you from feeling ashamed of who you are. If you feel ashamed of who you are, you are not experiencing Grace and not recognizing yourself human. Sin is not what makes you abandon God. Once you are aware of how you treated others by the consequences that arose from your sin, you feel ashamed of yourself and ashamed of who you are. And it is this shame that makes you feel like you aren't worthy to be in the presence of God or others anymore. So, you isolate—abandoning God and abandoning others. Shame is in the Valley where all

sin is stored up to continually and falsely remind you that you are not worthy enough to be in God's presence. When you were a child, you may have felt ashamed of something you did, but you didn't know how to deal with it. Today, you do by knowing there is a River called Grace and how to go down it.

You need to know that Jesus died so that Grace would come and present to you a way of leaving the Valley you're in—a way of following him to the realization that life is about being human, not being perfect, and that you can still be happy and human at the same time. It's a way that you can one day forgive yourself and others so that you can one day live again with yourself and others. But like anything in life worth reaching, there is a process to it. The River is that process. By turning and facing God and starting to walk with Christ through Grace, you will have started your path of healing and eventual peace and happiness.

But do you really believe it? If you follow the Path of Grace, you will eventually believe that you are worthy to live happily by becoming intimate with God. When you really believe way down deep in your soul that you are forgiven or know the truth of whether you really need to be forgiven or not, you'll know who the Spirit really is and what the Spirit is really like, and you'll become strong on your journey with him.

Feeling Guilty to Walk the Path:

You may have been told all your life to think of others before you think of yourself. You may have been instilled with the belief that you must give without thinking of receiving anything in return. So, you might ask yourself, "Isn't it selfish for me to take so much time out to discover who I am and what I need when there are people wallowing in misery here that I can help now? Shouldn't I feel guilty?"

What you need to ask yourself is, "If I'm not willing to receive all that God wants to give me, then what am I giving away?" You can't keep on giving what you can't replenish. If you do, you'll wind up giving all of you until there is nothing left of you. And besides, how do you know what to give to whom and how much? Christ even says be careful not to give your pearls (your true treasures within) to pigs (Matthew 7:6).

This is why you must be shown by the Holy Spirit. God wants to form a personal relationship with you first before you start giving away the farm. Remember that He is your supplier as well as your protector. His secret wisdoms are yours, and if you will walk with Him, rather than running to and for everyone else first, you'll discover this.

Guilt comes about because a person is refusing to accept grace for him or herself or give grace to another. It's usually because a person expects him or herself to be perfectly good or expects someone else to be perfect good according to his or her beliefs and one or the other fails to be. This produces a great deal of stress in a person's life. Thinking that you need to be perfect or someone else needs to be perfect usually stems from a fear of condemnation, rejection, or change. People tend to isolate and place themselves in an illusion or dream state instead of living life. This is why it is very important to go down the River so that you will wind up being able to accept grace for yourself and deliver grace to others. Then you'll believe that you do not deserve to ever be condemned or rejected. And if you are, then it is of no fault of your own, which in fact it isn't. In addition, you won't fear change either because you have changed, and you now know what change is all about.

There is a type of guilt called obligation that will enslave you, if you let it, because it is opposite to what God wants for you. Remember, God is all about freeing, not enslaving (1 Cor 7:20-24). Love-hate relationships are based on this type of guilt. You can love the person as a person, but you hate their behaviors toward you. You hate how they treat you or are so needy of you and your time to the point of you not having a life of your own. So, you eventually try to change them in order for you to have some freedom of your own. But they just don't have a willing spirit to listen to you and take you seriously. Their pride outweighs their common sense and all this does is make you more frustrated and resentful, which in turn can make you feel ashamed of yourself for feeling this way. What you need to understand is that you haven't been given the power to change anyone. Only God can convert people. You feeling obligated to help and delay your own life, rather than proceeding on the River, is a clear indication that you are too easily influenced by others and their needs. You do not yet have the ability to leave others be and hand them over to God, so that the Spirit can draw them down the River with him. You're trying to be God by being your own false god, whether you believe it or not, and avoiding the real God that's asking you to follow Him. So, go follow Him!

Love-hate relationships turn into resentment because you're too scared to tell the person that he or she needs to be accountable for his or her behaviors by way of the Holy Spirit. Once you stand up for yourself and hand the person over to God by deciding to go down the River yourself with Christ, the hate starts going away and the love remains because you don't feel trapped anymore. You don't have to love your mother or father's behavior towards you, and you don't have to tolerate it just because they are your mother and father. Jesus loved his mother and father, but when there came a choice who to follow, even if it meant cutting the ties between them, God came first. Jesus did not tolerate even his own mother's reluctance and negative behavior (Matthew 10 and 12:46-50). And you don't have to either, whether they are your parents, friends, colleagues, or anyone else.

So then your goal must be first to help yourself by developing a personal and intimate relationship with God, even before you can truly help your neighbor. And that is okay. That is what God wants for you. He doesn't want you to *have* to help your neighbor. He wants you to *want* to help your neighbor. And the only way to truly want to help your neighbor is by knowing who you are and your own limits or boundaries set for you by God Himself. And the only way to know them is by first going down the River of Grace yourself.

Panicking:

If a loving father saw you, his child, being drawn away by a rushing stream, wouldn't he jump in and hold on to you even if it meant his own life? But what is known to the wise father is that the stream is only a few feet deep and many times we never realize this and panic. But the father says, "Stop panicking. It's hard to hold you like this". And so you listen to your loving father, and miraculously you start becoming calmer because you trust your father. Then, your father picks you up and stands in the water and carries you to dry land. And then the father hugs you and then compassionately asks you what you were doing in the water and how you lost your way. If you did something wrong on purpose, but you won't admit to it because you're too ashamed, then your father admonishes (places a loving reminder in) you to confess. If you confess, then the two of you can continue with your adventure, but now with some of the father's loving wisdom (discipline). But if you really did do something wrong on purpose and you still refuse to admit it, then a tougher loving reminder is needed (not a beating but a sterner discipline), delaying the fun adventure even further.

When we place ourselves in a position that we don't need to be in, we start panicking. We can see ourselves being embarrassed and ashamed of ourselves. So, we either hide the truth or face and surrender the truth. This is the same as hiding from going down Grace or facing and surrendering yourself over to Grace. If you had a father like the one at the stream, wouldn't you just be inclined to *want* to confess the truth because being with him is so much better than not being with him? And besides when you're with him, you don't panic. Life is so much better, and you're so much happier. And one day, when you're grown up, you too will have him and his confidence in you so you can go out and face the world and be part of it—and not panic.

That's what Grace is all about. It's about maturing by going through its harbors so one day you can be let go when you're ready and be free to live your own life happy each day with God and His Spirit (Love) in you always.

Listening to Undisciplined Children:

In John 7:38, Jesus talks about streams (channels) of living water as off-springs from the main River (see also Proverbs 5:15-17 and Isaiah 8:7). Job says in Chapter 6 Verse 15-17 that "my brothers are as undependable as intermittent streams, as the streams that overflow when darkened by thawing ice and swollen with melting snow, but that cease to flow in the dry season, and in the heat vanish from their channels."

This stream that Jesus and Job speak of is a figurative stream that describes children who should be lovingly raised and disciplined by loving and compassionate fathers and mothers, but instead have been misguided. These children just do as they please without regard for anything or anyone. They have their own views on life apart from God and believe it's either their way or the highway.

A child—even an adult who still thinks like a child—needs discipline (wisdom) so that he will stay on the Path of Grace. But too harsh the discipline, and he won't trust Grace. And so, he won't trust life. He believes Grace is only a trick for someone to get something else later down the road. And he believes that life is really just out to get him

any way it can. Too light the discipline, and he never thinks he needs Grace. This is why discipline must be loving, and part of being loving is being stern (assertive and not aggressive).

Choosing to be Anything but Caring:

How do we know if someone is serving us in true love or not? We know by understanding the very important aspects of apathy (passiveness), caring (assertiveness), caretaking (enabling and aggressiveness), and manipulation (scheming) and trusting our feelings when we experience each one. Caring is the wind (ministering spirit) that ministers the flow of Grace. It is the nature of God and is, therefore, a balanced state of faith dictated by God. Apathy, caretaking, and manipulation are unbalanced states of faith dictated by ego (self).

In the Book of Genesis, you see how the Tree of Knowledge woke Adam and Eve up to see these disrespectful behaviors and how the Tree of Life (see also Daniel 4) helps you escape from the bondage of being ashamed of yourself for falling for them. Apathetic, caretaking, and manipulative behaviors are signs of insecurity. When you become secure within yourself by way of the Holy Spirit through God's Holy Grace (on the River of Life), you realize that you are your own church or temple, just as equal to any other under God, but part of a huge community or body of other churches that are loving and generous. And knowing and feeling this brings about genuine caring that is freeing and unconditional.

Now let us talk about apathy. Apathy is a manipulative way of controlling. One type of apathy is when someone condones whatever you wish or, if a parent, for instance, lets you do whatever you wish usually either because they think you are too hard to deal with or as a manipulative way to say, "See, I told you so" later. We tend to have no respect for people, especially as children for our parents, when this happens. Another type of apathy is waiting for someone to save you and then take care of you without wishing to be empowered (responsible) yourself. This type of apathy is known as the "Victim Complex." People with this complex tend to say things like, "I don't know how to do anything. I'm stupid. You'll just have to do it for me."

The apathetic person will most likely blame you for their lives being miserable because they had to spend too much time on you or blame themselves for not being intelligent enough "like everyone else". Believe me when I tell you that there is nothing you can do or could have done to make them happy. You have absolutely no control in that environment. Thinking you have control of that is an illusion. Their apathy is a result of past neglect and abuse in their own lives before you ever came along. If you feel tied to apathy, turn and face God and go down the River with Christ.

And then there is caretaking. Caretaking is known as the "Savior Complex." A person with the savior complex needs apathetic people to idolize him or her, never intending to release them from his or her bondage. We have a lot of "saviors and martyrs" on earth. Caretaking is one of the primary causes of domestic violence because the caretaking person is so insecure and afraid to face the real world that he or she needs you as a shelter. And when you refuse, it triggers a feeling of betrayal in the caretaker that is a reminder of their own betrayal by someone in their own past who they idolized.

Why is caretaking hard to detect? Simply put, caretakers smother others, and people allow it because people have a difficult time discerning what loving gesture is really being done out of love and what loving gesture is being done out of fear. People living with caretakers sense fear and anger on the inside of them where their peers only see love by what they do on the outside. This is why good deeds on the outside will never save you apart from genuine love and faith on the inside. A caretaker is scared of change (the unknown) for themselves, so much that they cannot bear being a part of your efforts in risking the unknown. Some will even go so far and try to jail you or institutionalize you in your own home. They steal your esteem (power or key) and then hide the power or the key they stole from you, knowing that the only way to retrieve it is to go after them, which was their plan in the first place as a ploy for your attention and neediness. They want to always keep you by their side.

Caretakers usually see themselves as guardians (spouses, parents, priests, ministers, siblings, CEOs and so forth) who were most likely either abused or abandoned as children. But they are just as controlling and manipulative as people who are apathetic because they try to guilt you into doing things their way. Caretakers usually project their fears onto you convincing themselves that whatever they see you doing that was traumatizing to them is very bad for

you. This makes you build a wall of fear for yourself sometimes to the point of never wanting to go outside, which is exactly what the caretaker wants. For example, a person who was traumatized by people in a church, may try to steer you away from religion. However, as we know, there are some happy people in some very fine churches. Caretakers may even find you delusional or deranged if you follow Christ. This is because they know that they can no longer ever have power over you ever again because Christ is the real key. They know that it is only a matter of time before you'll leave them, just like how the slaves left Egypt in the Old Testament to follow God by way of Moses.

Just as people who are apathetic will abandon you in a great big world that you see as a huge monster that is after you, caretakers can be like a wall of fear that keeps you totally isolated from any love in the world. And as a result, you who are innocent become ashamed of yourself and who you are, and you continue that way if you don't travel down the River of Grace with God. You think what happened was and still is your fault. Remember that if you allow anyone or anything to get between God and you, you will not know His esteem He has for you. You won't know the true freedom. You won't ever have the divine peace. And because you don't risk being on the Path, you won't find Grace for yourself.

Remember that it is common that you may sense your abuser's fears on the inside of them where your peers only see love (their charming demeanor) by what happens on the outside. See, sometimes others use people as their drug of choice and sometimes so do we. They can't face the shame and reality themselves, so they use others as human shields. An apathetic person will use a caretaker to shield him or her from life and feel ashamed because of it at the same time for not having the esteem to face life him or herself. A caretaker will offer to be that shield, but with the power to remove it whenever he or she wants because he or she is tired of wielding it or just to be mean. A caretaker resents having to wield the shield when, in fact, it was he or she who offered to in the first place. So whenever the caretaker lowers the shield, he or she becomes ashamed of him or herself for not being perfect and not owning up to what he or she promised to do. All this creates violence in the home.

But when either the caretaker or apathetic person finds Christ and, thus, falls in love, he or she is no longer consumed with him or herself. The caretaker can't stand seeing the apathetic person not reaching his or her full potential and starts to serve and support him or her in doing so, and the apathetic person can't stand the caretaker taking all the arrows from life and getting hurt by them just for them. So the apathetic person begins to do what it takes to take on some of his or her own responsibilities. Of course, if one sees the other as just mean, then Christ will tell either one to leave. It becomes obvious to the person in Christ that the other person has no intent of changing and that God never intended for His child to live in such a way.

But life can be very beautiful, too. You'll find that out for yourself as you go down Grace with the Spirit. It's just that the way the world works is by substituting Christ with something else that people market as the secret ingredient or cornerstone of what they do or who they are. Within all this are some deep "hidden costs" designed to make you more physically, mentally, emotionally, and spiritually indebted to them and keep you insecure (under-nourished and under-powered) so that you will always need them. The truth is that without you, they would die. Now you know the truth. God, however, is exactly opposite. He wants to free you by delivering you from all this. So, if it looks too good to be true, it probably is. If a person is charming all the time, they're most likely not. Never having a bad day means a person's not human, and like I said, God wants us human. The way you know the difference is if someone tries to sell you something rather than offering it to you.

Selling something to you means the person wants you to commit to it in his or her time. Offering it to you means the person's fine whenever you're ready to commit or not. As you become wise, you will realize that, when dealing with the world, it's not what you are shown (what you can see), it's what you are not being shown (what you can't see) that is most important. Take time to really listen and understand. Taking time (patience) to listen and understand before you sign up to anything is one of the greatest threats to these type of people in the world. Don't sign up to be apathetic (giving up your power) and don't sign up to be caretaking (taking away another person's power). Realize that with power (esteem) comes responsibility. An apathetic person doesn't want much of any responsibility. A caretaking person wants most or all the responsibility whether he or she can handle it or not. A caring person wants and takes on responsibility somewhere in between while sharing the responsibility that he or she can't all muster him or herself. The only way to know this is to know yourself. That is where Christ comes in. He will teach you about yourself so you can become wise about you. Use this secret wisdom that God gives you and make a sound and caring judgment on whatever comes your way in life.

We know that the first thing we have to do to help a drug addict is get him off the drugs. So the first thing we have to do with an apathetic or caretaking people addict is get him off the people. That means that if we are the ones being abused, we have to leave for his sake and our sake so he can stop crying inside all the time and get some help and we can heal from all those arrows (MT 19:7, 8 and 1Cor 7:11).

So, let me say this again. The greatest way to serve God and others is to first find a deep, personal relationship with Him so that you may first know yourself. So, you must not let anyone take the place of God in your life, you must not let anyone get between God and you, and you must not try to replace God with yourself. You must find your own true identity, not the one others require of you or the one you require of yourself. You need to follow God through Grace. (MT 10:34-39 and MT 12:46-50)

You need to learn what it really means to care for others so you'll know if others are really caring for you. By being apathetic, caretaking, or manipulative to others or letting others be apathetic, caretaking, or manipulative to us, we slow down our own deep, intimate relationship with God—and start losing sight of Grace and the Spirit.

Being with Those who Neither Believe in You nor Respect You:

In the Book of Mark, Jesus could only heal a few people in His hometown because so many didn't believe in him. Many of us have had similar experiences. Why is it so hard for those that we have been around all our lives to have as much belief in us as the stranger down the road has? Sometimes the stranger believes in us more.

See, people who have known us for years may not have the belief in us that we desire from them (though we should never place our path in life on people) because they already have a past imprint (prejudiced view) of us in their minds. And how they have seen us may be how they believe we still are or will be. People tend to have a hard time putting away their prejudices in order to commit to listening and understanding where we are now in our lives and, thus, convert their thinking. Many people believe but, without this conversion, their belief produces no new results. And because of this, we can feel disrespected.

It can be very easy to be distracted from Grace and the Spirit by disrespecting people. Nobody has the power to steal your power—your Spirit. They can only distract you from it for as long as they can. Remember, the Spirit is always with you. It's we who leave the Spirit. A Godly person will not feed into (be distracted by) their games. Instead, the Godly person will retain his or her dignity and the peace that goes along with it by staying focused on Grace and the Spirit. This will keep you calm under pressure because you remain living in faith. Indeed, when it comes to respect, a Godly person doesn't mirror another person's behavior as does the world. He doesn't disrespect because you are being disrespectful. This is what Jesus meant when he said to love your enemies. A Godly person does not try to control you, but strives to serve and support you. Don't be fooled by cheap imitations.

If you have a hard time respecting yourself (maybe because of your past relationships or childhood or whatever it may be) and you feel undeserved (unworthy) to meet or be with a Godly person who truly loves you, have him or her anyway at least as a friend. And make it a point to get to know God. Remember, persevere in doing the right thing and going the right way as you focus on God, even through embarrassment. A Godly person will support you and grow with you in patience. You will come to respect yourself as you grow in Christ, and you will grow to love and cherish your relationship and eventually feel good that you did persevere. And it is then that you will be so thankful you chose this Path. Trust me in this. I have first-hand knowledge.

“Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. It is not rude, it is not self-seeking. It is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs. Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. It always protects [not controls], always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres. Love never fails [to be compassionate and supportive] (1Cor 13:4-8).” This is what you will become as you grow in Christ. This is a good indicator when seeking a friend or spouse. Try to find someone who has a lot of these traits to a high degree.

Being Stubborn and Not Risking:

In my experiences, I have found that a person must risk changing (converting) himself if he is to see changes in relationships or event or whatever. A person cannot force another to change, but through God, he or she can change. And because each of us is one component in the environment we live in, our own change must and will change the environment we live in and the destructive cycle in our lives.

Sometimes you may get confused. Sometimes you do not know whether you did wrong or that others are just exploiting and manipulating you for their own personal gain. And what I know is that your willingness to change and take action to change by going down the River with Christ will solve this dilemma for you. Only your own stubbornness or refusal to change will keep you in the dilemma you're in. As you change through God by traveling through Grace, you will see yourself becoming more responsible, which will make you feel included and secure in who you are.

The Serenity Prayer

God grant me the serenity to accept the things I cannot change,
Courage to change the things I can,
And the wisdom to know the difference.

Stubbornness results from prejudice. Prejudice is making laws, rules or regulations to prevent change or exposure of our true selves. It traps resentments. Prejudice is a way to protect us against trusting others and ourselves. When we are scared to change (convert our thinking), we tend to make enforceable rules that cushion and protect us from having to change. The more rules we place on ourselves and others—whether we are apathetic or caretaking, the more rigid we become in our ways because we're afraid of change and changing, and the more stress we place on ourselves. But life is relentless when it comes to change. Life and the world are ever changing. Some changes are good and some aren't so good, but they may be necessary. When you get far enough down the River, you'll know how to change with it, and change won't scare you as much. God gives you the wherewithal to weed things out and be able to judge whether the change is good, bad, or evil. "Bad" is a relative term and usually means "not within my prejudiced viewpoint" or "going against my grain." Bad may even mean "not constructive" or "unwise". "Bad" is what brings black and white into gray, and is also the reason for people creating so many religions and denominations in the world. "Being bad" is what many religions deem as mortal sin, which, of course, they are actually the one's sinning by saying so. So then, whether good or "bad", it is permissible. It just may not be constructive or wise to do. But "bad" or "being bad" is not evil or wicked. Evil or wicked is the mortal sin. Relating the two as the same promotes heaps of abuse like in your more traditional or orthodox religions.

Grace is a process. Each harbor on the River is like a door with a key that opens your faith (your mind) more and more, letting Grace pour in. You're able to then trust your feelings about yourself and life again. But if you stay prejudiced, you will miss the Grace that the Spirit wants to take you through in reaching fulfillment and true happiness. When you decide to follow Christ through Grace, you discover secret wisdoms (treasures, pearls, sustenance) about yourself and life, and you are able to weed-out (discern) that which is healthy for you and that which is not. This takes an open mind. And when you've experienced Grace to the point of loving (being intimate with) yourself and others again, you will start to know what real freedom is.

Thinking Someone is Infallible Rather than Their Love:

There *is* such a thing as infallibility. Infallibility is when a person is so intimate with God and God's Love (The Spirit) that what is conceived and delivered (via a message or example) touches the souls of everyone around, and people just *know* it has to be from God (John 16:29-31). Infallibility is Truth. It's delivering a truth that hits home within us and is undeniable. Infallibility can never be given from the thoughts of Jesus (law of men) but only from the love of Christ (Law of love). It can only happen once a person has been transformed like Jesus the Man was transformed into Christ the Spirit. It cannot be dictated by logic or feeling. It can only be shared via love.

Succumbing to Nightmares and Phobias:

So, do you have nightmares or phobias? It's okay to confess. We're all human. When not secure in God, I can feel claustrophobic in tight spaces. I can go through some panic attacks from time to time too. It's hard for me to fly in planes. I get nightmares sometimes. I tend to succumb to obsessive-compulsive tendencies like checking the stove three or four times or if the door is locked two or three times. Yes, we all have fears and vulnerabilities, as well as

passive and aggressive and manipulative tendencies. But when I am secure (intimate) with God, I am able to hand over (free up) these things and live life in a fulfilling way again.

So when it comes to nightmares and phobias, I have found nightmares and phobias to be very similar creatures. Imagine that you have a 3x5 picture of Heaven (Life) in your hand. Do you see it? Ok, now imagine taking a little dirt from the ground and smearing it over your picture. The picture of heaven looks a little brown but it's still very visible. Now take more dirt and smear it on top of the dirt that's there now. The picture looks even more brown and maybe a little black here and there. But you can still see Heaven in the picture. It's just not looking much like Heaven anymore. Now, take some mud and smear it on top of that. Now, Heaven looks really dark and black. But you can still see Heaven in just really tiny bits and pieces and maybe just little pinholes if you hold it under the light. Maybe you'll even need a microscope to see through those pinholes. Has Heaven really turned dark or is Heaven still just as light as it ever was. Heaven is still full of light and beauty. It's just the more we allow our fear to take hold of us, the further we feel we are from Heaven and the darker our world seems. But this is an illusion. In reality, we never left Heaven, we just believe we have, and this is one of those false beliefs. You have to keep weeding out reality from deception. You have to keep focused on the Truth, which is, if you are on The River—and therefore on Grace—you are returning to your Father's Home through The Spirit healing your body, mind, heart, and soul. In other words, by going down the River, you are returning to full reality of where you once were—happy and full of life. So, in our minds we think we are lost, when in actuality, we are never lost. This is what you must come to believe—and you will when you get to the Tenth Harbor on the River, right before you enter the next harbor of delivering your passion and feeling passionate about life and the living.

Well this is all like nightmares and phobias. Nightmares come from our mind when we are asleep as we look at Heaven. Phobias come from our imaginations when we are awake as we look at Heaven. But what you don't realize is that what is scaring you are all those layers of dirt and muck that make Heaven look not like Heaven but a very scary place. What we think we see in our dreams and phobias is the whole picture as one thing, but in reality its not one whole thing—it's dirt that has come between you and the picture.

And see, shame and guilt and fear are that dirt and that muck that make you think that Heaven—that is the life you are living now as well as the life in the hereafter—isn't beautiful Heaven anymore but some kind of terrifying place. We tend to project the way we see our lives now to our lives down the road. We deem ourselves unworthy to live in the now and in the then. But look at your hand, do you still have the picture of Heaven in it? Yes, you do. It's just covered with dirt and muck. So what are you going to do to get that picture back to its proper look?

There is one real way and one unreal way we can get it back. The unreal way is if we isolated ourselves—made ourselves really tiny, like the picture, which means we'll be tinier than everyone else in the world too. And then get in between all that dirt and the picture. Then we can see the picture the way it originally looks. But that dirt and muck is pretty darn heavy on top of our tiny self and we can be swatted away at anytime by all those other bigger people. But, as you know, we can't make ourselves tiny like that, though people may choose to be that tiny in their minds— little fragile thing in their own minds lost from everybody and everything.

The real way is to take our own hands and wipe off the dirt and the muck until we get to the real picture again. But won't some of the dirt have discolored the picture, you might ask? Maybe a little, but what's on the actual picture paper? A coating of protection. So take off that little bit of protective coating and what do you have? You have true Heaven. But you can't take off that protective coating until God allows you to—that is, when you become intimate and free with Him. So, Heaven is really never dirty. It is always perfectly beautiful.

What are nightmares? It has been my experience that nightmares are little movies of our journey that you see distorted through a filtered lens of fear, both separated by a protective heavenly coating.

Nightmares and phobias may try to stop you from going on. But remember those pinholes of light? Now, look away and focus on the wall or something else for a few seconds. Now look back at your hand. Where did the picture go? The picture that was in your hand, God has now just put in your heart and soul, and He just gave you a high powered microscope to boot. Do you see the picture there?

So, just because you can't see Heaven doesn't mean that it isn't there and just as beautiful. And just because you can't see the Holy Spirit, doesn't mean he's not in you. And if you have that picture in your heart, you're going to have your heart in that picture. So what do you say about wiping away all that dirt and muck?

Believing that only Religious, Really Smart People, or People in Authority can be Intimate with God:

Intimacy (falling in love and having someone fall in love with them) is what everyone yearns for but most are too afraid to gain or show. It doesn't matter how smart you are or in what occupational position you're in or how religious you are. What matters is how much you want to change by way of the Spirit. In other words, what matters is if you have the courage to fall in love. In fact, I've noticed a lot of people relying on their intelligence to get them through life. This may be because someone they really loved hurt them. But in order to love again and be okay with it, God gives you this process of Grace. A lot of people fall in love so easily. It's good to fall in love but "bad or unwise" to not go through the process first. This is because love is so powerful, you need to know how to handle it first. Love will come, just take it slower. God down the River.

But you cannot gain true love if you don't first get in touch with your feelings, and thoughts produce feelings. And in order to get in touch with your feelings, you first need to trust that your emotions won't get the best of you or that others won't get so emotional and attack you. If you've never been in an assertive (non-aggressive and non-passive) household, you may find it hard to trust others or yourself. Getting in touch with your feelings comes later in the journey. This is why people who rely more on logic do not provide much grace or love to anyone else—not even themselves. They will not allow themselves to journey further down the River and acquire more grace for themselves.

When we can trust our feelings not to get out of control, we can accept ourselves as fine. When we can trust other people's feeling not to get out of control, we can accept them as fine too. They won't burst into emotion and leave. They won't burst into emotion and attack. Instead, they are civilized and adult. Then we will allow ourselves to be with them on a day-to-day basis, devoting ourselves to them and to us. It is during this time that many of the feelings we had bottled up are being released more and more. We begin feeling alive again. And as we release these bottled-up feelings, we leave room for love to enter, not hurt and resentment. Then we become more and more free. In fact, each harbor of Grace is one more key advancement in this deep unconditional love and a place to focus even more on this love. And each is a further and more dramatic step in overcoming your fear and becoming secure in who you are by finding love. Remember God is Love. God is the Spirit of Love. So when you fall in love, you've become intimate with God. And anyone can gain the power (esteem) to fall in love. This is why God gave us Christ.

Procrastinating Because You Think You Don't Have the Means:

One of the top reasons people don't change is because they wait until they have the means—the intelligence, education, and the resources (like money)—to change. They wait for the right time and the right place. But in this case it never comes. Why? Well, there's a secret to all this. And the secret is that what you have now is what you need in order to change. The Spirit is your means of changing. When it comes to intelligence and education, every person on the face of the earth was born with the capacity to become wise about God and life. Just because you're intelligent or educated doesn't mean your wise, and many intelligent and educated people try to substitute their book knowledge with this secret kind of knowledge or wisdom that they can only receive from Christ. The reason is because those who are open to God's instructions will become wise. Those who are close-minded will not. And whatever resources you have with you *now* is what the Spirit has given you to work with *now*. If you had any more or any less, your lessens in life *now* would not impact you enough for your purpose and passion to be fully realized later in your journey. Remember, the Spirit is your means to getting you where you need to be, and everything that you need will be given to you by the Spirit along the way. So, in fact, you do have the means right now to change your life. You just need to realize that there is a way—a path—and how it works.

PLEASE SCROLL DOWN



The Harbors of Grace

We all have this need to better ourselves, to find love, and to find happiness. But what we all must realize is that the reason why we feel the need to do this is because God is telling us to do this somewhere down deep. I kept on searching all my life. I volunteered in rehab groups and mentoring programs to heal. I read self help books, and just kept reading and finding knowledge about myself anywhere I could until one day I decided that following Christ was the only way to truly heal and feel whole again. Like Christ says, “Do not be afraid. I am the First and the Last. I am the Living One; I was dead, and behold I am alive for ever and ever! And I hold the keys of death and Hades. He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.” (Rev 1:17-18, Rev 2:7, 11, 17, 29, and Rev 3:6, 13, 22)

So now I can tell you about the 12 harbors on the River of Life—also known as Grace.

The Belief Harbor:



When you turn and face Life (God and His Path), you are ready to begin your journey on the Path of Grace (Revelation 2:1-7). Once you were in a sinking marsh or valley or pit. Now you find yourself atop some solid rock making up the Path’s first harbor known as the Harbor of Turning & Facing (also known as the Belief Harbor) (Matthew 16:13-20). And you’re ready to go through what’s up ahead of you—the Woods—on your way to the next harbor.

The Woods

The Woods is that period or area of confusion (disorientation) and desperation—like the desert that the Israelites were stuck in on their way to the Promise Land. The Woods begins from the time you fear picking up the phone and asking for help to when you’ve rid the foreign substance from in you—the drug, the secret shame, or what have you—and then receive an unconditionally loving Spirit in its place for the rest of your life.

You need to focus on God while going through the Woods. You can do this by continuing to focus on the following Ten Commandments that are truly *set in stone* (Exodus 20:1-17). Blatantly going against them in your mind and heart will result in true misery because you resist and truly devalue that which is loving and good in you that continuously heals you from the inside out. Be strong in mind and heart, and do your best. Don’t get discouraged. Just do your best. God knows your heart. Say these Commandments with me.

I am the Lord your God. You shall have no other gods before me.

My Lord God is my true Father. My heart is with my True Father. (see also Matthew 23:9-10).

You shall not make for yourself an idol in the form of anything in heaven above or on the earth beneath or in the waters below.

My Father's Spirit is in me, and I will focus solely on my Father. My True Father is my true focus. I will place no one or thing before Him. He is where my devotion lays.

You shall not misuse the name of the Lord your God.

I will say nothing against my True Father. My Father is my truest advocate for my life and my wellbeing. I am my Father's Beautiful Child.

Remember the Sabbath day by keeping it Holy.

I will allow myself absolute freedom to be open to my True Father to comfort me and nurture me and restore my mind, body, and soul any moment of any day.

Honor your father and your mother, so that you may live long in the land the Lord your God is giving you.

I will honor my True Father and what He shows me. And I will honor my elders and healers who truly understand the love and mercy of God so my journey will be lightened.

You shall not murder.

I will keep myself alive so that I may come to know and be comforted by my True Father (Mark 3:29) and know His true purpose for me.

You shall not commit adultery.

I will be very honest with my Father and myself and with others on how I feel and what I think. God knows all. Therefore, if I am honest with what I think and how I feel with my True Father, I am an honest person. I will work through my embarrassment and fear by being with Him, and I will not succumb to fear of rejection or disapproval.

You shall not steal.

I will give all credit for my well-being to my True Father. I am powerless to truly retrieve what has been taken from me without the aid of my True Father and those He has sent to help me. My True Father owns everything I have or will ever have. I know that my True Father will give me what I need and restore me because He truly loves me unconditionally.

You shall not give false testimony against your neighbor.

I will give to myself and others true testimony of what is from my Father even if it means risking rejection so that my Father can continue to reveal to me who and what is truly loving and what is not. I will accept only that which is true love into my heart. And I will always provide an honest account of what I feel in my heart to be true.

You shall not covet your neighbor's house.

I will always cherish the house that the Lord has set up in me. I will not maliciously do evil against myself because of jealousy, rage, or revenge. I will be good to my own self acknowledging my Father's Spirit in His Temple within me. I will always value and act on His teachings and love. I will only retain that which others say to me that may add more love and joy to myself. I will always find a kind and loving word to say about me.

People who are suffering have a hard time in life when they are hungry, angry, lonely, tired, and bored. These states bring about a lot of anxiety and desperation. One day, God explained to me about these states and what people who are suffering can do instead. This is God's manna for you while in the Woods. God said to me:

To numb the pain which occurs inside you and to avoid the dirt which in faith I, The Lord, shall heal, you do not react to that which I give you but choose that which I do not give you in order to numb that which separates Me from My Child. For you choose the sinful hunger, that is to be

hungry purposefully to warm your soul with worldly food so as to be productive and filled but not fulfilled and forget and numb your pain. And does not the pain return? For you choose to be angry and lash out at yourself through guilt, shame, and physical pain and on others through your words, gestures, and physical immoralities so as to forget and numb the pain. And does not the pain return? For you choose to be lonely and isolate yourself from My other Children who I wish for you to be with, serve, and be also with in My Word so I may gather My Flock, but you isolate and thus fantasize and do immoral things to yourselves in order to forget, disconnect from the now, and numb the pain. And does not the pain return? And you choose to be tired. As in the other cases, you make it happen. And thus you do not sleep and when you do sleep you do not rest. And then your mind cannot think of and analyze your pain. And thus you forget and numb the pain. And does not the pain return?

In that what I give you—that which comes from Me—do as I say. When you are hungry—eat. When you are angry—speak to your brethren. When you are lonely—share with your brethren. And when you are tired—relax, even if you cannot sleep. Produce and hunger to serve Me, be with Me, and collect My Flock, and I will fulfill you and give you My food to comfort you; you shall be angered over the acts of the unrighteous, the unruly, and wicked and act justly on it according to My Laws upon those who disobey My Laws, and shall I ease your pain and suffering through mercy; you shall be lonely, for to serve Me in a world of much unruly and arrogance and disbelief, shall many turn away from you, but I shall keep you company Myself and I will choose others to keep you company as well, for you are My Human Child. And you shall be tired, for to serve Me takes much energy [you will not be bored] and is why I will give all the abundant energy you require, and your tiredness will be one of great comfort, and then shall you sleep and rest deeply in the safe haven of My Kingdom where no turbulence can ever reach you for you will sleep in My Arms and only My Love will caress you. For I Am The Lord, the All Powerful and the All Loving.

And finally, there is a treasure chest in the Woods for you to find. Right now it's filled with different types of treasure or golden nuggets that, once you take them out and deal with them, create a thousand times more treasures that make life worth living. Like when Jesus only had a basket of five fish and was able to turn it into a feast for five thousand, so is the treasure in your treasure chest. These treasures are things that, right now, you are afraid to deal with like fear and embarrassment. Let's talk about embarrassment.

One of the treasures you have in the chest right now is embarrassment. Embarrassment is where God's righteousness, acting through someone or something on the outside, meets up with God's Spirit on the inside and does a "squeeze play" on your own ego. It is a double dose of divinity that makes such a profound statement within you. It's a little thing that packs a big wallop. If you can find it and go through it, you'll find yourself very fortunate and wealthy.

It's embarrassing to transcend our prejudices because it is a sure way of telling the world that we may be wrong—that we didn't know what we were doing and that we're human after all. But it is only by going through this embarrassment that a new life ahead will happen for you. We do this by letting go of our pride, telling someone our problem (what we need) and asking him or her for help. This is difficult for a lot of people, but key to our maturity in God. It can be embarrassing when you've boasted about yourself and how knowledgeable (intelligent) you think you are only to find yourself in a predicament where you don't really know what you are doing. And it is very embarrassing when the only one you have available to ask for help is the same one who you believed could never be as knowledgeable (intelligent) as you.

Do you think you're the only one who can do it or do you think someone else might just have the answer? What we find out in the Woods is that intelligence will only get you so far in life but wisdom is golden. And the only way to reach wisdom is by going through embarrassment and asking for help. This takes courage, and it is courage that you need in order to make it through the Woods.

Understand that embarrassment is a calling from God as a golden nugget of opportunity for you to follow the calling of Christ down the River and further mature in His Name. When we run away from embarrassment, we run from the Lord and our guilt pursues us to the point that we purposely avoid any future reference to such a moment. Our

eyes then become so focused on expecting it to come around the corner at anytime that we begin to isolate ourselves even further from anything and anyone, thus placing us in bondage. It will be a blessing to you when it does come around again so you may have another opportunity to follow God and know who you are.

After receiving Christ, I choose to deal with each embarrassing moment that comes around. I have come to know embarrassment as a treasure chest filled with many insights of God Himself freely giving it to me. When I accepted embarrassment as an opportunity for God to teach me, I went through it from then on, thus faithfully devoting myself to Him. I always grow in leaps and bounds in Christ when doing so and am always in greater fulfillment and peace after graduating from it.

Working through embarrassment is an absolute guarantee of acquiring divine wisdom and further knowing and feeling the salvation within you from God Almighty. Do not let embarrassment stop you. Embrace embarrassment when it comes and tap into the Words and World of Almighty God. Risk embarrassment in every good thing you do. You'll come out being more secure in who you are and knowing the amount of freedom you really do have.

The Safe Harbor:



Jack-dab in the middle of the Woods to help reorient you. This harbor is the second harbor—the Harbor of Praying and Asking. It's also known as the Harbor of Confessing & Asking or the Safe Harbor. This harbor is where you *pay your admission* on the Path by confessing sin and asking for help. There is a Treatment Facility in the Treatment Harbor. It's where you go to get help. Like any Treatment Facility (even in your city's water treatment plant), it exists to first extract the bad stuff from a body (of water) and help clean the body to make it safe for future digestion (Revelation 2:8-11).

You are not safe until you find this second harbor in the Woods. You need to contact a Treatment Facility. The key to finding the Treatment Harbor and its Treatment Facility is to focus on God's character (that I already described to you) while seeking it (Revelation 2:12-17). If you seek a place with God's love there, you will find a place with God's love there (Matthew 7:7-8), even if its tough love. Like the Israelites in the desert, you need to choose who to go to for help and guidance—someone unconditional (who will be dedicated to your needs) or someone conditional (who has selfish ulterior motives) (Revelation 2:18-29). How do you know? You'll know by observing whether a person tries to make you follow him or wants you to follow the Spirit in you by helping you connect with your Spirit (Revelation 3:1-6). Remember, you're not always going to be with this person. There will come a time when you too must leave the nest.

The Arrival Harbor:



Arrival Harbor—the third harbor on the Path—you become purified (sanctified) in God's love. You come to the actual River and meet the arrival of God's Spirit by touching (being baptized). You are clean from within, and the Spirit starts to build a home within you and wants to build it.

The Third Harbor is where you are reborn but you don't really yet understand what that means. You might feel better after being cleansed, but you haven't yet been refined (Rev 3:14-22 and 4:1-3). You need to commit in the fourth harbor to go through the Gate (John 10:9) of the fifth harbor to understand your own past behavior so you can

choose to build the kind of home your Spirit wants to build for you in the present so that you will live happy forever in your future.

The Commitment Harbor:

The fourth harbor is known as the Harbor of Committing & Entering, also known as the Commitment Harbor, where or not to enter through the Gate of the fifth harbor takes place. Real strength comes from how suffering Woods or desert. We respect (are humbled by) those who go through their own it of it nice, thoughtful, and genuinely and assertively loving people. They have, thus, (ed) their commitment to God and chose to enter through the Gate into the Promised Land conversion or transformation takes place. After Jesus' baptism (receiving God's Holy Spirit at the River), Jesus entered into a battle of indecision—to go into the Promised Land or not—and finally won the battle by committing himself to God and entering the Promised Land (Matthew 3:1-17 and 4:1-11 and Revelation 3:7-13).



The Promised Land is, in fact, the Kingdom of God or Garden of Eden (Luke 17:20-21 and Revelation 3:14 through 4:6) where discipline, training, and being submissive to God and the Spirit take place. This scares a lot of people, and they choose not to commit because of it. In the Book of Matthew, you can witness the battle between Jesus and Satan, where Satan tries to entice Jesus from entering the Kingdom of God. But Jesus' commitment to God was stronger.

The Gate of the City as stated by Christ throughout the New Testament is the same as the River Jordan in the Old Testament that the Israelites had to cross to get to the Land of Milk and Honey (The Promised Land). This is fitting because Jesus called himself the Gate (John 10:7-9), and it is the River where the Spirit lives.

The Life Harbor:

This harbor is where we learn what Grace is. It is where we weed out what is forgivable by us and what is only you are able to forgive anything, but it is up to God to present the punishment. If you will ve. By finding love in your Spirit within you, you will be able to forgive. But forgiveness is here is still a punishment or accountability to come. I can forgive all day, but there must be (change) by the other person afterwards. If there is no intent, my job is done, but God's job deal directly with God for the punishment. It is when the person falls in love later down the River that he or she is absolved. Until then, there is no final absolution.



If you have been placed in authority by God do dole out punishment, then you must be able to have first understood the differences between good, bad, and evil. This is the harbor where you learn the difference in order to discern. And it is by another just judgment on us via this discernment that allows us to trust. Too harsh of a punishment or too lax a punishment, and trust cannot come about. The authority must be stern, but not harsh. The punishment must fit the crime, but it must never erase trust.

Learning About the Kingdom God

When I was two, I stopped breathing. My throat suddenly closed up. I had been jumping around frantically opening and closing doors to get my parents' attention. My father saw what I was doing, and being a respiratory therapist, recognized the symptoms of epiglottitis. My parents grabbed my four year old brother and rushed me to the hospital that my father worked at as my mother gave me CPR. The staff, recognizing my father as he rushed in carrying me, immediately went into action.

It just so happened that a top surgeon specializing in childhood diseases was visiting his patients at the time and ran to perform a tracheotomy (cutting the neck to insert a breathing tube directly into the windpipe) within a matter of minutes. The mortality rate at the time in patients with cases as severe as mine was 98%. Now I understand doctors have developed a vaccine, and the mortality rate has dropped significantly.

A little while after I woke up from surgery, I spoke to my mother. She was amazed to discover that I spoke a lot more articulately and intelligently (using multi-syllabic words) than I had ever spoken before the incident. Soon after that, I kept having a recurring dream of two nice and loving women on both sides of me at night outside an office building. All three of us were small. It was as if the women were angels or, perhaps, each woman represented one half of an angel's wings. A man much taller than me dressed in white walked in front of me, and I left the women behind. I followed the man up the stairs and into a long hallway. There were doors along the hallway. I never saw the man's face, only his legs and feet. He came to a door down the hall and started to open it. A bright, white light shown through more brilliantly than I had ever seen. Then the man started to walk in to the room and spoke to who I sensed was an older, more wiser man inside. As I went up to the doorway and brought my head around to see into the room, I'd wake up.

Other dreams would accompany this one throughout my life—dreams of paths in various forms part of and leading up to various places like hotels, mountains, railways, parks, lakes, and beautiful white structures. What they all had in common was fear in the beginning, a path, doorways, wise men, sometimes other people, and sometimes a man dressed in white business or robe attire. And then there was either what I thought of the time as Heaven at the end that eluded me or later, Heaven itself. I later took this Heaven to be the Kingdom of God (my own soul) along the River of Life. The dreams of my soul were always set in the light of day. The others preceding my soul were always in the dark of night.

Then one day after writing and writing in my Life Harbor, I dreamed one final dream where a great white building like a great hall or temple was behind me with steps descending from it. I descended the steps and saw in front of me a beautiful path through a sun-lit park with beautiful green grass and white geometric structures (buildings) were on each side of the path. I followed the path, exploring each building along the way. This was the only dream where I started from a building. Later I realized I was starting from my soul rather than ending there. God then led me to the Book of Revelation, and I prayed to understand it. Knowing that God gave me the gift of understanding things figuratively and that the dreams I had were part of my purpose in life, I came across this River of Life in the Book of Revelation Chapter 22 (1 Corinthians 12). And then I saw it again in the Book of Ezekiel. This hit home with me. This was just like my earlier dreams and was the interpretation of those dreams.

I asked God if I had to die and go to Heaven before experiencing the Path for myself. I was still not self-aware at the time. What I came to realize was that He had already put me on the journey, and He wanted me to one day share the journey with you. And so my walk with Him to understand the journey continued over these six or seven years. And during this time, He brought me to a place called Redstone where I am now that has the physical representation of this journey I am on so that I may fulfill His purpose to share Him with you.

The fifth harbor is what Jesus referred to as the Kingdom of God, also known as the Life Harbor or Reality Harbor or a person's soul. It's where you get to know a person's soul or true spirit (intention). Let's take some time getting to know this harbor. When I entered into the Life Harbor with Christ, I realized that it was critical to really focus and listen to what God had to tell me from His Temple in me. I knew that, if I didn't listen, I couldn't understand and then I wouldn't be able to go forward in my life. This is why I also call this fifth harbor on the Path the Harbor of Listening & Understanding. So I listened and, after writing down each of His words over the next six or seven years, God would guide me into the Bible to affirm what He just told me. And those words would always be there. He showed me life and people and why life does what it does and why people do what they do. This is why each situation I was in was in the Bible. The Bible is about life and people.

The Life Harbor is where real change or conversion takes place by looking deeply into a person's intent and in ourselves. First you question the person's intent good-willed. If it is not, then you question the person's intent as evil or wicked. This clarifies the intent to a great degree. If a person's intent is neither good nor evil, then it must fall somewhere in the "bad". This is when you must rid your prejudiced view of the person, place, or thing and realize that "bad" is relative and just doesn't agree with what you deem as good. "Bad" is usually in the range of being non-constructive. You may hear, "I did it just to do it." That may be the intent itself. There is no wisdom in it, only action and only ritual. It's like being lukewarm, but it is still permissible, even though you have a hard time with it. People want purpose and they want to see others with purpose. Everyone should contribute to the common good. What angers most people is that you can't wrap your hands around or control something without any purpose. Without purpose, you can feel out of control. How can people be happy just doing without thinking first? How can people be happy by blindly following rules and tradition? The answer is that people can be very happy—until things change. And that's why you instill laws that will never change so you don't have to. People can wind up being out of touch with reality, but are very happy as long as things don't change. What happens if something starts trying to change their reality? Then, they are the first to sin. In other words, when you refuse to be part of life and the living and change with them, you can suspend yourself in a utopian state of illusion pretending you are sinless and innocent. When, in fact, you are the first to sin when reality hits you. So then, what you are is in a state of "bad" or unconstructive. Yes, it is still permissible, just not constructive, and people who live life and are constructive don't want to be with you because you are usually very judgmental without really helping the general populace mature.

You come to this fifth harbor by listening to and understanding (digesting) God's truth from within you. It is where you "see the light" (are enlightened on the truth of what is going on in you and around you). Change isn't easy. When you gain access to the Kingdom of God (Daniel 2:44), your own prejudices start clashing with God's truth, and you can become physically, mentally, emotionally, and spiritually distressed simply because Truth has come and has finally hit home. It is a time of listening and understanding and then making choices on which way to go. And these choices need to be made a lot of times without knowing the outcome.

My insecurities used to really take a toll on me during this time. I would feel like I messed up and then, in order to feel better, I'd do a restart each and every time at each little mess up until one day I found out that God is a lot more lenient than I ever was. This restarting, where I made-believed nothing in my past ever happened, is what is known as annulling and is a way of not having to deal with what you did. Annulling illegitimizes everything in the past rather than dealing with it in the present. It makes things so-called perfect again. And we learned that trying to keep ourselves perfect is actually denying Grace. You need to deal (work through) or you won't learn and move forward down the Path. You'll just keep yourself stuck, doing it again and again. In a way, annulling is similar to abstinence. Neither works because each takes you away from Grace's flow and the Spirit. Abstinence relies on your will power rather than on God's power in you, which is the Spirit. The Spirit is all about the journey—the process in delivering you into happiness. As you go through the journey—or process—with the Spirit, you will sin less and less until you are free from sinning anyway. So there is no need to exert abstinence if you travel down Grace with the Spirit. Remember, the Spirit is all about the journey in reaching your goal—not about rushing down stream to realize your goal in one swoop or staying stuck where you are. Annulling and abstaining can be very damaging to your physical, mental, emotional, and spiritual wellbeing.

From the first harbor you chose to turn and face reality (the real world), face God, and face life, which are all interconnected because God is reality and is life. You will find out later on that when you are intimate with God and reality and life, you no longer need to fantasize. You are free from your fears of the real world because you learned how it works, and you find out that the beautiful part of life has made room and a room for you to live happily in it. You'll be able to be happy coexisting with all people and creatures in the new Life and living Life at the same time. To be self-aware and well-adjusted is what brings about happiness in an individual and is a result of having journeyed down Grace with the Spirit. Remember, you can see life two ways—through your own eyes or through the eyes of the Spirit. One is fantasy and the other is Reality.

When you were in the Woods, you had to make the choice between idolizing a person or the Holy Spirit. You had to show God that you were really serious about recovering. Now in the fifth harbor, you do something even harder, but with the Spirit this time. You war to rid something harder—your bad memories that trigger your sinful behaviors (Psalm 48). The Holy Spirit (Counselor and Spirit of Truth) heals your soul by feeding you little by little certain aspects about your past that you are able to deal with in the present. The more you deal with them, the

stronger you become, and the more you are able to feel connected again to the Spirit within you. This is known as esteem.

Now this is important. When you entered into the Arrival Harbor—the third harbor on the Path—you were purified (sanctified) in God’s grace. Because you’ve been sanctified, you were able to enter the Kingdom of God (the Life Harbor) where you no longer have to worry about not being part of Grace ever again. Even if you falter here, you falter in Grace. You are like a newborn committed to learning and applying. If you falter, it is not falling, it is only faltering. There is no sinning now like in the past. There is only erring. In other words, there is only being human. You need to weed out (separate) the two in your mind. You are in training as God’s son or daughter—as God’s *human* son or daughter. As long as you continue with your training, you will see this reality more and more.

What’s the difference? The difference is your willingness to know God. That’s the difference. You will “see” that once in the Kingdom of God, always in the Kingdom of God. Some may say that this cannot be because we succumb to the flesh from time to time. But once you’ve “seen”, there is no falling back. Even if you intentionally deny what you see, thus denying the presence of God in your life, there is somewhere deep inside that still sees what you saw.

Let me explain this more plainly. Before your journey, you relied in your arrogance on your own will power to get you through life with the arrogant intent to substitute this will power for God. Now that you’ve found (believed in) Christ and have committed yourself to Him (via the Third and Fourth Harbors), the gate has been closed behind you. Your will is not your own. You now have a converted intention to convert your will into His will by handing your will over to God.

You need to know this before moving on. In Ezekiel 47, Ezekiel talks about the River moving from South to North through the Temple before heading east (which happens to be like the River in Redstone where I live). This symbolizes how Grace flows from your subconscious up into your conscious to convert bad thoughts to good (righteousness) thoughts and eventually to good acts. With God, people can process and convert useless (shameful) information into useful (righteous) information in order to deliver it into the world for the common good. It is in this fifth harbor where conversion hits its pinnacle as you learn to discern between what is really good and what is bad. Each individual is created as good with the capacity (soul) to remain good (Genesis 1:31) and do good things. Conversion is this 180-degree (opposite) understanding to what we once thought in our own prejudiced and egotistical (prideful) minds.

Some people say that we must integrate good with bad in order to restore peace. I have found that this is not how you restore peace. To me, integrating good with bad is dangerous. Bad will only shake hands with good because bad has an ulterior motive to either conquer good or convert good to bad. If good shakes hands with bad to convert bad to good or conquer bad, good isn’t so good either. Good must respect always even when bad doesn’t. It is unwise to trust people who practice bad behaviors. There is only two ways to deal with people who practice bad behaviors—either offer them a way out through Grace or, if they don’t want it, cut off their resources of ammunition and leave them be to their own destruction. Nothing else will do. Anything else is manipulation or playing games. For instance, in the case of nations whose people are displaying bad behaviors, it is better to build a separate City of Grace and then offer the people’s in the nation to live there. Then the other cities will remain prisons and will then be managed as prisons, with each home a jail cell. Those who’ve chosen to remain in the other cities will have chosen to allow their souls to remain imprisoned anyway. This is the only way to control the region and attain peace. I believe some nations will definitely restore peace among their own loving peoples by doing it in this way.

Grace restores the control of the individual to the individual, and restores control of the nation to the nation. Anything else is a fantasy. It is pointless to try to convert a nation of peoples who display bad behaviors, and it is pointless to try to physically remove them from the premises. This only draws you in to their home of bad behaviors. Like I said, those who try to convert or physically remove people from a nation engrained in practicing bad behaviors may believe they are doing good, when in actuality they are only making matters worse for themselves and others who really want Grace. They will discover that those who accepted your hand in Grace to begin with will wind up just wanting you to leave because you have made the situation more unmanageable.

Remember Grace works the same general way for everyone, but the details of the journey are different for each individual because each person *is* an individual. So, though we offer a person Grace, we are not saying that he or

she must copy the details of how we journey down it. I am only showing you how Grace and, thus, Life works. I'm not going to hold your hand while going down it. The Spirit's job is to guide you, not mine.

You see, God always loves you. Nothing will change that. The reality is that there is nothing (no sin, no anything) that will ever disconnect you from God. If you keep "good intentions" while living life, you will continue to see this, and your vision of God's love for you will continue to get stronger and stronger. Only "bad or harmful intentions" will blind you from seeing your continual connection to God. What does this mean? It means, like I told you in the first chapter, that you really never left Heaven. You had to travel to this harbor to regain your sight. You had to enter into the Kingdom of God to see that you've always been in reality, you just couldn't see reality because of all those things you used and abused and idolized to keep yourself from living life.

This is why works (rituals, deeds) alone will never get you to Heaven as divine redemption tools (MT 15:9). You're already a part of Heaven, especially if you're on the Path. It is not about the physical deed; it is about the spiritual belief. In other words, it is by faith (belief-in-action) that you will come to see what I have been saying, and it will become clearer and clearer to you. Your focus on rituals and deeds are actually distractions that keep you from seeing this greatest and most hidden secret. You were never kicked out of Heaven. Your shame made you think you were. You kicked yourself out because you could not fathom God's unconditional love for you and what unconditional meant.

Knowing this will help you see things in a different light. It gives you an entirely different outlook on life. You can be relieved. You can now accept yourself the way you are. You have been saved from your own misconception. This enables you to feel saved and forgiven, and empowered to devote yourself to living life again and being secure in it. Life becomes a New World or City for you that you see apart from the one you saw before (Rev 21).

Defining Your Boundaries

So where should you build the separate City of Grace, which is also known as the Temple of Faith or You? This is left up to God and the individual. Some people choose to build their Temple of Faith within the existing cities where the culture of those cities are engrained with practicing bad (harmful and destructive) behaviors. This is very difficult to do because of the many distractions and temptations surrounding them. Some people choose to build their Temple of Faith within the same nation but outside of the existing cities. Sometimes first building the City of Grace on the outside enables people to see the true bad on the inside and deal with the bad in a more efficient and effective manner. Either way, you will have to first place what are known as boundaries around your City of Grace and the existing cities. If you are just starting on the Path of Grace, you may wish to first separate, like I did, from the other cities or people in your life so you can better weed-out those who practice bad behavior from those who practice good behavior in accordance to the teachings of the Spirit. Then you will be able to accept the other good cities or people back into your life and prune away or leave the bad cities or people to themselves. And as a portion of the bad cities convert, the boundary of your City of Grace can further expand until as many people as possible can be united as a whole body in the nation or Kingdom.

By practicing being human, you will be able to define your boundaries. When we try to be perfect, we cannot discern between nice people and not-so-nice people. We cannot discern between good and bad behavior. Trying to be perfect is known as narcissism, and when we practice narcissism, we cannot see the difference between good and bad behavior in ourselves. In other words, we cannot identify righteousness and sin. Those who are narcissistic have a definite prejudiced view on life and may be so stubborn never to see the Kingdom of God, even if they have been baptized.

Understand that Heaven is not only some place where everything is beautiful and full of happiness and peace. Your life here matters and is taken into account when you get to Heaven. In Revelation Chapter 22, we are shown that the River of Life, I have been describing, is the same River of Life in Heaven. In other words, where you leave off here on Grace is where you will begin in Heaven. What is loosed here will be loosed in Heaven, and what you continue to bind here is bound in Heaven too. You need to understand that to the Spirit, all is Heaven—your life now and after you die. It's all part of the same Heaven. The Spirit lives on the River, and the Spirit is bound by Heaven's boundaries. So if you're on the River of Life, you're in Heaven, just maybe not in the Kingdom of God yet. This is

why God is known as the Alpha and the Omega. You begin with God here and end with God there. The Heaven that is traditionally seen as absolutely beautiful and blissful is at the end of the River of Life. It does exist, but it exists when you've traveled the entire Path. The key is to first turn and face God. When you turn and face God on earth, you are turning and facing God in Heaven. Then, even if you die now, you will be provided mercy in Heaven because you are at least on the first harbor of Grace. But realize that you still have to confess and receive Christ before you're allowed in the Kingdom of God.

When I was a little boy, the only way I could get to sleep was imagine myself in God's bubble with God standing on the outside of it telling all those "slings and arrows" to "Go away! My Child is sleeping." And I not only slept, but I rested. I was safely living within the boundary of His Kingdom. I, unknowingly at the time, had set up my heaven—as small as it was—with a definite and impenetrable boundary. This boundary is one complete boundary with no weaknesses. It is like an impenetrable fortress against all evil on the outside (Psalm 48) from getting in. Once we are secure in the fact that God's boundary will hold up to anything, we feel free (unafraid) to live in the Kingdom in comfort, peace and joy. We can then call God's boundary, "total confidence".

God disciplines us by helping us define our boundaries and then helps us adhere to them for our own good (John 16:5-11). Once we define our boundaries, we start feeling more in control of our lives. God is a free-giving God. He wants His children to grow up so that one day they will, voluntarily and without fear, leave the nest. He wants them to feel free and live their own lives within Heaven. But first, they need to be disciplined within the boundary of the Kingdom so that one day they will be safe and secure in who they are. Realize that there is the Kingdom of Heaven (also known as the Spirit World), and within the Kingdom of Heaven is the Kingdom of God, and past the Kingdom of God (but still in Heaven) is the third place in Heaven where we are free to live autonomously and collectively within the comfort and joy of the Holy Spirit. The first three harbors of grace take you up to the fourth harbor, or Gate of the Kingdom of God. This is why I say that, by turning and facing God you may be in Heaven, you may not yet be in the Kingdom of God. You are in the Kingdom of God from the fifth through the tenth harbors. And the eleventh and twelfth harbors are part of the third place in Heaven where peace and bliss takes place. These places are not unlike the stages of early childhood (where you are born facing life, asking for help by crying and other means prior to speaking, and then receiving attention from a guardian afterwards) to mid childhood and into adolescence (where you choose to learn how life works from your guardian and wind up accepting life the way it is and devoting yourself to it) to adulthood (where you become intimate with life and then leave the nest and live your own life with the spirit of those that raised you).

We need to understand our boundaries so that we can be decisive and decrease our stress. Like Jesus said, "Let your yes be yes and your no [be] no" (Matthew 5:33-37)." In fact, really anything other than yes is no. That is the test of true respect. By giving people time to understand and not pressing them for an answer, helps them come to a more decisive decision. If there is a maybe about anything in your life, don't let it last too long before you judge one way or the other. The more time you take to judge, the more frustrated (stressed out) you become and the more you leave others hanging (Rev 3:14-16). If you or someone doesn't understand and need more time or information to judge appropriately, then keep asking yourself or the other "why" to the answer he or she gave you. When you get an answer, ask why to that answer. Keep on asking why and you'll eventually wind up at the truth. Children are masters at this. When they finally get the truth (real answer or Answer) to their question, they switch to the next question and repeat the process. That's how God helps them understand their Kingdom of God they live in. So, how do we define our boundaries?

All physical bodies, like you and me, are three-dimensional bodies (that include three dimensions within) that occupy space and travel through time. Your River is a body of water that flows through a space called Heaven over time. These three dimensions help you define this space by measuring how well you're balanced (healthy) with respect to your mental, emotional, and spiritual wellbeing in this space. One dimension is known as your mental dimension (left and right like left wing and right wing). This dimension measures how liberal or conservative you are in any given situation. Rarely is anyone one or the other in every situation. Another dimension is known as your emotional dimension (up and down like feeling up and down). This dimension measures how hyped-up (manic) or solemn (depressive) you are in any given situation. And the other dimension is known as your spiritual dimension (in and out like internalizing and externalizing). This dimension measures how shallow (refractive) or deep (reflective) you are.

Now this is important. I spoke of in the Woods about a guilt that imprisons you. Now that you are in the Kingdom of God, let me speak about a type of guilt that frees you. This is not the man-made guilt placed on us by ourselves or others due to insecurity. This guilt comes from Christ as a reminder of how close we are near the extremes of each of our three dimensions so that we may become secure and stay secure within ourselves. Many of us—all kinds of people in all kinds of jobs—get the guilt of the Woods and the guilt of the Kingdom mixed up (thinking they are the same) and is why many do not pursue Christ. As we near the extremes (boundaries) of our left-right, up-down, and in-out dimensions, we experience a certain type of guilt that produces stress in us. This guilt says to us, “Slow down and relax. Don’t be so desperate and impatient. Everything is going to be okay. Breathe and refocus on the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.” In other words, this guilt is not a condemning guilt. It is a protective guilt telling you that you are straying from the River. It is a good guilt that allows us to come back into balance. This type of guilt is our friend, not our enemy. It is the calling of the Spirit on us to not be treading so far away from Him, and therefore is part of our discipline. When you become intimate or totally secure and disciplined with the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, you experience none of this type of guilt, and are therefore allowed to go into the third part of Heaven. You feel and know you’re innocent like a child. You become free within and free-flowing. This allows you to really live without worry and, thus, wind up becoming fulfilled—filled totally with the essence of God who is Love. No longer do you or will you have a guilty conscience (John 16:5-11). You will become content. And your River will become like a fresh Sea of Eternal Love.

So by answering a few questions that deal with these three dimensions as honestly (truthfully) as you possibly can, you can sustain your contentment (balance) to a great degree through any situation (Philippians 4:11-12, 1 Timothy 6:6-8, and Hebrews 13:5). This is why the Kingdom of God is also the place where we find and admit the truth of who we are, what we’re like, and what love is and what love is not. Not being honest with ourselves when answering questions about ourselves increases our chances of losing sight of Grace and the Spirit and going out-of-bounds. Staying within your boundaries keeps you in Truth of who you are and who God created you to be.

So, when it comes to your physical wellbeing, you may want to ask yourself frequently, “Am I or will I be wearing myself too thin by committing to too much weight (burden)? When it comes to your mental wellbeing, you may want to ask yourself frequently, “Is what I’m doing too liberal (not structured enough) or too conservative (too structured without much room to breathe)?” When it comes to your emotional wellbeing, you may want to ask yourself frequently, “Do I feel over-pressured (abused) or under-pressured (unused)? Do I feel like I’m understanding the whole truth? Do I feel like the situation is ruling me (am I being aggressive, passive, or manipulative in the way I’m handling things as a result) or am I relaxed and performing in integrity (am I being assertive)?” And when it comes to your spiritual wellbeing, you may want to ask yourself frequently, “Am I going deep enough to get to the truth? Am I connecting with what is going on in me and around me? Am I secure in who I am and where I belong, thus calmly breathing, while I’m doing what I’m doing?” All these questions will help you get at your truth and maintain balance in your life.

The three dimensions help you see the creation of the Kingdom of God’s or Life’s space in you. Too much one way on each of our dimensions makes us see Life as smaller than what it is meant to be in Reality. We see a false boundary rather than the real boundary further out, and we feel trapped or like Life is going to collapse on us. We feel like we are being abandoned and ignored. Too much the other way makes us see Life larger than what it is meant to be in Reality. The real boundary is invisible to us, and if we aren’t careful, we can pass our boundary and find ourselves abandoning and ignoring Life. And, of course, the Spirit is in this Life. So, when it comes to spatial wellbeing, you may want to ask yourself frequently, “How much space do I really have?”

And then there is time. Time is the most precious thing you can give yourself and someone else. Time has to do with rest or fulfillment (how productive you are in the Kingdom in the time you have). Resting is not doing nothing. Resting is being happy and productive—actively living (Proverbs 6:6-11) by doing the things that really matter in Life. Productivity or “living” has to do with how focused you are at what you do in the appropriate speed you need to do it in. Not productive enough or too productive and you wind up tired or sluggish and, thus, restless, and you start to slow down and run backwards through the harbors, thus losing sight of the Spirit. When you go backwards, you become insecure and negativity starts rolling out of your mind and mouth in waves. You become more in debt as you feel more desperate and abandoned. You need to become aware of this as soon as possible by heeding the calling of the Spirit so you can stop and move forward again. When you are secure enough (not in debt or not insecure) in yourself via the Tenth Harbor on the River, it will be time for the Spirit and you to conceive of how to branch out to help others and deliver that help (via the Eleventh Harbor) by giving up your time in God’s Name.

This will allow you and them to become freer (unburdened). So, when it comes to your time or lifespan wellbeing, you may want to ask yourself frequently, “How productive am I in the time I’ve been given?”

By answering these questions truthfully and adjusting your way of life by traveling the rest of the way down the River, you can become joyful, peaceful, and restful. How come? It’s because the more you grow in true love, the more each one of these dimensions come into balance.

When we enter the light in the Kingdom of God and see it for what it really is, we truly see what we have (what God has given us) and the responsibility of having it. This is why the Fifth Harbor is the beginning of true manhood and womanhood. It’s about searching your soul. If we define our boundaries by listening to and understanding what God tells us for our own wellbeing and choose to respect those boundaries, we will come to see the results of this respect and begin to love (esteem) the Life or Space we live in. Then we can accept the responsibility of maintaining our Space and be devoted to cultivating our permanent (secure) place in Life, which delivers to us great fulfillment (contentment) in Life.

The Choice Harbor:

In the Life Harbor, you discovered a place of knowing and understanding your own Spirit within you. It’s where you allowed yourself to be submissive to and disciplined by God. It’s where you battled your bad (prejudiced) behaviors versus your now good behaviors, the right ones versus the wrong ones, the teachings of the ego versus the teachings of the Spirit, all with the armor of the Spirit (Psalm 48). It is a place where you received the secret wisdoms about you and life itself (1 Cor 2:7 and Rev 2:17) during your discipline. And when you started to see the light between good and bad, you were able to see how you, yourself, were harmfully affecting yourself and others and how others were affecting you. And by seeing this, you realized yourself human—not as an excuse to do



perfect and contrary to your own idolatry of you or someone else. You and everyone else are average—special as human beings but equally average. And seeing yourself and others human what allows you and others to be forgiven. In other words, you being human is your own ce (Life’s River) was created just for people like you—God’s human people. Grace wasn’t ught because God pitied His human children. Grace was created simply because we *are* His human children. We can’t survive without it. In other words, God knew that when He made people that He would have to make Grace along with them. So, Grace was created before Jesus. It just took Jesus to make everyone realize it. And it is this realization that allows yourself to be able to be forgiven. Now that you see you human and everyone else around you human, there is only God left to idolize—as it should be. You may think and feel yourself sorry (unworthy or not worthwhile) or pitied in the sight of God, but instead it is in the Choice Harbor that God goes as far as to empower you to do the right thing by making the right choices. This is humbling that you are less than perfect, and God still respects you enough to give you—a human—the choice to choose your own identity and destiny.

By understanding a person’s sufferings (humanity), you can now see why the person feels the way he feels and does what he does—whether or not his actions benefit society. This leads to compassion for even our enemies. And that compassion is what draws your respect for the person in the sixth harbor on the Path known as the Harbor of Choosing & Respecting and what I refer to as the Choice Harbor, even though we do not condone his or her behaviors. I call it the Choice Harbor because you get to judge who you let into your life, your temple, your city and who you won’t. You may find that you can love someone even though it is not good for you to be around him or her. This is okay. This is part of compassion and allows you to retain the good of those in your past while moving on in your life. But now that you are being disciplined or refined by the Holy Spirit, there are those people that you cannot let into your life because they don’t respect you.

While you were in the fifth harbor, did the true reality (truth) of the situation and the people in the situation match the reality you thought? Were they as uncaring or more uncaring than you thought? Were they as caring or more

caring than you thought? Now you know why problems exist in our lives. They exist because true reality doesn't match up with our own prejudiced reality of the situation. If you sense there is a problem or you or someone has a problem, the reason is because true reality isn't matching up with what you are experiencing. This sense (conviction) is from the Holy Spirit in you. So now you see that because problems (suffering) exists, the Holy Spirit exists in you. If you sense something wrong, you know you have the Holy Spirit in you telling you something's wrong. In other words, if your reality matches true reality (Christ's reality), then you don't have a problem. If you're reality doesn't match Christ's reality, a problem exists.

After we discover the true reality of the situation and people in the situation, we come to the Choice Harbor where we judge which way to go in our lives. When we find that we were less caring than the reality of the situation and people in that situation that shocked us, the Spirit prompts us to make the choice to feel humbled. This humility leads to love and reconciliation (saying "I'm sorry"). When we find that we were more caring than the reality of the situation and people in that situation that shocked us, the Spirit prompts us to face and admonish those that were in that situation. This was the reason why Jesus sent out the disciples in the Book of John. If others refused to believe



ten, then the Spirit (Christ) prompted them to turn and return to themselves (reconcile only and leave with the Spirit.

will have to do in the Choice Harbor. After weeding out the good and bad in your life, it is time to sit on the bench and judge who you want in your life and who you don't. You need to choose to place those with bad behaviors on your left and those with good behaviors on your right. And like the nations with people practicing bad behaviors, you will have to choose to enforce the boundaries you've already set up. And if they don't respect your boundaries, you will have to admonish them, just like the Spirit admonishes you. If they still disrespect you after three times of admonishing them, then you will have to leave them be to themselves and God. They were not able to be converted, at least not with you. Hopefully, they will be at a later time. Realize that admonishing is a merciful act to help someone see what they are doing is harmful to you and others and then be given the chance to truly convert (change, transform) their ways.

This is the only way to wind up loving yourself—the only way to connect with His Spirit, find your esteem through not just touching or seeing the Holy Spirit only as before but *feeling* deep in your soul now the Holy Spirit who *is* genuine love. Your merciful compassion mixed with your new found humility for yourself and others results in the love you've been searching for all your life.

The Trust Harbor:

When we see a person (including ourselves) acting respectful (still nice, thoughtful, and genuinely assertive) toward others even after coming out of his or her suffering, we not only respect that person deeply, we are humbled by that person. This humility (feeling humbled) leads to mature love (esteeming—being fond of—others and ourselves for feeling that way). And this love draws us to reconcile with either ourselves or others or both.

Love (fondness or esteem) is in the seventh harbor on the Path and is what I refer to as the Love Harbor. When we have self-esteem via our connection with the Holy Spirit within us, we feel loved and we love. Seeing the results from our obedience in loving others (being respectful towards them), especially our enemies even though we do not helps us love ourselves. We physically may have to leave them to get away from their but we can still love the person because he or she is a person. This will make you feel good you a better outlook on life. It will bring back your esteem. In other words, it will connect (love).



The Acceptance Harbor:

In the Life Harbor, you came to see that people are human—just human. After knowing what true love is in the Love Harbor, it is in this eighth harbor known as the Acceptance Harbor that you also discover a lot of people not only human but broken or dysfunctional. And you realize you can't do anything about it. Only God can help them the way God helped you. This is freeing. This is accepting.

Like I said before, when you're in the Love Harbor, you're not just touching or seeing the Holy Spirit only as before but you're *feeling* His presence of Love deep in your soul. And it is this presence, this new found esteem or power, ability to see others for how they really are and leave them behind with God in them and cross the bridge—your future—with God in you. You can be proud of yourself on how you handled our faith in your Father, His Son, and the Holy Spirit. Now you can leave the past behind by and because you know that God has made His home in you, even after your past, you now feel okay, you really are fine. You are loved and lovable. And this is what helps you accept and understand. You know you are truly forgiven, and you can cross that bridge understanding who you are and why you did it and going into the future able to know it should it ever happen again. You feel safe and are no longer afraid of what may happen simply because you have God. This is serving and feeling deserved enough to serve and that serving felt a whole lot better than receiving. Now I'd rather serve to help others be happy rather than just for me to be happy. God makes *me* happy. I no longer felt I had to stay focused just on me and my problems. God had me, and I knew it, and that was good enough for me. And it was during this serving that I realized I was actually devoting myself to God and His Spirit.



Accepting people the way they are—accepting their own reality and not trying to fix or change them for my own neediness—was the thing that unchained me from my idolizing ways. Part of the secret wisdom I learned was to accept that which I cannot change, and this loosed me from my bondage. I gave up trying to fix other people. We try to fix people so that our own lives can be comforted again. Fixing is only an illusion of love. It really is a form of selfishness or Selfdom rather than Kingdom. I kept trying to fix others so everything could be perfect again, and I could then be given permission to move on with my life. I always wanted to fix what was broken first and only *then* move on. I identified (attached myself so much) with that brokenness that I felt I couldn't move on unless it could be fixed too. I guess I felt guilty that it was broken, so I had to stop and help fix it before I could move on. After I found God in me, I realized that fixing people before allowing me to move on was only an illusion. I was fine, and I didn't need other people in order for me to leave and go on with my life. I was trying to substitute people for God in order to move on. And once I had God, I was no longer dependent on people to cross the bridge with me and move out into my own world—my own life. I could go ahead and leave them behind if I wanted to. By accepting this reality, I could breathe again, and I moved on *myself*, crossing my own personal bridge over into a world that was filled with God, His Spirit, and the glory of His Love. I was able to solely be devoted to the Kingdom, never to return to my old life ever again. Freedom is not worrying about yourself or other people, but offering them Grace without having to stand there yourself while they take the journey. The Spirit will help them and guide them just how He helped and guided me. And now that you know the way from what I've described here, I can leave you be with the Spirit too and not ever worry about you again either.

You see, I don't want to take you through the journey. It's not my job. But if you want to ask questions, I'll be more than happy to share what I now know with you. Your life is your life, and I don't want to be that everyday counselor on the journey of your life. That is the Spirit's job. This realization about myself saves me or frees me from the "savior" complex I felt I once had, and will save you from the savior complex you may have too.

The Devotion Harbor:

Knowing full well what life is about and still staying continually focused on God and your goal of peace through it all is the crux of the ninth harbor on the Path of Grace known as the Devotion Harbor. You are in God's Time as you follow along the River. That means you need to be patient. Your job is to continually focus on Grace and the Spirit, so much that you kneel down and devote yourself to it before God. As you get farther into the Path, you are able to see things more clearly and discern better between the goodness of where you are and who you are on the Path versus where you were before the Path. You become more and more intimate with God because you have put the past behind you and are able to be solely focused on Him now.

Once you realize that you will miss nothing outside the Path and nothing outside the Path will give you nearly as much satisfaction as what you have where you are in the here and now, you will stay with Grace and the Spirit forever. Everything you need and desire will be given to you, just as God provided everything to Adam. Adam was in Grace, and God even brought to him the animals. Let God deal with whatever is out there—whatever is outside the Path. Anything “out there” that is needed for you here will be delivered to you. God is the best Selector for your needs. All you need now is whatever you have now. And once you are okay with that, you will understand pure devotion.

The Love Harbor:

When you have intimacy, you have real security. You have a church that is just as good and equal as any other on the face of the earth. And this allows you to have real communion with others. No longer do you have an inferiority or superiority complex that makes you do things off the Path of Grace. You can have genuine friendship. You have a home. You now have belonging.

The word “have” is an essential word. “Have” means secured. In this tenth harbor, you “have” God and that means that you feel just as equal and as special (important) as anyone else no matter what religion, sex, race, creed, color, family, faith, or nationality you are. It means that your purpose in life is just as important as anyone else's purpose in life no matter what status or ranking they are or you are in the world. What it truly means is if you feel intimate in life, in yourself and in the people around you, you feel truly, deeply in love. And when you are this in love, you can't stand for you not to be equal with others, and you can't stand others not to be equal with you or anyone else.



can't stand not to be respected or respect others.

we tried to till our own soil and we came to what is known as deadpan. So eager to build our own cheapened soil and our own houses upon the cheapened foundation, we didn't pay nearly the Godly quality. When Christ came into our lives, we saw that our soil was not strong and our fields had overgrown—something we were denying to ourselves all along. In other words, we recognized the illusion or deception we were feeding ourselves. We found a ground hardened by drought with an almost impenetrable outside mantle created by fear and distrust. And it is this that we tried to build upon. And for many of us, we chose to avoid cultivating in God and chose to desperately move on to laying our own foundation and building our own house without the means—the Spirit—to do so. We neither had the patience nor the trust to be in God's Time and rely on Him to mold us in His way.

Yes, when we entered the Kingdom of God, we find ourselves in one certain reality. That reality was that we are being taught all over again the Truth. And this is the rock that all true things are built on. Foundations will crumble

on unGodly earth and houses will demolish on unGodly foundations. And so the first thing God does to prepare us for His soil is to chip through that mantle and all that deadpan and begin unearthing our own dirt while replacing it with His good soil and sturdy rock. And the way our new life works with Him is that we must realize that all this work happens in His Time and our patience and steady relationship education is crucial even before we try to go on to building a foundation based on Him. But soon we will have enough basic treasure to begin building His foundation after the rock has been laid.

It is essential to understand that we must truly define ourselves by this rock in everything we do and everything we *will* do. And we must choose to give up that which is man-made in our minds and soul to the rock that is God (Matthew 7:24-27). There almost always comes a time in people's lives when they come to the crossroads and say to themselves that things just aren't working out in relationships and other areas in their lives. It is here that the wise will usually ask themselves what beliefs have they emphatically accepted in the past as truthful and where did these beliefs come from—man or God.

Man-made beliefs work possibly for a little while and for only certain short-term situations which may have already taken place, but the rock of God always works and for all situations throughout our lives. The key is to always commit to things for the long-term and not the short-term. In the short term, we objectify things and continue to revert back to our old ways. The River Grace is a long-term journey. It continues on even after you die. Be willing to commit to the long-term journey.

See, life is a growing process. It's a journey. We, as humans, tend to learn more about life and ourselves over time and, thus, gather insights that expand our views in loving matters. This is healthy growth. Unhealthy growth is when we fight this. We then usually wind up damming our own internal River and grow up to be grumpy and unhappy people with little social skills. So, many times those of us who are open to the Spirit's teachings will outgrow situations or places, like earlier harbors. In these times, we need to move on, while some people, who are either not listening to the Spirit or are waiting for the Spirit's prompting to go, won't.

This harbor is known as the Harbor of Sharing and Securing and what I refer to as the Friendship Harbor. It is designed to allow folks to enter, allow everyone's knowledge and experiences to be shared, and then allow folks to leave to share their new knowledge and experiences with others. This is how we form intimacy. But there are some people who don't particularly share this point of view. It all depends which harbor they're in at the time—either one of the earlier harbors or one of the later ones down the River. Just because you are in this particular harbor doesn't mean everyone else is too. Just know that they are in the Kingdom because they are alive in the Path of Grace. Maybe this will help you understand that people do hurtful things because they hurt inside. And maybe this will help you accept them as God's children, even if they do hurtful things.

We journey down the River to the many harbors to broaden our own views and, thus, increase our own understanding of the River and what it offers us. We bring with us our own knowledge and experiences so that we can offer them to others in the harbors. When we go into each harbor, I suggest seeing people as God's children and friendly strangers within the harbor. In this way, you will ask permission to visit and then stay with them as guests in their home. Then you can intimately get to know them and eat their food (1Cor 10:27 through 11:1). You must find out what is good and what is not good for you there. You must offer your knowledge and experiences to help empower them to increase the good and rid the bad (that which is providing them misery), but not for you to fix or pass judgment but only help educate in servanthood to cultivate righteousness and love—that is, if they want. You must then take the next step and become friends and work in the home (house and outside grounds) together. And then you must go further and *learn* the true love they have to offer *you* in their unique way.

But how do we get through the language barriers? Not every person in each harbor speaks the same language. Or do they? Most people in the harbors consciously speak a different language but spiritually (soulfully) speak the same language (Gen 11:1-9). For instance, the seventh through the tenth harbors along the River follow the sequence of the four developing forms of unconditional Greek love beginning with *philia* (connected or esteemed love), then *storge* (accepted or adopted love), then *eros* (devotionally desired love), and ending with *agape* (intimately united love). Buddhist love similarly invokes the Spirit of Christ throughout the many harbors on the River. Islamic love was the result of Christ with Muhammad, evidenced by his devoutness to justice, equity, compassion, and freedom for himself and his people. In fact, Muhammad first consulted his Christian cousin—a woman—when called by God who actually told him that what he was experiencing was a calling from God and that

he needed to follow his calling. And over and over again, in all peoples, in all walks of life, we see God's Spirit in peoples if we are not blinded by our own interpretations dictated by rules, laws, and our own prejudiced religious-thinking beliefs. Yes, if we could see Christ as Spirit, then we would be able to see a lot more people as Christians (God's children), not in the religious sense but in the spiritual (soulful) sense. And we can only see this if we were enlightened in the Harbor of Listening & Understanding and chose to make what we see there a reality by choosing to obey God in the sixth harbor called the Harbor of Choosing & Respecting (Rev 6:12-17). Because what really is a Christian? A Christian is someone who goes above and beyond to deliver or offer them (people) Grace—a way out of the misery they are in. By offering Grace to others, there is hope that they will come share in such love—in other words, come share in Christ. This is the essence of the eleventh harbor called the Harbor of Conceiving & Delivering, or what I call the Freedom Harbor.

The Freedom Harbor:

Freedom can only exist in one place, and that place is in a state of Grace. By each of us delivering grace upon each other, we are all given the freedom to be ourselves without fear of condemnation or retribution.

In the tenth harbor, you came to truly know the confidence or security in yourself. You were honestly able to say, "I know I Am." You realized that God is and means everything to you—the beginning and the end and everything in between (Revelation 22:12-16) And because of this confidence, you are now able to enter into the eleventh harbor known as the Freedom Harbor. Freedom is the ability to do righteously what has been engrained in your soul by the Holy Spirit without worry (without being distracted by things such as fear). Allowing yourself to be distracted is a sure sign of doubt and insecurity falsely telling you that you are not important (intimate) enough for you to be with Grace and God's Spirit.

Now that you know what it's like to be a friend because you have a True Friend in you, you are free to conceive and others and be friends (build a home) with them without worry (fear) of rejection or ction or condemnation ever happens, you know exactly how to handle it. You have God. If mes from the heart—from the Spirit of real love—then it can never be wrong. It is infallible. harbor that you can conceive and deliver love in ways that are just a whole lot of fun to you. : have fun before is because you worried what would happen if others wouldn't like it. You 1001224 others more than you idolized God. But now you do not have to worry. The kind of love you give with your Spirit within you is absolutely permissible and undeniably love that is perfect. You, my friend, have become perfected!



Because of the intimacy (oneness and security) you gained in the Friendship Harbor (Genesis 2:24, Matthew 19:5, John 14:19-20, and Ephesians 5:31), you are able to reach the Eleventh Harbor on the River, known as the Harbor of Conceiving & Delivering that I refer to as The Freedom Harbor. The Freedom Harbor is so named because it's where you leave the nest with the full power and authority of your Father in Heaven, free to run on automatic (with full autonomy) because you share a deep bond of love with someone deep within you. And you both have a divine purpose to collectively help free God's people to be who each is created to be. You're able to conceive and do like how children play. They are secure that they are safe and, thus, are able to play without worry.

Christ is your greatest friend with this exact purpose in mind. When you get to the Friendship Harbor, you are no longer in debt or indebted physically, mentally, emotionally or spiritually to anyone simply because that's what real friendship means. Your mind now knows what real friendship means and what debt-free means in the Kingdom. All this time the Spirit has been bringing you out-of-debt. Like Jesus said:

"If you hold to my teaching, you are really my disciples. Then you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free." (Book of John Chapter 8 Verse 31, also written as John 8:31) "So if the Son set you free, you will be free indeed" (John 8:36).

The Peace Harbor:

What everything I have shared with you means is that Christ is the Fulfillment of, in, and for all of us. For us who see the Kingdom clearly, we know that all who seek love and compassion commonly have in us a divine singularity that brings us into community—a home full of sharing, communing, and growing intimacy. That divine singularity is the Spirit of God (Christ). We may all name it something different, but it is exactly the same within each of us. It is Christ—the Spirit of Almighty God.

And it is Christ within us that we wind up having an intimate relationship with to the point of conceiving ways to love and deliver this love so that we and others can live and be fulfilled. Like Christ says:

“If anyone is thirsty, let him come to me and drink. Whoever believes in me, as the Scripture has said, streams of living water will flow from within him” (John 7:37-38).



Christ says streams of living water? When you’re intimate with who you are and what you do, you. You will conceive of different ways or forms to love others by creating streams (off-branches) from the River Grace by way of the Spirit in you and then deliver your love in those ometimes call this “streams of consciousness or mindfulness” or being aware of the needs of oment and delivering (bearing, producing) love to them in the way they need. This is what it says that your Spirit bears spirit (also meaning that your Fruit bears fruit in the Book of this love unconditionally (no matter who you are or what you’ve done in the past) is your purpose in life—to create ways in offering Grace to others. There is nothing more fulfilling. It fills your soul and your life, making your world become the Heaven you desire. And this purpose is ongoing throughout your life and on into the next.

So in this twelfth harbor, known as the Abundance Harbor, you realize that God is Life and bore or created life of, in, and for you and all His Children. It is a time to really live and be fulfilled—in abundance. God created this perfect system called Life that we are in to always help us draw closer to Him as we go down the River. Life is God’s Heaven. Life is our friend. In fact, Life is actually God’s Heaven we live in. Now we can see death is only a part of life. We live in our physical bodies in Heaven, we die in Heaven, and we are resurrected (transformed and live again) in Heaven. We get to live in Heaven (our beautiful and happy life) forever.

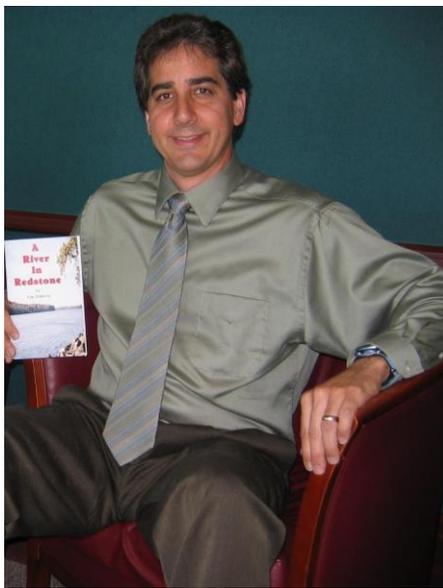
You might ask that, if loving others is my purpose, then in what way *will* I love others. Well, remember the details are between your Spirit and you. What touches your heart and soul? Let me share with you something I’ve learned along the way. We face God at the beginning of our journey because we yearn for something we feel is missing in our lives. That thing is God’s intimacy within us. We suffer without it because, without it, we suffer when we are introduced to certain human behaviors impressed on us from someone other than us. But God converts these sufferings into our greatest purpose in life as we go down the River with Him. You can’t stay a child forever. Life comes and wakes you up saying to take the journey. These sufferings become the ways in which humans connect. For instance, I yearned for a mentor to teach me life and share with me his wisdoms. I didn’t have that in my life. My biological father wasn’t around all that much, and when he was, there wasn’t any kind of sharing like that. I really missed it. So, one day God called me and said that He would take over and share Himself with me and be my Mentor. And by going down the Path with God, I actually became a God’s mentor.

Realize that you too are God’s off-spring and, therefore, He has created a stream of Grace for you as well. He delivers to you His Spirit on your River Grace so that you will gain His intimacy by converting your sufferings into ones of peace and joy. That’s why nobody gets out of suffering in this life. If you suffer at times, it means you’re

human. And getting in touch with your suffering means you're getting in touch with your humanness. And by getting in touch with your humanness, you will then be able to become intimate with God.

Jesus' purpose and passion was to ask God to provide a River of Grace and the Holy Spirit to everyone who wants it. And like Jesus, your purpose and passion in life is the same by conceiving of and delivering your unique ways of delivering others grace so that they too can be intimate with God by converting their sufferings to joys. And, of course, these ways will be based on the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit because there is no other way. Remember, love is in the details. By conceiving of and delivering your unique or detailed ways based on the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, you will be living your purpose and finding yourself abundantly fulfilled in God's Kingdom (Matthew 28:16-20).

PLEASE SCROLL DOWN



Getting Started

And now this is as far as I can take you. The rest is up to you. It's time to turn and face God and walk through the Woods with Him. I made a workbook or trail guide for me to help me physically see the journey where I live. It's called "A River in Redstone" and is the physical representation (miracle or spirit) of the spiritual journey that I just took you through borne of the Spirit in me (John 14:11). God led me to Redstone Arsenal, which is a military installation in north Alabama nestled along the Tennessee River, to fulfill my purpose and passion with Him. It is a place that I have found love and serenity with my wife, Kathy. Feel free to create your own "A River in Redstone" where you live. There's no time like the present. Your Spirit is waiting for you. As Christ said:

“The Spirit and the bride say, ‘Come!’ And let him who hears say, ‘Come!’ Whoever is thirsty, let him come; and whoever wishes, let him take the free gift of the water of life.” (Rev 22:7-17)

Farewell, my friend. Peace, love, and happiness.

Tim